



THE CHARM OF SOUL PETS

BOOK 02

Fish's Sky

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Charm of Soul Pets

(寵魅)

by

Fish's Sky

(魚的天空)

Synopsis

Cloud birds that soar through the blue sky; Terrorblood wolves that roam the wastelands ruthlessly. Dream beasts that dart through the moonlight forests; Ghost kings that dwell on foggy cliffs. Ocean spirit beasts that haunt the depths of the boundless oceans; thousand-eyed treants that stand unyielding on precipitous peaks.

Sword Beetles, Sunset Eagles, Ancient Wood Demons, Chaotic Thunder Sprites, Cursed Demon Fox: Ice... Plants, Beasts, Elementals, Undead, this is the eccentric, variegated, beautiful, and stunning world of soul pets!

Our protagonist, a soul pet trainer, had at first a young, mutated soul pet - a Moonlight Fox. In unending fights, it mutated into the stronger Evil Flamed Six-tailed Demon fox and the even higher leveled Queen Flamed Nine-tailed Firefox!

Under the companionship of this soul pet, he walked on the path to become a king, catching precious and rare soul pets, and never ceasing his endeavor to becoming the very best!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by 87Translator, Moonfox @ [Chongmei Translations](#)

Translation Edits by LordGrim @ [Chongmei Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Book 02

Chapter 1: Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon

“Ao Huo!!”

A vigorous stunning roar, like a clap of thunder rolling through the sky, rumbled forth from inside the enormous pupa!!

The noise pierced through the heaven and earth and the entire infected white colored forest began to collapse. It terrifyingly continued to spread far into the distance and in a short while, the entire area had transformed into ground covered by white natural silk!!!

Standing on the peeling pupa that was violently shaking, even though Chu Mu knew that the small cyan bug would be extremely stunning once it emerged from chrysalis, he had absolutely no idea that such a shocking scene would occur.

In the past he had seen in books a few soul pets that were so strong they were like legends. These soul pets could change the color of the heavens and earth, causing wind and cloud to surge like the tide.

Chu Mu had always believed those were but legends and could not happen in reality.

However, when he saw the horizon transform into a strange cyan color, this thought was completely shattered. He felt as if he had been dropped into a dreamland full of visual shock!!

Prisoner Island's skies were completely covered by this strange cloud, and it was extremely difficult to see the blue sky. Nevertheless, just as the pupa was broken, a gorgeous, sun-like cyan light was released. The year long clouds that circled in the sky had completely disappeared. and Prisoner Island's sky was thoroughly filled with an ostentatious cyan color!!! Yang He, Yang Zheng, and Yang Lengcang were all stunned by this scene; their faces had already turned as white as paper. Unlike Chu Mu, the three of them could feel the powerful ancient angry message rushing out from within the enormous pupa. This mental message caused them to feel as if they were being looked at by a creature whom they could never defeat. Their hearts trembled with wave after wave of fear!

“Hou Hou!!!”

“Ao Wu!!”

“Hong!!”

It was as powerful as the sixth phase fourth stage Blood Winged Trioptic Beast, as malevolent and fierce as the sixth phase eighth stage Terror Wolf and arrogant as the seventh phase Rare Blood Beast. All three of Yang Lengcang's soul pets combined could be used to describe a single powerful soul pet.

However, at this moment, each one of them was cowering in fear, trembling all over, and their continuous shouts were all weak and submissive!

“Ao Huo!!”

The heaven and earth shaking, palpitating noise rang out once more!!!

This time, another crack appeared on the entire gigantic, mountain-like pupa. When the crack split apart, the immense “heart” composed of millions of cloud silk completely collapsed, and the entire pupa began to give way!!

“Hong Long Long!!!”

An enormous sound reverberated throughout the jungle’s floor, and the floor began to frighteningly sink downwards!

“Ao Huo!!”

A cyan light suddenly blossomed out from between the countless cracks within the enormous cocoon!

In the ostentatious radiance, Chu Mu, who had fallen to the ground, faintly saw an enormous creature fly out from within the cyan light as it thoroughly broke free from the cocoon’s restriction...

As if a frenzied devil was released from the depths of Tartarus and a heavenly creature was breaking free from an ancient seal, in

one bound, the creature struck the heavens!

Everything was taken into perspective. Chu Mu felt as if he was in the most awe-inspiring dream world!!

A little cyan bu was an Ancient Bug Type soul pet that transformed the weather and dimmed the very sun. If he didn't personally witness it and if it wasn't for the familiar mental message reverberating in Chu Mu's mind, Chu Mu would not have believed that any of it was real!

“Innards of a God, Cyan Light Filling the Heavens, an ancient soul, Undying Battle Insect, Immortal Hidden Dragon!”

His gaze was already lifeless. In this instant, the deceitful and arrogant Yang Lengcang was like the most ignorant and negligible ant. He could only look upwards at the enormous cyan colored creature's body covering the blazing sun!

Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon!

A soul pet's name filled with a wild aura instantly appeared within Yang Lengcang's mind.

Four years ago, Yang Lengcang had walked to the far away Tianxia City and coincidentally learned of an extremely astonishing piece of information. The Soul Alliance had lost an ancient soul pet, and its whereabouts were unknown!

Yang Lencang remembered that it was an ancient bug type soul pet, and possessed an extremely rare transformation ability. After fleeing from the Soul Alliance, it had reportedly transformed into an extremely unremarkable creature and fled to a very distant place. It was impossible to find.

At the time, Yang Lencang had only felt shock. Out of curiosity, he began attempting to understand this soul pet far out of his reach.

Moreover, he happened to remember the description of this soul pet's transformation.

“Innards of a God, Cyan Light Filling the Heavens, an ancient soul, Undying Battle Insect, Immortal Hidden Dragon!”

Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon: Demon Kingdom – Bug type (Beast type) – Bug species (Dragon Species) – Hidden Dragon subspecies Cyan Hidden Dragon! This was what he knew!

Yang Lencang stood next to Chu Mu not far away from the chaotic solid white shell. In the midst of rumbling sounds, Chu Mu was able to hear his absent minded speech.

Dragon species!!

A long time ago, Chu Mu had been told that no matter the soul pet, as long as it had the word Dragon in its title, it was undefeatable!!

Chu Mu had no idea what a Hidden Dragon was, but as long as it had the blood lineage of a dragon, it was undoubtedly inconceivably strong!

Its enormous cyan wings had already covered the scorching sun's radiance, shrouding everything below in a shadow that was capable of shattering one's heart!!

“Ao Huo!!”

A terrifying howl abruptly swept down from above. The tide-like breath unexpectedly proceeded to topple over the entire forest!!!

“Beng!!”

Two enormous feet stepped onto the white, sinking earth. Once again, the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's strength caused the earth to tremble!!

Even if one were to raise his head, he or she would only be able to see a bright cyan, clearly protruding, full of strength and difficult to destroy Hidden Dragon Fighting Carapace!

“Ao Huo!!”

Suddenly, a formidable dragon claw immediately smashed downwards. As if it were swatting a fly, the sixth phase fourth

stage Blood Winged Trioptic Beast was slapped out of the air and proceeded to smash into the ground.

Instantly, blood and flesh splattered everywhere. The Blood Winged Trioptic Beast's defense that had already reached the seventh stage was simply incapable of resisting the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's Hidden Dragon Destruction Claw!

“Ao Wu”

The Terror Wolf instantly grew aware of its surroundings and let out a sound. Trembling, it begged its master to recall it back into the soul pet space.

However, Yang Lencang was trying to bear the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's mental suppression, and he simply could not chant even half an incantation!

“Hong Hong!!”

Two consecutive claws smashed down, and the sixth phase eighth stage Dire Wolf didn't live for much longer before being ground into minced meat by the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon.

In front of absolute power, any sort of thinking had no meaning!

Blow after blow rained down. Without the need for techniques, the three Yang Family Members' soul pets were crushed to death. The three people remaining, who weren't even able to chant

incantations, could only stand there like corpses without souls. They stood there, waiting, for the god-like Hidden Dragon to pronounce their death sentence!

Only, just as the three were suffering from the extreme fear of impending death, the terrifying Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon retracted its powerful aura. Proudly, it stood beside the much smaller Chu Mu.

“Are you letting me kill them?” asked Chu Mu. He tilted his head, but was still unable to see the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s head. Its shadow covered Chu Mu’s body, making him feel enormous pressure.

“Ao Wu!!!” The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon gave Chu Mu an affirmative message.

“Little Fellow...” Chu Mu was about to say something when he discovered that calling it “Little Fellow” was extremely extremely inappropriate.

Inside, the depths of Chu Mu’s heart was violent churning. When he was very young, Chu Mu had heard his father narrate various soul pet legends. This caused Chu Mu to possess a unique adoration for soul pets.

However, Chu Mu never thought that there would be a day when he could personally witness a creature from his father’s story appear before him. Furthermore, it was at such a close range, conversed with him, and he had even spent a long time feeding it.

He had taken its transformed hidden figure to be an unremarkably small creature...

Chu Mu chanted an incantation, and used the most basic Rapid Freeze.

Such a soul technique was something even Yang He could easily resist. However, at this moment, it had become their attack of death!

The frosty cold quickly covered their three bodies. When the three of their faces had been frozen solid, one could see the fear in their eyes, along with their complex emotions. None of them would have thought that they would encounter a Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon and they didn't understand why such a powerful creature would listen to the orders of an eighteen year old youth.

Seeing their three loathsome bodies being slowly crushed by him, Chu Mu didn't feel much elation from obtaining revenge. He was still stuck in a dream-like state from the shock of the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon.

“Wuwu”

Mo Xie seemed to have known that the small fellow had fully awoken and immediately let out her voice from within Chu Mu's mind. She seemed to be greeting the enormous Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon.

“Shasha~”

The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s mental strength was exceptionally terrifying. Even though it was transmitting its voice within Chu Mu’s mind, it could still control its voice to sound like the familiar voice as it conversed with Mo Xie.

Quickly, Mo Xie and the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon used a language that Chu Mu could not understand at all.

Feeling the two messages being exchanged in his mind, for some reason, Chu Mu faintly felt that Mo Xie and the small cyan bug seemed to have always been familiar with one another...

“Ao Wu!!!”

“Ao Wu!!”

Suddenly, the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon stopped its communication with Mo Xie and abruptly lifted its head, roaring at the sky!!

Although Chu Mu could not comprehend the words of these powerful soul pets, Chu Mu felt that an indignant mood had manifested within the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon.

“Yao!!”

“Yao!!”

Just as Chu Mu was trying to comprehend this, an extremely palpitating bird cry suddenly emerged from the cyan colored horizon!

This bird cry was full of powerful, intimidating strength. Even though they were far away, Chu Mu could still feel his internal organs unceasingly tremble!!

An exceptionally strong aura abruptly pressed down from the sky and instantly, Chu Mu felt that it was hard to breath!!

“Could it be... Could it be that mysterious unknown creature from three years ago when I entered the island?!!”

Chu Mu’s state of mind hadn’t yet settled before another surging tide was set off in his heart!!

Chu Mu had always remembered that within the furthest depths of the island lay a powerful soul pet that had never been sensed by others. It was a mysterious existence that seemed to have surpassed everything!!

Chapter 2: Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon VS Mysterious Unknown Creature

“Ao Wu!!!”

The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s angry roar unceasingly reverberated around Prison Island. Standing next to this enormous creature, Chu Mu felt as if his eardrums were about to be blown apart!!

The cyan colored horizon had, at some unknown time, been covered by numerous clouds, which completely obstructed the view of this cyan gem.

Like a tide, the clouds surged about in the sky, and they extended all the way in the distance to where the sky and ocean converged.

As for the thing that suddenly appeared in the clouds, it was an extremely large silhouette that was faintly discernable. It had two wings that hung like clouds. A mere light flap of its wings could cause a terrifying gale to permeate throughout prisoner island!!!

Prisoner Island’s weather was always quite mild, and it was rare for a catastrophic storm to appear. However, as this mysterious creature approached, the cloud layer became increasingly dense, increasingly compressed, and increasingly agitated!!

The cyan colored sky shot forth rays of cyan into the ocean. However, currently, the sky and the ocean were covered by this

dense cloud layer. From far off in the distance, an irascible gale blew along the ocean level. Torrential ocean water violently surged against the solitary Prisoner Island!

Disoriented, when Chu Mu lifted his head, what he saw in front of him was already a black imposing horizon!!

“Huhuhu!!!”

The reckless storm on the ocean began to scream in the turbid environment. The gigantic waves surged layer after layer, and the tip of these waves pressed near the black clouds!!

“Yao!! Yao!!!”

A soul penetrating sound descended from the spiral in the sky as its shouts resounded again. In the midst of the imposing black clouds, ten white lightning bolts suddenly ripped apart the darkness!!

The lightning was like a wild dancing dragon. Malevolent and arrogant, it rushed headlong between the low hanging clouds and the black colored sea!!!

“Ao Huo!!!”

The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon seemed to have been thoroughly infuriated. Its two enormous, cyan colored wings which were still adhered with white colored cloud silk, abruptly

spread apart. Its powerful legs crouched down before immediately leaping 100 meters high!!

Its gigantic cyan body rapidly approached the oppressing black layer of clouds. In a split second, bolt after bolt of terrifying lightning streaked by, striking the Emyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's mountain-like cyan colored body!!

These few tens of lightning bolts weren't able to pierce through the Emyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's thick defensive armor. Facing the violent strikes of lightning, its body entered the sky covered in black clouds.

The ocean continued to churn. Prison Island, isolated in the ocean, began to shake a bit under the turbulence of the ocean water. It seemed like it would submerge into the vast, black body of water at any time.

Lifting his head and facing the black horizon, Chu Mu could feel waves of enormous energy explode out from above the cloud. It was the most terrifying form of lightning type strength that could even rival a natural disaster!

A strange stirring suddenly appeared in the black layer of clouds!

A cyan colored silhouette suddenly shot down out of the clouds. It abruptly beat its wings once and glided under the black sea of clouds before entering another black cloud!!

In the next moment, a large purple gold feather emerged from under the black cloud. Yet, it only revealed a tiny portion of a figure before quickly disappearing again in the black clouds. It was impossible to see its true identity!

“Beng!!”

A loud rumbling sound suddenly exploded in the clouds, revealing the cyan colored sky as well as the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s enormous body!!

The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon seemed to have suffered from a serious attack. From high in the sky, it fell down with its wings folded like a cyan colored meteor streaking across the horizon!

“Hong Long Long!!”

The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon resolutely slammed into the basin on Prisoner Island. Instantly, the entirety of Prisoner Island violently shook. That basin immediately sank down in the chaos, and it was completely obliterated!

“Ao Huo!!!”

The over one thousand meter fall didn’t deal any damage to the powerful ancient Hidden Dragon, and it suddenly stood up in the scattered and smashed basin. Angrily, it lifted its head and spat out an energy wrapped in a cyan colored radiance!!

The cyan body of energy shot forth at a very slow speed. From a distance it felt like it was slowly floating into the black sky.

However, when the cyan light entered the clouds, the world went silent. A dazzling and glorious cyan radiance broke through the confines of the black clouds as if it was dispelling the clouds to see the sun. It illuminated the sky above the island, and it shed forth thousands of cyan light rays onto the restless ocean!

“Yao!!”

Above the clouds, the mysterious powerful creature had clearly suffered a wound from the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, and it let out a pained screech!!!

“Yao!!”

However, after the pained screech, an angry and deafening cry rang out!!!

The black colored clouds were suddenly heated red and, a split second later, an exceptionally elegant fire lotus blossomed above the black clouds. Quickly, the blaze ignited the entire cloudy sky!

“Flaming Domain Heavenly Meteor!!”

As he watched the stunning soul pet battle from below, there was

never a moment where Chu Mu's heart was calm. Currently, the field of view captured by his black eyes was covered by the fire technique released by the mysterious creature!!

Ultimate fire technique, Flaming Domain Heavenly Meteor!!

A rising, sun-like meteor appeared in the sky. Its gaudy red colored blaze dyed everything in red. Even though it was far away, he could still feel the terrifying heat!

The Flaming Domain Meteor fell straight down from the sky, outlining a gorgeous flaming track in between the heavens and earth; it ostensibly split both the heavens and earth vertically in half!

“Hong!!”

The Flaming Domain Heaven Meteor summoned a terrifying heat wave that engulfed the entirety of Prisoner Island and horrendously bombarded the basin where the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon was!

The basin was no longer recognizable. The bombardment of such an enormous meteor transformed the entire basin into an abyss!!

A fight between two godlike creatures caused the entire Prison Island to violently shake.

Be it a small creature, or a powerful mountain range overlord,

every creature felt as if it was facing Judgement Day as they fled, terrified.

“Hou!!”

At the very summit of the mountain, a Devil Tiger covered in multi-colored veined patterns stood proudly. It raised its head and gazed attentively at the black clouds that seemed within reach!

At the bottom of the lofty mountain, myriads of soul pets fled in disarray and let out panicked shouts. They fled in each and every direction, without knowledge of where exactly to run to. It seemed like there was no safe place on Prison Island.

Wing type soul pet groups flew at low altitudes, and had already flown into the distant ocean.

Countless soul pets, demonic beasts, tree creatures, demons, winged birds, and giant insects saw them fly past them. However, Chu Mu knew that this was Prison Island. No matter how much they fled, they would still feel the fight between the two great creatures.

Chu Mu stood in the same place from the very beginning. The incredibly shocking scene made his heart tremble; simultaneously, something in his body fiercely burned!!

Chu Mu didn't enjoy watching from below. He further didn't wish to become like the weak beasts and creatures beside him.

When powerful beings fought, he could only be a pitiful, weak person with nowhere to hide.

Chu Mu was born in Wangluo City, which was a rich city. The family clan Chu Mu was born into was a prestigious one. However, no matter how much one experienced in a city or a clan, they couldn't begin to understand the epiphany within the heart that arose from experiencing first hand, on this quaking island, two soul pets battling with their world-altering powers!

“Mo Xie, there will eventually be a day when we will be like them. With one wave of our hands, the earth will sink and the cloudy skies will change!” Chu Mu watched the sky endlessly change colors and used an extremely dull, but resolute tone as he spoke.

‘Wuwuwu!!’

Without the slightest hesitation, Mo Xie gave Chu Mu a most assured answer!

Chu Mu knew that soul pets at the level of the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon would not easily make soul pacts with humans. The small cyan bug had stayed next to him, but only because it was in a transformed state. Once it emerged from the pupa and soared into the sky, Chu Mu could do nothing else but stare at it from a distance!

The journey he had to walk was still very long. Right now, why not just stand on the ground and look up at the firmament high

above? There would eventually be a day when he stood on the clouds and squared off against a controlled super soul pet, fighting to his heart's content! Stunning the whole heavens and the earth, confounding the oceans and the seas!

This extremely stunning fight continued to persist. Prisoner Island had already been split into numerous teetering small islands in the great ocean because of the fighting of the two great soul pets.

The black colored horizon continued to reduce the world to darkness. Only when pale flashes of lightning streaked chaotically across the heavens and earth would it illuminate the vast and disorderly battlefield.

The battle had already extended to the ocean. The two great soul pets caused earth-shattering effects, and time after time, Prison Island's land was swallowed up.

“Yao!!”

The mysterious creature that stayed from beginning to end in the clouds let out a bird-like cry, and its body stunningly shot up from underneath the ocean. As it reached the tip of the tsunami, it charged up into the depths of the clouds!

A moment later, the battered Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon suddenly flew out at sea level.

This time, the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon didn't chase the mysterious creature that had flown away. Rather, it flapped its wings and shakily flew towards Chu Mu's location.

This fight started during the day and by the time it had ended, it was already late at night!

As the mysterious creature flew further away, the black horizon gradually dissipated, and the world slowly calmed!!

Under the shining moonlight and hazy starlight, the dark cyan body stuck close to the surface of the sea, gradually growing closer and larger.

“Ao Huo~~”

Finally reaching the island, the ostensibly undefeatable Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon descended next to Chu Mu, while cyan blood continually dripped from its body.

Chu Mu jumped onto the shattered rocks and stared at the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon. From this powerful soul pet's eyes, Chu Mu could discern the pride it garnered from victory; however, behind this proudness lay a hidden, extreme exhaustion....

Chapter 3: Split Off Hidden Dragon Egg

In the sky above a distant sea, two enormous wing type soul pets with bodies that were larger than ten meters flitted across. Their speeds were rather quick.

“It’s finally appeared, after an entire four years...”

“Inform the others. This time we cannot let it wander off!” The winged type soul pet was carrying a man wearing a deep, yellow robe.

These two people were Spirit Emperors sent by The Soul Alliance to search for the escaped Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon.

Spirit Emperors were soul pet trainers at a higher level than Spirit Lords. They possessed 5 souls, and they could simultaneously control five soul pets at once!

Nightmare Palace controlled the Heng Ocean, and even though the Soul Alliance didn’t need to fear any other power, Nightmare Palace had always been a group of violent tempered people. If people from the Soul Alliance were to cause a commotion on their territory, then Nightmare Palace wouldn’t hesitate to slaughter these people and their soul pets.

“Tian Ting, I’ve heard that each time the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon pupates, it will leave behind a younger generation. Is this true?” The evidently younger Spirit Emperor asked.

“Yes. Although the younger generation’s strength will be inferior to that of the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, it’s still capable of demolishing many people.” Said the man called Tian Ting.

“Inferior to the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon... If that’s the case, the Alliance Master probably won’t worry about it...”

“I’ll tell you about it later. Right now, we had better quickly bring the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon back.” said the Soul Emperor Tian Ting.

The young Soul Emperor didn’t question any further and closely followed Tian Ting, urging his soul pet to fly into the depths of the ocean.

In the middle of Prison Island.

“Small Fellow, are you okay?”

Chu Mu could feel the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s exhaustion. From a greater perspective, the omnipresent and mysterious powerful creature was clearly a bit stronger than the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon. Moreover, the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon had just emerged from its pupa, so its strength probably had not been completely recovered yet.

Under these circumstances, fighting the terrifying creature and even repelling it, the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon had paid an

extremely painful price.

“Sha sha sha”

The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon produced a voice familiar to Chu Mu. However, regardless if Chu Mu used the Beast Language or not, he was unable to understand its expressed intention.

However, just at this instant, the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s body began to slowly shrink. From a height where Chu Mu had to look up, it quickly transformed into a small Hidden Dragon that was covered in cyan insect armor at Chu Mu’s height.

“Sha sha sha”

The small fellow stood in front of Chu Mu and its body swayed a bit. It seemed to be urgently telling Chu Mu something.

“You’re saying that you have to leave. There’s someone chasing you?” Chu Mu tried to ask.

“Sha sha sha~” The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon instantly nodded its head and walked a step closer to Chu Mu. It slowly extended its exceptionally sharp claws and put it on Chu Mu’s shoulder.

“Shoulder? The thing on my shoulder?”

“Sha sha sha~~”

“You’re referring to Mo Xie?”

“Sha sha sha~~” The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon instantly nodded its head.

Chu Mu was extremely uncertain why the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon was paying a lot of attention to Mo Xie. Chu Mu had encountered the small fellow first on Cyan Nightmare Island, before he encountered Mo Xie. Moreover, this small fellow had helped Chu Mu capture Mo Xie.

“Sha sha”

Suddenly, the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon began swaying as if it was about to fall. From inside its thick cyan armor, cyan colored blood abruptly seeped out .

Chu Mu could sense the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s weakened state. Perhaps its species race wasn’t inferior to the mysterious and powerful sovereign of Prison Island, but after its evolution, it wasn’t as strong as this mysterious creature. During this battle, it had definitely sustained heavy injuries.

“You want me to protect her? Okay, I understand, I will protect her.” Chu Mu understood the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s state of mind and immediately responded. Despite being very suspicious towards the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s

relationship with Mo Xie, he could see that the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon cared a lot about Mo Xie.

After making Chu Mu understand its expressed intention, the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's eye expression changed. It slowly opened its mouth as if it was about to spit out something.

Cyan colored blood spilled out of its mouth when suddenly its throat expanded. It was like something was rising up from its throat.

Gradually, that object rolled up from its throat into its mouth. The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon slowly lowered its head, while being exceptionally careful as it placed the object from its mouth onto the ground.

Chu Mu was stunned. His gaze rested on the dragon egg spat out by the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, which was covered in viscous cyan saliva !

“This is...” Chu Mu was rather astonished as he watched the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's peculiar actions. For a while, he was at a loss.

“Sha sha sha...”

The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon began to use its limbs to tell Chu Mu what to do.

“You want me to make a soul pact with it?”

“Sha sha sha...”

“Let it become strong and then protect myself and Mo Xie?”
asked Chu Mu.

“Sha sha sha”

The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon no longer spoke. Yet, when its gaze fell on the Hidden Dragon egg, its expression turned gentle with a tinge of ostensible reluctance.

Nevertheless, quickly, it raised its head once more as its wings covered in cyan blood stains spread open.

After glancing at Chu Mu, the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon abruptly flapped its wings, directly flying into the sky. Its body quickly rushed into the black night sky.

.....

Chu Mu clasped the viscous Hidden Dragon egg and stared at the injured Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon far away. From his heart rose forth a sliver of ineffable sentiment...

The cyan silhouette gradually disappeared into the night sky. Although he didn't know where the Empyrean Cyan Hidden

Dragon was going, Chu Mu felt that the small fellow definitely harbored many sad stories. Otherwise, the expression in its eyes wouldn't be so exhausted and full of the vicissitudes of life...

His soul power had already recovered a bit. To keep safe, Chu Mu summoned Mo Xie beside him.

When Mo Xie appeared, she crawled onto Chu Mu's shoulder where she let out a howl.

The reason Chu Mu could understand the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, for the most part, was thanks to Mo Xie's translations. Otherwise, it would have been very hard for Chu Mu to understand the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's intentions from its speech and limb movement.

“What did you talk about with the small fellow earlier. You seem to be well acquainted with each other?” asked Chu Mu

Previously, Mo Xie and the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon had communicated in Chu Mu's mental space. Chu Mu simply could not understand these words. Additionally, he couldn't understand why the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon cared so much about Mo Xie. Reasonably speaking, the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon should not have been so familiar with Mo Xie.

“Wuwuwu~~” Mo Xie let out a small voice.

“You feel that the post-evolution small cyan bug is very

familiar?”

“Wuwu~”

“It brought you away? You used to recognize it? Why would it bring you away?”

“Wuwu~~”

“You also don’t know... you only know that after it transformed into the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, it’s aura became very familiar...” Chu Mu bitterly laughed. He was increasingly unable to understand the relationship between Mo Xie and the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon.

“Then, you aren’t leaving with it because...” Chu Mu rubbed her supple fur, but suddenly stopped his question midway.

When Chu Mu asked this question, little Mo Xie extended her smooth tongue and began licking his face. This action answered Chu Mu, indicating that he didn’t need to ask this question...

The surface of the ocean was occasionally like a ripple emerging in a mirror. The stars in the sky projected identical colors, and adorned the ocean surface with a unique starry picture.

In the mutually reflecting aesthetic scenery, a dark blue figure full of the aura of an emperor appeared. Slowly, it flew along the ocean’s surface.

Ostensibly waiting for something, this enormous figure flapped its wings and, when a few fast flying soul pets caught up chasing, it finally increased its speed and flew in a different direction above the ocean.

Soon, the enormous figure was followed by multiple powerful wing type soul pets. On these soul pets was a powerful person controlling them!

“It’s injured. It’s futile to flee this time!!” Tian Ting quickly saw the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s abnormality and spoke to the others.

After speaking, Tian Ting looked at the few people behind him and proceeded to say: “You guys search along the route the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon just came from. See if it left its Hidden Dragon Egg on that island!”

“Yes!!” Three soul pet trainers controlling their Thunder Feather Lions immediately changed direction and began searching in the direction that the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon came from.

“This is Nightmare Palace’s territory. Nightmare Palace’s people have probably obtained information and are heading towards this place. You guys must not have a conflict with the experts from Nightmare Palace. You can only have a fight as a last resort!” Tian Ting was clearly the leader of these people. In an extremely stern manner, he spoke to his underlings.

“We understand!!” the others immediately answered.

Tian Ting’s gaze quickly locked onto the enormous figure that they were slowly getting closer to. If he hadn’t determined that the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon was wounded, Tian Ting would not dare to approach this berserk super creature.

“Soon our four year mission will end.” The Spirit Emperor who had previously spoken with Tian Ting spoke in a tired voice.

Tian Ting indifferently nodded his head, but his expression remained grave as he stared at the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon flapping its wings.

In reality, even until now, Tian Ting hadn’t truly relaxed.

This was because he was the only one among these people that knew that bringing back the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon was only one of his missions in the past four years. Truthfully, searching for the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon could be regarded as a presupposition believed by many.

In Tian Ting’s heart was an even more important mission. This mission was given by the highest leaders of Soul Alliance, and he was the only one who knew of this heavy responsibility!!

“When the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon fled Soul Alliance, it brought an extremely valuable soul pet egg with it. The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s intelligence was already very mature, so it

was hard to control. If we're able to bring it back, we'll try our best to do so. If not, we will retake its Hidden Dragon Egg. However, the soul pet egg the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon is guarding must absolutely be recovered. Remember, we must do so at all costs!!!”

These words reverberated through Tian Ting's mind. It could be said that in the ten years Tian Ting was in Soul Alliance, this was the first time he had seen Soul Alliance's Alliance Master reveal such an unrestrained and unconcealed expression!!

Chapter 4: Treasure, Violent Blood Pupil

It was good that the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon hadn't killed the three people from the Yang Family in one slap because Yang Zheng still had nineteen scrolls on him. Including the one scroll on Chu Mu, it formed a completed map. Using this map, he could obtain the Nightmare Palace treasures left for the sole survivor.

“I hope that the place where the treasures are buried wasn't disintegrated.” After collecting all the map pieces, Chu Mu began to silently pray.

After the two super creature's fight, Prisoner Island had been split into multiple pieces. Changed beyond recognition, there were certain treasures buried on this island. One lackadaisical move could very well have disintegrated the treasures, or perhaps they had already sunk deep into the ocean.

“Thank goodness, thank goodness.” After piecing the map pieces together, Chu Mu instantly found the area where the treasures were. A smile rose on his face.

After resting a while in his place, Chu Mu dealt with the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's wounds first. It had suffered very serious injuries, and its body had been completely penetrated through. However, to a plant type soul pet, this injury wasn't fatal. As long as it readjusted for a while, it could heal.

After dealing with the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's wounds, Chu Mu's soul power had also recovered a bit. He then summoned the

Night Thunder Dream Beast.

After determining the location, the Night Thunder Dream Beast instantly rushed towards the Nightmare Palace's treasures!

On the morning of the fourth day, Chu Mu found the location of the treasures. What made Chu Mu bitterly laugh was that these treasures had been hidden in the abyss where the Multi-Colored Devil Tiger had been trapped.

At that time, if Chu Mu had kept digging after he dug up the Cold Abyssal Ginseng, he would have discovered the traces of an earth type soul technique. There was a high chance that he could have carelessly taken a shortcut.

“It seems that the Multi-Colored Devil Tiger being trapped here wasn't purely a coincidence.” Chu Mu put away the map and helplessly laughed. He began to use his hands to dig for the treasures.

“I wonder what it is? The Yang Family's family treasures?” Chu Mu silently guessed.

The most unique aspect of the Yang Family was that they possessed the powerful, fighting Blood Beast soul pet species. It seemed that every member of the Yang Family would be bestowed a Blood Beast. Blood Beasts could be considered a mainstream soul pet, as many soul pet trainers would choose it. The Yang Family could be classified as a relatively prominent family that used Blood Beasts. Their Blood Beasts' talent and fighting ability were slightly

stronger than other soul pet trainers’.

After digging deeply, Chu Mu quickly discovered a black box in the frozen soil. When he saw the box, Chu Mu seemed to understand something as he slowly opened the black box.

“As expected, it’s a soul technique book!” a smile appeared on his face!

Seeing the soul technique book. Chu Mu didn’t need to open it to know what technique it was!

Like the Chu Family’s technique, Chong Mei, that could replicate soul pet techniques, the Yang Family also had their own, absolutely superior soul technique. Their family’s soul technique allowed them to consolidate the most honorable position in Wangluo City-Violent Blood Pupil!

Violent Blood Pupil was an attribute soul technique. This ability only appeared on Monarch Rank Blood Beast soul pets. However, once one reached the Spirit Master level, he or she could use Violent Blood Pupil.

Violent Blood Pupil’s effect was extremely direct. In a short period of time, it allowed the user’s fighting strength to immensely amplify. A complete Violent Blood Pupil could cause a soul pet’s strength to directly increase by one phase!

Soul techniques consumed a ridiculously enormous amount of

soul power. Thus, soul pet trainers could not perpetually use abilities during the entire course of a battle, like soul pets could. However, a strong soul technique could change the tide of battle.

If Chu Mu had possessed Violent Blood Pupil beforehand, the fifth phase seventh stage Mo Xie would definitely have been able to easily defeat the fifth phase ninth stage Blood Winged Trioptic Beast. Moreover, it wouldn't have been a problem to contend against Yang Lencang's sixth phase fourth stage Blood Winged Trioptic Beast!

“Since the Yang Family took such a large risk to steal back this copy of Violent Blood Pupil from Prisoner Island, it means that this copy of the Yang Family's Violent Blood Pupil is the most complete copy.” Grasping the Violent Blood Pupil, Chu Mu felt that his palm was burning hot!

In order to prevent their family's soul technique from being leaked to outsiders, the Yang Family truly only had this one copy of the Violent Blood Pupil as a blueprint. Only during extremely special occasions would they spend five hundred thousand gold to invite an imprint master to spend an entire two months towards imprinting another copy. Afterwards, they would confer it to a few of the utmost core members of the Yang Family.

The soul technique book's imprint couldn't be infinitely copied.

Inside one soul technique book were various eminently complicated lined imprints. These imprints were tangled and intricate. Even the strongest imprint master could not completely imprint a soul technique book.

The power behind a soul technique was determined by two factors. First, it was naturally the soul pet trainer's soul remembrance strength. Second, it was how complete the soul technique book was that one studied from.

Normally, when the imprint design in a soul technique book reached a replication level of 70 with the soul technique, it could be learned.

However, if a soul pet trainer learned from a poorer quality soul pet book of 70, the soul technique they used would not reach the level of a complete 100 soul technique. It would only have approximately 10% of the effect.

Therefore, many families would retain a fully complete soul technique book. If they were to impart the technique to a family disciple, they would invite an imprint master to imprint a copy.

The completeness of the imprinted copy would naturally be inferior to the first copy, and the formidability of the technique when performed would be rather poor.

The best imprint master in Wangluo City would lose 5 degrees of completeness when imprinting a soul technique book.

When a soul technique completeness fell by ten, its effectiveness would most likely decrease by two fold.

The most complete copy in Chu Mu's hands should have reached a completeness of 99. When used at the early stage, it should increase the soul pet's strength by about four stages. When a Yang Family core member used an early stage Violent Blood Pupil at 94 degree of completeness, it would at most increase the soul pet's strength by two to three stages.

In reality, if Chu Mu were to sell this soul technique book which had an extremely high level of completeness, its value would be guaranteed to be exceptionally expensive. Nevertheless, Chu Mu, who was currently lacking soul techniques, needed this kind of eminently hegemonic soul technique to increase his strength. Therefore, Chu Mu would definitely not sell this soul technique!

When sold on the market, generally speaking, the relatively cheaply-priced soul techniques had a completeness degree of approximately 80. This included Chu MU's Rapid Freeze and Adhering Flame. As the completeness degree increased, its price would rise by several fold.

"I finally have a decent soul technique." The corners of Chu Mu's lips drew back as a smile emerged on his face.

Aside from the soul technique he had learned, Chong Mei, the effects of Chu Mu's other soul techniques weren't too good. If he were to use this Violent Blood Pupil on Mo Xie right now, her strength would instantly increase from the fifth phase seventh stage to the sixth phase.

"Nightmare Palace really is magnanimous. They unexpectedly would confer such a soul technique to prisoners." Chu Mu

muttered to himself.

“Yet, when Xia Guanghan obtained this soul technique book, he didn’t learn it himself. Rather, he presented it to Nightmare Palace. This should indicate that Xia Guanghan probably has a stronger soul techniques of the same type. I wonder what Xia Guanghan’s true strength is.”

Chu Mu remembered three years ago that Xia Guanghan had a fifth phase White Nightmare. Perhaps it had already reached the sixth phase.

As a Monarch Rank soul pet, the White Nightmare reaching the sixth phase meant that its strength was exceptionally terrifying. Unless a Commander Rank creature’s strength had reached the seventh phase, it simply wouldn’t be able to contend!

The High Class Commander Rank Ice Winged Tiger previously possessed strength that had already reached the high stages of the fifth phase. While Mo Xie could defeat a fifth phase ninth stage Blood Winged Trioptic Beast, when it came to the Ice Winged Tiger, it would be hard to resist. Over these three years, it was very probable that the Ice Winged Tiger had reached the sixth phase. More evidently, the Ice Winged Tiger wasn’t Xia Guanghan’s main soul pet!

“There’s still a gap, but the day I surpass him isn’t too far!” Chu Mu stroked Mo Xie’s velvety fur as a confident smile appeared on his face.

Over the past three years, Chu Mu had really undergone a complete transformation!

A fifth phase seventh stage Evil Flame Six Tailed Demonic Fox whose strength could rival a sixth phase and under Middle Class Commander Rank soul pet. In Wangluo City, those who possessed a sixth phase and above Commander Rank soul pet were considered first rate fighters.

The Yang Family didn't have more than fifteen first rate fighters!

Chu Mu's Violent Blood Pupil could instantly make Mo Xie enter the sixth phase. Thus, those who could fight against Chu Mu in the Yang Family probably only numbered around ten. Moreover, of those ten or so people, the majority of them were already over 40 years old!

Apart from Mo Xie and the Night Thunder Dream Beast, Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy had already reached the fifth phase ninth stage. When the highly talented Ice Air Fairy reached the sixth phase, with its excellent control over its ice type techniques, it was possible to fight against Low Class Commander Rank soul pets!

As for the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, its strength was slightly inferior to the Ice Air Fairy's, and it was situated at the fifth phase sixth stage.

Plant soul pets naturally were not good at direct clashes. Nevertheless, if they used their techniques well and supported the abilities of other soul pets, they could become an extremely

important existence on the battlefield!

Each type of soul pet had evident counters against another type. If a pure beast type soul pet were to encounter a wood type soul pet with coarse skin and thick flesh, even if the wood type's species rank and phase/stage was lower, the wood type soul pet would still easily win.

“It's almost been four years. They've probably all thought I've died.” Standing on the edge of the scattered and smashed island, a familiar face emerged in Chu Mu's mind. He began pondering whether to begin flying towards that city, towards his family clan, towards his mentally and physically exhausted family in the clan...

“Hou!!”

As Chu Mu's thoughts were in a disarray, the Ice Air Tiger slowly emerged from the sky and gently descended, landing in front of Chu Mu.

Chu Mu's gaze fell on the Ice Winged Tiger that had gradually emerged from the horizon. Three years had felt like one day, but Chu Mu was no longer the weak, young child struggling between life and death.

Chu Mu remembered back when he rode the Ice Winged Tiger, he had been overcome by immense ruefulness, dreaming of the day that he could have such a strong and imposing soul pet.

Yet, standing in front of this sixth phase High Class Commander Rank beast right now, Chu Mu was exceptionally calm and collected. This was because Mo Xie's strength was no longer greatly inferior to the Ice Winged Tiger's strength!!

Chapter 5: If He's Still Alive, This Position Might Not Be Yours

Nightmare City was nestled within the far and rolling mountain ranges on the east side of the Eternal Ocean. To the east of the Eternal Ocean were all craggy mountains and lofty mountain ranges, covering a very large area, and many intercity trade had to go through this vast Eternal Mountain Range.

Merchants often hired soul pets with high stamina to transport goods, or paid big money to hire flying soul pets to bring their goods from the south side of the Eternal Mountain Range to the north side.

But, soul pets that could fly were definitely very expensive. Not every merchant or good could withstand such transportation costs.

Of course, climbing over mountain after mountain was also very unpractical, so one still had to traverse straight through this Eternal Mountain Range somehow. But there were only two clear paths through the mountain. These two paths ran from south to north, meeting on the north side of the mountain range. And where these two crucial roads met was where Nightmare City was.

Nightmare City was a very developed Tenth Stage City, having the most authority on this entire continent.

Xia Guanghan's Ice Winged Tiger flew with Chu Mu continuously for a month before finally bringing him into this faraway Nightmare City.

While Chu Mu rode the Ice Winged Tiger through the skies of Nightmare City, Chu Mu felt overwhelmed by emotions!

Gangluo City was an Eighth Stage City. Compared to Nightmare City, it was still two stages lower. And Nightmare City's majesty and magnificence further struck shock deep in people's hearts. Especially with the grandeur and vastness the city imposed when looking down from the cloudy skies, Chu Mu found it hard to calm his heart for a long time.

Solemn, unmoving, ancient. As if it were a pillar that held up the skies, it quietly lied in the center of the boundless mountains, giving off a sense of deeply entrenched history as well as an unadorned sense of this king of cities' hegemony!

Any big city had a ban on its airspace, restricting any soul pet trainer that wanted to fly into the city at their will.

The massive and imposing Nightmare City also restricted soul pets from flying, but these types of bans were only pointed towards the vast majority. If one had enough power or position within the city, they would have the privilege of flying through the city's airspace. People who could get this privilege were often the leaders of the city!

Very quickly, after the Ice Winged Tiger carried Chu Mu into Nightmare City, a group of Nightmare Palace foremen rode their Wing Type soul pets up to stop it.

However, once these ten sky patrols recognized that the Ice Winged Tiger was Xia Guanghan's, they all showed expressions of respect and left a path open!

All ten of the air patrolling foremen were Spirit Soldiers riding Warrior Rank soul pets of the fifth phase and above. Yet, such people were only a few of the thousand Sky Knights within the city. From this, one could see the enormous power of Nightmare City!

Nightmare Palace Battlefield

The Nightmare Palace Battlefield stood at the very center of the entire city. It was a smooth and vast expanse of rocks. Standing in the middle, if one ignored the gorgeous palace structures in the distance, it was as if one stood in the middle of the Gobi.

The battlefield completely mimicked a wilderness environment. In this Gobi full of rock sands, there was a deep chasm that meandered its way through the battlefield, conveniently splitting the entire battlefield into two sides.

At this time, the two sides of the battlefield each had a few aggressive soul pets. They locked eyes with each other, as they stood on the edges of the chasm, facing the raging sandstorm!

On the north side of the battlefield were high seats. From that angle, one could see the entire expanse of the battlefield. The

vision of soul pet trainers were all superhuman, so even if the distance was great, if one sat in that vantage point, any battle within the entire battlefield could be easily seen.

On the high seats sat approximately only a dozen people. These people all viewed Xia Guanghan as the leader, with everyone sitting in inferior positions to him. Xia Guanghan wore an apathetic expression, uninterested in the battle of soul pets between the two teens on stage, seeming to know the result already.

“Boss Xia, you seem slightly dispirited.” Su Yu, who was sitting beside Xia Guanghan, slowly opened his mouth and said.

Xia Guanghan only nodded and said, “The battle will be decided within three minutes.”

Su Yu laughed and said, “Boss Xia, it seems that this position will ultimately still be mine.”

Hearing Su Yu’s words, an elderly man beside Su Yu laughed as well and spoke, “Nightmare Prince Su, you seem to be a bit too arrogant. Don’t forget the rising star of Nightmare Palace, Jia Ming, who could control a Blue Nightmare at the age of 18.”

“Boss Zhou, you seem to praise Jia Ming quite highly.” Su Yu said disapprovingly.

“Naturally. He is up next. I bet with a Fourth Level Duo type soul

crystal that Jia Ming will finish off the owner of that Fifth Phase Dire Wolf.” The man, who was called Boss Zhou, laughed and said.

Boss Zhou’s position within Nightmare Palace was just below Xia Guanghan’s. Xia Guanghan was in charge of picking a squire for the Little Princess this time, and this bearded Boss Zhou was the inspector.

From the looks of it, this gathering of Nightmare Palace teens for a competition was to select a loyal squire for Little Princess.

But, in reality, Xia Guanghan was unusually strict in the selection process. This strictness made some smarter people realize that this “job” may be closely related to a bigger event in the future.

So, this time, though the squire selection battle was lowkey, there were still quite a few young and powerful people who specially set aside their status to fight for this new position.

The eldest son of the Blue Nightmare Palace Master, Su Yu, was one of those young and powerful people who was striving to get this position after some information was leaked.

Su Yu had long ago gained fame within Nightmare Palace. There was rarely a match among his peers for his tyrannical Blue Nightmare. Just because of the competition from this guy, more than half of the people who wanted to fight for this position forfeited instantly.....

Jia Ming was also outstanding among the teens. This teen had crawled up all the way from the lowest levels. After being noticed by Boss Zhou and a few years of training, he was now also one of the most potent people in Nightmare Palace. Similar to Su Yu, he had also obtained the highest achievement a teen could receive in Nightmare Palace: the title of “Nightmare Prince”.

“Eight minutes, hehe, seems like Jia Ming’s power had also increased. He can get rid of a Spirit Teacher within eight minutes.” Boss Zhou gazed at the blue clothed teen on the battlefield and wore a pleased smile.

Jia Ming was trained by Boss Zhou. Since Boss Zhou had some insider information, he naturally wished for Jia Ming to obtain this crucial position.

“Boss Zhou, since you bet a Fourth Level Duo type Soul Crystal that Jia Ming would win within ten minutes.....”

At this moment, Su Yu let out a confident smile and slowly said, “Then, I, Su Yu, will also bet a Fourth Level Duo Type Soul Crystal that I will get rid of Jia Ming within ten minutes. If I can’t, I will automatically surrender at ten minutes, and this soul crystal will be yours.”

Saying this, Su Yu pulled a sparkling soul crystal out of his spatial ring.

“Beast type and lightning type Fourth Level soul crystal!!” Boss Zhou stared blankly, totally not expecting for Su Yu to be this

arrogant. After some time, he said, “Are you sure you’re putting this thing as a bet?”

“I’m sure.”

“Then if you win, what do you want?” said Boss Zhou.

“Nothing. This bet is just to let you know that Jia Ming is merely a piece of trash in my eyes.” Su Yu said condescendingly.

Saying this, everyone around him let out unconcealed signs of shock as they watched Su Yu, who was deliberately causing a disturbance.

Keeping a grave face, Xia Guanghan’s eyes fell on Su Yu as he slowly said, “You are indeed Nightmare Palace’s Number One Egotist.”

Su Yu nonchalantly laughed and cast an incantation to summon a gust of wind that brought his body up from the high seat and onto the battlefield. This brought him into vision of Jia Ming, who had just finished a battle.

“Boss Xia, do you think Su Yu can really defeat Jia Ming within ten minutes? Jia Ming isn’t someone to look down upon.” the woman beside Xia Guanghan said in a low voice.

This woman was Xia Guanghan’s personal maid. Similar to Xia Guanghan, she was always cold as ice.

“Yes, he has the power.”

The battle had already started, but as time passed, Boss Zhou, who thought he would get the Fourth Level Spirit Crystal, was increasingly disappointed.

Seeing the scenes on the battlefield, Boss Zhou couldn't help but admit that he had indeed underestimated Su Yu's strength.

“Seven minutes.....even faster than the time it took for Jia Ming to finish other competitors.....”

“No wonder he's Nightmare Palace's Number One Egotist. Su Yu was indeed worthy of being arrogant. He didn't even summon his Blue Nightmare and won within seven minutes.”

“I had once thought that Jia Ming's strength was very respectable, but compared to the Number One Egotist, the skill difference is still very obvious.”

Very soon, sounds of discussion started within the high seats. Many people have only heard of Su Yu, and had never seen him before. Now that he revealed his strength, he was indeed very astonishing, and he lived up to his name!

On the Battlefield, Su Yu was arrogantly watching the half-kneeling Jia Ming, smiling and not even concealing his haughtiness.

“Even if you train three more years, you will not be my match.” Su Yu retracted his soul pet and slowly started walking towards the high seats, not giving Jia Ming another look.

After reaching the high seat and sitting back at his seat, he completely ignored the somewhat pissed Boss Zhou and looked over to Xia Guanghan. “Boss Xia, you don’t seem to be a man to procrastinate. Why don’t you announce the results. Is it possible that anyone else is more suited for this position than I am?”

Xia Guanghan looked at Su Yu, and his grave face unusually showed an odd expression. “Wait ten minutes.”

“Why wait ten minutes?” Su Yu said, puzzled.

“Boss Xia, no one here is Su Yu’s match. In reality, there are only a few people that could fight Su Yu within the entirety of Nightmare Palace. Now that he’s eaten all his opponents, is there still a need to hesitate?”

“Boss Xia, my ten minutes is very precious, but if you give me a reason, I am willing to wait.” Su Yu said.

Xia Guanghan looked into the distant skies of Nightmare City, but quickly retracted his gaze and said, “Remember me saying you have a very strong competitor?”

“I have some recollection.”

“He’s still alive, and he’s in the airspace of Nightmare City right now. If this person is still alive, this position might not be yours.”

Chapter 6: Ice Air Fairy VS Blue Nightmare

(1)

Xia Guanghan's position in the Nightmare Palace was very high. Though he wasn't in a supremely top-notch position, everyone knew that Xia Guanghan, who had received the Nightmare Palace Owner's attention, would have an immeasurable future in Nightmare Palace.

Everyone knew that Xia Guanghan was a very cold and grim person. He had seen many talented teens, but none had truly received his praise before.

Yet, everyone found that when Xia Guanghan talked of the guy that was still alive, his eyes revealed some praise. This led many people around him to be very surprised. After all, Xia Guanghan's strict treatment towards his subordinates was infamous throughout the entirety of Nightmare Palace!

“What do you mean ‘if he's still alive’? How can a person whose own life is still in danger have the qualifications to compete against me?” Su Yu didn't try to restrain his own arrogance in the slightest. In reality, he never needed to restrain his arrogance. Even in front of the man who was known as the “Harsh Executioner”, he would never restrain himself in the slightest.

“Wait then. If you are so confident in yourself, if you can beat him, this position is yours.” Xia Guanghan replied.

“Okay, I'll see what powers this person that Boss Xia thinks so

highly of has!” Su Yu said.

Beside him, Zhou Luling was equally caught off guard, his eyes following Xia Guanghan’s gaze into the sky, wanting to know what kind of person could really garner this much appreciation from Xia Guanghan. It was enough appreciation for Xia Guanghan to think that this person could match Su Yu with all his power!

Ten minutes passed by quickly. Affected by Xia Guanghan, everyone’s attention was on the slowly nearing organism in the sky.

Everyone recognized Xia Guanghan’s Ice Winged Tiger. What everyone was looking for was naturally the unkempt black clothed teen on the Tiger.

The black clothed teen straddled the Ice Winged Tiger. Before the Ice Winged Tiger descended completely, he jumped down from ten meters, landing steadily before Xia Guanghan.

But, when the teen landed in front of everyone, excluding Xia Guanghan, everyone else’s expressions became somewhat strange. From Xia Guanghan’s words, everyone was very interested in the approaching teen, guessing which superior’s apprentice this teen was.....

One really couldn’t judge them for changing their expressions to ones of doubt and even contempt, because the teen that jumped down from the Ice Winged Tiger was really unbearable to look at in terms of both clothing and appearance. To be honest, many

beggars on the streets were dressed better than this teen.

“Boss Xia, you mean him?” Even the cold woman standing behind Xia Guanghan couldn’t stay calm.

Xia Guanghan examined the ragged Chu Mu and simply nodded, “Should be.”

In three years time, Chu Mu’s appearance had changed considerably. His facial features were sharper, and he was widely different from the previously young Chu Mu.

“Boss Xia, if you don’t want to give this position to me, just say it. You don’t need to find such a comical thing. Even if who you meant is him, I don’t have interest in battling a person whose stench is unbearable.” Su Yu looked at Chu Mu’s appearance and distinctly had trouble connecting him with “young powerful trainer”.

Chu Mu’s clothes were not too strange. Three years of outdoors survival had made him oblivious of his outer appearance. Even in the month of riding the Ice Winged Tiger to Nightmare City, Chu Mu still immersed himself completely in the training of Violent Blood Pupil, never caring to stop at a certain location to dress himself better.

Furthermore, with the Ice Winged Tiger following its given path of flight, stopping at any wilderness location to rest when tired and resuming flight when rested, Chu Mu never had the chance to rest at any city anyways.

Xia Guanghan didn't realize this. Chu Mu's caveman appearance with tattered clothes was indeed quite indecent.

"Chu Mu, right?" Xia Guanghan vaguely remembered the name.

Chu Mu nodded, not minding everyone else's strange looks.

"Feng Xiang, bring him down to make him presentable, let us have the competition later." Xia Guanghan said to the cold woman behind him.

"Boss Xia, I don't have time to wait for this guy to slowly wash and groom." Su Yu said coldly with a humph.

Su Yu, as the son of the Blue Nightmare Palace Master, had a very superior position. Calling Xia Guanghan Boss Xia had already shown that Su Yu, the arrogant little prince he was, revered Xia Guanghan.

"If its a battle, let's start now." Chu Mu glanced at the neatly dressed Su Yu, but his eyes were incomparably indifferent, as if watching a man that was about to die.

Feeling Chu Mu's penetrating glare, Su Yu's brows immediately furrowed. The title of Nightmare Palace's Number One Egotist was definitely not unfounded. Su Yu never had to directly regard any of his peers, and he couldn't stand any disrespectful looks from others either.

“Who do you think you are? You don’t even know your basic etiquette. Let’s not forget about you not paying your respects when you just arrived, but how dare you speak recklessly!” Su Yu glared fiercely at the caveman-like Chu Mu. Su Yu’s identity was very noble, and he never bothered to act like he was amiable and approachable. Facing a person he never met with no background, he would of course show no politeness.

“I only know how to kill.” Facing the prince of an influential big power, Chu Mu still had an absolutely indifferent face. The words he said, coupled with his scary glance, however, caused people to feel shivers!

Killing too many people will naturally cause a killing aura to form. Chu Mu now had this densely packed aura of killing. Especially his pair of black pupils. When they stared at a certain place, it would become as ice-cold as a sword!

“Do you want to die? Do you know who I am?!” Su Yu was obviously enraged!

“I don’t know who you are. If you want to battle, let’s finish it now, don’t waste my time.” Chu Mu directly turned around and walked towards the battlefield, his entire person resembling a wild beast about to reveal its savageness. Even when restrained, he still emitted a sense of power.

Seeing Chu Mu walk into the battlefield, Su Yu angrily grinded his teeth and said to Xia Guanghan, “Boss Xia, I can never restrain

myself in battles and may accidentally kill your subordinate.....”

“Feel free, if you can, that is.....” Xia Guanghan said slowly.

Xia Guanghan didn't know what level Chu Mu's strength was at but, anyone who could live and escape Prison Island must also have the strongest survival ability on the entire island. Though Su Yu was strong and had also experienced killing, it was impossible for him to have the same survival instincts that embodied Chu Mu, who developed them through three years of ceaselessly killing.

So, it wasn't that Xia Guanghan had faith in Chu Mu; Xia Guanghan had faith in the killer instincts of anyone who could survive on the three thousand men Prison Island.

“Chu Mu, right? You should pray that Xia Guanghan can save you in time. That way, you might still live cowardly!” Su Yu said coldly.

“So it isn't a life and death match.....” Chu Mu looked as if he just lost most of his interest.

Hearing this, Su Yu immediately felt a breath of air pent up in his chest, threatening to blow his lungs up if he didn't release it.

Those watching from the high seats were also all incessantly chattering. Su Yu before was already extremely arrogant. No one expected that this neanderthal that came later was even more insolent, keeping “killing” in every sentence of his. It was as if

without killing, he had no interest in battling.

“Stop this nonsense, summon your soul pet!!” Su Yu pushed down his anger and said coldly.

“You first.....” Chu Mu said.

Su Yu took a deep breath, barely concealing his rage. He really didn't want to have a debate with some savage, so he just chanted an incantation and summoned his Blue Nightmare.

Blue Nightmare: Other World – dark type – nightmare species – Blue Nightmare subspecies high class commander rank.

On Prison Island, Chu Mu had already dealt with many prisoners that possessed Blue Nightmares, so naturally he knew the Blue Nightmare well.

Chu Mu's insight was also very special. He could tell that the Blue Nightmare that Su Yu summoned was a noble among Blue Nightmares. It had greater potential and talent than those Nightmares on Prison Island.

“The competition only allows summoning one soul pet and no switching allowed.” Xia Guanghan's voice slowly floated over.

Chu Mu nodded but immediately casted the summoning incantation and summoned his Ice Air Fairy in front of him without hesitation.

“Ice Air Fairy?”

Seeing the soul pet that Chu Mu summoned, Su Yu expression immediately turned strange.

Su Yu’s Blue Nightmare was already at the fifth phase third stage. Blue Nightmares, especially noble, evil soul pets like the Abyss Blue Nightmares were possibly the strongest of the commander rank.

If one sent a Warrior Class soul pet to fight it, if it weren’t above the sixth phase fourth stage, then the chances of it winning was essentially nil.

Chu Mu’s Ice Air Fairy was obviously still at the fifth phase ninth stage, not even sixth phase. Additionally, its rank was still a full rank lower.....

“Aren’t you embarrassed for letting such trash appear? Seems like I only need three minutes to get rid of you!” Su Yu said while laughing greatly.

Chu Mu didn’t agree. In individual fighting between soul pets, Species Rank and Phase didn’t decide everything. The Fire Type Mo Xie and the Dark Type Night Thunder Dream Beast may be able to defeat this Blue Nightmare, but clearly the Ice Type Ice Air Fairy would have less of a hassle doing the same thing.

“Its skin is white and flawless, the element of ice and frost naturally undulating between its fingers, its two pupils snow white. This is a top talent Ice Air Fairy..... But even if it had top talent and was a strong soul pet in the warrior rank, it shouldn't have been summoned to contend against the Blue Nightmare.” The experienced and knowledgeable Zhou Luling opened his mouth and said.

Just like Zhou Luling, when everyone else saw that Chu Mu had summoned an Ice Air Fairy, their eyes widened. Everyone knew that this caveman was egotistical, and they knew that Xia Guanghan was optimistic about him.

But, however egotistical he was, he shouldn't summon a fifth phase ninth stage warrior rank Ice Air Fairy against a fifth phase third stage commander rank Blue Nightmare!

Right after Zhou Luling made his comment, the battle burst into action. The deep, blue-flamed Blue Nightmare was very similar in temperament to his owner, impatiently casting his strong Devil Fire abilities, attempting to end the battle quickly.

Yet, the Ice Air Fairy was also just like its owner, calm and collected. As the Blue Nightmare attacked violently, it perfectly casted an ice wall that stopped the sweeping Devil Fire.

“Five minutes.....” Xia Guanghan watched Chu Mu command his Ice Air Fairy and slowly spoke again.

“Boss Xia, you mean this Chu Mu person will only last five

minutes?” Feng Xiang said in a whisper.

“No, Su Yu.....” A sliver of light shone in Xia Guanghan’s eyes, as if simply seeing the start of the battle was enough for him to see the end.

Xia Guanghan’s words made everyone nearby even more speechless.

Nightmare Palace’s Number One Egotist only lasting five minutes against that caveman?

What was wrong with Xia Guanghan today? An Ice Air Fairy beating a Blue Nightmare was already a miracle, yet he even said that it would only take five minutes to end such an uneven match—was that even possible?

Chapter 7: Ice Air Fairy VS Blue Nightmare

(2)

“Xia Guanghan, it isn't that I doubt your judgement. That Ice Air Fairy is indeed a very high tier warrior rank soul pet. However, a Blue Nightmare is a Blue Nightmare. The Ice Air Fairy needs to be at the sixth phase before being on equal terms with the Fifth Phase Blue Nightmare. As for a Fifth Phase Ninth Stage Ice Air Fairy, and in five minutes too.....” Zhou Luling said.

“Since you doubt what I said, then we can also make a bet with a Level Four Duo Type Soul Crystal, how about that?” Xia Guanghan looked at Zhou Luling and said indifferently.

Zhou Luling looked hesitant. Though he didn't like the owner of the Blue Nightmare Su Yu, maybe even hate him, the two soul pets were indeed widely mismatched in power.

Zhou Luling and Xia Guanghan never got along originally, and seeing the imposing Blue Nightmare on the battlefield, Zhou Luling actually agreed immediately, “Just as you say!”

Xia Guanghan laughed and didn't say anymore, his eyes watching the battlefield. Zhou Luling also focused his attention completely onto the match.

With two of the superiors competing, this battle naturally became even more interesting!

On the battlefield

Su Yu always stood on the edge of the chasm. His Blue Nightmare had the ability to float already. Its blue and fiery body complimented its sturdy death knight-like demonic body, with its ghostly blue flames recklessly fluttering above the chasm!!

The Ice Air Fairy similarly had the ability to float, with its hazy, glacial ice supporting its sparkling and transparent body. Its slender arms quickly waved around, as a string of incomprehensible fairy incantations flew from its mouth!

“Soon I’ll make your Ice Air Fairy a puddle of water!” Su Yu didn’t cast any soul techniques, choosing instead to arrogantly command his Blue Nightmare to cross the twenty meter long gap to move towards Chu Mu.

Chu Mu also didn’t cast any soul techniques. In reality, though, if there were any suitable techniques, Chu Mu wouldn’t hold back.

Violent Blood Pupil’s effect only worked on Beast Type soul pets, meaning that it could only be cast on Mo Xie.

When Chu Mu battled, he never said anything unnecessary. This was because once an opponent was put in front of him, Chu Mu would devote his entire mind to it. Unless he confirmed that the enemy was dead, he would never let his guard down even the tiniest bit.

This was a habit forged through the past three years. If he hadn't adopted such an instinct, then he would've been dead more than ten times over already!

“Ice Air Dance!”

The Ice Air Fairy's fairy incantations almost never stopped. The Fifth Phase Ninth Stage Ice Air Fairy, after three years of growth, was no longer the naive and cute child of the elements. It had instead slowly transformed to show its absolute advantage as the darling of ice. When faced with the commander rank aura of the Blue Nightmare, it didn't show any cowardice, but instead showed an unyielding fighting spirit-just like Chu Mu!

White frost continuously appeared above the deep chasm, forming countless sharp icicles that darted and danced around, blossoming into magnificent, yet frigid ice flowers!!

“Flashy tricks!”

Su Yu laughed belittlingly, and actually directly commanded the Blue Nightmare to use its powerful body to float straight through the dancing icicles over the chasm!

“Ice Air Dance, Overlay.”

Seeing the Blue Nightmare enter deep into the area of the Ice Air Dance, Chu Mu immediately smiled, and sent a command to his Ice Air Fairy.

Ice Air Dance was, in itself, already a very damaging ability. Once Overlaid, its effects became even stronger.

The Blue Nightmare within the Ice Air Dance was quickly engulfed by countless ice crystals, causing the deep blue Devil Fire on its body to actually grow dimmer!

“Overlaying abilities.....” Zhou Luling’s expression slightly shifted. Overlaying abilities was a unique ability of the Elemental World. Whether one could cast it or not was solely dependent on the soul pet’s power of understanding combined with diligent practicing!

Ice type already had a very strong suppressing effect against fire type. Though the Blue Nightmare’s Devil Fire had the ability to burn souls, it was still a type of fire. Though the Blue Nightmare could still withstand a single Ice Air Dance, after the Overlay, its deep blue fire quickly started to fade.

“With this power, how could you compete against my Blue Nightmare!?” Though Su Yu was angry, he wasn’t flustered, as he immediately commanded his Blue Nightmare again.

The Blue Nightmare that was surrounded by ice crystals started to spin. As it spun faster and faster, it gradually became a deep blue Devil Fire whirlpool.

The Devil Fire whirlpool swiftly struggled free of the restriction of the two Ice Air Dances, unexpectedly dashing straight across the

chasm towards the Ice Air Fairy, who was floating on the other edge of the chasm.

Facing the Blue Nightmare that was sweeping through intimidatingly, Chu Mu's eyes were still apathetic, merely watching the Ice Air Fairy not far from him. Even when the terrifying, deep blue Soul Devil Fire neared, Chu Mu didn't move a single bit.

Similarly, the Ice Air Fairy simply stood still. Facing the Blue Nightmare's Devil Fire whirlpool, it was still calmly chanting away.

“Die!!” Su Yu coldly spat out a single word.

Seeing the Blue Nightmare close in, Chu Mu finally reacted by giving out a command.

The Ice Air Fairy had prepared its spell long ago. Almost at the same instant that the Blue Nightmare was closing in, the area near the Ice Air Fairy abruptly burst out with a white radiance!

The instant the radiance burst into existence, with the Ice Air Fairy in the center, a circle of ten, fifteen meter long massive ice swords formed ten meters from the fairy.

The ice swords created a ring, astonishingly hovering near the Ice Air Fairy. The Devil Fire whirlpool for that the Blue Nightmare took on perfectly entered the range of this floating, Hovering Ice

Sword Formation!

“Heng, with such a slow ability, before the ability is even casted it will die!” Seeing the massive Hovering Ice Sword Formation, Su Yu wasn’t afraid at all, ordering his Blue Nightmare to dive straight for the Ice Air Fairy’s body.

“The victory is set.” Xia Guanghan said slowly, but his attention was rather focused on the totally smooth Ice Wall that the Ice Air Fairy put down at the beginning of the fight to defend itself.

The Blue Nightmare came aggressively, its commander rank aggressiveness displayed without restraint, as if any defense was brittle and easily flammable against its scary Devil Fire.

The Ice Air Fairy was still chanting its incantation, causing all the huge white sword tips to lock onto the Blue Nightmare within the Formation!

“Huhuhu!!”

The turbulent Devil Fire swept past, quickly engulfing the Ice Air Fairy’s slender body. Within the deep blue flame tongues, the Ice Air Fairy looked as if it instantly evaporated, disappearing completely!

“It can’t even take a single blow.” Su Yu saw the Blue Nightmare demolish the Ice Air Fairy’s body and smiled his usual smile again.

Zhou Luling saw that the long ranged Ice Air Fairy was swallowed by flames and also let out a big breath, secretly delighted.

“There’s an Ice Type ability called Ice Mirror. It’s appearance is very similar to Ice Wall, but it’s even smoother than the Ice Wall. Many people without battle experience easily mix the two up.” At this time, Xia Guanghan suddenly spoke up, as slow as usual.

Hearing what Xia Guanghan said, everyone suddenly noticed that on the battlefield, there had indeed always been an “Ice Wall”!

The Ice wall was casted by the Ice Air Fairy at the beginning of their battle. It looked as if it was placed in the wrong place as it didn’t serve any blocking purpose, and thus it was left intact the entire battle.

But after Xia Guanghan mentioned it, everyone suddenly noticed that this “Ice Wall” was indeed very smooth. Under the shine of the sun, it was almost looked like a mirror!

“Sousou!!! Sousou!!!”

The ten hovering ice swords suddenly moved. The ten ice swords originally circled the Ice Air Fairy, yet the Ice Air Fairy’s original position had already been swallowed by the flames of the Blue Nightmare, meaning that the Blue Nightmare was right at the center of the ten hovering ice swords!

The ten ice swords then frantically stabbed towards the Blue Nightmare at the center. The ice type ice swords did double the damage to the Blue Nightmare. Even though the Blue Nightmare had a Sixth Level Intermediate Stage defense, it still sustained heavy internal damage due to the frigid ice.

“Nie!!”

The Blue Nightmare let out a shrill cry of pain, as its Devil Fire dimmed down even further, threatening to be extinguished completely!

As the Blue Nightmare screamed, the Ice Air Fairy’s body slowly floated out from the Ice Mirror, its snow white pupils proudly looking at the arrogant and higher ranked Blue Nightmare.

“In the usage of abilities and battling awareness, you are practically worse than some Spirit Disciples.” Chu Mu indifferently looked at the dull Su Yu and slowly said.

Done speaking, Chu Mu waved his hand and told his Ice Air Fairy to remove the ice poison attack that had seeped into the Blue Nightmare’s body. If it weren’t for Xia Guanghan’s reminder, Chu Mu would have unhesitatingly let the Ice Air Fairy destroy the Devil Fire source within the Blue Nightmare’s body, making this noble Blue Nightmare a Devil Fire-less evil soul pet.

Chu Mu had been fighting for the entirety of the past three years, and had faced many soul pet trainers that were both older and more clever than him. From the three years of fighting different

prisoners and soul pets, he learned many different fighting tactics and had gained a lot of experience.

Many times, when one had the type advantage, fighting a higher phase soul pet wasn't an issue.

When training the Ice Air Fairy, Chu Mu made it the purest Ice Type. The Ice Air Fairy already had the most elite ice talent within the warrior rank.

Any soul pet had both its advantages and disadvantages. These species differences were formed from the sum of its different abilities.

From only ice type abilities and their control, the Ice Air Fairy was at the commander rank. Yet, combining things like close combat, speed, intelligence, defense, and attack, the Ice Air Fairy was only at the warrior rank.

From this battle, Chu Mu displayed the Ice Air Fairy's ability to control ice to the greatest extent; looking at types, the Ice Air Fairy was at an advantage as well. Additionally, the Soul Devil Fire wasn't very effective against pure elemental soul pets. Su Yu would definitely lose this match, and lose it horribly too!

Chapter 8: Title, Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince

He lost, and he lost without a doubt. Su Yu lifelessly stared at the Blue Nightmare that he had always been so intensely proud of. At this moment, the awe-inspiring Blue Nightmare was so, so painfully haggard!

The Blue Nightmare was haggard due to the ice poisoning, but this also reflected the difficult situation that Su Yu, the Nightmare Palace Number One Egotist, was facing.

Su Yu didn't think that he was the strongest out of all the Nightmare Palace teens. There were many renowned prodigies that he could only look up to. Yet, all of those prodigies were well known and famous. Everyone within Nightmare Palace knew of them, and even the entire soul pet trainer society had heard of them.

If he were beaten by them, then Su Yu wouldn't have any emotions.

However, to be beaten by a nameless, almost caveman-like person, such a disparity in expectation was the hardest to bear!

“How is this possible! How can I, Su Yu, lose!!! Teach me a lesson? You absolutely don't have the qualifications!!”

Finally, Su Yu, who still couldn't stand the damage done to his

ego, madly chanted another incantation to summon two more soul pets!

Dual Summon!

A technique that could simultaneously summon two soul pets!

Two dazzling symbols quickly appeared in front of Su Yu's face, slowly revealing two mighty soul pets' bodies!!

A dark grey, four meter long huge wolf brought a strong gust of blood-scented wind with it, violently blowing through the deep chasm and buffeting Chu Mu's face!

Fifth phase sixth stage Dire Wolf! High class warrior rank soul pet!

The other symbol had an even more imposing aura. Light bursted into existence as lightning fell from above, sending echoes throughout the vast and empty battlefield!

Fifth phase first stage four Winged Electric Snake Demon! Low class commander rank!

Once the two soul pets appeared, their auras immediately pushed forward, causing the Ice Air Fairy to fall back a few steps!

From the high seats, seeing Su Yu summon other soul pets which

was against the rules, Xia Guanghan's brows creased immediately.

Seeing the appearance of the two soul pets, Chu Mu's expression didn't change in the slightest. Abnormally calm, he started chanting his own incantation, slowly opening the soul pact summoning symbol for Mo Xie!

Initially, the summoning symbol for Mo Xie was blue, but now it had transformed into an elegant silver!

Silver represented nobility, yet this silver had a captivating red peeking through, representing the unrestricted wildness hidden within the nobility. This was the reflection of the soul pet's powerful battling heart!

“What's that?!”

Chu Mu's magnificent summoning symbol immediately attracted everyone's attention. As the light faded, six flamboyant tails abruptly unfolded!!

“Huhu!!”

The captivatingly red Demon Fire Evil Flames wantonly jumped around with the unfurling of the six tails. The burning flames caused the temperature around her to spike upwards. The terrifying Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox's demonic aura blossomed in the rising heat, causing the sand and gravel on the ground to scatter away in a rippling wave around Mo Xie!!

A soul pet's aura was like the aura of a battling expert. It needed to experience countless battles before slowly forming. Though high ranking species had strong auras, only auras formed through real bloodbaths and killing would have the greatest intimidation!

With three years of prison life, Mo Xie and Chu Mu were both the same-almost always battling. Once a soul pet makes killing a habit, this type of ruthlessness, cruelty, and coldness ingrained deep into their bones would transform into a sweeping aura that locked onto enemies like the strongest of storms!!

Currently, Mo Xie was releasing the killing fox aura within her body without bound. This massive aura almost instantly covered over the auras of the Dire Wolf and Four Winged Devil Snake. Those devilish, silver pupils casted Evil Stare without warning, causing those she gazed at to experience the strongest of shocks!

An astonishing scene appeared! The Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox simply stood there arrogantly, while the Dire Wolf and Four Winged Devil Snake started to shake uncontrollably, losing all their willpower to fight!!

Soul pets who've experienced the baptism of killing were on a whole different level when compared to soul pets pampered and fed with soul crystals. Even though Su Yu was the ruthless prince of Nightmare Palace, when compared to Chu Mu and the beast-like aura he had, it was like comparing a rabbit and a wolf!

Xia Guanghan had already stood up, wanting to stop the cheating

Su Yu, but it looked like there was no need. Both Su Yu and his soul pets were completely overwhelmed by Chu Mu and Mo Xie in terms of their auras.

If a soul pet trainer had a strong will, then the soul pets who were telepathically connected would similarly have a strong will. In the same way, if a soul pet experienced deep terror, the owner would also feel such emotions!

“If not for Xia Guanghan saying that killing was not allowed, you and your soul pet would be dead ten times over!” Though his clothes were still shabby, Chu Mu had the same powerful killing intent as Mo Xie when he said that coldly.

Soul pet trainers and soul pets were connected by the heart, so imperceptibly, soul pet trainers would gain some of the strong aspects of their soul pets, especially Chu Mu, who had a soul pet ability like Chong Mei that could cast soul pet techniques.

Though he was not casting Chong Mei, Chu Mu’s eyes were currently silver. This silver, however, wasn’t a noble silver, but instead an emotionless yet cold killing silver!

The difference in power and aura made Su Yu even more dazed, causing him to have no more will to battle!

Chu Mu swept an eye at the lost Su Yu and smiled devilishly, but slowly chanted an incantation to retract his Ice Air Fairy back into his soul pet space.

Seeing Su Yu void of any meaning to fight, Chu Mu finally chanted again to retract the brassy Mo Xie back as well.

Chu Mu indifferently walked out of the battlefield towards Xia Guanghan on the high seats.

“Xia Guanghan, this person.....who is he, to have an Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox, such a soul pet of immense quality!” Zhou Luling finally recovered from his surprise and asked slightly stiffly.

Zhou Luling had seen many soul pet trainers with heavy killing intent, yet those people often had lots of experience and were already people of fame. But this teen that looked only twenty years old unexpectedly had such a heavy scent of blood, able to scare Nightmare Palace’s Number One Egotist Su Yu enough to make him lose the will to fight. How could such a person be nameless? He should’ve been famous throughout Nightmare Palace long ago!

“You know of the Prison Island within Eternal Ocean?” Xia Guanghan said.

“Of course, if I remember correctly, you walked out of there?” Zhou Luling said.

Yet, when he said that, Zhou Luling suddenly understood. His expression became even more shocked, as he looked with disbelief at the slowly approaching Chu Mu!

“You mean.....this teen.....”

“King of Prison Island! How could this be, everyone knows that the people locked in Prison Island.....this teen looks only twenty!”

An uproar started!!

The Prison Island had one expert every three years, and the expert that survived was named King of Prison Island! This death game had been going on for a very long time. The person who was quickly rising through the ranks, the person with unlimited potential, Xia Guanghan was the King of Prison Island from twelve years ago. At the time, Xia Guanghan was only twenty one, said to be the youngest King of Prison Island in the past few centuries!

“Correctly speaking, he should be eighteen years old. He broke my record.” Xia Guanghan said.

Twelve years ago, when Xia Guanghan became the youngest King of Prison Island, there was a decently sized commotion caused within Nightmare Palace. With the appearance of this new King, another wave of commotions would start!!

An eighteen year old King of Prison Island!

In twelve years, Xia Guanghan’s King of Prison Island record had been broken by an eighteen year old!!

When the spiritually lost Su Yu walked back from the battlefield,

he also heard their discussion, causing the shock in his heart to expand even further!

“You really survived on Prison Island for three years and are only eighteen years old?” Su Yu stared at Chu Mu and interrogated.

Chu Mu only nodded without saying more. Walking in front of Xia Guanghan, he said lightly, “Three years ago you said that when I walk out of Prison Island I will receive absolute freedom. Now I want to return to my clan first.....”

“No hurry, I have one thing I want you to do. This will not be hard nor will it obstruct you from returning to your clan.” Xia Guanghan said.

“What thing?”

“From today on, you will be the Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince. Your job – to be Princess Jin Rou’s personal squire.” Xia Guanghan said solemnly.

“Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince?”

Chu Mu didn’t understand much about Nightmare Palace, and naturally did not understand what that title conveyed.

But, when Xia Guanghan said this, everyone else’s expressions changed noticeably!

Chu Mu didn't know the title of Nightmare Prince, but they knew!

Nightmare Prince was the highest honor given to the younger generation of Nightmare Palace. In the entire Nightmare Palace, there were countless teen experts, but those who could have this title were very few! Even Su Yu, if not for his father's position, wouldn't be able to have such a supremely honorable title.

In Nightmare Palace, if one had the title of Nightmare Prince, one had the power of Vice City Master in any city under the eighth level that was under the control of Nightmare Palace. All men under those wielding significant power had to unconditionally follow any orders given by a Nightmare Prince!

Nightmare City was a tenth level city, while Gang Luo City where Chu Mu's Clan resided was an eighth level city.

The city's highest power holder was naturally the City Master. The City Master of Gang Luo City was the Clan Master of Yang Clan. The Vice City Master was Qin Clan's Clan Master. This meant that the owner of the title Nightmare Prince, Chu Mu, was now equal in power to Qin Clan's Clan Master!

Such an honor would have taken forever to earn if Chu Mu was still in Gang Luo City. Yet, within three years and after receiving the recognition from Nightmare Palace, Chu Mu's position completely leapt upwards-he now had greater power than even his own Clan Master!!

Chapter 9: Nightmare Palace

“Your Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox is pretty good.” Xia Guanghan slowly stood up. After he said this, he turned around and left.

Chu Mu watched the back image of this icily arrogant man, vaguely feeling that the three years older Xia Guanghan was even more enigmatic.

Every King of Prison Island in Nightmare Palace received lots of attention from people. People would very eagerly hold out olive branches to recruit them as one of their own.

But, the situation now was very obvious. This eighteen year old King of Prison Island was already the subordinate of Xia Guanghan. Everyone in Nightmare Palace knew Xia Guanghan’s temperament, so naturally no one dared to take Xia Guanghan’s people.

So, including Zhou Luling, everyone else could only shake their heads and leave. They could also all guess that, after training such a King of Prison Island for Nightmare Palace, Xia Guanghan’s position in Nightmare Palace would rise even higher.

“This is yours.....” Zhou Luling stood up, putting the fourth level duo-type soul crystal he lost to Xia Guanghan in front of Chu Mu, and then turned to leave without lingering any further.

Chu Mu was puzzled as he looked at the precious fourth level duo

type soul crystal, showing a doubtful expression.

“Boss Xia bestowed it upon you.” Feng Xiang, the cold lady who stood behind Xia Guanghan said lightly. Chu Mu looked at this girl and only nodded.

“Follow me.” Feng Xiang said.

Chu Mu still only nodded and followed the slender and arrogant woman.

Feng Xiang brought Chu Mu into the gorgeous and imposing palaces of Nightmare Palace, following the complicated corridors as they went forward.

“Nightmare Palace is split into the Inner Nightmare Palace and the Outer Nightmare Palace. You have the status of “Nightmare Prince”, so you can enter the Inner Palace, but you still live in Outer Nightmare Palace. The inner and outer palaces have very clear boundaries marked, and the pathways are also guarded by people. When you enter the Inner Nightmare Palace, just display your identity seal, but remember, don’t walk around randomly within the inner palace. Wherever you want to go, make sure you know the route and walk along the route. If you walk into places you shouldn’t be in, you may become a prisoner.”

Walking in front, Feng Xiang generally told Chu Mu some of the rules within Nightmare Palace.

Chu Mu still simply listened, not interrupting her while his eyes swept over the splendid structures around him.

“Okay, here is your living quarters, given to you based on your position.” Feng Xiang pushed open the sole house in the courtyard and said to Chu Mu.

Chu Mu also lived in a single courtyard in his clan. Though the architectural style of this outer palace courtyard was different from his own, its degree of luxury wasn't any less. Nightmare Palace sure was rich, giving a princess's squire living grounds equal to one owned by the young master of a big clan.

“Soon, someone will lead twenty women into your room. You can choose any two as your personal servants.” Feng Xiang said.

“Oh, what kind of women?” Chu Mu said. Chu Mu was used to being alone. If not necessary, he didn't need anyone to serve him.

“A few Spirit Soldiers that signed contracts with Cyan Nightmares. In Nightmare Palace, they have a level three title.”

“What does “title” mean? What does the title of Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince mean?” Chu Mu asked again.

“A title is a position within Nightmare Palace, split into ten levels, with the first level being the lowest, and the tenth level being the highest. Nightmare Prince is a seventh level title, and is also the highest honor a member under 30 can receive. Other than

having the power of a vice city master in any Nightmare Palace city below the eighth level, every season, you can go to the Nightmare Palace book pavilion and select a soul technique book. If you don't want the soul technique book, you can also choose to receive soul crystals. As for other specific powers you have, you can ask your servants." Feng Xiang said.

Chu Mu nodded, very pleasantly surprised at the seventh level title he received.

"In the future, if Boss Xia has any tasks, I will be in charge of delivering them to you. The little princess isn't in Nightmare Palace right now, so you can return to your clan first and do something for Nightmare Palace." Feng Xiang said.

"Do what?" Chu Mu said.

"After you arrive at Gangluo City, someone will tell you. Also, the Yang Clan didn't follow their end of the contract, failing to give what Boss Xia wanted to him. Boss Xia is busy right now and can't deal with them, so you should get rid of them along the way as well." Feng Xiang replied.

Chu Mu didn't ask further and simply nodded again.

Yang Clan, Chu Mu must get rid of them. Their doomsday was going to arrive very soon!

"If you have no more problems, you can rest here first and

redress yourself. If you have any more issues, just tell your servant girls to find me.”

Once Feng Xiang left Chu Mu’s room, her frigid face slightly shifted as she drew in a deep breath abruptly. Once the air was fresh and clean again, she secretly gnashed her teeth and said, “That guy stinks!”

“At the same time, he is full of killing intent, yet knows how to be reserved. Doesn’t speak much, is decisive and calm. If controlled well, he’ll be a sharp instrument of Boss Xia’s.”

Once Feng Xiang left, Chu Mu sat down on a chair. From Xia Guanghan’s attitude, Chu Mu could guess that Xia Guanghan must want to develop Chu Mu as a subordinate of his.

Chu Mu sought after the path of an expert, but he didn’t like being restricted. Even though Nightmare Palace gave him such ample conditions, he still wasn’t moved because he knew that, in Nightmare Palace, even if one had incomparable power, there were still many unforeseeable restrictions.

Mo Xie was a continuously mutating soul pet. Soon, it was likely that Mo Xie would undergo a species mutation again. Xia Guanghan had already noticed his Moonlight Fox. Now that he has seen the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox, if Mo Xie had another species mutation, Xia Guanghan would definitely notice. Then, his continuously mutating soul pet would be exposed!

Chu Mu, during his killing time on Prison Island, also saw much

mutual deception. Though he hadn't understood Xia Guanghan deeply, Chu Mu could be certain that Xia Guanghan was a man that would do anything that was in his own interest. If he knew about the continuously mutating soul pet, Xia Guanghan would definitely steal it without a second of hesitation.

Thus, the urgent task at hand was to break away from Xia Guanghan's control!

Chu Mu didn't think for long before a black clothed man walked in with twenty girls wearing green muslin skirts.

"Uh.....May I ask if you are the Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince?" After the black clothed man saw Chu Mu with very "unique" clothing, his expression became strange.

"En." Chu Mu nodded and glanced at the black clothed man and the twenty servant girls.

All twenty girls were around eighteen, with similar curvaceous body shapes. Entering the spring season with skirts, when their jade-like legs moved, they could easily provoke a man's natural cravings.

These girls clearly went through strict training. Even when they stood in a line in front of Chu Mu, they were slightly bowed and remained gentle and beautiful, causing Chu Mu's eyes to brighten.

In reality, when these twenty girls entered the room and saw Chu

Mu, all their faces blanched.

They had a third level title in Nightmare Palace. If they were sent to any other palace, they would have some power. But in Nightmare Palace, possibly only a seventh level Nightmare Prince could receive third level women members as servants.

If the girl were given to a high title member, their own safety had a greater guarantee. At the very least, their owner could protect them.

But, what made all these exquisite girls discolored was that their master, the Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince, was like a caveman, and gave off a putrid stench. His eyes were like a beast's, as if he would eat them in one bite at a moment's notice.

Servant girls definitely had to serve their masters, so these girls all had a mental preparation. Also from what they remembered, every Nightmare Prince was devilishly handsome. Attending to such young and handsome individuals was something that they could stand. But this Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince looked terrifying. It seemed quite possible that they would be toyed to death by this beast-like man.

“Don't pick me, don't pick me.....”

So, as all twenty girls bowed slightly, they started praying.

“Umm.....Nightmare Prince, you can pick.....pick two as you

please.....oh, you're the Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince, you could select those from Eternal Ocean....." the black clothed man said weirdly as he looked through the girls, locking onto the servant girl standing in the middle.

Hearing this, that servant girl trembled and a hint of shy anger flashed within her eyes.

"En, her then." Chu Mu nodded. After saying that, he looked through everyone again and picked another girl that had clear eyes.

"You two stay and serve Nightmare Prince well!" The black clothed man couldn't stand the horrible stench within the room anymore. Once he left the two girls, he immediately brought the other eighteen girls and left.

When leaving, the other eighteen girls glanced at Qing He and Ting Yu, gloating at their misfortune while rejoicing that they weren't picked.

Girls like them indeed had to connect with those in high positions to survive within Nightmare Palace but, as a servant girl, they also had to follow the right person, or else their lives would become even more terrible, becoming lifeless.

Once the door was closed, the girl that had clearer eyes was still bowed, but tears started to roll in her eyes already, threatening to fall.

The other girl that came from Eternal Ocean was calmer, but still had a very distressed expression, bowing her head and refusing to meet the gaze of the greedy Nightmare Prince.

“Go prepare some bathing water for me, I want to take a bath.” Chu Mu looked at the girl from Eternal Ocean and thought she looked familiar, but didn’t think much of it, decisively putting up the appearance of a young master.

The two girls didn’t dare disobey Chu Mu and immediately following their orders. But once the clearer eyed girl thought of attending the man as he showered, her tears couldn’t be held back anymore. Who knew what this beast-like guy would do to them when he showered!

“Sister Ting Yu, what do we do? His eyes are so scary, as if he’ll swallow us whole. You think he’ll.....” Once they left the room to get hot water, Qing He immediately panicked.

“I.....I don’t know either. Let’s gather the water slowly and think of some strategy.” Ting Yu also felt the terrifying nature of the man’s eyes.

“But we’ll serve him from now on. Even if we avoid him today.....”

“We can only do this step by step and hope.”

Chapter 10: Luo Region Nightmare Prince, Yang Luosen

Sitting in the bath tub and feeling the steaming water slide across his skin was indeed an enjoyable feeling, especially since there was a very aromatic scent in the water.....

It's been about four years since he's enjoyed this feeling of being served. Surviving on the island, isolated and dangerous, with only death as company caused his nerves to be constantly taut. Once there was a chance to let down his guard after being constantly on the edge, it was an immediate relief, as if he was completely released.

Four years, with nothing but survival, through nothing but battles. Such a life would finally end today, and he could even return to the home he left for four years. Such emotion was truly hard to describe with words.

If possible, Chu Mu wanted to leave right now towards Gangluo City, stand in front of his father, and tell him that he was still alive!!

His mind wandered everywhere. In the enveloping steamy water and flower scent, Chu Mu thought about a lot of things while looking at the decorated ceiling. As if he were an age old wanderer, the sadness within his eyes was something the two servants would never be able to read.

“Sister Ting Yu, what is he doing?” The servant girl Qing He,

who was adding hot water to the tub, asked in a very low whisper.

Ting Yu shook her head, sneaking a glance at Chu Mu, who was enjoying time alone. Without knowing why, Ting Yu felt that this man was different from the previous caveman. The loneliness and disappointment under the severe mask he held released a mysterious and unique quality, causing Ting Yu to be indescribably curious-curious about the story behind those black pupils.

“Just now, I heard others say that another genius has come from Nightmare Palace. This person, at the age of eighteen, has broken Xia Guanghan’s, or Boss Xia’s, own record as the youngest King of Prison Island at the age of twenty one. In less than half a day, this person’s name had already spread to all the big figures’ ears.” Seeing that Chu Mu was still in deep thought, Qing He started conversing with Ting Yu again in whispers.

“Is it him?” Ting Yu said with surprise, looking again at Chu Mu’s determined face.

In reality, after taking a shower, Chu Mu had already changed greatly, slowly revealing a pressingly heroic appearance. If he shaved off his straggly facial hair, he would definitely be a confident and handsome teen.

“I think so. Those sisters that came with us must be regretting everything now. If he can be as strong as Xia Guanghan, then after ten years, maybe we can become like sister Feng Xiang as well..... So, what is the King of Prison Island again?” Qing He said.

“.....” Ting Yu was speechless. Seeing that this girl was so excited, as if she married a good man, Ting Yu thought that she knew what the King of Prison Island meant.

Ting Yu came from Eternal Ocean, the same place where Prison Island was, so naturally she knew of Prison Island as well. Explaining immediately, she said, “The Prison Island is an island of death. Every three years they imprison three thousand people on the island and let only one live.....”

“Ah? That scary?” Qing He said with surprise as she opened her small mouth, staring in disbelief at the apathetic looking Chu Mu. She then pointed her finger at Chu Mu and said in a softer voice, “Then he.....”

“Yes, it is very likely that he just came back from Prison Island alive.....” Ting Yu nodded.

In reality, Ting Yu herself was shocked as well. If this caveman-like teen was really that King of Prison Island, then she really did follow the right person this time. It was unthinkable as to just how high a position this man could obtain after he broke Xia Guanghan’s honorable record.

“Approximately how far is it from Luo Region?” Chu Mu opened his mouth and asked.

“Ah?” Both girls were startled, not expecting that the statue-like Chu Mu would suddenly talk.

“If.....if you hire a flying horse, it would take maybe two months.....” Qing He regained her senses and responded to Chu Mu.

“Oh, with your seventh level title, you should be able to directly use Nightmare Palace’s Gale Colts, meaning that you should be able to make the trip in one month.” Ting Yu added.

“Gale Colt?” Chu Mu didn’t expect this.

Gale Colts were commander rank soul pets. Though they weren’t strong fighters, they had surprising stamina, making it a very high tier long distance travelling soul pet. Chu Mu didn’t expect that the seventh level title would have this much power within Nightmare Palace, enough power to be able to use Gale Colts.

Chu Mu didn’t plan on staying in Nightmare Palace for too long. After figuring out the things at hand, he would go directly to Gangluo City.

Inner Nightmare Palace

“An eighteen year old King of Prison Island? Xia Guanghan’s subordinates are indeed talented individuals!” Inside the hall of a palace, a man wearing a royal blue robe stroked his beard and said gradually.

In front of this noble man was Su Yu, who was half kneeled on the ground.

“Father, this guy is extremely arrogant, even humiliating me, your child, in public. You can’t let him off too easily!” Su Yu tattletold with an expression of grievance.

The Blue Nightmare Palace master’s expression shifted, and he glared at Su Yu, “You call yourself Nightmare Palace’s Number One Egotist, yet you come crying when you lose. You’ve truly lost all of my face. Heng, I told you before that there are countless experts within the teens of Nightmare Palace. This Nightmare Palace Number One Egotist is but the flattery of the mediocre. If any one of those real Nightmare Princes returned, they could beat the living daylights out of you!”

“Father, I’ve tried hard already.” Su Yu’s face reddened with embarrassment from the lecture, as he was barely able to muster the words to defend himself.

“You’ve tried? You have the heart to say that you’ve tried? I won’t even mention anyone else, let’s just talk about that King of Prison Island, Chu Mu. He, at the age of fifteen, walked into an island full of slaughtering and survived for three years!”

“Now look at yourself, what were you doing when you were fifteen? You were in tears, begging for me to give you a Blue Nightmare. Look now, your fifth phase third stage Blue Nightmare couldn’t even beat his Ice Air Fairy. Think about it yourself-what can you use to compete against him?” The Blue Nightmare Palace master’s scolding was unceasing. If Su Yu wasn’t his only son, he probably would’ve slapped him to death already.

“But.....I.....I just wasn’t used to such fighting, if you let me adjust.....” Su Yu continued to defend himself.

“Okay, okay, stop making yourself sound good. I’m understanding now exactly what you can do. Remember in the future to grow a few more heads. Don’t just call yourself the Number One Egotist frequently!” The Blue Nightmare Palace master said.

“But, father, are you just letting this go? He almost killed me.....” Su Yu gritted his teeth and said. Chu Mu’s arrogant manner was something he wouldn’t forget.

The palace master was also having a headache over this. After a while he sighed and said, “I will help you vent your anger, but this fellow’s reputation has probably spread already, meaning he’ll receive attention from those in the Inner Palace. We can’t mess with him openly. I heard that that kid was tasked to go to Luo Region by Xia Guanghan. The Luo Region Nightmare Prince is a subordinate of mine, I’ll let him deal with this.”

“Luo Region Nightmare Prince!! Father, can it be that you mean.....” Su Yu’s eyes immediately flickered.

“Yes, its him, Yang Luosen!” Mentioning Yang Luosen, even the aloof Blue Nightmare Palace master showed signs of satisfaction, clearly very appreciative of this Yang Luosen’s skill.

“His skill is ranked top ten within the Nightmare Princes. I even heard that he recently got a perfect commander rank soul pet,

causing his skill to rapidly increase. If he deals with this, then that kid.....hehe.....” Su Yu smiled.

Yang Luosen’s reputation had been widespread within Nightmare Palace for a long time, being famous even in the entire realm of youths.

He once beat many youths of the big four aristocratic clans, undoubtedly entering the top tier of youth experts. His position was hard to affect. Many people guessed that this youth’s power wasn’t as simple as what was shown on the outside, because he still hadn’t challenged anyone with more fame than himself. If he went and challenged others, he might not even lose!

“How could I just watch as Xia Guanghan gains another sharp tool?” the palace owner smiled sinisterly as well.

Fame was important to any soul pet trainer, including Nightmare Palace experts. Fame was uncorrelated to title and position, but strongly correlated with skill and strength. It was an invisible halo of glory, built through the events a soul pet trainer had taken on, or the people he had defeated.

Chu Mu’s greatest halo of glory was becoming the King of Prison Island at the age of eighteen, as well as defeating the Number One Egotist in Nightmare Palace.

Of course, the latter was insignificant when compared to the former, because the real experts in Nightmare Palace didn’t usually stay within the Palace, choosing instead to voyage everywhere to

constantly become stronger.

The night that Chu Mu appeared in Nightmare Palace, Chu Mu's halo of glory spread everywhere. Many sighs were evoked in deep palaces, exclaiming that "another genius had emerged out of nowhere".

Additionally, the youth experts within Nightmare Palace that had some fame were all eager for action. If they could defeat an eighteen year old King of Prison Island, then their own fame would also increase heftily. Thus, already, many experts wanted to fight this eighteen year old Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince!

A decent sized commotion was set off within Nightmare Palace, yet Chu Mu was still under the gentle care of the two servant girls, sleeping tightly in a soft and large bed.

For so many years, Chu Mu had slept either on the grass, in a cave, or under a tree. Now that he could finally sleep on a bed, he indeed felt incredible!

After Chu Mu tidied himself up and went to bed, Ting Yu and Qing He also let out a huge breath. This was because Chu Mu, aside from showering to tidy himself and sleeping, didn't take advantage of the two beautiful servant girls. They didn't have to withstand the torment of a beast that just came back from prison.

But, at the same time, as Chu Mu was cleaning himself up, the two girls' expressions were constantly changing because they never would have thought that the caveman was so handsome.

Especially those bright and lively eyes, when they didn't reveal the killing intent behind them, they were deep and gorgeous, like stars in a night sky. When the slightly immature and little Qing He made eye contact with Chu Mu, she couldn't help but blush deeply.....

Chapter 11: One Day, Challenging Five People

On the second day, Chu Mu didn't hastily leave Nightmare City. As it was a tenth level city, it could be regarded as the most flourishing city. Here, there would be many items that Chu Mu needed.

After three years of survival on Prisoner Island, Chu Mu had collected a myriad of valuable items. After selling these items and then buying soul crystals, he could then greatly increase his soul pets' strength.

Soul crystal training was not perpetually sustainable. After all, a soul pet's body had a definitive saturation level and, if it were to absorb an excessive amount of soul crystal energy in a short period of time, it would not be able to convert it into the required energy. This would not only slightly harm the soul pet's body, but it would also waste extremely expensive soul crystals.

Chu Mu's Mo Xie had currently reached the fifth phase ninth stage. In order to break through to the sixth phase, merely relying on fighting would probably require a long amount of time.

Moreover, it had been a long while since Mo Xie had undergone soul crystal training. If he could obtain a sixth level dual attribute soul crystal, it would one hundred percent allow Mo Xie to enter the sixth phase. Furthermore, her attribute strength would become even more pure.

In the first year that Chu Mu entered Prison Island, Chu Mu already possessed 100,000 gold coins worth of soul crystals. Afterwards, Chu Mu faced even more experts and obtained more valuable soul crystals. By the time all the prisoners on Prison Island had been killed, Chu Mu estimated that he had about 600,000 gold coins worth of soul crystals.

If he were to add on the soul technique books, soul equipment, medicines, and other goods found on the prisoners' bodies, he would barely have 1,000,000 gold coins!

1,000,000 gold coins could purchase a highly talented commander rank soul pet.

Nonetheless, Chu Mu would rather convert these gold coins into soul cores and soul crystals to make his soul pets stronger.

On the second day, Chu Mu planned on having Ting Yu bring him to the eminently luxurious Nightmare Exchange. However, Ting Yu gave Chu Mu another fairly good proposal. Her proposal was to offer all these various objects to Nightmare Palace and exchange them for [devil coins](#), which were used to measure contribution to the Nightmare Palace.

To clarify, devil coins were of equal value to gold coins, except devil coins could only be used within Nightmare Palace. The prices for the items he buys were given in gold coins, but Chu Mu used devil coins to pay for them.

Nightmare Palace had a plethora of treasures. This method could save Chu Mu a lot of trouble, so he offered the 1,000,000 gold coins

worth of items all to Nightmare Palace. Then, Chu Mu quickly exchanged for a sixth level fire beast dual attribute soul crystal which was worth 300,000 gold coins.

Subsequently, Chu Mu began searching for more items to purchase, eventually exchanging for a thunder, dark, and demon fifth level third rank tri-type soul crystal, which was worth 300,000.

The Ice Air Fairy had also reached the fifth phase ninth stage so Chu Mu generously exchanged for a pure sixth level ice type soul crystal worth about 200,000 gold coin.

Finally, for the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, a wood type sixth level soul crystal wasn't that expensive, and it only required 100,000 gold coins.

In one breath, Zhou Luleng's fourth level dual attribute soul crystal and the remaining 100,000 gold coins worth of items were converted to nightmare coins was then used to buy the best quality soul cores. This ensured that his soul pets' food was of the most optimal quality.

Soul cores and soul crystals could be regarded as the items that consumed most of a soul pet trainer's wealth. In order to ensure that their soul pet grew even stronger, there was no soul pet trainer who would be stingy when they bought soul crystals and soul cores. Moreover, Chu Mu was a fellow who, for his soul pet's growth, would spend money extravagantly. There probably wasn't any large family or family head in Wangluo City that would be so extravagant as to buy the three months worth of soul crystals

valued at three hundred something thousand that Chu Mu purchased

Chu Mu was also wearing a fourth level soul armor that could be said to have saved Chu Mu's life many times. Its value was nearly 500,000.

However, as Chu Mu's strength increased, the effect of the soul armor was slowly diminishing. Chu Mu had already begun considering getting himself a fitting sixth level soul armor.

A sixth level soul armor's defense nearly reached the sixth level. After using the Ice Armor technique on himself, the defense would reach the seventh level, and almost the eighth. While fighting, he would then occasionally be able to block a few fierce attacks for his soul pet.

The value of a fourth level soul armor was nearly 500,000 gold coins while a sixth level soul armors needed a terrifying 5,000,000 gold coins. That was 10 times the price!

To Chu Mu, 5,000,000 gold coins was an unattainable number. With his current situation, where he spent money on soul cores and soul crystals, it would be extremely hard to collect 5 million gold coins.

Once he bought the soul crystals and soul cores, Chu Mu immediately began to train his four soul pets with the soul crystals.

Mo Xie still followed a strict 2:1 beast type to fire type training method. A sixth level soul crystal, without any mishaps, would definitely be able to raise her to the sixth phase. Her fire abilities would unequivocally increase by a lot.

The Nightmare Thunder Dream Beast was fifth phase first stage, and it only required fifth level soul crystals. However, it had three attributes-thunder, darkness, and demon-so its soul crystals were not cheap. Training it required a large amount of money. Yet, after using the fifth level soul crystal for a round of training, the Night Thunder Dream beast could reach approximately the fifth phase fourth stage.

Chu Mu comparatively placed more emphasis on the Night Thunder Dream Beast's demon and darkness attributes. The thunder type was purely used to resist other thunder types, so he bought the soul crystal with a 1:2:2 thunder, dark, demon type ratio to use for training.

The Ice Air Fairy was a pure ice type. Chu Mu would definitely not increase any other useless attributes. With his estimate, if he were to only use the ice type to train the Ice Air Fairy, once its phase and stage was higher, there was a definite possibility that its ice type technique would be able to take on commander and monarch rank soul pets.

Species rank wasn't necessarily the clear, absolute indicator of potential. If one's power was specialized in one area, like a fire type monarch rank soul pet against an Ice Air Fairy that had god-like capabilities in controlling ice type abilities, then even if they were the same stage and phase, the fire type would be quite

disadvantaged.

Therefore, even after becoming a spirit master and being able to control commander rank soul pets, Chu Mu still didn't underestimate the warrior rank Ice Air Fairy. After all, the Ice Air Fairy's ice type techniques could cause extremely great harm to commander rank soul pets. If range was maintained while fighting, the Ice Air Fairy was essentially a fifth phase ninth stage commander rank ice type soul pet!

If the sixth grade ice type soul crystal could be completely absorbed, the Ice Air Fairy would have no problems entering the sixth phase like Mo Xie. If both these soul pets were to enter the sixth phase, Chu Mu's strength would increase by a small leap once again.

As for the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, Chu Mu could use a pure wood type to train it. He could completely renounce the beast type effect in hopes that the Devil Tree Battle Soldier could become a powerful, control type soul pet on the battlefield.

When wood type soul pets fought one on one, aside from facing against beast and demon type soul pets which were at a slight disadvantage, they wouldn't be very useful. However in group fights, wood type soul pets were absolute battlefield hegemony!

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier was still at the fifth phase sixth stage. Currently, using the sixth level soul crystal wasn't very wise, so Chu Mu planned on having it reach the fifth phase ninth stage before using the wood type soul crystal to train. He would then have it immediately enter the sixth phase!

“Young master Chu, this is already the twelfth person who is issuing you a challenge.” Qing He placed a stack of challenge letters on Chu Mu’s desk with a bitter face as she spoke.

“Oh, which ones are relatively strong?” asked Chu Mu.

The training period had already ended, so Chu Mu happened to need a few others to fight against.

“This person is known as Cyan Nightmare Palace’s strongest youth, Guo Xian. There’s also Nightmare Prince Yuan Shan and Fengjing City’s young master...” in one breath, Qing He recited the young experts in Nightmare Palace considered to have a bit of fame.

“Give me a summary of their strength.” requested Chu Mu.

Qing He immediately flipped through and gave a summary of their soul pets to Chu Mu:

“Guo Xian’s Cyan Nightmare has reached the sixth phase fourth stage, and it is his strongest soul pet. Nightmare Prince Yuan Shan apparently has a fifth phase fourth stage commander rank soul pet. Fengjing City’s young master is rumoured to have a seventh phase Cyan Bird...”

“Oh, then those five. I’ll accept their challenges.” said Chu Mu.

“Five?” Qing He was shocked and silently thought “Young master, oh young master. Unexpectedly accepting five challenges.”

“Then how does young master plan on arranging the times. Why don’t you put Nightmare Prince Yuan Shan on Monday? Then Fengjing City’s young master on Tuesday? Or maybe you should have a longer interval in between so that you can have enough time to recuperate from battle.” asked Qing He.

Chu Mu looked up at the naturally foolish servant girl, Qing He, and said: “I don’t have that much time. Arrange them all for tomorrow. I’m going to leave here the day after tomorrow, and then head for Luo Region’s Wangluo City.”

“Huh? You want to put all of them on the same day?” Qing He astonishedly had her mouth agape, blinking her eyes, and staring foolishly at Chu Mu.

“Mhm, do as I say.”

Qing He hadn’t reacted. After confirming that Chu Mu wanted to put all five opponents on the same day, she finally put away the challenge letters in eminent shock...

An eighteen year old Prison Island King was already considered an exceptional being in Nightmare Palace. Especially recently, the news had travelled to even the large Nightmare City, where many faction knew of Chu Mu, this Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince.

In one day, this news had surfaced without any prior indication. It caused shock everywhere, but after the shock, many people were unsatisfied. They wanted to know if this genius actually had strength, or managed to survive by a fluke on Prison Island.

For prestige and fame, there would definitely be many arrogant and hotheaded people who challenged this Prison Island King.

Nonetheless, it was also because of this wave of challenges that extremely shocking news that no young expert in Nightmare Palace would have thought of suddenly erupted within Nightmare Palace!

In one day, he would receive the challenge of five young experts!!

There were very many arrogant people in Nightmare Palace. Especially the all-powerful people in the younger generation. In this place, where experts were like the clouds, there was no shortage of eminently shocking matters.

However, fighting five young experts in one day was something unprecedented in Nightmare Palace!!

A challenge had to be issued to someone whose title didn't exceed one level. In other words, those with the qualification to challenge Chu Mu were those young experts in Nightmare Palace who had a sixth level title!

Accepting the challenge of five sixth level titled young experts in

one day. This was absolutely unprecedented in Nightmare Palace!
The level of ego of this Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince was simply
at one where every young expert shook their fingers at him!

Chapter 12: Effective Killing Weapon, Cold Poison Invasion

On Prison Island, if you weren't lucky, the entire day might be spent in battle. In those situations, Chu Mu had to know how to conserve the most fighting power while fighting multiple foes, so Chu Mu was used to continuous fighting.

To be honest, it wasn't that Chu Mu looked down upon these Nightmare Palace masters. After Chu Mu looked over their general information, he found that these "experts" were much worse than the opponents he met on Prison Island in both species rank and phase.

Their soul pet rank and stage were already worse than the foes he was pitted against normally. To make things worse, they were just a group of youths full of vigor, meaning that their combat experience couldn't even compare to the thirty or forty year old prisoners. If Chu Mu didn't need to leave the day after tomorrow for Gangluo City, Chu Mu would've accepted all their challenges without faking politeness.

Of course, Chu Mu knew that these unruly and impatient challengers were only just decent among the youth experts. The real experts wouldn't challenge someone just because of the title of Prison Island King. Even though they all had seventh level titles, their fame was way larger than Chu Mu's. Unless those real youth experts thought that Chu Mu's fame was great enough to affect their own position, or that defeating Chu Mu would cause them to improve further, they wouldn't challenge him.

“Boss Xia, it seems like this Chu Mu isn’t the reserved kind, making such a commotion when he just entered Nightmare Palace. With such a blatant attention seeking challenge, if he fails, even you will be affected.” Feng Xiang said.

“If there’s a hive nearby, and bees are constantly by your ear giving you superficial attacks, if you always swat the bees away, it’s very time consuming and has little effect. You might as well crush the hive itself.” Xia Guanghan said, clearly appreciating Chu Mu’s way of dealing with the issue.

Feng Xiang, on the other hand, was slightly surprised, saying, “Then do you want to go?”

“The princess is coming back early, if she is interested……” Xia Guanghan.

“Then this Feng Xiang will go the the battlefield first.” Feng Xiang nodded and left after paying her respects.

“What, fighting five at once? Isn’t this fellow too arrogant?” The Blue Nightmare palace master said with confusion!

“Yes, father. I told you he was a conceited caveman!” Su Yu immediately started adding onto the situation, hoping his father could teach Chu Mu a lesson as soon as possible!

“Xia Guanghan, ah Xia Guanghan, you sure don’t put anyone in your eyes!” the palace master insinuated.

Chu Mu was the subordinate of Xia Guanghan. The Blue Nightmare Palace master thought that the reason Chu Mu was so arrogant, not putting any of the youth experts in Nightmare Palace in his eyes, was naturally because Chu Mu was utilizing Xia Guanghan's authority, and that Xia Guanghan himself was also trying to fortify his position within Nightmare Palace, intentionally creating such a commotion.

“Since you're this arrogant, then I'll make him die a horrible death!” The palace master's eyes flickered with a hint of crookedness. He had never gotten along with Xia Guanghan. If Chu Mu succeeded in his challenge this time, then Chu Mu's name would definitely spread to even higher positioned people, causing them to pay attention. This meant that Xia Guanghan's name would once again linger in their ears, almost acting as a disguised nomination.

The past several years, Xia Guanghan's fame had gotten greater and greater. No one could stop his momentum of climbing up to the higher ranks in Nightmare Palace, so many were naturally very jealous, with the Blue Nightmare Palace master being one of them.

“Tian Ji, come with me to the battlefield. Let me see just how capable this kid is!” The palace master stood from his seat and walked towards the door.

Yet, when this palace master stood up, a grey clothed teen that had an air of coldness around him somehow appeared from the shadows of a pillar, following silently behind the palace master.

It was still the desert-like chasm split battlefield, but it was different from before. This was because of the commotion that this event had brought, and many spectators had already appeared on the high seats.

Zhou Luling, who had a position slightly lower than Xia Guanghan, Feng Xiang, the Blue Nightmare Palace master, the Cyan Nightmare Palace master.....

The most surprising one was Lu Shanli, who was a super youth expert that had an eighth level title, yet no one dared to challenge him.

“That youth in white that looks like a judge, who is he?” asked Chu Mu, sitting in his seat, watching Lu Shanli who sat in the main seat.

The reason Chu Mu noticed the youth wasn't because of some unique expert aura, but simply because in the presence of the Blue and Cyan Nightmare palace masters, the young man was still sitting on the main seat, taking up a special honor.

“Young Master Chu, he is the impressively famous Lu Shanli of Nightmare Palace, and he is the eighth level Nightmare Prince Adjudicator.” Qing He immediately explained in a small voice. When her eyes were watching Lu Shanli, she clearly showed signs of adoration.

“Oh, anything special in particular?” Chu Mu still wasn't very knowledgeable about the system of Nightmare Palace, so he was

secretly confused at what identity this youth held, causing even the palace masters to show such respect.

“Of course it’s special! Think about it, the highest title given to a youth was the seventh level title of Nightmare Prince, yet he has the eighth level title of Nightmare Prince Adjudicator. This means that he looks over all Nightmare Princes. Boss Lu had always been hard to find, yet today he appeared at this event. It really is a surprise.” Qing He said.

Chu Mu could see that when this Lu Shanli appeared, everyone showed expressions of astonishment, and soon after, all the haughty looking Nightmare Palace youths retracted their emotions, not daring to show a hint of insolence.

“This is probably the best of the Nightmare Palace experts.” Chu Mu thought to himself.

In reality, Chu Mu liked to fight experts of that level more because it posed a greater challenge, but Chu Mu also knew that as a newcomer to Nightmare Palace, even though he had the fame of being the Prison Island King, he didn’t have the qualifications to challenge this Nightmare Prince Adjudicator.

“Tian Ji has come as well!” After Lu Shanli appeared, the young experts started discussing again.

“It’s been a long time since I’ve seen Tian Ji defeat three of his opponents’ soul pets with one of his own.”

The observant Chu Mu quickly picked up on the atmosphere of respect for experts.

Very evidently, Lu Shanli, who had an eighth level title and was a young super expert, was already beyond the realm of young people. Any other young expert had to look up to him, as they would when faced with higher authorities.

Yet Tian Ji, who the Blue Nightmare Palace master brought, was an unreasonably strong young expert. Though still not at Lu Shanli's level, he probably suffered very few losses within his realm.

“Young master Chu, Tian Ji should be the strongest youth within Blue Nightmare Palace. He is also an expert that rapidly emerged, often summoning one soul pet to beat the opponents' three. Additionally, he is the trusted aide of the Blue Nightmare Palace master. A few days ago, you angered Su Yu. This time the Blue Nightmare Palace owner brought someone with him, so possibly.....” Ting Yu was more careful and immediately reminded Chu Mu.

“En.” Chu Mu just nodded, not caring too much.

“Let's begin.” Lu Shanli, as the Nightmare Palace Adjudicator, would naturally be the authoritative judge.

Chu Mu didn't waste any breath, walking straight onto the battlefield.

“You can go first, if I got first, you guys would’ve wasted your time coming here.” The Ruan Shan Nightmare Prince still sat in his place, but his eyes swept through the other four people.

The other four challengers immediately let out expressions of contempt. The strongest youth within Cyan Nightmare Palace, Guo Xian, even stood up indignantly, glancing at the Ruan Shan Nightmare Prince, saying mockingly, “You should be the one that’s wasted your time coming. How about let’s have a match after I get rid of this kid!”

“Can’t wait, that’s the thing about me, I love to fight.” The Ruan Shan Nightmare Prince said.

Guo Xian laughed coldly. After paying his respects towards Lu Shanli, he jumped onto the battlefield, walked to the other side of the chasm, and watched Chu Mu across the deep chasm.

“Originally I didn’t want to come to such a stupid challenge, because it already demoted me to being just an unremarkable side character, but that isn’t important, because I am the first to fight you. After I defeat you, I will be the main character!” Guo Xian said.

“Those who talk trash when fighting die the most miserably.” Chu Mu replied lightly.

“Ridiculous!” Guo Xian smiled coldly but immediately started casting an incantation!

When Guo Xian started to chant, his body immediately burned up in cyan devil fire. These devil flames were acting as if they were under Guo Xian's control, slowly amalgamating at Guo Xian's feet and forming a burning cyan summoning symbol!

“Hu” The devil fires suddenly leapt upwards and, within the dancing flames, the terrifying evil Cyan Nightmare soul pet appeared, standing in the middle of the symbol, with its torch-like eyes emitting an ominous glint!

After Guo Xian summoned his Cyan Nightmare, he immediately commanded his Cyan Nightmare to gain the initiative by striking first, casting Ignite directly towards Chu Mu as a flame attack.

“Fifth phase sixth stage cyan nightmare.” Chu Mu jumped backwards, easily dodging this tentative attack, and started to cast an incantation at the same time.

An ice type soul pet's summoning symbol was like an icy halo. Within the halo, all kinds of mischievous faerie symbols twinkled with light.

It was still the Ice Air Fairy that everyone had seen already. As the radiance burst forth, Chu Mu had already commanded his Ice Air Fairy!

“Ice Sword.”

As the white summoning radiance was still twinkling, the Ice Air

Fairy had already finished casting. Immediately, fifteen huge swords formed under the Ice Air Fairy's tremendous control over ice!

Fifteen, six meter long ice swords appeared from nowhere, immediately catching everyone's eyes!!

A fifth level technique Ice Sword could only form one ice sword at the beginning, with its size similar to that of a normal longsword.

Yet, the Ice Air Fairy was already able to control fifteen such swords, with each reaching a shocking length of six meters. Such a scary ice controlling capability was truly shocking!

The fifteen huge ice swords all hovered near the Ice Air Fairy's head, creating a circular formation. Their incomparably sharp swords pointed downwards, giving people an uneasy feeling.

Suddenly, one of the ice swords moved. Under the control of the Ice Air Fairy's incantation, it magically fell down diagonally, stabbing into where the Cyan Nightmare stood unusually precisely!

“Microcontrol!!!”

Seeing the single ice sword attack, the people on the high seats again showed signs of astonishment.

Like overlaying abilities, microcontrol was also a controlling technique that soul pets learned when they mastered their abilities.

Normally speaking, Ice Air Fairies with weaker control could only throw all fifteen swords at their enemies, yet those with stronger controls could be precise enough to control every ice sword!

Very quickly, an even more surprising scene appeared. The other fourteen ice sword tips all locked onto the Cyan Nightmare, actually dropping down again and falling one after another towards the Cyan Nightmare!

When the first few ice swords fell, the Cyan Nightmare could still melt them with its cyan flames. Yet, with fifteen ice swords attacking one after another, this concentration of power became incredibly scary!!

Watching the fifteen ice swords forming a line and charging over, Guo Xian's face blanched!

Guo Xian immediately started casting an incantation to summon another soul pet to block for the Cyan Nightmare, but the frequency of the ice swords falling was shocking, actually forcibly bombing the Cyan Nightmare into the ground, creating an astonishing hole in the battlefield!!

“Hold...HOLD UP!” When Guo Xian realized that if the last ice sword landed, his fifth phase fourth stage Cyan Nightmare would

completely die, he immediately screamed!

Chu Mu lifted his head and glanced at the pale Guo Xian, but he remained apathetic, still allowing his Ice Air fairy to command the last ice sword to stab into the Cyan Nightmare's body.

“Peng!!!”

The ice sword was as ruthless as Chu Mu, stabbing straight into the Cyan Nightmare. The Cyan Nightmare that was impaled into the ground couldn't even let out a shriek as all of its flames instantly disappeared!!

The moment its flames were extinguished, a scary chilliness suddenly passed through Guo Xian's mental connection with the Cyan Nightmare, and went straight into his mental world!!

Ice poison invasion. The terrifying ice poison that the ice swords had went straight into Guo Xian's mental world, actually freezing over his very soul!!

Very soon, Guo Xian's body became an ashen color, and leaked cold air out of his orifices!

Guo Xian's body shivered, and he slowly fell backwards!!

“Beng!!”

When he fell on the hard sands, his body unexpectedly shattered into pieces!!

Countless ice shards were scattered over the ground, containing piece after piece of Guo Xian's body. Guo Xian's body was split into pieces, messily scattered all over the ground, looking scary and shocking at the same time!

An uproar started within the high seats as everyone's faces were painted with alarm!

“This.....This.....” The Cyan Nightmare palace master even stood up from his seat, watching with popping veins at the shattered corpse, suddenly at a loss of words!!

Everything happened too quickly. Many youths hadn't even realized what had happened, and Guo Xian had already become a ground of ice shards!!

Chapter 13: Killing People, It's Become Normal

“With the penetration of the frost poison, when the soul pet dies and causes a mental feedback on the soul pet trainer, the frost poison will forcibly join in the spirit feedback. If there isn't enough time to use soul remembrance to resist, the spirit will be frozen and the body will become frozen flesh.” Lu Shanchi's gaze indifferently stared at the frozen corpse on the battlefield as he slowly spoke.

Two people had walked onto the battlefield, but only Chu Mu and his Ice Air Fiary had walked out.

Now, different from before, everyone's expression while looking at Chu Mu had completely changed. No longer were their gazes doubtful and pejorative; instead they held a bit of fear!

Feng Xiang creased her eyebrows. Although the terrifying killing methods of Chu Mu made her feel astonished, killing another Nightmare Palace youth was essentially making another enemy for Xia Guanghan.

“Heng Ocean's Nightmare Prince! You have so much courage that you dare kill my disciple!!!” Cyan Nightmare Palace Lord's face was full of indignance. Killing intent suddenly proliferated and his anger seemed to ignite the surroundings in fire!

“Lord Cyan, issues between the younger generation should be solved by themselves. You should control your emotions.” Lu

Shanchi looked at the Cyan Nightmare Palace Lord who intended to kill Chu Mu and insipidly spoke.

A Nightmare Prince was the highest honor of a Nightmare Palace youth. In Nightmare Palace, aside from a few important figures of higher position, there was no one that could punish a Nightmare Prince, even if he or she committed a grave offence. Therefore, regardless of the Cyan Nightmare Palace Lord or Blue Nightmare Palace Lord, unless Chu Mu attacked them first, they could not do anything to Chu Mu.

“But that brat violated the challenge regulations! He’s made me lose one of my Cyan Nightmare Palace’s geniuses. Don’t tell me that I can’t punish him!” How could the Cyan Nightmare Palace Lord leave the matter as it was!

“Since he dared issue a challenge, he had to prepare to give up his own life.” Lu Shanchi indifferently said.

As the adjudicator for Nightmare Princes, Lu Shanchi had the qualifications to make rulings for Nightmare Princes. He didn’t plan on punishing Chu Mu so the Cyan Nightmare Palace Lord had no way of getting to Chu Mu.

Seeing that Lu Shanchi was helping Chu Mu keep this matter under control, Feng Xiang let out a small sigh of relief. Immediately, she sternly said to Chu Mu: Chu Mu, you cannot kill soul pet trainers in fights between younger generation. Don’t be overly rash.”

Chu Mu raised his eyelids and looked at Feng Xiang who was reprimanding him. He indifferently replied: “I’m merely used to it.”

Feng Xiang didn’t expect Chu Mu to neglect her warning like that. A cold frost instantly congealed on her face.

Chu Mu’s gaze swept over the remaining four challengers. His tone was cold as he said, “If you’re afraid that you will die after losing to me, then forsake the challenge. My method of battle isn’t an exchange of pointers between small children.”

The four challengers still hadn’t recovered from Guo Xian’s death. If Lu Shanchi hadn’t explained, they simply wouldn’t have had any idea as to how Guo Xian died. Right now, the way that this strange executioner was talking them caused their hair to stand on end.

“Nightmare Palace’s regulations aren’t something that can be changed by just words. I... I don’t like the changed battle regulations.” Nightmare Prince Li Shan’s expression turned extremely rigid. His attitude had changed from his previous one of ‘I can easily defeat Chu Mu’. He would fake his attitude as much as he could.

“Nightmare Prince Li Shan, weren’t you saying before how if he were the first to battle, everyone else would have wasted their time coming? Why are you now saying such things?” Lu Shanchi ruthlessly exposed Nightmare Prince Li Shan’s false bravado.

A flush of red immediately appeared on Nightmare Prince Li Shan's face. He wanted to explain himself, but simply had no idea how of how to get himself off the stage.

Everyone's gaze promptly turned contemptuous as they stared at the exceptionally vexed Nightmare Prince Li Shan. They began to whisper with each other. Evidently, after experiencing this, Nightmare Pince Li Shan would have a hard time raising his head in Nightmare Palace.

Then again, Nightmare Prince Li Shan himself didn't feel that his momentary shift of attitude was the important thing.

A sixth phase Ice Air Fairy had performed the fifth rank technique, Ice Sword, to a seventh rank technique's level. Furthermore, it had reached a terrifying degree of control. Even disregarding that it instantly killed a fifth phase Cyan Nightmare, it possessed an exceptionally terrifying poison penetration.

Not even factoring in its close combat abilities, it was still equivalent to a terrifying sixth phase commander rank ice type soul pet. Nightmare Prince Li Shan's strongest soul pet was only a fifth phase fourth stage commander rank soul pet.

Nightmare Prince Li Shan didn't believe that his strength was much stronger than Guo Xian. He didn't want to have to give up his life because of his earlier hot headedness. In order to keep his life, if he had to lose face, he would resolutely lose face.

“What about you three?” Chu Mu's gaze swept over the

remaining three people as he asked them a question.

Chu Mu had no idea what the challenge regulations were, so he didn't know if he could kill people.

Nonetheless, even with these regulations, Chu Mu felt that he would still kill people out of habit. After all, Guo Xian's opening just now had been too obvious. Facing an ice type soul pet while his soul pet was on the verge of dying, he unexpectedly used soul remembrance to protect his own spirit. This sort of opening was simply asking for Chu Mu to use cold poison penetration.

“Eh... Nightmare Prince Li Shan was right. We feel that the changed regulations aren't any good.” Two of the remaining challengers had embarrassed expressions as they decisively chose to renounce their challenges.

“So you don't like this method of comparing pointers to fight? Perfect, I also like killing for fun. Your battle has sparked some interest in me.” Just at this moment, Tian Ji, who was standing behind the Blue Nightmare Palace Lord slowly walked in front of Chu Mu while speaking.

Dressed in a grey robe, Tian Ji's words instantly set off an uproar.

“Tian Ji is about to fight!!”

“Even if he's subdued the other four challengers, this Eternal

Ocean Nightmare Prince doesn't have the qualifications to be on the same level as Tian Ji. Why would Tian Ji take the initiative to fight?!"

Tian Ji appeared among the ranks of the Blue Nightmare Palace Lord. However, this time, Tian Ji had walked out himself without consulting the Blue Nightmare Palace Lord. In other words, this venerated and feared powerful young man was rather interested in Chu Mu's tyranny.

Anyone could see that there was clearly too large of a disparity in the fight just now. One reason was because a hot tempered person was too impatient. The other reason was because everyone had underestimated the Prison Island King's strength.

Right now, after learning of the Prison Island King's true strength, this fight between Prison Island King and Tian Ji would perhaps be extremely marvelous. Soon, excitement appeared in people's gazes as they hoped for a big fight between these two powerful people.

"You can rest for two days to let your soul pet recover to its most optimal state." said the grey garbed Tian Ji. After speaking, he turned and left, disregarding the rather discontented mood of the Blue Nightmare Palace Lord.

"There's no need for that. I am going to leave tomorrow so if you want to fight, do it now." said Chu Mu.

Tian Ji stopped in his tracks and turned around. His soulless eyes

stared at Chu Mu and, after awhile, he said, “That’s fine. In any case, rest or no rest, you will still die.”

The fire of battle had been ignited between the rapidly rising in reputation Prisoner Island King and Tian Ji!

The eyes of everyone present lit up, especially the Blue Nightmare Palace Lord. There was nothing better than getting rid of Xia Guanghan’s subordinate right now, and to use this opportunity to suppress Xia Guanghan’s momentous spirit!!!

As for Su Yu, who had suddenly been neglected by everyone, he let out a smile. It seemed now that there wouldn’t be any need for Luo Region’s Nightmare Prince, Yang Luosen to do it himself. Chu Mu was already in the face of imminent catastrophe!

When the burning battle flame had instantly ignited in the seats of the arena, no one seemed to notice four white clothed females escorting a veiled woman slowly walk in. Beside this noble woman was the man with the nickname “Grim Executioner”, Xia Guanghan.

“Princess Jin Rou!”

“This subordinate didn’t know that princess would come here, and did not have the time to pay respects. I’ve committed an offense, I’ve committed an offense.” Zhou Luleng was the first to react and after shouting loudly, he immediately kowtowed on the ground.

Zhou Luleng's stunned voice exploded amidst the crowd, and everyone proceeded to cast their gaze at the noble and graceful woman. Immediately following suit, they panickedly kowtowed on the ground.

"Young Master Chu, quickly follow the actions of the other Nightmare Princes." whispered Ting Yu in an extremely small voice. After speaking, she crouched down and bowed her head down; she didn't dare confirm that the person high above was Nightmare Palace's young princess.

Seeing the rather familiar beautiful figure appear in front of him, Chu Mu was shocked. A short moment later, he awoke from his stupor. He looked at the hypocritical Li Shan before gradually putting one knee on the ground and placing his right hand on his chest.

A Nightmare Prince was the highest honor for a young person. In front of the princess, there wasn't a need to kowtow. Instead, a one knee half-kneel and a dropping of one's head would suffice.

As for the Cyan Nightmare Palace Lord and Blue Nightmare Palace Lord, they both had to kowtow in respect. After all, they didn't belong to the inner Nightmare Palace. Despite possessing control over two large nightmare palaces, their statuses were slightly lower.

"Stand." The Young Princess Jin Rou indifferently spoke one word and strode in even steps towards the main seat.

After no longer having to bow, the others stood up and cautiously returned to their seats.

The eyes of the young people lit up because of the appearance of the noble Princess Jin Rou. They normally held admiration for this princess, and they naturally felt incomparably honored.

As for people like the Cyan and Blue Nightmare Palace Lords, although they held a reverent expression, they were silently guessing as to why the princess had come.

“Sister Jin Rou has, how come you have time come here and spectate?” The Nightmare Prince Adjudicator, Lu Lishan, was the only person who didn’t pay his respects. Moreover, when the princess had arrived, he remained seated in his spot with a warm smile on his face as he spoke to the young princess.

Princess Jin Rou gracefully sat in the master’s seat next to Lu Lishan. She maintained a very steady and pleasant intonation as she said: “I happen to have something I want to discuss with big brother Lu.”

“I recall that Prison Island King should be your new retinue. If younger sister Jin Rou is interested, why don’t you take a look at your new retinue’s strength. It wouldn’t be impolite to determine someone else’s strength.” Lu Lishan unhurriedly said.

“That’s fine. Prior to this, I heard that the Prison Island King was fighting five people?” Princess Jin Rou’s gaze slowly fell onto Chu Mu. Her two bright eyes still held that elusive sadness in them.

Chu Mu's gaze met hers, but the adjacent Feng Xiang immediately glared at Chu Mu, coldly reminded him that before Nightmare Princes obtained the privilege, they could not directly look at the princess.

“Haha, it's actually a joke. After the first challenger was killed, the others didn't dare to fight this slaughter king. Currently, Blue Nightmare Palace's Tian Ji is about to fight him.” Lu Lishan laughed as he spoke.

Lu Lishan's rendered the four challengers into a state where they didn't dare show their faces. He had unexpectedly made them lose face in front of the princess whom they so dearly admired.

Chapter 14: The Fight Starts Now

“Eh? Then it should be a marvelous fight.” said Princess Jin Rou.

“Then, who does younger sister Jin Rou think will win?” asked Lu Lishan.

“As he is my retinue, I naturally think that he will win.” Princess Jin Rou indifferently replied.

Chu Mu glanced at the princess high above, yet didn't enjoy the feeling of being regarded as a game enjoyed by those in their free time.

Nevertheless, his status was inferior and this sort of situation was unavoidable. Chu Mu ultimately had to free himself from both Nightmare Palace and Xia Guanghan's control in order to obtain absolute freedom.

Three years ago, when Chu Mu had seen Princess Jin Rou, she was only a young lady with a beautifully thin, yet slender figure, and she had a thin veil that covered the most gorgeous face, but still managed to reveal the most enchanting set of sullen pupils. It gave one an elegant and refined feeling.

Three years later, after seeing her again, the thin veil and sullen eyes that flickered with a bewitching gloss still remained. Additionally, there was now a coldness and grandeur, while lacking the melancholy of a young lady.

Of course, Chu Mu couldn't help but admit that this young princess' body underneath her luxurious gown had become even more capable of rendering one in a fantastical daydream. However, for some reason, even when her looks were even more stunning and her temperament even more elegant, this young princess wasn't able to move Chu Mu's heart like she did back then, when she was on the deck of the boat.

Truthfully, Chu Mu knew the reason why things were different now. In Nightmare Palace, she was a young princess that was out of reach. In front of anybody else, she had to display a sense of shrewdness and calmness that was befitting of a princess.

Yet, when she was sailing on the ocean, the only thing in front of Princess Jin Rou was a poignant but beautiful ocean. She no longer had to hold on to any pretense, and would thus naturally exude her natural character as a young woman.

“With Princess Jin Rou spectating the fight, you should feel very honored. I'm sure that you will use your full strength. However, you are both people of status. With the princess present, try your best not to make things too bloody.” said Lu Lishan.

Lu Lishan's words very clearly indicated that he didn't wish for another death to occur during Chu Mu and Tian Ji's fight.

Lu Lishan's words, though, made the Blue and Cyan Nightmare Palace Lords feel unsatisfied. Silently, they thought, “This Lu Lishan is too abominable. Just now, he was saying that during

challenges one had to be prepared to give up his or her life. Yet right now he's telling them not to kill each other. How does this not benefit that brat Chu Mu?"

"I will only stop when he surrenders. I cannot guarantee that there will be no spilt blood." said Chu Mu as he lifted his head and apathetically stared at Lu Lishan.

Chu Mu's words caused many people's eyebrows to crease. A smile only surfaced on the faces of the Cyan and Blue Nightmare Palace Lords.

"Chu Mu, in front of the princess and Nightmare Prince Lu, don't be too impudent." Xia Guanghan plainly said.

Chu Mu glanced at the ice cold Xia Guanghan and said: "Four years ago I went from a normal life of a young man to Nightmare Palace. You guys taught me how to slaughter and how to be vicious and merciless. Four years later, I'm already used to killing, and yet you tell me to show mercy and to stop fighting after victory seems clear-I'm afraid that will be vey hard for me."

Chu Mu would not change his own style of fighting just because of the young princess' arrival. Trying to fight this kind of restrained battle wasn't much different than suicide.

"Chu Mu! You must be tired of living; you even dare speak to Senior Xia like that!" Feng Xiang immediately glowered at him while berating him!

“Xia Guanghan, isn’t the Prison Island King your subordinate? Why is he so recalcitrant? He’s so condescending that even the princess and Nightmare Prince Lu aren’t even significant to him.” The Blue Nightmare Palace Lord immediately revealed a schadenfreude-like expression, and attempted to add oil to the fire as he spoke.

Xia Guanghan ignored the Blue Nightmare Palace Lord’s provocative words. His pejorative actions caused the Blue Nightmare Palace Lord to faintly feel indignant.

“Engaging in a fight is a matter of life or death. I also don’t like fighting up to a certain point. If Nightmare Prince Lu and Princess would like to enjoy a performance style fight, then please have the useless people swap pointers.” Tian Ji flatly said as he pointed at the four young men who renounced their challenges.

After Tian Ji finished speaking, the four faces of the youths who renounced challenges turned black.

The Blue Nightmare Palace Lord’s eyebrows also creased. Tian Ji contradicting both the princess and Nightmare Prince Lu wasn’t the most sensible thing to do. If the Nightmare Prince Lu and the princess took it seriously, he would be in a bit of trouble.

Chu Mu turned his head and looked at Tian Ji, now viewing him in a new light. It seemed that Tian Ji actually wasn’t some regular person.

“The two of you really have a temper. Nonetheless, I like

temperamental people. This is because, in my opinion, those without a temper are mediocre people. These people simply don't have the temper or ability to assume responsibility for their rash actions. Since both of you enjoy going to the limit, then we'll do as you say. Our young princess isn't some weak child who cannot see bloodshed." said Lu Lishan as a smile appeared on his face.

Princess Jin Rou looked at the two of them and slowly spoke: "If the opponent doesn't have the ability to fight anymore then he no longer has the intention of killing..."

Chu Mu and Tian Ji respectively nodded their heads and ostensibly walked onto the battlefield.

At some unknown time, a large gale came and whipped up, causing a myriad of small sand specks to be blown into the air on this sandy battlefield. The sound of a violent wind whistled about.

The black clothed Chu Mu and the grey clothed Tian Ji respectively stood on either side of the chasm. Separated by twenty meters, they both held cold gazes as they stared at each other.

"I respect your disposition. I'll try my hardest not to kill you." Tian Ji said indifferently.

"Likewise." Chu Mu insipidly replied with one word.

Chu Mu's two soul pets were already on the battlefield. Respectively, they were the fifth phase sixth stage Devil Tree Battle

Soldier and the sixth phase first stage Ice Air Fairy. Since the two soul pets had already been revealed, Chu Mu didn't change them.

Tian Ji didn't probe any further and immediately chanted an incantation, using a dual summon to summon two of his soul pets.

The blue devil fire pattern gradually appeared. This special, deep blue colored fire gave one an ice cold feeling. After being stared at by the Blue Nightmare's two especially terrifying eyes, one's entire body would feel like it had been submerged in a deep cold fire abyss.

A fifth phase fourth stage Blue Nightmare. Tian Ji had first summoned Nightmare Palace's trademark soul pet, a Blue Nightmare!

However, what made Chu Mu surprised was that the second soul pet Tian Ji summoned still appeared from a deep blue devil fire. From within the devil fire pattern astonishingly emerged another Blue Nightmare with an even more exuberant devil fire!!

A fifth phase sixth stage Blue Nightmare!! Tian Ji simultaneously possessed two Blue Nightmares!

As a high class commander rank soul pet, the Blue Nightmare's fighting ability made it hard to find equals amongst the commander rank. Moreover, Tian Ji's two Blue Nightmares had high talent. From their auras, it was discernable that they were much stronger than Su Yu's weak Blue Nightmares!

Tian Ji didn't waste any time talking, and he immediately ordered the two Blue Nightmares to move, quickly closing the gap with Chu Mu's two soul pets. He didn't plan on giving the Ice Air Fairy enough space to use its ice type magic.

“Ning, give the Devil Tree Battle Soldier Ice Armor.”

Chu Mu promptly prepared to fight.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier was of the wood type, and it was at an extreme disadvantage when fighting fire types. Without Ice Armor, it definitely would not be able to persevere for too long.

The Ice Air Fairy was exceptionally adept at using the Ice Armor ability, and didn't even need to chant an incantation to cover the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body in a thick layer of Ice Armor.

“It's very strenuous to combine a long range ice type and a short range wood type to deal with two Blue Nightmares. It seems that the Eternal Ocean's Nightmare Prince has to swap soul pets.” Lu Lishan said indifferently.

Everyone nodded their heads. Two fifth phase middle staged Commander Rank soul pets against two inferior rank High Class Warrior Rank Soul pets.

Chu Mu also knew that his soul pets' ranks were inferior, but he didn't feel like he had to swap soul pets.

“Devil Tree Battle Soldier, go underground, Ice Air Fairy, stay in the air.”

Chu Mu immediately gave an order. Afterwards, Chu Mu himself quickly retreated to ensure that he wouldn't become the target of the two Blue Nightmares' attacks.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out a howl as several roots grew out of its body, rapidly entering the underground.

The Ice Air Fairy slowly began to float upwards amidst the whirling storm, gradually rising twenty meters into the air.

The Ice Air Fairy's ice type magic was still a large threat to commander rank Blue Nightmare. In the onslaught of the Ice Air Fairy's ice type magic after ascending into the air, the two Blue Nightmare's had no choice but to restrain their threatening manner.

“Flaming Meteor, crush that Ice Air Fairy.” Tian Ji mentally transmitted.

The two truculent Blue Nightmares immediately produced shrill shouts, and a terrifying devil fire abruptly proliferated. Their two skins were raised high into the air and two balls of ignited Flaming Meteors began to condense in the sky!

The two deep blue colored balls of flame slowly formed in the sky and became increasingly imposing, the flames even more acute.

However, just as the two Blue Nightmares completed their Flaming Meteor technique, the wall adjacent to the chasm suddenly burst apart. Six python-like roots abruptly rushed forth. With Ice Armor on them, they violently shot towards the two Blue Nightmares!

The devil fire on the two Blue Nightmares fiercely burned once more. They were unexpectedly ignoring the onslaught of the large roots!!

“Pai!!!”

The six roots seemed to simultaneously smash into the Blue Nightmares. The Blue Nightmare’s just formed Flaming Meteors suffered from the root attack and deviated from its track.

Once the Flaming Meteors deviated directions, the Ice Air Fairy had a much easier time dodging, and the two Flaming Meteors didn’t produce much effect.

“Devil Fire Extension.”

Once Tian Ji saw that the attack had no effect on the Ice Air Fairy, he promptly ordered the two Blue Nightmares to channel their flames into the six roots. He attempted to use the roots to channel devil fire into the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s body.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s attack seemed to have only been

for harassment. After harassing, it decisively burrowed back underground, and the proliferating blue devil flame could only follow it to the wall adjacent to the chasm, but couldn't follow it underground.

“Attack him directly!”

Tian Ji changed his target once more. He made his two Blue Nightmares cross the chasm and charge towards Chu Mu.

Chu Mu seemed to have already anticipated that Tian Ji would focus him and, after using Wind Ride on himself, he retreated backwards without even looking back. He increased the distance between himself and the Blue Nightmares while simultaneously ordering the Ice Air Fairy in the air to use ice type techniques on the Blue Nightmares.

Seeing Chu Mu grow further away, if he continued to chase, his Blue Nightmares would probably suffer from the terrifying ice type abilities. Tian Ji had no choice but to abandon his attack on Chu Mu again. He planned on first getting rid of the troublesome Ice Air Fairy.

“This coordination between this person and his two soul pets is extremely good. There doesn't seem to be any gaps.”

Those who could see it quickly discovered that Chu Mu was very proficient at using battle tactics. He was able to completely avoid attacks and deliberately wore down on the two truculent Blue Nightmares' vigor and physical strength.

Everyone thought that Chu Mu should have swapped soul pets not too long after the battle started. Yet, they were surprised because Chu Mu used these two clearly inferior soul pets to consume a large portion of one of Tian Ji's Blue Nightmare, forcing him to summon a third soul pet.

When Tian Ji summoned his third soul pet, Chu Mu didn't hesitate to recall his inferior Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

“The fight starts now!!” a smile emerged on Chu Mu's face as he decisively chanted an incantation and opened the soul pact with Mo Xie!!

After finishing the soul crystal training, Chu Mu's true aim for this fight was to give Mo Xie, who had entered the sixth phase, a chance to fight to her heart's content!!

Chapter 15: The Prison Island King That Lost A Soul

The third soul pet that Tian Ji summoned was still a Blue Nightmare. Different than the previous two Blue Nightmares, the blue fire on this Blue Nightmare's body was even more profound. Its enormous devil fire aura discharged and the surrounding dry specks of sand were ignited. Within the nearby ten meter radius, everything seemed to be enveloped by this eminently profound blue devil fire!

It was a fifth phase ninth stage Blue Nightmare that was about to enter the sixth phase!

If a soul pet trainer could possess one commander rank soul pet, he or she would be a considered powerful person. Yet Tian Ji simultaneously possessed three Blue Nightmares. Such a terrifying method of raising soul pets caused everyone to be somewhat flabbergasted!

A fifth phase fourth stage, a fifth phase sixth stage, and a fifth phase ninth stage!

Three Blue Nightmares simultaneously appearing on stage. Especially when they lined up next to each other, their auras were exceptionally terrifying. Even those in the audience could feel their ice cold aura.

However, even so, the three enormous auras of the Blue Nightmares still could not cover Mo Xie's gigantic Demon Fire Evil

Flame Aura!!

The devil fire was deep blue, and its remote, cold feeling gave others a chill to the bone.

The demon fire was a bright red color, and its blazing heat gave others a burnt feeling!

The Blue Nightmare's summon was strange, demonic, and full of a dense cold aura. Nevertheless, when the sixth phase third stage Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox spread open her breathtaking six tails, a noble aura appeared amidst the violently burning Demon Fire Evil Flame. The high class commander rank Blue Nightmare's devil fire was faintly being suppressed!

After undergoing soul crystal training, Mo Xie had not only surpassed the fifth phase ninth stage boundary, she had miraculously increased another two stages, reaching the sixth phase third stage!!

“A sixth phase third stage Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox! Why didn't you tell me he had this soul pet!” said the Blue Nightmare Palace Lord to Su Yu. His eyebrows immediately creased.

“Last time... last time it wasn't this strong...” Su Yu didn't know how to explain. His face was extremely contorted as he looked at the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox that was able to use its aura to suppress the fifth phase ninth stage Blue Nightmare.

“Trash!” cursed the Blue Nightmare Palace Lord!

Everyone knew that the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox was an abnormal warrior rank soul pet. Its fighting strength was not inferior to a commander rank soul pet. This indicated that Chu Mu’s Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox’s fighting strength could be comparable to a sixth phase commander rank soul pet. Most importantly, although the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox had a commander rank soul pet’s fighting strength, it could be used by a spirit soldier. This was the most valuable aspect of an Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox!

“Wuwu!!”

Her silver fur fluttering in the violent wind, Mo Xie held her head high and let out a powerful howl. Even in front of three eminently evil Blue Nightmares, there wasn’t the slightest hint of fear!!

“One person alone cannot raise three Blue Nightmares...” coldly laughed Chu Mu.

Nightmares had to devour their host’s soul power to grow. Simultaneously raising three Blue Nightmares was practically impossible. Therefore, Tian Ji’s three Blue Nightmares were not slowly cultivated by himself. Rather, he had to use other methods to provide the Nightmares soul power. In this regard, there would definitely be mistakes when controlling them in battle.

“A sixth phase third stage Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon fox is

truly shocking. However, in front of my three nightmares, it's still slightly lacking. Summon your third soul pet!" Tian Ji's gaze stared at Chu Mu's Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox, as he spoke unperturbed.

The people sitting high above could see that Chu Mu's Six Tailed Demon Fox would have no problems in dealing with the fifth phase ninth stage Blue Nightmare.

Nevertheless, Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy, which had consumed a lot of fighting strength, could not deal with the remaining two Blue Nightmares.

Therefore, in any event, Chu Mu would have to summon a third soul pet in order to contend against Tian Ji.

"Is he not going to summon a third soul pet?" Princess Jin Rou slowly asked.

"I remember that he seemed to have lost a soul." replied Xia Guanghan.

Xia Guanghan's tone remained calm and cold; however, his words instantly raised a wave of startled commotion!!

Losing a soul was practically a nightmare to any soul pet trainer. On their future path to become powerful, it would be a huge obstacle!

“Then... then hasn't he always been in a state where he lacks a soul pet summon?” A trace of astonishment flashed in Princess Jin Rou's beautiful eyes!

Princess Jin Rou also wasn't forgetful. She remembered that, three years ago, when she went to the Eternal Ocean, a young man had forsaken the chance at survival that she gave him and instead resolutely chose to survive on Prison Island!

The young man that had chosen the option of death had ultimately walked out alive. This made Princess Jin Rou rather surprised, but she didn't know that Chu Mu had lost a soul!

Losing a soul and entering Prison Island to survive made the difficulty level for Chu Mu much higher than everyone else. Moreover, even under these circumstances, he still managed to walk out alive. Even the perpetually calm Princess Jin Rou couldn't help but admit that it was a miracle!!!

The gaze of the always arrogant and battle-loving Lu Lishan had clearly changed right now. He intentionally glanced at Xia Guanghan before suspiciously verifying: “He really did lose a soul?”

“Yes.” Xia Guanghan nodded his head.

Until now, the Nightmare Prince Adjudicator would always use the most indifferent attitude towards any person or any fight. Yet, currently, the young man with an exceedingly high status in Nightmare Palace had finally been moved!

“If he lost a soul, then isn’t he a piece of trash? What a joke, he surprisingly lost a soul.” After hearing the news, Su Yu’s first reaction was an ineffable satisfaction, because the fellow he detested was a piece of trash that had lost a soul.

However, while Su Yu felt elated, his father’s face had gone black!

“He’s lost a soul, so what qualifications does he have to fight against Tian Ji?! What qualifications does he have to be a Nightmare Prince?!” Su Yu still wasn’t able to determine where the problem laid, and continued to have a contemptuous look.

“Idiot, shut your mouth!” The Blue Nightmare Palace Lord finally couldn’t stand it anymore and cursed at him in rage!

The Blue Nightmare Palace Lord was truly seething with anger. How could he have such an idiotic son that was beyond hope of saving. Bringing him out was simply losing face!

If it was back then, at the beginning, and Chu Mu had lost a soul, then Nightmare Palace wouldn’t find any value in cultivating Chu Mu. To any soul pet trainer, any soul was imperatively important.

However, it was different now. Chu Mu was the Prison Island King!

Three years ago, Chu Mu had already lost a soul. Yet, even under these circumstances, he had survived in the cruel environment of Prison Island for three years. At the age of 18, he had become the new generation of the Prison Island King. As to what implications this had, even those with a small amount of brains would be able to figure it out!!

It was also due to this reason that everyone present, including Princess Jin Rou and Lu Lishan, felt extremely amazed!

An 18 year old Prison Island King was already terrifying. No one further expected this Prison Island King to have also lost a soul! Xia Guanghan's nonchalant words caused a sensation to surge through everyone's hearts. Their gazes were eminently shocked as they stared at the black clothed man on the battlefield!

“H... how on earth did he survive?”

It was a long while before someone asked this question. However, in reality, this was a question everyone wanted an answer to!

Having lost a soul, how on earth did he survive?!

“No wonder Senior Xia extols this Chu Mu. This one sentence of Senior Xia has managed to instantaneously reveal a rare talent!” Princess Jin Rou who rarely praised others slowly spoke. At the same time, her beautiful eyes were fixed on the black clothed man with the eyes of a beast!

The corners of Xia Guanghan's mouth raised up, but he didn't say anything further.

Often, a person's strength was determined by who they beat and what soul pet they possessed.

However, there was nothing that could determine one's strength more than someone who had lost a soul and was still able to become the Prison Island King at the age of 18.

Furthermore, this sort of power was absolutely shocking!!

"Then... then this means that he's always used two soul pets to fight three soul pets. That means right now... doesn't he also have to use two soul pets to fight three soul pets?!"

Quickly, someone became aware of the current battle situation!

Everyone's guesses were correct. Chu Mu really could not summon a third soul pet. Moreover, in Chu Mu's opinion, Mo Xie and the Ice Air Fairy were enough to deal with the three Blue Nightmares!

Using two to fight three. The change in the tides of battle caused everyone seated on the podium to open their eyes wide. Through this fight, they wanted to determine if Xia Guanghan's words were true.

Tian Ji paid no heed to the ruckus that had been set off in the

audience. He continued to feel rather suspicious by Chu Mu's arrogance.

"If you think that you can use a sixth phase third stage Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox to beat me, you're gravely mistaken!" shouted Tian Ji coldly. He immediately ordered his three Blue Nightmares to launch a violent offensive!

Chu Mu didn't say anything else. Instead, he silently chanted an incantation!

As he chanted the incantation, a captivating blood red light slowly discharged from Chu Mu's body. When Chu Mu finished the incantation, the pillar of blood light abruptly soared into the sky!!

Inside the blood light that was soaring into the sky, a pair of large pupils suddenly opened. The two eyes were like the devil's eyes-full of eminent indifference-as they overlooked the earth. They unexpectedly made the three Blue Nightmares stop in their tracks!

"Violent Blood Pupil!" Chu Mu's two distinctive eyes pupils had been dyed red. The pupils in the blood light seemed to be a projection of Chu Mu's. A kind of savage, ruthless, blood-thirsty and violent mental message passed through the blood pupil into the identically imposing Mo Xie!

A captivating blood light enveloped Mo Xie's red colored Demon Fire Evil Flame! The already ostentatious evil flame on Mo Xie's body became even more exuberant, and all of her silver white fur was dyed in a blood red, with a blazing fire and a gorgeous

captivating red color. Her slender and powerful body seemed to be fully covered in flames!!

Sixth phase seventh stage!!!

With the addition of Violent Blood Pupil, Mo Xie further exhibited the characteristics of a sixth phase seventh stage Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox. A terrifying Demon Fire Evil Flame caused those seated in the audience to feel a scorching heat and a dense bloody aura!

Chapter 16: Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox VS Blue Nightmare

“Wuwuwu!!”

The silver eyes had transformed into a scarlet red. Mo Xie’s battle intent had reached its pinnacle and, without a need for Chu Mu’s order, a terrifying demonic aura swept forth, striking back at the violent and biting cold gale, completely reversing its direction. In a savage manner, she launched herself towards the three Blue Nightmares!!

Six glorious tails suddenly spread open. On top of each one of them were raging Demon Fire Evil Flames!

Six Tail Lock!!

The six Demon Fire Evil Flamed tails suddenly transformed into six fatal shackles that brought with them six torrential waves of flame, as they ruthlessly smashed at the fifth phase ninth stage Blue Nightmare!!

“Pa!!”

In front of the now sixth phase seventh stage Mo Xie, the fifth phase ninth stage Blue Nightmare had no way of resisting. The bewitching blue colored flame body was ruthlessly launched backwards by the strike. It tumbled backwards, directly into the deep chasm, and fell into the depths, causing a shocking pithole to

explode at the very bottom.

“Nie!!”

The two Blue Nightmares suddenly registered the enemy's attack, and they let out indignant roars. Two balls of flame abruptly condensed in their respective hands, transforming into two, three meter long blue flame lances.

The four nightmare flame pikes launched straight through the air, leaving four arcs of imposing blue flame in their tracks. The pikes shot towards Mo Xie's location!

“Fire Mirror!”

At the same time, Tian Ji completed a soul technique incantation; suddenly, a strangely deep blue fire adhered to the two Blue Nightmare's bodies. The two Blue Nightmare's eyes then abruptly ignited with an even further exuberant abstruse flame!!

The moment the abstruse flame was ignited, the four Nightmare Flame Lances that were flying in the air rapidly split apart, and each lance became two!!

The four Nightmare Flame Lances had shockingly become eight, blocking off all of Mo Xie's escape routes.

“Ning, Ice Wall.”

The Ice Air Fairy instantly produced a resonant shout. The Ice Air Fairy didn't even have to chant an incantation to cast such a mere second rank ice type technique. The moment it waved its hands, six ten meter tall Ice Walls immediately appeared, respectively arising in front of the eight spears.

The Ice Air Fairy's control had reached a certain realm, so the six Ice Walls didn't directly face the Nightmare Flame Lances. Rather, they arose at a slight angle so that the Ice Walls would not only stop the Nightmare Flame Lances, but also alter their trajectories!

The ingeniously placed Ice Walls managed to redirect six of the Nightmare Flame Lances, causing them to lose effectiveness. As for the remaining two, for Mo Xie who was extremely fast, they weren't of any problem.

“Mo Xie, Death Assault. Attack the fifth phase fourth stage Blue Nightmare!”

By the time Mo Xie nimbly dodged the two Nightmare Flame Lances, her running speed had reached a level where others could hardly see her clearly. Superimposing Death Assault's terrifying speed increase of 1.5 times, the charging Mo Xie astonishingly transformed into an exceptionally gorgeous streak of fire that rushed through the vast, sandy ground!!

“Illusion!!”

The rapid flaming silhouette instantly split into three. These

three imposing, flaming silhouettes were abnormally clear and ostensible. Immediately, they became three domineering Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Foxes. The Blue Nightmare that had lost a majority of its physical strength over the last 10 minutes revealed a terrified expression!

Illusion Evil Flame Claw!

From a phase and stage perspective, it lacked one phase and three stages. Moreover, with the effect of the three illusions, Mo Xie's attack power was increased to an apex!!

Three ghastly claws respectively slashed through the fifth phase fourth stage Blue Nightmare's neck, abdomen, and head.

The Blue Nightmare's body, normally swathed in blue nightmare flame, had currently been completely ripped apart by red, bloody claws!!

“Nie!!”

A delayed miserable and penetrating shriek reverberated around the windy sandy stadium. It reached the audience seated high above, causing those who heard it to feel a terrifying feeling!

The fifth phase fourth stage Blue Nightmare's body had begun to split into pieces. The surging scarlet flames began to swallow the fire on its body until, finally, it lay in the ground, cut up into multiple pieces.

“Demon Fire Proliferation!”

In battle, there wasn't a single moment of rest. The moment the Blue Nightmare died, Chu Mu ruthlessly made Mo Xie send the deadly Demon Fire into Tian Ji's mental world.

Tian Ji didn't make the same fatal mistake as Guo Xian, and he quickly used his soul remembrance to guard his soul in his mind!

“Hong Hong”

The violent burning evil flame surged in Tian Ji's mind. Despite using soul remembrance to defend, the third remembrance spirit teacher Tian Ji still suffered some soul damage from the Evil Flame!

Tian Ji's face instantaneously turned pale, and his body fell forward into a half kneel, as he began heavily panting.

“Ning, Ice Meteor!!”

Even until this moment, the intense offensive still hadn't stopped!!

Chu Mu was not someone who gave his opponents a chance to catch their breaths. He ordered the Ice Air Fairy to use the long ranged Ice Meteor, attacking Tian Ji directly!

The Ice Air Fairy's incantation speed was exceptionally quick. It seemed that in the same moment Tian Ji half knelt on the ground, a layer of ice had astonishingly appeared fifty meters above his head. The frosty ice quickly transformed into an ice meteor that brought with it a surging frozen air, as it smashed towards Tian Ji's head!

Everyone couldn't help but suck in a breath of air as they watched this scene. They felt like it was their heads that the Ice Meteor was hanging above of, creating an incorporeal cold!!

Tian Ji grit his teeth. Clearly, he could feel the terrifying Ice Meteor above his head. However, after his soul suffered from the formidable Evil Flame attack, he was momentarily unable to use any soul technique. He could only forcibly order his fifth phase sixth stage Blue Nightmare to help defend himself!!

The fifth phase sixth stage Blue Nightmare had no choice but to abandon its planned attack. It ignited two balls of flame in its hand and threw them into the air!

The two balls of abstruse blue soul nightmare fire flew through the air in an arc. It shockingly managed to intercept the fatal Ice Meteor, when it was only five meters away from Tian Ji!

“Hong”

The ice meteor instantly exploded above Tian Ji's head, and the ice fragments fell onto his body...

The ferocity of Chu Mu's attacks had become a habit. The moment the opponent was at a disadvantage, his onslaught would become a torrential storm that relentlessly attacked without rest!

Mo Xie, whose mind and soul was linked with Chu Mu, had an absolute tacit understanding with him. Without a need for Chu Mu's order, she had already launched another ruthless attack towards Tian Ji!!

“Blink!”

Mo Xie's speed advantage allowed her Blink technique to be even more brilliant. The continuous claw strikes from various different angles rendered Tian Ji unable to use any soul techniques. He could only forcibly make use of the fifth phase sixth stage Blue Nightmare to defend himself!

Mo Xie's Blink frequency was extremely fast. The people sitting in the audience could feel the imposing fire silhouette multiply as Mo Xie quickly blinked around the Blue Nightmare's circumference. Her claws even ripped apart the air, causing a plethora of sparks to fly!

“Rapid Freeze!”

Suddenly, six gorgeous threads of ice appeared under Chu Mu's feet. Under his control, they ran along the ground, rapidly extending!

The fifth phase ninth stage Blue Nightmare that had fallen into the crevice had just climbed out when the Rapid Freeze technique appeared right in front of it!

The Rapid Freeze technique Chu Mu that had learned wasn't complete. Nevertheless, his soul remembrance had reached that of a sixth remembrance spirit teacher. With a soul connection with the Ice Air Fairy, the ice type soul pet, Chu Mu's ice type technique control was not much inferior to the Ice Air Fairy's. Moreover, Chu Mu's Rapid Freeze wasn't meant to wound the fifth phase ninth stage Blue Nightmare. Instead, he wanted to momentarily restrict its movements!

The ice type had the absolute advantage over fire type. Thus, even though it was a mere Rapid Freeze that was used by a sixth remembrance Spirit Trainer, it was still able to inhibit the Blue Nightmare's movements!

The fifth phase ninth stage Blue Nightmare originally wanted to return and assist Tian Ji, but it was currently being delayed. Tian Ji had no choice but to consume a large amount of soul power to use various methods of defense on himself, as he strenuously defended with the fifth phase sixth stage Blue Nightmare against Mo Xie's attacks!

"I've never seen Tian Ji forced into such a difficult situation. Moreover, the opponent only has two soul pets!"

"This Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox is too terrifying. Perhaps

its innate speed talent is virtually unrivalled amongst the commander rank. Otherwise, how else could it exhibit such a shocking rate of attack at its phase and stage!”

From the moment the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox appeared, this battle had been completely controlled by Chu Mu. The powerful young man, Tian Ji, had unexpectedly been suppressed to the point where he couldn't even retaliate. Many people even found it hard to believe that this Blue Nightmare Palace young man who often fought one versus three was the genius, Tian Ji. He was now unable to even change out soul pets

“Tian Ji cannot lose so easily...” Lu Lishan seemed to somewhat understand Tian Ji. He could see that Tian Ji had only been oppressed by the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox's powerful continuous attacks. If he had a bit of time to recompose himself, he would definitely have enough strength to launch one last attack.

However, looking at the situation now, Lu Lishan only believed that Tian Ji still had enough strength for one final attack, but didn't believe that he could reverse the situation under the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox's attacks. This was because the eighteen year old Prison Island King absolutely would not give him the chance to retaliate!

“Obnoxious!!!”

Tian Ji grit his teeth. During this fight, his Blue Nightmares didn't manage to exhibit their true fighting prowess. Instead, he had been perpetually been restricted by Chu Mu.

Tian Ji couldn't help but admit that when it came to fighting, this fighting veteran of Prison Island King was truly exceptional. Perhaps even people stronger than him would be defeated through his various restriction techniques.

Finally, Tian Ji's fifth phase ninth stage Blue Nightmare freed itself from Chu Mu's Rapid Freeze restriction. After regaining its freedom, the strongest Blue Nightmare let out an indignant nightmare-like howl. Surprisingly, it didn't go over and save Tian Ji, but rather exposed its terrifying devil nature. A wave of Nightmare Flame was conjured and it swept forth towards Chu Mu!

Tian Ji directly commanded his Fifth Phase Ninth Stage Blue Nightmare to attack Chu Mu. This was basically following the principle "Offense is the best Defense". Such a tactic was called 'Abandon Attack' in the soul pet world.

"Tian Ji has a lot of courage, and he is very cool-headed. Even while his defenses are being broken, he didn't call the fifth phase ninth stage Blue Nightmare back to him, but instead had it directly attack the opponent soul pet trainer. Presumably he's determined that the Ice Air Fairy has expended so much magic power that it cannot resist the Blue Nightmare. He thereby forces Chu Mu to call the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox back to him." explained Zhou Luleng.

Everyone nodded in agreement. They felt that Tian Ji's method was the only way for him to recover from this disadvantaged battle stage. After all, Tian Ji was ultimately still a representative of the

strongest members of the younger generation. He could not lose just like that.

Everyone had approved of Tian Ji's brazen, but farsighted battle techniques. Xia Guanghan, however, indifferently spoke a few words: "Tian Ji will definitely die."

Chapter 17: The White Nightmare That Devours Nightmares

Xia Guanghan didn't really enjoy talking, but the sentence he uttered caused everyone to feel surprised.

Yet, when everyone's eyes fell on him, imploring him to explain, he maintained an indifferent face, not willing to speak his reason.

The others didn't understand Chu Mu, but Xia Guanghan knew that the biggest reason why Chu Mu was able to live until today was because, in his body, he harbored an exceptionally talented and ultra evil soul pet!

“He still isn't making the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Fox return. Could it be that he wants it to suicide for Tian Ji's life?”

“He... it seems he also moved the Ice Air Fairy away...”

Everyone knew that Chu Mu had lost a soul. Since he couldn't summon another soul pet to fight, from the current perspective, Chu Mu also didn't have enough soul power left to summon another soul pet. The Ice Air Fairy also didn't have much magic power left. Even if Chu Mu's Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox killed Tian Ji, the Blue Nightmare would still kill Chu Mu!

Precisely as everyone saw, in front of the sinister Blue Nightmare with torrential devil flames, not only did Chu Mu not make the Ice Air Fairy defend him, he also made it retreat away. Under

everyone's shocked gazes, he planned on using his own body to meet the fifth phase ninth stage Blue Nightmare!

Although soul pet trainers had soul techniques, it would be extremely hard for a soul pet trainer to face a fifth phase ninth stage Blue Nightmare alone, regardless of how strong his soul techniques were. At this moment, everyone felt that the Prison Island King had gone crazy. Only Xia Guanghan kept his arms folded, as his eyes unwaveringly watched Chu Mu. He seemed to be waiting for something!

For nearly four years, Chu Mu had used his own soul power to feed the White Nightmare. This price was extremely high, and distinctly limited the majority of Chu Mu's soul power. This also caused his life on Prison Island to be even more disadvantaged.

Nevertheless, this vile child that Chu Mu slowly fostered wouldn't always hold Chu Mu back. There were times when it could be of extremely crucial use. For instance, the formidable combination technique of Devil Flame and Demon Fire. This technique often allowed Chu Mu to defeat those much stronger than him.

Furthermore, due to the White Nightmare's existence, while on Prison Island, Chu Mu's greatest wish was to encounter an opponent with a powerful Nightmare...

The fifth phase ninth stage Blue Nightmare's body was covered in an ostentatiously deep blue devil flame. The devil flame flared off its body up to ten meters high, as its terrifying Nightmare fire silhouette enveloped Chu Mu's body. Its two enormous torch-like

eyes released a deep blue colored light!!

Compared to the might and demonic presence of the Blue Nightmare, Chu Mu's black colored figure was much more negligible.

However, from the audience's perspective, they shockingly discovered that the Chu Mu standing arrogantly within the violent gale gave off a demonic feeling. Facing a commander rank Blue Nightmare, a demonic and violent intent blossomed from his eyes, as if he was instead facing an insignificant joke of an opponent!

The violent gale howled through the sandy battlefield. It was viciously cold and it whistled loudly, causing the deep blue colored devil eyes to whirl about everywhere!

Finally, the deep blue colored devil flame enveloped Chu Mu's black figure. At this moment, everyone's shockingly stared at the ball of raging deep blue colored soul devil flame!!

The devil flame was chaotic and, hidden in the depths of the dark blue color, people astonishingly discovered a pale white flame that began to gradually ignite from within.

From the outside, this pale white flame seemed like a weak candle flame that slowly grew into a burning object. When it had first been ignited, it still feebly swayed in the wind.

Yet, in reality, this pale white devil flame wasn't as ostensibly

weak. No matter how much the violent gale lashed at the flame, or how torrid the blue colored devil flame was, it still continued to grow, maintaining a steady pace as it expanded!

It grew from an unremarkable white colored devil flame to a torrential fire. At a certain point, this torrential fire suddenly transformed into a savage beast that violently devoured all the blue colored devil flames!!

“White... White Nightmare!!”

A stunned and frightened shout abruptly resounded out from the high seats!

Instantly, everyone finally came to a sudden realization. This pale white devil flame was the eminently powerful monarch rank White Nightmare’s white colored soul devil flame!!

White colored soul devil flame-peculiar, terrifying and serenely cold!

“How does he have a White Nightmare?!!”

“A monarch rank White Nightmare!! That’s something that can only be summoned at the spirit master level. How can he summon a White Nightmare?! Furthermore, didn’t he also lose a soul?!”

An uproar arose once again! Everyone who saw this scene felt an inconceivable feeling!!

There was definitely a finite amount of White Nightmares within Nightmare Palace. Without the White Nightmare Palace Lord's permission, a White Nightmare would absolutely never be given away!

Being conferred a White Nightmare was the greatest honor. Anybody in Nightmare Palace that possessed a White Nightmare was a truly powerful being. These powerful people were revered and adored by those in Nightmare Palace.

“How does this Prison Island King have a White Nightmare?” Currently, Lu Lishan's eyebrows were creased. His vision was fixated on Xia Guanghan's, whose eyes flashed a slight lustre.

Princess Jin Rou also stared at Xia Guanghan. She wanted to know why the most authoritative soul pet in Nightmare Palace, the White Nightmare, had ended up in Chu Mu's hands.

A smile appeared on Xia Guanghan's face as if he was appreciating his own masterpiece. He slowly said: “This White Nightmare is one that you've seen before. It is the later generation of that White Nightmare that devoured our grand majesty, Bai Yu.”

“What? This White Nightmare can also sign a soul pact with someone? Didn't Lord Bai order you to get rid of it?!” said Lu Lishan, astonished.

“To kill a powerful soul pet while it's still in its infancy, despite

its eccentricity, is truly too cruel. Therefore, I had this White Nightmare form a soul pact with a myriad of young people. Ultimately, it succeeded in making one with Chu Mu. Moreover, what made me extremely surprised was that he managed to feed this White Nightmare for almost four years. He's made the White Nightmare develop a form of dependence on his soul power." Xia Guanghan slowly spoke .

After listening to Xia Guanghan's explanation, everyone sucked in a breath of air. This was because many people in the audience knew that the later generation of the White Nightmare that devoured His Majesty Bai Yu, was extremely eccentric and terrifying. Signing a soul pact with this White Nightmare was essentially selling one's soul to the devil!!

As everyone was stunned, on the sandy battlefield, the windswept sand had already covered the air. In the middle of the spacious yet exceptionally chaotic battlefield, the recklessly proliferating white colored devil flame had already devoured the deep blue colored evil flame; furthermore, it had alarmingly devoured the fifth phase ninth stage Blue Nightmare!!!

Nightmare devouring Nightmare!

This strange phenomenon was definitely very rare in the soul pet world. Presently, this fundamentally illogical event had truly occurred in front of everyone's eyes, giving them a hair-raising feeling!!

Chu Mu didn't quite understand the White Nightmare in his body, but he knew that ever since the white colored evil flame

ignited on the Cyan Nightmare Main Island, the White Nightmare in his body would turn abnormally excited whenever another Nightmare appeared. It would then terrifyingly devour its own species!

When on Prison Island, Chu Mu had also encountered an opponent controlling powerful Blue Nightmares. However, once the Nightmare got near to him, without exception, they would become this obstreperous and wicked White Nightmare's food to eat.

After devouring them, the White Nightmare's strength would rapidly increase as well!

When Chu Mu entered Prison Island, the White Nightmare's phase and stage was still less than Mo Xie's. Yet, when Chu Mu left Prison Island, the White Nightmare had reached the sixth phase third stage. Its speed of evolution was astounding!

Moreover, Chu Mu was extremely happy, because once the White Nightmare devoured another one of its own species, Chu Mu didn't have to feed the White Nightmare any food for the next ten days. This was effectively releasing the chains on Chu Mu's body, and it allowed him to use soul techniques as much as he wanted to!

How could the fifth phase ninth stage Blue Nightmare contend against the sixth phase third stage Monarch Rank White Nightmare? As expected, it had been mercilessly turned into food and completely vanished from the battlefield.

The Blue Nightmare's death caused another wave of soul backlash on the absolutely shocked Tian Ji. Tian Ji was still relying on his soul techniques and the fifth phase sixth stage Blue Nightmare to barely defend against Mo Xie's imposing attacks. Furthermore, if Chu Mu didn't call back the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox, Tian Ji's defense would definitely be broken!

Thus, at this moment, the soul feedback undoubtedly became Tian Ji's fatal strike, causing him to fully lose the strength to even hold himself up as he fell onto the ground.

The moment Tian Ji's knees sunk, Mo Xie's savage Evil Flame Claw ripped apart the fifth phase sixth stage Blue Nightmare's body. The terrifying Demon Fire Evil Flame quickly burned the Blue Nightmare's entire body.

Three souls suffering damage was enough to make a soul pet trainer instantly enter a near death state. Currently, Tian Ji's face was as pale as paper, and his sweat was imbued throughout his entire body. His body also incessantly writhed about!!

“You can stop now.”

As was customary, Chu Mu was still about to make Mo Xie end Tian Ji's life when suddenly a soul force created a mental message that resounded within Chu Mu's mind.

The sound of the voice was clear and spirited like a song, causing Chu Mu to slightly lose his concentration.

Tian Ji no longer had the ability to resist. The Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox only had to extend one claw, and the young expert's blood would fly everywhere.

However, Mo Xie ultimately controlled the Violent Blood Pupils' ruthless aura and stopped her last attack. She proudly raised her head and slowly dispersed the eminently formidable Demon Fire Evil Flame on her body before returning to Chu Mu's side.

Chu Mu glanced at Tian Ji and indifferently said: "I tried my best."

After speaking, Chu Mu recalled Mo Xie and the Ice Air Fairy. Under everyone's still shocked gazes, he gradually left this sand suffused battlefield and approached the battlefield's audience.

As he walked up to the spectating audience, Chu Mu could feel everyone's shocking gazes displaying terror, reverence, and astonishment...

However, the gaze that captured Chu Mu the most was from the pair of beautiful yet melancholic eyes. Chu Mu could feel a hint of emotional change occur in Princess Jin Rou's bewitchingly beautiful eyes.

"After this battle, there won't be anyone in Nightmare Palace who doesn't know your distinguished Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince name." it also took Lu Lishan a while to recover from his shock before he spoke to Chu Mu.

After speaking, Lu Lishan intentionally glanced at Xia Guanghan, because he knew that Chu Mu, who had revealed such terrifying fighting strength and nearly became an overnight celebrity, had virtually surpassed the sensation that Xia Guanghan had previously caused in Nightmare Palace!

Chapter 18: Bestowed A Sixth Level Soul

Armor

In this instant, everyone's gazes towards Chu Mu had changed. Being able to defeat Tian Ji exemplified the fact that Chu Mu possessed the strength of a top Nightmare Palace youth. As for these peak youth experts in Nightmare Palace, all of them had exceptionally high statuses. Within all of Nightmare Palace, they had a lot of power. Additionally, aside from the important elders within the inner Nightmare Palace, no one else had authority over the people inducted into the ranks of these young peak experts!

Chu Mu could feel the changes in these people's gazes. Feeling the reverence of others towards oneself was a kind of magic; it could cause someone to ceaselessly chase for the strongest domain.

Lifting his head, Chu Mu's eyes focused on the beautiful and noble woman used to attention. At this moment, no one dared to rebuke him for directly looking at the Princess. Thus, he could truly stare into the eyes of this woman whom he had a rather favorable impression of.

Princess Jin Rou also felt Chu Mu's stare. Perhaps her intelligence allowed her to read something from his eyes...

"Chu Mu..." Finally, Princess Jin Rou opened her mouth, her voice still pleasant and tactful.

Chu Mu nodded his head and his expression returned to its habitual coldness. Before he had enough strength, Chu Mu would

not easily expose his inner feelings. Therefore, Chu Mu didn't want the Princess to know he was attracted to her.

Chu Mu's attraction for her wasn't complicated at all. He was currently also a mentally mature young man, and it was normal for him to have a favorable impression of this girl. Especially when he felt this young Nightmare Palace Princess' unique temperament...

However, this kind of attraction wouldn't impact Chu Mu's heart. Chu Mu was rational and would chase after this kind of girl, but would absolutely not make it his goal. His true goal was to unceasingly become stronger. He would become strong enough to prevent his family from suffering humiliation. He would become strong enough to not be stepped on by others and be reduced to listening to their raucous sneers. He would become strong enough that he could make every decision for himself and not be controlled by Xia Guanghan!

“Chu Mu, I want to know, how did you lose one of your souls?” asked Princess Jin Rou.

Princess Jin Rou's question was one that everyone wanted to know. This Prison Island King that had lost a soul was so terrifying. If he hadn't lost that soul, wouldn't he be able to sweep through all of Nightmare Palace's young experts?!

“When I was a Spirit Disciple I signed a soul pact with a high ranking soul pet. Ultimately that soul pet defected.” Chu Mu briefly explained.

Soul pet defection. This wound from Chu Mu's youth was deeply engraved in his heart. Nevertheless, that was a matter of the past, and Chu Mu's heart was already full of wounds. He simply didn't care about this one.

“You lost a soul and went on to nurture a White Nightmare. Under these circumstances, you survived on Prison Island for three years. Your spirit is something that I admire.” Princess Jin Rou opulently said.

Nothing was more honorable than a princess' praise. Especially Princess Jin Rou's praise. Everyone instantly cast an envious glance, especially those youths who admired this princess.

“This is a sixth level soul armor that I just obtained from Tianxia City. It will be your reward. I hope that you will become a true expert in Nightmare Palace like Senior Xia.” As Princess Jin Rou spoke, she waved her hands and made the white clothed female next to her confer the soul armor onto Chu Mu.

“Sixth level soul armor!!”

The princess' brief words caused another uproar amongst the crowd. Everyone present had a basic understanding of goods, so how could they not know the value of a sixth level Ice Fire Soul Armor?! Such a treasure was unexpectedly being bestowed to this Prison Island King!!

Countless envious gazes were cast once more. Moreover, many of

those gazes had evolved into a jealousy. After all, a sixth level soul armor was too valuable. No one expected Princess Jin Rou to bestow Chu Mu with a sixth level soul armor!

A sixth level soul armor!

An ice type and fire type fusion soul armor. By just slightly adding a defensive technique, it's defensive capabilities could reach the seventh level, and almost the eighth level. Such defensive strength far surpassed many defensive type soul pets. Even if he were to directly oppose a few powerful creatures, he wouldn't have to be afraid at all!

Chu Mu recalled that a sixth level fourth attributed soul armor cost nearly five million gold coins. He never expected Princess Jin Rou to be so generous as to bestow him with such a precious item!

“Chu Mu, quickly thank the princess. In the future you will be a direct subordinate of the princess. Only the princess and I can send you on errands. You can ignore anyone else's orders.” slowly said Xia Guanghan.

Chu Mu somewhat put one knee on the ground, adopting an etiquette not quite up to par.

As he was paying thanks, Chu Mu could see Princess Jin Rou's elegant dress...

When he stood up, Princess Jin Rou had already left under the

escort of the four females. Looking at the back of Princess Jin Rou's figure, Chu Mu's heart was even more resolute...

The eighteen year old Prison Island King had arrogantly accepted the challenges of five people, and now had defeated the already famous Tian Ji. Just as Lu Lishan had said, after this battle, Chu Mu's fame would probably become known to everybody in Nightmare Palace!

Although fame didn't have any actual substance or benefit, it was the most direct way a soul pet trainer's strength was measured. After defeating the peak expert Tian Ji of Nightmare Palace, Chu Mu quickly rose to become Nightmare Palace's new star!!

Originally, when Xia Guanghan had become the Prison Island King, he became the star of Nightmare Palace with the most potential. He'd caused a sensation back then, and his position in Nightmare Palace unceasingly went on a meteoric rise until he possessed supreme authority.

Yet, currently, Chu Mu had not only beaten Xia Guanghan's Prison Island King record at 18, but he had defeated the young expert Tian Ji not long after entering Nightmare Palace. The glory and sensation caused was unprecedented in Nightmare Palace!

Most importantly, everyone present knew that this Prisoner Island King only summoned two soul pets. He had absolutely dominated Tian Ji. Many people even brazenly conjectured that Chu Mu didn't use his full strength. In this way, Chu Mu, the Prison Island King, went from a first rate expert in Nightmare Palace to a peak expert. He was already in the rankings of the

strongest young members of Nightmare Palace!

While Chu Mu's newfound success didn't raise his status in Nightmare Palace, it gave him the status to stand on equal footing with the sons of important members of Nightmare Palace. The most instant case of this was him not needing to pay respects to both Princess Jin Rou and Lu Lishan. He only had to slightly bow his head and briefly address them.

Perhaps it was merely a slight change in etiquette, but it also indicated that Chu Mu was no longer that far away from Princess Jin Rou's status. There presumably would be many opportunities for them to interact in the future, especially when Chu Mu presently was in the princess' personal retinue!

No matter how much honor Nightmare Palace gave him. No matter how much Chu Mu's fame rose in Nightmare Palace. No matter how much respect, admiration, or comments he received. None of this would stop Chu Mu's impulse to return to his family.

After this sensation, Chu Mu, this Prison Island King, immediately kept a low profile. After resting for one day and obtaining Princess Jin Rou's permission, he rode on top of a Storm Devil Colt with an unsuppressable excitement as he rushed towards Luo Region's Gangluo City!

Chu Mu's immediate leave didn't affect his reputation at all. Instead, it made this Prisoner Island King that had lost a soul even more mysterious!!

Chapter 19: Qin Family's Young Lady, Qin Menger

Princess Jin Rou was going to stay for a period of time in Nightmare Palace. Chu Mu, as a personal retinue, only had to follow her around when she traveled. Because of this, he didn't have to stay in Nightmare Palace during this period of time. After obtaining permission, he didn't stay in Nightmare Palace any longer and directly headed towards Gangluo City.

“Young master Chu, you just gained fame in Nightmare Palace. Why didn't you strike while the iron was hot, and instead choose to hastily leave Nightmare Palace for Luo Region?” asked Ting Yu who was riding the Storm Devil Colt with Chu Mu.

Chu Mu glanced at Ting Yu and cracked a smile as he said: “Ting Yu, you're still calling me young master Chu even now?”

Ting Yu was stunned, not expecting Chu Mu to suddenly say this.

In reality, when Ting Yu first heard Chu Mu's name, she suddenly thought of the Chu Mu three years ago. Only, she didn't actually expect that Chu Mu, who had caused such a large commotion on Cyan Nightmare Island, would have been thrown onto Prisoner Island before powerfully appearing in Nightmare Palace after three years.

Over these past few days, Ting Yu actually had wished for Chu Mu to notice her. After all, they had shared the same room for nearly half a year, three years ago. Yet, Ting Yu discovered that

Chu Mu seemed to have forgotten about her.

Ting Yu would only naturally feel disappointed that Chu Mu had forgotten her. Nonetheless, she knew that the present Chu Mu was completely different; he had become a dazzling star in Nightmare Palace, while she was just a servant girl.

“I... young master Chu... I thought that you had forgotten me...” A trace of a blush appeared on Ting Yu’s cheek. Clearly, she was rather flustered. Yet she still didn’t dare to address Chu Mu directly by his name.

“In the three years surviving on Prisoner Island, a lot of things and memories became blurry because of the mindless killing. I cannot instantly recall those things.” said Chu Mu.

“Eh... eh... you’re hurrying to return to Luo Region because...” for a moment Ting Yu didn’t know what to say, but she instantly brought up another question.

“Luo Region’s Wang Luo City is my home. I’ve been away for four years already...” said Chu Mu.

Ting Yu cast a furtive glance at Chu Mu before retracting her gaze. However, she could read the waves of great changes from his gaze.

“You currently have such a high status in Nightmare palace, so you can bring honor back to your family. Your family definitely

will feel proud because of you.” said Ting Yu.

“Perhaps.” Chu Mu nodded his head and gazed at the purple mountains in the distance.

Honor wasn't important to Chu Mu. What was truly important was being able to see his family that he had been separated from for four years, and seeing that rather changed middle-aged man.

The Luo Region was a piece of beautiful and fertile land. Here, there were plains as far as one could see, meandering unbroken mountain ranges, and vastly dense forests...

In this world, the strength of a region was ultimately determined by the distribution of soul pets.

In a sense, Luo Region's complicated terrain created the most perfect living conditions for various soul pets. One could see groups of Servant Rank soul pets running around in many places. On the other hand, one could also see the traces of commander rank soul pets in certain deserted places. Even in some ancient villages or mountain strongholds, there would be a few ancient totems passing on precious information of monarch rank soul pets.

Chu Mu enjoyed freedom and even longed for it. The environment of Luo Region accurately portrayed Chu Mu's heart. Therefore, after entering Luo Region, Chu Mu's mood had been rather cheerful. His usual cold demeanor had even slightly changed as he chatted with Ting Yu throughout the journey.

In truth, Chu Mu wasn't a purely cold young man. Especially with the influence of that old man who was both his father and friend, Chu Mu still had an unrestrained, free, and impervious heart.

“Young master Chu, there's still three days before we reach Gangluo City. Why don't we rest in this city tonight and continue on our route tomorrow. The Storm Devil Colt also has to rest.” said Ting Yu.

“Sure, that's fine.” Chu Mu nodded his head. He controlled the Storm Devil Colt to enter the approximately fifth rank city.

The Storm Devil Colt was a commander rank soul pet that was primarily used as a means of travel. To a majority of soul pet trainers, this was practically wasting resources recklessly.

Therefore, when Chu Mu and Ting Yu sped through the main street of the city while riding the Storm Devil Colt, a wave of sighs went off. Those people riding servant rank soul pets stamped their feet, especially when they saw that the people riding the Storm Devil Colt were a young man and woman. These older soul pet trainers could only silently recall their frightened servant rank soul pets...

After entering the city, Chu Mu and Ting Yu immediately went to Soul Pet Palace and put the Storm Devil Colt that hadn't signed a soul pact in Soul Pet Palace.

Soul Pet Palace was one of the most powerful powers in the soul

pet domain. Different from Nightmare Palace and other powers, Soul Pet Palace ostensibly was open to any soul pet trainer. They were involved in buying soul pets, keeping soul pets, renting soul pets, and selling soul pets etcetera. Essentially, they were involved in anything concerning business transactions of soul pets.

Although Soul Pet Palace wasn't the strongest faction in this world, it was the faction that covered the most of this world and had the most members.

There were numerous cities in this world, but it seemed that every fifth rank city and above had a Soul Pet Palace in the center of the city. Soul Pet Palace would provide soul pet trainers all kinds of needs.

“Young master, can't you still have one more soul pet?” asked Ting Yu.

“Yes.” Chu Mu nodded his head.

In truth, Chu Mu still had two more soul pet vacancies. After the White Nightmare devoured the fifth phase ninth stage Blue Nightmare, the White Nightmare had oddly sent a bit of the soul pet feedback to Chu Mu, surprisingly helping him break through from the sixth remembrance Spirit Teacher realm into the seventh remembrance Spirit Teacher realm.

The seventh remembrance signified that Chu Mu had entered the high remembrance state, and the third soul could now hold three soul pets.

Chu Mu's third soul currently only had a soul pact with the Night Thunder Dream Beast, so there were still two vacancies. He was debating whether there was a need to go to a few places with strong soul pets to capture a new soul pet and increase his strength.

While fighting, it was practically impossible for soul pet trainers to summon and substitute through all their soul pets, because summoning soul pets consumed an extremely large amount of soul power. However, with more soul pets, one could occupy the advantage when it came to attribute and species superiority.

“Young master Chu probably has the ideal type of soul pet in mind. Otherwise, you wouldn't be so slow in picking.” said Ting Yu.

“That's not the case. Perhaps my standards are just too high.” said Chu Mu.

Regarding new soul pets, Chu Mu simply thought of the unhatched Hidden Dragon egg in his spatial ring.

The Hidden Dragon egg had remained extremely still in Chu Mu's spatial ring. If it wasn't for the occasional sound that came from it, it would have been exactly like a solid rock.

It was very probable that the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon was a soul pet that surpassed the monarch rank. As for the Hidden Dragon egg that the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon had rendered,

it was at least a monarch rank sub-posterity Hidden Dragon.

Monarch ranks weren't that suitable for a Spirit teacher stage person to sign a soul pact with, so for Chu Mu, these two soul pet vacancies wouldn't belong to the small hidden dragon. He could only limit the species rank to the commander rank.

In reality, species rank was not entirely indicative of a soul pet's value. If a low species rank soul pet was raised well and its phase and stage was raised, it wasn't impossible for it to fight against a higher species rank soul pet.

There were a plethora of different soul pets in Soul Pet Palace. However, their quality was shoddy, and Chu Mu definitely did not have any interest in those soul pets. If he were to actually buy a soul pet, Chu Mu wouldn't have to do it in this small city. Nightmare City was a tenth rank city, so as long as Chu Mu had enough funds, he could buy as abnormal of a soul pet as he wanted.

After leaving Soul Pet Palace, Chu Mu and Ting Yu walked along the bustling street searching for a place to stay.

"Young master Chu, what's the matter? Is that carriage very special?" Ting Yu stopped in her tracks and found that Chu Mu was staring at a carriage slowly trodding along. Thus she inquisitively asked him a question.

"The carriage's symbol is very familiar. It seems to belong to a big family in Gangluo City. However, it's been too long and I can't remember." explained Chu Mu.

Currently, Chu Mu only profoundly remembered his family's as well as the Yang Family's symbol. As for Gangluo City's two remaining big families, the Zhou Family and Qin Family, Chu Mu didn't really remember them.

“Just now when we entered Soul Pet Palace, this carriage was to the side and inside I saw a very beautiful woman. The servant beside her addressed her as young lady Qin.” said Ting Yu.

“Eh, a Qin Family woman.” Chu Mu suddenly remembered a bit. No wonder he felt it was rather familiar.

.....

Chu Family's relation with the Qin Family was relatively harmonious. In the past, Chu Mu would often go to the Qin Family to walk around, and people from the Qin Family would frequently visit the Chu Family...

“Young master Chu, do you recognize her?” asked Ting Yu.

Chu Mu shook his head and said: “In the past, I would have recognized her, but I'm afraid right now it's a bit hard to recognize people.”

Chu Mu didn't pay the Qin Family woman any heed and continued to walk with Ting Yu. They found a luxurious place to stay and walked in.

Coincidentally, that Qin Family carriage was here as well. When Chu Mu and Ting Yu walked in, they saw that beautiful Qin Family woman had followed them in.

“Uncle Chu is already very worried. If we can help then we should help.” As the woman walked to the second floor, she whispered in a very soft voice to the middle-aged man next to her.

The woman’s voice was extremely soft, but Chu Mu had already cultivated a very perceptive hearing ability on Prisoner Island, so he could hear the quiet conversation.

“Young lady, it’s not that I, Old Teng, don’t want to help the Chu Family. It’s just that the person who is going to intercept the Chu Family’s caravan is the expert invited by the Yang Family, Li Nan. This fellow is someone I can deal with, but the cost will be exceptionally hefty. Moreover, the Yang Family will definitely know that our Qin Family interfered...” the family servant who called himself Old Teng whispered back.

“Then we have to watch the Chu Family’s caravan be intercepted in front of our eyes? The Yang Family’s people truly went too far. The state of the Chu Family has already declined a lot in the past few years, yet they still use this sort of underhanded method. Must they exterminate them like this?” anxiously said the Qin Family woman.

“Young Lady, our Qin Family has secretly helped the Chu Family a lot. However, you also know that the Yang Family is currently

the largest faction in Gangluo City, followed by the Zhou Family. These two families are a nest of rats and snakes, ostensibly dominating the entirety of Gangluo City. Our Qin Family's situation isn't that optimistic either... we can only silently help them. If we were to openly oppose the Yang Family like this, it would be very hard to do... " said the family servant Old Teng.

As he heard the two people converse, Chu Mu's eyebrows creased. He intentionally walked a few steps closer, hoping to hear all the details of their conversation.

"You, don't get near the young lady!" just as Chu Mu walked closer, a few family servants instantly exposed malicious expressions.

Seeing that someone was approaching, the Qin Family's young lady and Old Teng immediately stopped their discussion. They turned around and walked towards the resting place the woman servant was pointing to.

"Is what the two of you were talking about regarding Chu Family's caravan being intercepted by thieves true?" Chu Mu ignored the few family servants and spoke as he stared at the Qin Family young lady.

When Chu Mu said this, the Qin Family young lady and Old Teng creased their eyebrows.

"Could it be that you don't know that eavesdropping on other people's conversations is a most rude offense!" Old Teng's face

instantly turned dark and he turned around to glare at Chu Mu.

Chu Mu no longer understood what was rude and offensive. If it was in the past, the moment Old Teng used such a glare, Chu Mu would have instantly killed him. However, Chu Mu currently had learned to control himself. After all, he was no longer living on Prison Island. There was no need to kill someone the moment he saw them...

“I only want to know if this matter is true or not.” Chu Mu repeated his words once more.

“Brat, do I have to discipline you in place of your elders for your rude manners!” Old Teng’s expression turned even more sour. The Qin Family helping the Chu Family had always been a secret. Old Teng didn’t want any outsider knowing. If it were to reach the Yang Family’s ears, their Qin Family would be in trouble.

“Old Teng, leave it. Perhaps they unintentionally heard us.” The Qin Family woman seemed rather gentle and implied that she didn’t want Old Teng to conflict with Chu Mu.

After resolving the conflict, the Qin Family woman didn’t stay longer and slowly walked to the second floor.

How could Chu Mu not care about the Chu Family’s matters. Furthermore, it seemed that this caravan was extremely important to his family.

“Wait, are you Qin Menger?” Chu Mu immediately asked.

The Qin Family woman turned her head and suspiciously looked at Chu Mu. She didn't seem to understand why this young man, who she had never met before, knew her name.

“Young lady, you've been cultivating at Luo Region Sect for a few years. Although you don't often come back, perhaps you have a bit of reputation. It's not strange for strangers to recognize you. Why don't you let me deal with this nonsense spouting brat.” explained Old Teng.

“Young miss, please don't misunderstand. My family's young master has abnormal hearing abilities. He unintentionally overheard your conversation. My young master and the Chu Family have a bit of a relationship. If the Chu Family has trouble, he only wants to help. I hope that you understand this matter...” Ting Yu immediately stepped forth and spoke in place of Chu Mu.

Chu Mu glanced at Ting Yu. He had been on Prison Island for too long. Chu Mu still hadn't fully recovered from that intense way of life and wasn't that good at interacting with others anymore.

Chapter 20: Commander Rank Gale Colt

Qin Menger, the Qin Family woman, promptly had a slight change in her expression. She intentionally examined the handsome Chu Mu...

“You’re willing to help the Chu Family?” asked Qin Menger.

“Yes.” Chu Mu nodded his head.

“Young lady, perhaps you shouldn’t trust them so easily.” said Old Teng.

“But how will we believe them then?” asked Qin Menger.

Qin Menger really did want to help the Chu Family. Unfortunately, Old Teng wasn’t willing to do it, so if there was someone truly willing to help, then it couldn’t be better.

“I am Wogu City’s Great Chu Family’s Chu Chen. I’ve heard that Luo Region’s Chu Family is in a desolate condition. While travelling, I happened to come here to take a look...” Chu Mu quickly composed a lie.

It wasn’t that Chu Mu wanted to hide his true identity, but it was that Chu Mu knew that news of his death had already become a fact for everyone. Moreover, it had been four years, and Qin Menger and Old Teng didn’t trust him. If he were to further say that he was Chu Mu, they wouldn’t believe him even more. Thus,

Chu Mu decided to create a suitable identity.

“Oh? So you are someone from Wogu City’s Great Chu Family. It seems that the Chu Family can be saved this time.” Qin Menger seemed rather simple and instantly believed Chu Mu’s words.

“Young lady, perhaps we should be more cautious...” Old Teng promptly reminded her. He still didn’t quite believe Chu Mu.

“Uncle Teng, we can’t help the Chu Family, but we can’t stop others from helping them.” said Qin Menger.

“This... fine...” Old Teng let out an awkward expression, but seeing that this young lady was already so determined, he couldn’t really say anything more.

“Why didn’t you inform the Chu Family people in the vicinity?” confusedly asked Chu Mu. He remembered that in the nearby cities there were Chu Family properties. Qin Menger should have warned the Chu Family people in advance, in order to let them prepare.

“There are no Chu Family people in the vicinity. If we could have warned them, we would have already.” said Old Teng.

“There aren’t?” Chu Mu was stunned. He had not expected for his family to have degraded into such a state. In the nearby cities, there weren’t any of his family’s factions...

“Then, when do they plan on making a move? Where is the Chu Family’s caravan right now?” Chu Mu continued to ask.

“I’ve already sent my subordinates to scout it out. It’ll probably be a day before I know, but I would guess that they plan on attacking outside Manyin City, in Manyin Forest. How about this, you two can come with me to Manyin City and, after we wait for the concrete information to reach Manyin City, we can proceed...” said Qin Menger.

“Young lady...” Old Teng promptly whispered softly in her ear, ostensibly hoping for her to be more careful and for her not to tell everything to these strangers.

Yet, Qin Menger didn’t really care; she seemed to really trust Chu Mu. Thus, after speaking with him, she wore a smile and returned to her own room...

“Young master Chu, do you remember this Qin Family young lady?” Once Ting Yu saw that the Qin Family people had returned to their rooms to rest, she asked Chu Mu a question.

“Mhm, I remember now.” Chu Mu nodded his head. In his mind surfaced the appearance of a small young lady who always loved to have a simple and sweet smile on her face.

Chu Mu really didn’t recognize who this Qin Family girl was at first. But after carefully checking her out, he gradually began to recognize that this young lady, Qin Menger, seemed to be that same harmonious and young Qin Family girl whom he knew well.

From his memory, this young girl would often run into his courtyard and light it up with her tinkling laughter...

Four years later, this Qin Family young woman had grown into a beautiful woman, radiating with an elegant aura. If it weren't for her pure and simple temperament, Chu Mu probably wouldn't have connected the Qin Family young girl with the young lady who gave others a rather breathtaking feeling.

“That young lady is very pretty.” Ting Yu profoundly praised as she intentionally glanced at Chu Mu.

Chu Mu also agreed and nodded his head, saying: “Mhm, she really is good looking. You aren't bad either.”

Ting Yu originally wanted to understand the past relationship between Chu Mu and Qin Menger but didn't expect that Chu Mu would subtly drop this line. Instantly, her face flushed red, and she hastily walked ahead of him to her room. In a slightly flustered manner, she arranged Chu Mu's bed.

Just like the past Ting Yu that Chu Mu knew, she maintained her changed appearance within Nightmare Palace. It wasn't until she left Nightmare Palace that she revealed her original appearance.

In three years, Ting Yu had changed a lot. At least in Chu Mu's opinion, she was a beautiful woman, much better than the degenerated Xin Xue.

Since he maintained his habit of not sleeping, Chu Mu used seventy percent of his soul power to feed the White Nightmare, before he began to silently cultivate in order to recover his soul power quicker.

After reaching the seventh remembrance spirit teacher level, Chu Mu only had to use seventy percent of his soul power to feed the White Nightmare.

However, summoning a soul pet once required at least a tenth of his soul power. If only thirty percent of Chu Mu's soul power remained, he could only use it to summon, and he could not use any soul techniques.

“Wuwu”

Little Mo Xie lay on Chu Mu's shoulder, adorably yawning while in a drowsy state.

“Go to sleep. There's going to be a fight very soon.” Chu Mu stroked little Mo Xie's head and spoke to her.

“Wuwu” once a fight was mentioned, little Mo Xie was immediately excited. It had been nearly a month without fighting, and Mo Xie had been dispirited and downcast over these past few days. She lazily gnawed on her claws to prevent it from going dull because of a lack of fights.

“Eat a soul core before sleeping. Don't get too excited.” Chu Mu

retrieved a sixth grade beast fire dual attribute core to feed Mo Xie.

After little Mo Xie had finished gnawing on her midnight snack, she curled up and jumped into Chu Mu's embrace. She shifted her small bottom and, after setting down her six beautiful and small tails, she found a comfortable position to sleep.

Chu Mu continued to sit on the bed, cultivating. He did this until near daybreak, upon which he put Mo Xie beside him and fell asleep.

On the morning of the second day, when Chu Mu and Ting Yu woke up, the Qin Family people had already prepared their carriage, and were about to head towards Manyin City.

“Where are your people?” asked Old Teng as he glanced at Chu Mu and Ting Yu.

“What people?” Chu Mu confusedly asked.

“Of course it's the people who will be undertaking the task. Could it be that you two immature and inexperienced people want to deal with the Yang Family's experts?!” Old Teng snapped back.

“Uncle Teng, your mannerism doesn't need to be so serious.” Qin Menger immediately advised Old Teng. Her gaze shifted to Chu Mu and quietly said: “This young master Chu Chen, you didn't bring a servant to protect you when you went traveling?”

Chu Mu looked at Qin Menger and shook his head saying: “No, I will be undertaking the task.”

“You? Brat, are you joking with us? The Yang Family’s Li Nan is someone who even I have difficulties dealing with. You inexperienced brat, this is no different from you committing suicide!” Old Teng’s temper immediately rose!

It wasn’t that Old Teng looked down on Chu Mu. In reality, in Gangluo City, there weren’t that many young experts who had reached the spirit teacher realm before reaching twenty years of age. Moreover, even if one was a spirit teacher, the Yang Family’s Li Nan had two commander rank soul pets whose phase and stage wasn’t low. If one didn’t have a bit of qualifications, he or she wouldn’t be his opponent.

From the start, Old Teng didn’t believe that the person who would help the Chu Family would be this young man. Instead, he had believed that it would be this young man’s henchman. Who would have expected that this young man simply didn’t have a henchman? Additionally, he shamelessly claimed that it would be him that would undertake the task.

“Old geezer, control your temper! Do you know who my family’s young master is? If you are to truly provoke my family’s young master, your Qin Family will henceforth disappear from Gangluo City!” Ting Yu was rather angry as she spoke.

Old Teng had been rude and contemptuous several times, making Ting Yu feel discontented. Presently, there wasn’t anybody in Nightmare Palace who didn’t know the name of Eternal Ocean’s

Nightmare Prince, Chu Mu. In this entire Luo Region, there probably wasn't another young person who was Chu Mu's opponent, so why would this old servant from the Qin Family be anything significant.

“You!!” Old Teng was immediately angered by Ting Yu's fierce words. His face trembled, and it seemed as if he was about to explode.

“Uncle Teng, don't get angry. We were wrong at first. I will apologize on his behalf.” Qin Menger gave a small polite gesture as an apology.

“The Chu Family's matter is pressing. Let's not senselessly argue here.” Chu Mu made Ting Yu back down.

Ting Yu had really been outraged on Chu Mu's behalf. What kind of a status did the Prison Island King now have? Perhaps even the Luo Region's region lord would have to politely address Chu Mu as Nightmare Prince Chu. Yet, these people still dared to contemptuously look upon Chu Mu.

“Since we're going to set out, if you two don't have a mount, you can ride in our carriage.” Qin Menger also had a pleasant temper, and she didn't bicker with Ting Yu over the outburst just now.

“There's no need; we have our own mount.”

A minute later, Chu Mu and Ting Yu appeared in front of the Qin

Family's carriage riding the Gale Colt.

The Gale Colt wasn't like the servant rank soul pets pulling the Qin Family's carriage. Once it appeared, these servant rank soul pets instantly let out panicked expressions, narrowly jerking the carriage!

“A commander... commander rank Gale Colt!”

“Among the wind type commander rank soul pets, the Gale Colt has the highest inherent endurance abilities. It turns out that the two masters of the Gale Colt that I heard strangers talking about were them!”

A few servants of the Qin Family had their eyes open wide. Their gaze unwaveringly stared at the eminently flashy Gale Colt!

When Old Teng saw this commander rank soul pet, he opened his mouth wide and couldn't speak for a long time.

Old Teng was able to see that this young master Chu's status wasn't normal. Yet, he never expected for his status to be so important that a commander rank soul pet would be his mount. One must know that this kind of honor was only held by the family heads of the large families!

Qin Menger was also amazed. Her gaze intentionally swept across Old Teng, carrying a bit of blame in her eyes.

Old Teng also realized that he really had underestimated these two people. His face flushed red, and he awkwardly said to Chu Mu, “ This young master Chu is so prodigal that he even has a Gale Colt as his mount. Could it be that you are the son of Wogu City’s Great Chu Family’s family head?”

Wogu City’s Great Chu Family was the ruler of the entire Wogu City. They were on a completely different level than the great families of these cities. Recalling the servant girl’s arrogant words before, Old Teng realized that he really had encountered people with exceptional status. If he were to offend them, it could really bring their Qin Family a lot of trouble.

“Hmph, how could the son of the Great Chu Family’s family head compare with my family’s young master?” Ting Yu harrumphed.

Ting Yu’s words caused Qin Menger to be even more surprised. Could it be that the young master Chu in front of them had a status even higher than the son of the Great Chu Family’s family head? Who on earth was this young master Chu?

Chapter 21: Nightmare Thunder Dream Beast, Incredible Speed

“This young master Chu is...” Old Teng subconsciously asked.

“Young master is...” Ting Yu was about to reveal Chu Mu’s Nightmare Palace title and show these ignorant fellows how stupid it was to look down upon Chu Mu.

“Ting Yu, don’t say it. Let’s go.” Chu Mu interrupted Ting Yu, not letting her reveal his identity.

Ting Yu’s mouth remained open, but she intelligently stopped talking.

Nightmare City wasn’t too far away from Luo Region, and there were Nightmare Palace factions within Luo Region. Tian Ji was a Nightmare Palace young expert who enjoyed a famous reputation in Luo Region. Therefore, after the Prison Island King defeated Tian Ji, his name had spread even further in the past month.

Perhaps there were those in the Luo Region who didn’t know the name Chu Mu, but the title Prison Island King and Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince were absolutely known by every expert.

The young lady Qin blinked her eyes, and she looked at Ting Yu who was hesitating in her words before looking at Chu Mu. Qin Menger felt that the young man in front of her seemed to be very mysterious.

As for the family servant, Old Teng, he felt even more that Chu Mu wasn't simple. After all, many people with genuine status wouldn't easily reveal their status.

As the Storm Devil Colt stood in front of the carriage, the Qin Family's servants all evidently felt astonished. At the very least, even if it were to dash around inside the city, the city guards wouldn't dare block to their path.

Manyin City was approximately one day away. The Chu Family's caravan was going to enter Manyin City from a different direction, so as long as Chu Mu reached Manyin City before them and followed along behind his family's caravan, he could then wait for the Yang Family people to make their move before he made his.

“Li Nan is very strong. He is a fourth remembrance spirit teacher. He has a sixth phase fourth stage Rare Blood Beast and a fifth phase seventh stage Blood Winged Trioptic Beast. It's rumored that he also has another commander rank soul pet. However, no one has seen him summon it before.” The Qin Family's servant, Old Teng, disclosed Li Nan's information to Chu Mu so that Chu Mu could prepare.

Chu Mu nodded his head and memorized the information about Li Nan's two main soul pets. Afterward, Chu Mu found out the most recent state of the Chu Family.

In the past four years, having received the suppression of two great families, the Chu Family had rapidly declined. From its

original sphere of influence that spanned over thirty cities, it had shrunk to only ten cities. Moreover, among these ten cities, there was only one-seventh rank city.

Without city territory, business would be heavily obstructed. Especially with the suppression of the Yang Family and Zhou Family, the Chu Family was even more crippled when it came to trade. There were many times when they needed to employ people to help them transport goods.

When it came to territory, the Chu Family originally had another seventh rank piece of land where they could capture commander rank soul pets. Now, their highest rank territory was a sixth rank one. In a sixth rank territory, there ostensibly weren't any habitats of commander rank soul pets.

For any family, if their most important soul pet resource were restricted, then it would be even harder to develop.

When Chu Mu and the others entered Manyin City, it was already close to dusk. The carriage had only stopped at Manyin City for a short while before a man with a Dire Wolf hastily appeared in front of Qin Menger's carriage.

“Young lady Qin, the Chu Family's caravan plans on traveling through the night and has already left the city. Not too long ago, I saw the Yang Family's Li Nan in Manyin City. Aside from him, there was also Yang Jie from the Yang Family and many other Yang Family people.” The man riding the dire wolf immediately reported the information he knew.

“Yang Jie! Why would he appear here?!” Hearing Yang Jie’s name, Old Teng’s expression immediately changed!

“Uncle Teng, who is Yang Jie?” Qin Menger inquisitively asked.

“Yang Jie is an expert dispatched by the Yang Family. His strength is much stronger than Li Nan’s. He seems to have a sixth phase commander rank soul pet. If he participates in this affair, we must give up. Because with him here, even if we were to add on ourselves, we still wouldn’t be his opponent.” said the family servant Old Teng.

“Where are they right now?” Chu Mu ignored Old Teng’s advice and immediately turned to the man riding the Dire Wolf to ask him a question.

“They left from the east side of Manyin City. They are travelling on the main path. The Chu Family people left two hours ago. Right now it’s almost dark, and the Yang Family’s people will definitely make their move in the dark.” replied that man. After speaking, his gaze intentionally examined the Storm Devil Colt that Chu Mu was riding on. His eyes revealed a somewhat jealous expression.

“Let’s go.” Chu Mu didn’t hesitate and turned the Storm Devil Colt around. He immediately rushed in towards Manyin City’s east side.

Old Teng was stunned. Looking at the Storm Devil Colt rushing through the streets as fast as lightning, he didn’t expect that this

young man would be so courageous. Even though this young man knew of the opponent's strength, he still decisively proceeded.

Seeing Chu Mu hastily leave, Qin Menger was somewhat stunned. Yet, she still chanted a summoning incantation.

A scarlet radiance curled up Qin Menger's arm. As her white hand waved in the air, a deep red colored scarlet pattern instantly engraved itself under Qin Menger's feet. A split second of fire had flickered before a heatwave rushed forth!

From within the scarlet pattern, a wing type soul pet with fire-like feathers gradually emerged. When it spread apart its wings, a few tongues of flames extended out, giving the soul pets pulling the carriage a feeling of unsettling fear.

“Young lady, what are you doing?” Old Teng was stunned and astonishedly looked at the Flame Bird that Qin Menger summoned.

“You guys stay here. I'll go with him and see.” Qin Menger didn't say anything more and nimbly leaped on the Flame Bird's large back. She urged the low class commander rank soul pet up into the air, and she followed Chu Mu towards the east side of the city.

Old Teng had to absolutely ensure the young lady's safety, so how could he let her travel alone? He hastily chanted an incantation and summoned a four meter Swallowing Star Wolf. He then immediately followed Qin Menger, deeply afraid that she might have even a small accident.

When the other family servants saw their young lady ride a Flame Bird away, they looked at each other and had no choice but to urge the exasperatingly slow carriage in pursuit. However, by the time they reached the corner of the street, they could no longer see Qin Menger and Old Teng's figures.

Usually, when Chu Mu rode the Storm Devil Colt, they maintained a steady speed as they traveled. By doing so, they could preserve the Storm Devil Colt's physical strength on their journey.

This time, however, Chu Mu instantly ordered the Storm Devil Colt to use its full speed. The Storm Devil Colt, which had a wind attribute, wasn't very conservative and, after obtaining Chu Mu's permission, fully released its unruliness. As it rushed along Manyin City's streets, it was practically a terrifying hurricane. All the pedestrians and soul pets on the entire street split to the sides like waves, making way for it.

"This Storm Devil Colt's speed is truly terrifying." Qin Menger, who was controlling the Flame Bird as they soared above Manyin City, saw the hurricane whipped up in the streets below and was extremely surprised.

"Young lady, young lady... you should descend to the ground. If you were to have any accident, this Old Teng wouldn't be able to bear it." Old Teng yelled at the flying Qin Menger from the ground.

"I'm only going to spectate. I won't participate." said Qin Menger.

“Young lady, you had better not participate. Li Nan is extremely difficult to deal with, and that Yan Jie is a vicious and merciless fellow. There’s no way that young master Chu is his opponent. We had better leave this place earlier.” yelled Old Teng.

Old Teng had stayed in the Luo Region for tens of years. He had more or less heard of a few of Yang Jie’s rumors. This fellow had been dispatched by the Yang Family for external missions because he had an extremely heinous nature. Currently, this scoundrel with tyrannical strength had returned, and the Chu Family could only accept their fate. Old Teng didn’t want to wade into this mess.

Qin Menger didn’t listen to Old Teng’s advice, and she continued to pursue Chu Mu’s crazy Storm Devil Colt, flying towards Manyin City’s eastern forest.

“Young master, the caravan seems to be in front.” Ting Yu pointed to a black road in front of them as she spoke to Chu Mu.

“Mhm, take care of the Storm Devil Colt.” Chu Mu slowly stood up from the Storm Devil Colts back and, as he faced the whistling gale, he chanted an incantation!

A black and purple colored lightning arc suddenly appeared in between Chu Mu’s two hands. When Chu Mu put his two hands together, a black and purple colored summoning pattern appeared. However, this pattern didn’t imprint on the ground, but rather floated up into the air!

The pattern had reversed imprinted, and suddenly, arc after arc of reckless and ostentatious purple lightning bolts danced about like snakes. They gorgeously set off and formed the appearance of the slender body of an eminent and demonic Dream Beast!

The summoning pattern wasn't immobile and, as the Storm Devil Colt continued to rush forward, the Night Thunder Dream Beast was summoned while moving, as if it had run out from the darkness and into this world!

Chu Mu leaped forward and accurately fell onto the Night Thunder Dream Beast's body, confidently completing his ride switch. He then promptly urged the Night Thunder Dream Beast towards the caravan that was already in flames!

Qin Menger flew in the air. Previously, her Flame Bird was barely able to keep up with Chu Mu's Storm Devil Colt. However, when Chu Mu summoned the Night Thunder Dream Beast, it was like an arc of black lightning that instantly disappeared on the forest road. Its speed could only be described as terrifying!!

"Young... young lady..." Old Teng managed to catch up with great difficulty. The old Dire Wolf he was riding on was so tired that it was gasping for air.

Yet, just as Old Teng was about to speak, he suddenly discovered the Night Thunder Dream Beast brimming with demonic aura in front of him. Shockingly, it had twice the speed of the Storm Devil Colt as it sped forth. Immediately, he was so astounded that he stopped talking as he stared with great shock at this mysterious young man!

Night Thunder Dream Beast!

A Dream Beast was a relatively rare soul pet in the commander rank realm. A thunder dark dual attribute Dream Beast was the best of the best. Such a soul pet was shockingly possessed by a young man who didn't even look 20!

“This young man! Which faction's young master is he?!” The Storm Devil Colt had already made Old Teng extremely surprised. Furthermore, the Storm Devil Colt only ended up being his mount, and wasn't even his soul pet!

A middle class commander rank Storm Devil Colt wasn't even good enough for him. How could Old Teng, this old soul pet trainer, with only two mediocre quality commander rank soul pets endure this?!

Chapter 22: I, Chu Mu, Did Not Die. I, Chu Mu, Have Returned

A garish radiance of fire abruptly shimmered in the forest. It streaked across the pitch black night, and magnificently illuminated the surrounding lush trees!

The fire of battle had already been ignited. Chu Clan's caravan had twenty soul pet trainers in total. These twenty had already summoned their soul pets, but their mere two commander rank soul pets were completely suppressed by the opponent's four commander rank soul pets.

The fight began not too long ago, but many soul pets had been slaughtered already. The situation was extremely dire!

“Third young master, it's that Yang Family's infamous Yang Jie. We aren't his opponent. We should give up!” The Chu Family henchman summoned his soul pet and, after stalling the extremely savage Blood Winged Trioptic Beast, he immediately spoke to Chu Ning next to him.

Chu Ning clenched his teeth, and his eyes seemed to be spitting fire. In order to carry these goods to Gangluo City, Chu Ning had decided to travel through the night to lessen the time. However, who would have expected the Yang Family to use such despicable means and banditry!!

“No. These goods are extremely important to us. We absolutely cannot give them up!” Chu Ning firmly said. His gaze fiercely

glared at Li Nan and Yang Jie, these two extremely loathsome fellows.

“Third young master, listen to me. We can still recapture the goods, but if everyone is to die, it would be hard to salvage the situation!” The Chu Family’s henchman pleaded.

“If we are to lose another caravan of goods, the family will be hard to salvage. The Chu Family’s children will further suffer even more humiliation. You don’t need to say anything more. Take the others with you, and bring the goods through a small path in the forest. I’ll delay them. Bring as many goods back as you can!” Chu Ning clenched his teeth as he spoke.

After speaking, Chu Ning chanted another incantation and summoned his strongest soul pet, a Light Rhinoceros.

Light Rhinoceros: Demon Beast Kingdom – beast type – rhinoceros species – Light Rhinoceros subspecies – middle class commander rank.

The Light Rhinoceros’ body was fully covered in a yellow armor. Its body didn’t have skin like a majority of other beast type soul pets. Instead, its outer body was like a protruding hard rock, and it looked like a golden statue of a beast!

“The Chu Family’s brat is angry. He even summoned his life-saving soul pet.” When the Yang Family’s Li Nan saw that Chu Ning had summoned his strongest soul pet, the Light Rhinoceros, he instantly adopted an expression of contempt and ridicule.

“A fifth phase fourth stage Light Rhinoceros is still a first rate soul pet. I didn’t expect that the Chu Family still had such a large sum of money to give one of their Chu Family children such a soul pet. It seems that they value this child a lot?” The thin boned Yang Jie let out a sharp laugh, tilting his eyes as he looked at Chu Ning.

Yang Jie didn’t summon all of his soul pets. He instead only summoned one rare Blood Beast and was randomly killing the Chu Family henchmen’s soul pets. Yang Jie’s Rare Blood Beast had already reached the sixth phase eighth stage. Its fighting prowess was abnormal compared to regular Rare Blood Beasts, and it had already torn a few Chu Family soul pets to shreds.

“This brat. Let me deal with him. I already said that I could deal with all of these Chu Family troops by myself. There was simply no need to involve Senior Yang Jie.” laughed Li Nan.

While speaking, Li Nan chanted an incantation and summoned his third soul pet!

Li Nan’s third soul pet was a baleful Blood Winged Trioptic Beast. The moment it appeared, a dense stench of blood caused the nearby warrior and servant rank soul pets to retreat in fear!

A fifth phase seventh stage Blood Winged Triopic Beast!

The Blood Winged Trioptic Beast’s species rank wasn’t inferior to Chu Ning’s Light Rhinoceros. Yet, its stage was higher by three and, without any attribute counters, unless Chu Ning’s Light

Rhinoceros possessed exceptional fighting talent, it would be extremely hard to defeat Li Nan's Blood Winged Trioptic Beast.

“Ah!!”

A miserable shriek resounded out from the side. Just now, a myriad of purple lightning bolts had suddenly appeared on Chu Ning's henchman. Those powerful lightning bolts then scorched that henchman into ashes.

“Uncle Li!” Chu Ning's eyes immediately turned red. He was clearly aware that the Thunder Fairy had just rushed at him. If it weren't for that henchman sacrificing his body to block the attack, Chu Ning's body would have been hit by those lightning arcs instead!

Clenching his fists tightly, Chu Ning's eyes were already spouting sparks!

“Don't worry; it'll be your turn soon!” Li Nan began to laugh loudly and ordered his Blood Winged Trioptic Beast to pounce towards Chu Ning's Light Rhinoceros!

The Light Rhinoceros let out an angry roar. A dazzling gold radiance blossomed from its body, which faced the dense blood aura of the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast. Instantly, they began to fight along the long path in the forest!

The cry of a beast and miserable shrieks rang throughout the

forest. After seeing his own family men being ruthlessly executed, Chu Ning's anger violently ignited once more. He silently resented himself for not having enough strength to protect them, as he could only watch one family member after the other fall in front of his eyes.

“Ao”

The Light Rhinoceros let out a painful roar. Its body heavily fell out of the trees and smashed onto a large piece of wood. An evident split appeared on its gold colored armor.

“Gold Horn!” Seeing his soul pet seriously wounded, Chu Ning released an indignant roar. However, the wound on the Light Rhinoceros' body was serious, and it already found it hard to climb back up.

“It's your turn. Chu Ning, you and your family members will meet again in death!” Li Nan had a merciless smile as he promptly ordered his Blood Winged Trioptic Beast to pounce on Chu Ning!

In the black sky above, the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast spread open its fleshy wings in the forest. Suddenly, a wave of fiendish bloody wind swirled up as it abruptly dived downwards. Two eminently sharp claws aimed directly at Chu Ning's head!!!

With two of his souls wounded, Chu Ning simply had no soul power left to substitute in another soul pet or use a soul technique. He clenched his teeth and closed his eyes, prepared to meet the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast's fatal strike.

Seeing that Chu Ning had given up resistance, a cold smile appeared on Li Nan's face. Killing the Chu Family's third young master was a great service to the Yang Family!

“Off with his head!” Li Nan mentally transmitted to his Blood Winged Trioptic Beast.

The Blood Winged Trioptic Beast had a savage expression and its two claws suddenly scratched towards Chu Ning's head. It planned on removing Chu Ning's head while he was still alive!!

“Hui!!”

Suddenly, a resonant cry full of intimidation resounded through the forest. A purple bolt of lightning was seen attached to a black eminent figure that abruptly rushed out from the forest path. An arc of lightning instantly leapt forth and ripped apart the darkness, fiercely landing on the Blood Winged Trioptic Demon that was diving down!!

The Blood Winged Trioptic Beast's body was hefty. Its diving force was immense but, as this creature was diving down, it was knocked back flying by a demonic and eminent figure. From the sky, it was knocked into the forest, knocking down a large number of trees!!

“What?!” Li Nan was stunned. He shockingly stared at the powerful creature that had suddenly appeared!

Chu Ning also opened his eyes at this moment. He lifted his head and saw a demonic young man riding an eminent Dream Beast that flitted across the sky. It was wild and tyrannical, as if it could walk through the sky. After knocking the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast flying, it surprisingly walked back in front of him!

Yang Jie, who was spectating on the side, instantly creased his eyebrows. His gaze attentively watched the Night Thunder Dream Beast that suddenly appeared, which gave one a demonic feeling.

“How despicable. Who dares to meddle in my Yang Family’s affairs!!” Li Nan angrily roared. His gaze glared at the Night Thunder Dream Beast that had swept back down from the sky.

Chu Ning at first thought that it was one of his family elders that came to his assistance. Yet, he discovered that in front of him was an extremely gorgeous Night Thunder Dream Beast. Chu Ning remembered that among his family members or henchmen, none of the experts possessed such a powerful soul pet!

“You are...” Chu Ning looked up at the young man riding the Night Thunder Dream Beast, and he discovered that the soul pet trainer hadn’t even reached twenty years of age. He was even more surprised!

Chu Mu glanced at Chu Ning and immediately recognized that this was the third brother who had always protected him. A wave of rapt happiness immediately bubbled forth from his heart!

It had been four years of long separation before he had finally found a relative. The feeling he felt was hard to describe, especially after seeing his third brother who had protected him since he was young!

Chu Ning was older than Chu Mu by four years. After Chu Mu had lost a soul, he had often suffered the humiliation of others. Yet, because of this, the brave Chu Ning had often fought others until he was badly bruised. Moreover, Chu Mu also remembered that one of Chu Ning's meticulously cultivated soul pets had been killed by a Yang Family member because of him.

This matter had always been remembered by Chu Mu. Furthermore, it made him feel extremely ashamed. Now that they had been reunited, the repressed emotions instantly burst forth.

Chu Ning blankly looked at the young man. He didn't understand why the young man had such an emotional expression when he looked at him. Yet, just at this moment, Chu Ning abruptly discovered that Li Nan's Blood Winged Trioptic Beast had flown out of the darkness and launched itself at the young man!!

“Be careful!!!” Chu Ning instantly yelled in warning!!

Chu Mu turned his head and saw the wide-eyed Blood Winged Trioptic Beast that was savagely charging at him. A dense blood stench pervaded the surroundings!

“Chong Mei – Evil Stare!”

Chu Mu's two black eyes suddenly circulated a contrasting silver luster. In the next instant, a resplendent demonic silver light impressively blossomed forth. Like two sharp silver swords, they shot into the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast's eyes!!

Chu Mu had replicated Mo Xie's techniques. Even if it were a sixth phase commander rank soul pet that suffered from the Evil Stare's effects, it would still let out a panicked expression. This was even moreso the case for the fifth phase seventh stage Blood Winged Trioptic Beast!

The Blood Winged Trioptic Beast's intelligence was clearly much weaker and, when Chu Mu imposingly stared at the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast, its bloody body suddenly froze in midair. In panic, it didn't dare to approach Chu Mu any more!!

“A Chong Mei soul technique!!”

It was the Chu Family's unique soul technique, Chong Mei!!

Chu Ning was instantly stunned. He astonishingly stared at the young man who had used the Chu Family's unique soul technique. Chu Ning was even more stunned because this young man had surprisingly used an Evil Stare to make the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast lose its will to fight!!

An imposing killing aura discharged from Chu Mu's body. His Evil Stare's intent was far from only merely stunning the opponent. An aura was fully released from his body that contained the experience of countless battles. The surrounding servant and

warrior rank soul pets began running in all four directions in fear!!

“Night, Death Ray!” Chu Mu used a mental transmission to tell the Night Thunder Dream Beast!

The black demonic aura on the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s body transformed into a terrifying hurricane that violently proliferated in the surroundings!

The Night Thunder Dream Beast lifted its head high, and a deep dark light instantly blossomed from the depths of its throat. As the Night Thunder Dream Beast opened its large mouth, a dark Death Ray suddenly burst out. It streaked across the night sky in a perfectly straight line and accurately struck the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast’s body!!

“Huo!!!” The Blood Winged Trioptic Beast’s battle strength had already been exhausted from before. After the Evil Stare, the Death Ray was a fatal strike to it. Its enormous body fell from the sky, and it let out a painful roar!!

Li Nan’s expression instantly turned dark. He was so angry that he began trembling. He stared at the Night Thunder Dream Beast that had suddenly come and attacked, and he forcibly recalled his Blood Winged Trioptic Beast.

“You should be able to meet your Yang Family people in hell.” Chu Mu jumped off of the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s body and stood in front of Chu Ning. His gaze coldly glared at the Yang Family’s Li Nan, and his voice was eminently cold as he spoke!

Li Nan and Yang Jie's faces were ugly. They didn't expect that just as they were about to dispose of the Chu Family's people, an expert would suddenly appear; moreover, it was a young man who wasn't even twenty!

“This younger brother. I'm extremely grateful for your assistance. I hope you can give me your name. Furthermore, why do you have the Chu Family's soul technique?” Chu Ning was extremely stunned because he didn't expect that this young man, who wasn't even twenty, would be able to use the soul technique Chong Mei to this sort of level!

Chu Mu turned his head and looked at Chu Ning whose appearance hadn't changed much from four years ago. Only, his entire body seemed more mature now. Chu Mu could even feel an inclined bravery emanating from his bones.

“Third brother, do you not recognize me?” Finally, after seeing a family member, Chu Mu felt the billows in his heart.

“You are...” Chu Ning's gaze confusedly stared at the mysterious young man.

There weren't that many people in the Chu Family who called him third brother. Chu Ning remembered them all, but he didn't remember such a powerful young man in his Chu Family. No matter whether it was the extremely formidable commander rank rare soul pet, the Night Thunder Dream Beast, or the Chong Mei soul technique used just now, the Chu Family didn't have a single

young person who could do this.

“I’m your fourth brother Chu Mu!” Chu Mu found it hard to suppress his emotions any further!

“Fourth brother Chu Mu?” Initially, Chu Ning still had a confused look, but in the next moment, his eyes opened wide. He astonishingly stared at Chu Mu’s face and suddenly found a familiar feeling from that acutely heroic young man’s face!!

“Fourth brother, Chu Mu! Didn’t fourth brother already...” Chu Ning’s voice was already starting to tremble. He had been together with Chu Mu for over ten years. Chu Mu’s appearance had always been engraved in Chu Ning’s heart. Even though the young man’s appearance was rather different from the young boy Chu Mu’s, he could still find a shadow of Chu Mu in it.

But, but, didn’t Chu Mu disappear four years ago? Chu Ning was among those that thought Chu Mu had died...

“Third Brother, I’m really Chu Mu. I didn’t die... I didn’t die... I returned... I’ve really returned!”

Xia Guanghan had asked Chu Mu before why he wasn’t willing to forsake his miserable life.

Having lost a soul and being narrowly unable to become a soul pet trainer. Then, being thrown onto a barren island to seek survival like a wild animal, perhaps Chu Mu should have forsaken

his miserable life.

However, Chu Mu didn't. He endured the enormous pain and hovered on the edge of life and death. He experienced all kinds of torments, but still didn't give up on life. And it was all for a day like this...

It was all for a day like this when he had become a true expert who could stand in front of his family. To tell his family: I, Chu Mu, haven't died. I, Chu Mu, have returned!

Chapter 23: Things Are Different Now, A Powerful Chu Mu

“Who is Chu Mu? Is he another Chu Family trash?” Yang Jie stared at Chu Mu. In his small, black eyes flickered a bit of cold savagery.

Li Nan had been in the Yang Family for a relatively long period of time, and he naturally knew of the Chu Family’s Chu Mu. He immediately explained: “Senior Yang Jie, Chu Mu is the fourth son of the Chu Family’s family head. Four years ago, he should have died...”

Because of Yang Jie’s vile nature, he had been dispatched elsewhere and hadn’t been back for a few years. Because of this, he didn’t know of matters concerning Chu Mu.

“Is this brat very strong?” Yang Jie’s gaze quickly fell onto Chu Mu’s Night Thunder Dream Beast. Yang Jie was someone who was knowledgeable, and he could naturally see this Night Thunder Dream Beast’s strength!

“This... I heard that he lost a soul at a young age. If it weren’t because we wanted to undermine Chu Tiancheng, us making a move on him would have been... I didn’t expect this brat to have survived.” Li Nan immediately said.

“He lost a soul? Isn’t he but a mere piece of trash then?” A smile immediately surfaced on Yang Jie’s face. Chu Mu riding the Night Thunder Dream Beast caused Yang Jie to believe that this fellow

was a soul pet trainer that was relatively hard to deal with. Yet, unexpectedly, this brat had lost a soul. Dealing with him would be much easier.

Li Nan promptly nodded his head in agreement. However, when he saw the eminently powerful Night Thunder Dream Beast next to Chu Mu, his expression turned somewhat odd. If soul pet trainers that possessed a commander rank dual type Dream Beast were all garbage, then what would he, who only had a middle-class commander rank soul pet, be...

Listening to the conversation between the two of them, Chu Mu's gaze coldly swept over them.

“Third bother, I'll get rid of them first, then we can talk.” said Chu Mu. His two eyes that were still somewhat moist instantly turned into those of a savage beast's, and with a terrifying cold gaze, he turned around!!

The three years of blood-purged aura manifested through slaughter pervaded the air like a fiendish gale. It caused Yang Jie, this sixth remembrance soul pet trainer, to shudder!

Yang Jie was an infamous person in Luo Region. He often killed people, so he appeared very vicious to others from both an expression and aura perspective.

Yang Jie had once seen an assassin in Luo Region that had massacred an entire family. That assassin had made him tremble in fear. However, for some reason, Yang Jie discovered that when

this young man's gaze focused on him, it brought on an even more imposing killing aura than that assassin's!

“Are you sure he's a piece of trash that lost a soul?” Yang Jie asked in a very quiet voice.

“That's definitely true, if he really is Chu Tiancheng's son.” said Li Nan.

Yang Jie was skeptical, but his many years of experience told him that this young man wasn't as simple as Li Nan said he was. At this moment, he didn't dare to be the least bit relaxed, and he quickly called the sixth phase fifth stage Rare Blood Beast back to his side. Simultaneously, he summoned a fifth phase fifth stage West Armor Death Scorpion.

Seeing that Yang Jie had casually summoned a fifth phase fifth stage middle-class commander rank soul pet, Chu Ning's expression changed.

Chu Ning had heard of Yang Jie, this scoundrel. He knew that this fellow still had an even stronger sixth phase commander rank soul pet. Right now, the two soul pets Yang Jie had summoned were already extremely hard to deal with. One didn't even need to mention the sixth phase commander rank soul pet.

“Yang Jie's strength is extremely powerful. You aren't his opponent. Quickly get on your Dream Beast and leave!” Chu Ning promptly spoke to Chu Mu. Chu Ning already believed that this was his fourth brother Chu Mu. Even though he had thousands of

things to tell him, right now wasn't the time.

Chu Ning believed that Chu Mu had definitely undergone various tribulations. Finally returning now, what happened to him didn't matter very much, but Chu Mu, who had narrowly escaped death could not disappear again.

“Third brother, relax. I'm no longer that cowardly young child who always needed you to come and watch out for me!” Chu Mu lifted the corners of his mouth. He had persevered and survived through so much, just for this moment!

“But... you've lost a soul...” Chu Ning was about to stop Chu Mu's reckless actions when suddenly, a strong gale swept by.

Chu Ning hadn't reacted before a coarse and wild Storm Devil Colt abruptly appeared in front of him. Instantly, an even colder gale swept by, causing the surrounding trees to rock. What made Chu Ning even more surprised was that the person riding on top was a good-looking woman.

“Ting Yu, protect him.” Chu Mu said to Ting Yu.

After speaking, Chu Mu leaped onto the Night Thunder Dream Beast's body and proceeded to control this soul pet, charging into both Li Nan and Yang Jie!

“Fourth brother, don't be reckless!” Chu Ning's face was even more pale. Chu Mu charging towards them was the same as taking

his own life!

“Esteemed master, don’t be worried. Young master can deal with them.” Ting Yu advised Chu Ning, who had suffered a soul injury. Simultaneously, she chanted an incantation and quickly summoned her two soul pets.

“Young master?” Chu Ning looked at Ting Yu and revealed a suspicious expression.

However, his suspicious expression was replaced by one of astonishment because Ting Yu had just summoned two soul pets that weren’t weak!

“A seventh phase third stage Thorny Rose Demon! A sixth phase first stage Storm Fairy!” Chu Ning was stunned. He completely did not expect this woman to be a soul pet trainer that wasn’t weak; moreover, such a soul pet trainer was only Chu Mu’s servant girl!

“Night, Dream Shatter-Nightmare Ascends!”

As he rushed towards Li Nan and Yang Jie, without any hesitation, Chu Mu made the Night Thunder Dream Beast use the Dream Beast’s ultimate technique!

A strange transformation instantly appeared within the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s two eyes. Astonishingly, as its pupils transformed, the surrounding black forest began to contort, and everything in front of one’s eyes began to transform as well!!

Li Nan was attempting to call his soul pet back to him but, just as he gave the order, he abruptly discovered that the black forest had suddenly transformed into an eminently terrifying battlefield filled with corpses everywhere. The plethora of corpses on the battlefield began to stand up from the ground, their eyes full of green light, and charge at him!

Demonic mental magic effects would be influenced by the strength of a soul pet trainer's soul remembrance. Chu Mu was a seventh remembrance spirit teacher, while Li Nan's cultivation was also lower than his. With the addition of the Night Thunder Dream Beast's absolute demon attribute, Li Nan, who didn't value soul pet intelligence and his own mental resistance, was instantly caught by this technique!

After being affected by this technique, before Li Nan woke up, he was essentially useless!

“Hou!!!”

Yang Jie's sixth phase fifth stage Rare Blood Beast fiercely ran out of two black colored trees. Two parallel moving and extremely sharp Blood Rending Claws ripped at the Night Thunder Dream Beast's location.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast was quickly aware of the Rare Blood Beast's sneak attack. Its body lithely jumped in mid-air, onto the top of a tree, as purple colored lightning bolts suddenly flashed on its body!!

“Honglonglong!!! Honglonglong!!”

Two arcs of purple lightning abruptly struck down from the top of the tree and resolutely bombarded the Rare Blood Beast!

From a comprehensive phase, stage, and rank perspective, the fifth phase fifth stage commander rank Night Thunder Dream Beast had about the same strength as the sixth phase fifth stage Warrior Rank Rare Blood Beast.

However, regarding attributes, the thunder and night dual attribute Night Thunder Dream Beast had a much greater advantage than the pure beast attributed Rare Blood Beast.

For instance, when it faced the powerful lightning strike, the Rare Blood Beast, which didn't have a resistance to the lightning type, suffered an extremely severe wound!

“You think you can contend against me, Yang Jie, with just a Dream Beast?” sneered Yang Jie. He didn't hesitate to recall his sixth phase fifth stage Rare Blood Beast, and he quickly chanted an incantation, summoning another soul pet. Meanwhile, his West Armor Death Scorpion rapidly launched an attack at the Night Thunder Dream Beast.

Instead of using a soul technique, Yang Jie substituted in a soul pet. Presumably, the soul pet he was going to summon could suppress Chu Mu's Dream Beast from an attribute perspective!

Indeed, a brown colored soul pact pattern gradually emerged on the ground. An enormous soul pet slowly rose up from the soul pact pattern. Its black and brown body stood in the forest like an oppressing mountain wall!

A Ghost Rock Devil Man!!!

Chu Mu's gaze immediately fell on the Devil Man, but the expression on his face didn't change much.

Ghost Rock Devil man: Elemental Kingdom – Devil Man species – Ghost Rock Devil Man Subspecies

“A high ranking warrior rank sixth phase second stage soul pet!” Chu Ning's eyebrows were tightly locked together as he stared at the Ghost Rock Devil Man. Yang Jie's strength had far surpassed Chu Ning's imagination, as any soul pet he summoned was a sixth phase high ranking warrior rank!

“Such a soul pet is trivial to young master.” Ting Yu didn't think it was anything special. She ordered her seventh phase Thorny Rose Demon and sixth phase Storm Fairy to begin eradicating the low ranking soul pets in the vicinity.

Chu Ning intentionally glanced at Ting Yu. In his heart, he thought it was strange that this woman had such large confidence of Chu Mu.

Could it be that Chu Mu had really removed his handicap from the past and rapidly become an expert in a period of four years? However, Chu Ning remembered that four years ago, Chu Mu was unable to even summon a soul pet. In four years, no matter how fast a person grew, he or she still could not contend against a sixth remembrance spirit teacher!

At the other end of the forest path.

“Young miss, you absolutely cannot attack. Otherwise, you’ll bring our Qin Family a lot of trouble.” said Old Teng in a very earnest manner to Qin Menger.

“The Yang Family people are too cruel. Uncle Teng, how can you be so apathetic.” Qin Menger bit her delicate and small lip. She didn’t listen to her family servant Old Teng’s advice, and urged her Flame Bird into the air again!

Qin Menger quickly entered the battlefield and instantly saw the mysterious master Chu fighting Yang Jie. She discovered that the fight was entirely in this master Chu’s favor, and couldn’t help but be extremely surprised.

Qin Menger had stayed in the extensive territory of the Luo Region for a few years and had seen many young experts. However, she had merely heard of young experts like Chu Mu, who could contend against an expert like Yang Jie. She had never seen this before, and never thought she would be able to. Yet, now she was personally witnessing such an expert!

Chapter 24: Mo Xie Looks Upon The Fight With Contempt

Yang Jie summoned the Ghost Rock Devil Man to suppress the lightning type techniques of Chu Mu's Night Thunder Dream Beast. Thunder type techniques, along with fire, had the most destructive power. If one was without a counter that could restrict the thunder type, a beast type soul pet would be easily defeated.

However, Yang Jie had evidently underestimated Chu Mu's method of fighting. When he summoned the Ghost Rock Devil Man, Chu Mu completely ignored this slightly cumbersome soul pet, and he used all his attacks on the West Armor Death Scorpion!

The West Armor Death Scorpion also possessed a small bit of the dark attribute, but Yang Jie seemed to place more emphasis on its bug type ability. Thus, the dark attribute was ostensibly ineffective in front of the Night Thunder Dream Beast. It was continuously bombarded by the Night Thunder Dream Beast's attacks, and the armor on its body was scorched black!

Yang Jie expression grew gloomy, and his gaze fell on the befuddled Li Nan who was still under the effect of the Night Thunder Dream Beast's Nightmare Ascends. He angrily said, "You useless trash, you still haven't awoken?!"

Throughout the course of the battle, Yang Jie had protected Li Nan in order to prevent this careless idiot from dying. He didn't let Chu Mu attack Li Nan, but also didn't expect that Li Nan's mental resistance abilities were so weak that he still hadn't awoken after such a long period of time.

Yang Jie's roar woke Li Nan up, and he discovered that he was in the middle of a soul pet fight. His face went even more pale, and he hastily used Wind Ride to flee from the battle.

“You still haven't called your soul pet over?!” Yang Jie angrily rebuked once more!

Li Nan finally reacted, and he immediately made his Rare Blood Beast enter the fight while simultaneously summoning two other soul pets.

“I'll deal with Li Nan. Young master Chu can focus on dealing with Yang Jie.” The moment Li Nan finished his summon, Chu Mu heard a voice in his ear that came from the air.

Chu Mu lifted his head and looked at Qin Menger, who was riding the Flame Bird. He was surprised that this young lady Qin who looked frail and delicate was actually a capable spirit teacher

“Okay, you be careful.” Chu Mu nodded his head and promptly rode on his Night Thunder Dream Beast. He rushed towards Yang Jie and attempted to force him to retreat into the forest.

Yang Jie's two soul pets didn't have a speed that could match the Night Thunder Dream Beast's. Yang Jie had no choice but to retreat and make the Ghost Rock Devil Man use Rock Wall to inhibit the Night Thunder Dream Beast's advance.

Chu Mu naturally knew that directly attacking Yang Jie wouldn't yield any real results. Therefore, his goal was to move the fight to the nearby grove.

“Hmph, I don't have the patience to fight with you!!” sneered Yang Jie, who had been forced to the adjacent grove. He then slowly chanted an incantation.

The third soul summon! Yang Jie was clearly about to summon his strongest soul pet!

Watching Yang Jie chant an incantation, Chu Ning's heart tensed up. He remembered that the scoundrel Yang Jie seemed to possess a sixth phase commander rank soul pet. It was precisely because of this soul pet that this fellow managed to get away, even after committing so many heinous crimes.

“Quickly, go and help your young master. Yang Jie's third soul's main soul pet is of the sixth phase commander rank. It's extremely hard to deal with.” Chu Ning immediately said to the adjacent Ting Yu.

“Don't worry, young master can deal with it.” Ting Yu shook her head and said.

Ting Yu had seen the fight between Chu Mu and Tian Ji at Nightmare Palace. Back then, Tian Ji's soul pets had comprised of three fifth phase and above Blue Nightmares. Although Yang Jie was strong and he possessed a sixth phase Commander Rank soul pet, Blue Nightmares were overlords among the Commander Rank.

Thus, these soul pets of Yang Jie simply weren't on equal level as Tian Ji's three Blue Nightmares.

“Don't tell me that this Night Thunder Dream Beast isn't fourth brother's strongest soul pet?” asked Chu Ning.

“Of course it isn't.” Ting Yu wouldn't forget Chu Mu's Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox that had dared to challenge the three Blue Nightmares, as well as that Ice Air Fairy that could use ice type techniques to near perfection.

Although the Ice Air Fairy was only at the sixth phase first stage, its ice type techniques could compare to a commander rank soul pet's. Without factoring in other attributes, the Ice Air Fairy was essentially at the sixth phase commander rank.

Chu Ning looked at Ting Yu before looking at Chu Mu in the black forest. He had not expected Chu Mu's Night Thunder Dream Beast to not even be Chu Mu's strongest soul pet.

Yang Jie had already completed his summon.

From the summoning pattern, a malevolent figure gradually emerged. Four wings decorated in flower patterns suddenly spread open. Instantly, a long body rushed out from the pattern!

Four Winged Snake Demon!!

Four Winged Snake Demon: Demon Kingdom – beast type –

demon snake species – Four Winged Snake Demon subspecies

“Sixth phase second stage, low class commander rank...” Chu Mu’s gaze indifferently watched Yang Jie’s third soul pet. The expression on his face remained cold, and mixed into it was a slight disappointment.

“Mo Xie, it seems that you have no interest.” Chu Mu said to the little Mo Xie on his shoulder.

Throughout the entire course of the fight, little Mo Xie had remained on Chu Mu’s shoulder. From an innate superiority perspective, Yang Jie’s two soul pets were clearly inferior to the Night Thunder Dream Beast. Thus, it was sufficient for Chu Mu to only use the Night Thunder Dream Beast to contend with Yang Jie.

Of course, the Night Thunder Dream Beast was an agile demon soul pet. It could render Yang Jie’s two soul pets simply unable to attack it. However, the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s attacking abilities were evidently a bit weaker. If he wanted to defeat Yang Jie, he still had to rely on the terrifying ice magic of the Ice Air Fairy, or the extremely abnormal attributed Mo Xie.

“Wuwuwu~~”

The mood of Mo Xie, who originally had a bit of excitement, quickly went downcast as she let out a disappointed shout.

“Let Ning go. You can play with the other two soul pets.” said

Chu Mu.

The small Six Tailed Demon Fox nodded her head and lightly jumped off of Chu Mu's shoulder. Her nimble body jumped into the air and strangely landed on the enormous Ghost Rock Devil Man's body.

The Ghost Rock Devil Man felt this small thing on its head and thought that it was just a small creature, ignoring it.

“Wuwuwuwu!!”

Mo Xie suddenly let out a fox cry on the Ghost Rock Devil Man's head!!!

Her voice rang out through the forest. An eminently scarlet colored Demon Fire Evil Flame suddenly ignited under Mo Xie's four petite paws.

“O!!” The Ghost Rock Devil Man felt a terrifying heat engulf its head and instantly let out a pained howl. Its two large arms abruptly swatted at its head!

Its arms swatted past the nimble Mo Xie, who only had to slightly jump to easily dodge this attack. She landed on the Ghost Rock Devil Man's head again.

Mo Xie continued to maintain her Pitiful Appearance, not even willing to transform into an Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox.

She seemed to want to have fun with the two ostensibly stupid pets like this. Sometimes she would jump onto the Ghost Rock Devil man's head, while other times she would jump in front of the West Armor Death Scorpion. She caused these two soul pets to be incessantly angry.

It was simply too easy for Mo Xie to deal with these two soul pets, so Chu Mu didn't bother paying attention. He quickly chanted an incantation, recalling his Night Thunder Dream Beast and summoning his Ice Air Fairy!

A snowy white pattern emerged under Chu Mu's feat, and a completely snowy white Ice Air Fairy gradually emerged from the soul pact pattern. Suddenly, a bone-chilling cold proliferated from the Ice Air Fairy's body. The dense, ice cold air practically enveloped the entire forest, causing the surrounding trees to be fully frozen in a layer of white colored frost.

"This Ice Air Fairy...." An Ice Air Fairy wasn't considered a rare soul pet. In other words, it was pretty much a mainstream elemental soul pet. Nonetheless, Chu Ning had never seen an Ice Air Fairy whose fairy skin was as snowy white as a sparkling and translucent crystal. It was almost transparent!

Chu Ning's shock wasn't all that uncalled for. The Night Thunder Dream Beast was a rather rare soul pet and, when placed at an auction, it would sell for an extremely high price. It was essentially a luxury good among the commander ranks!

As for the Ice Air Fairy, although it was at the warrior rank, if its innate talent was exceptional and its one attribute was unceasingly

strengthened, its price would often be much higher than a regular commander rank soul pet!!

Seeing Chu Ning's flabbergasted expression, a smile surfaced on Ting Yu's face as she thought in her heart: "This Ice Air Fairy isn't even Chu Mu's strongest soul pet. If that arrogant Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox had the interest to fight, it alone would be enough to get rid of Yang Jie's three soul pets."

A layer of ice crystal immediately covered the black forest. A cold air promptly caused the temperature in the vicinity to rapidly fall!

"Hmph, a piece of trash!" How could Yang Jie acknowledge Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy with outstanding talent. He instantly ordered his Four Winged Snake Demon to charge at Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy.

"Ning, Ice Crystal Storm!"

"Ling"

After countless battles, the Ice Air Fairy was extremely adept at the fairy incantations of the ice type techniques. Despite Ice Crystal Storm being a fifth rank ice type technique, it only needed a few moments to finish!

Numerous ice crystals rapidly appeared in front of the Ice Air Fairy and, following the Ice Air Fairy's mental control, the sharp blade-like ice crystals began to violently spin.

“Overlay an Ice Crystal Storm!”

The Ice Air Fairy’s incantation was chanted once more, and a second Ice Crystal Storm quickly formed. Instantly, even more ice crystals appeared in the forest. The originally six meter in diameter Ice Crystal Storm shockingly transformed into a ten meter radius Ice Crystal Storm. Overlaying it once more caused this Ice Crystal Storm’s destructive power to become even more terrifying!

The Ice Crystal Storm used by the Ice Air Fairy was originally a fifth grade technique. Its powerful ice type talent caused its effect to rise to the sixth grade, but after overlaying it, this Ice Crystal Storm’s might was close to a seventh grade ice type technique!

The sixth phase fourth stage Four Winged Snake Demon’s defensive scales were only at the sixth rank initial stage. Such a defense could not withstand the onslaught of the ice type technique with power nearing a seventh rank!

“Huhuhuhu!!” Ice crystals violently ripped apart the Four Winged Demon Snake’s defensive scales. On top of its four wings and long body, thin bloody wounds were seen!!

Yang Jie’s arrogant look instantly darkened, and he inwardly gnawed on his teeth: How is this Ice Air Fairy’s ice type control abnormal to such an extent? How did he cultivate it? Could it be that he spent a few hundreds of thousands to purchase sixth level soul crystals?!

Chapter 25: Abnormally Strong Ice Air Fairy

Zhang Jie's previously proud expression immediately dropped. A nearly seventh level ice type technique was something that only some commander rank soul pets could possibly cast. How could an Ice Air Fairy have such abnormally strong ice controlling capabilities? Could it be that Chu Mu used hundreds of thousands of gold coins to buy a soul crystal type to strengthen it?

Indeed, Chu Mu really did spend two hundred thousand gold coins to buy an ice type soul crystal to enhance his Ice Air Fairy's ice type.

Two hundred thousand gold coins was enough to buy Yang Jie's Four Winged Snake Demon. With this much gold invested in the Ice Air Fairy, how could the Ice Air Fairy's fighting capabilities not be abnormally strong!

With such terrifying ice type powers, Yang Jie couldn't do anything else but cast an incantation for Ice Armor, imbuing his Four Winged Snake Demon with a thick layer of ice armor.

An almost seventh level ice type technique could rip the Four Winged Snake Demon into ice shards within a few rounds. If he didn't give it ice type protection, how would he be able to compete against Chu Mu?

Chu Mu didn't want to waste his soul power, so he simply stood beside his Ice Air Fairy, constantly giving commands to the Ice Air Fairy to cast ice type abilities unceasingly, not giving the Snake

Demon a chance to get near!

The Ice Armor's addition brought the Four Winged Snake Demon's defense barely up to seventh level. However, if a massive organism like the Four Winged Snake Demon were to have an armor of ice, its speed would definitely get affected quite severely.

Sure enough, when the thick ice armor covered the Snake Demon's body, its weak, meaty wings couldn't lift its heavy body anymore, rendering it only able to slither around clumsily within the forest!

With a ten meter long body, and a pair of obvious flesh wings, the Four Winged Snake Demon was like a living target for an Ice Fairy capable of Microcontrol. No matter where it moved, there was always a large cloud of vicious ice type techniques that fell!

Same rank and phase, with a higher species rank, yet the power difference was huge, creating a severely lopsided situation!

“Damn, Death Scorpion, Ghost Rock, what are you doing!”

Yang Jie was finally angered, but as he transferred his anger over to his other two soul pets, he saw something that almost made him spew blood. His two other soul pets were being carelessly toyed with by the little fiery fox!

“Ning, Ice Sword Formation!”

Chu Mu didn't even need to consider Mo Xie's battle. Seeing the Four Winged Snake Demon finally expose a weakness under the barrage of ice type abilities, he immediately commanded the Ice Air Fairy.

This time, the Ice Air Fairy's incantation was slightly longer, meaning that this ice type technique would be even stronger!

“Death Assault!”

Yang Jie seemed to have been waiting just for the moment when Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy would start to chant a long incantation, as he suddenly sent a command to his Four Winged Snake Demon.

The Four Winged Snake Demon's ice armor was already mostly shattered, so its body could completely utilize all its speed again. When the Ice Air Fairy was still chanting, it suddenly dashed forwards, its speed instantly doubling!

“Hu!!” The Snake Demon straightened its ten meter long body and, at the same time, opened its large mouth to cast Vicious Devour.

Instantly, a large mouth made of evil appeared in the dark forest, as if it could eat Chu Mu and Ice Air Fairy in one bite!

Chu Mu seemed slightly surprised that Yang Jie actually had such shrewdness. Slightly smiling, Chu Mu didn't show any signs of panic, and quickly jumped back to let Ning face the attack of the

Snake Demon head on!

“Fighting with me? You’re still too inexperienced!” Yang Jie laughed cruelly. So what if he had an abnormally strong Ice Air Fairy? If he didn’t have fighting awareness, he would still die!

In melee range, the Ice Air Fairy was in an absolute disadvantage.

With the combination of Death Assault and Vicious Devour, the Four Winged Snake Demon’s attack rose incredibly high. When the nearly sixth level poisonous fangs snapped shut, they bit right onto the Ice Air Fairy’s body!

“Ao!!”

The slow moving Ice Air Fairy couldn’t dodge such a swift attack, so its body was quickly snatched up by the Snake Demon!!

The Snake Demon threw its head up, actually throwing the Ice Air Fairy straight into the sky, as if it was a proud king cobra that had just caught prey!

“Heavy Splitting Fang!!”

The Four Winged Snake Demon immediately listened to its owner’s command. Its fangs somehow extended bizarrely, becoming razor sharp. It resolutely bit onto the Ice Air Fairy’s body, wanting to bite the Fairy into shreds!

“Heng, little thing, die!”

Yang Jie had already let out a cruel smile.

“Beng!!”

The moment it bit down, the sound of metal clanking was emitted.

“Wu!!”

Suddenly, the Four Winged Snake Demon let out a pained cry, spitting the Ice Air Fairy out of its mouth and falling backwards with a mouth full of blood!

Attacking yet getting wounded!

Yang Jie’s cruel smile immediately stiffened, as he watched on in shock at the blood spewing Four Winged Snake Demon!

The Ice Air Fairy, under the training of the sixth level ice type soul crystal, already had a defense of sixth rank late stage. Adding on the effects of Ice Armor, the Ice Air Fairy’s defense was a whopping seventh level late stage. How could such a defense be shattered so easily!

“Ling”

Ice Air Fairies had the ability to float. After being spit out, the Ice Air Fairy still floated in midair. Though deep teeth marks appeared on its body, it was as if it wasn't affected, as it continued to cast the Ice Sword Formation that was interrupted.

The spell quickly finished. Fifteen blades of ice appeared, and they awe-inspiringly hovered over the somewhat angry Ice Air Fairy!!

“Ling!!”

The Ice Air Fairy let out an angry cry and immediately, the fifteen massive swords stabbed down from the treetops, each blade accurately piercing into the Four Winged Snake Demon's body!!!

“Pu!! Pu!! Pu!!”

Blade after blade of ice brought frigid air as they shot down. Some piercing through wood, some nailing the Snake Demon's body straight into the ground, and some even piercing through its throat and out of its neck!

The Four Winged Snake Demon was only ten meters long, yet its ten meter long body was stabbed into the ground by fifteen six meter long ice swords, suffering a miserable death!

Sixth level Ice Sword Formation, yet its power could compare to a seventh level ice type technique. The moment the fifteen ice

swords dropped, the Four Winged Snake Demon instantly died, heavily wounding Yang Jie's third Soul!!!

Seeing such a terrifying scene, Yang Jie's mind completely blanked. Yet, at this scary moment, the invading cold poison crept through the mental link between him and the Snake Demon!

Yang Jie's face blanched as he quickly commanded his remembrance to resist the onslaught of the ice poison!

Chu Mu was a seventh remembrance spirit teacher, one rank higher than even Yang Jie. Adding the Ice Air Fairy's scary ice type talent, this cold poison invasion definitely wasn't easy to stop, especially since Yang Jie was a step late already.

The coldness quickly seeped into Yang Jie's soul. Yang Jie's body suddenly stiffened as cold air poured out of his orifices!

His body started turning ashen. In approximately five more seconds, his body would become an ice sculpture from the inside out!

Yang Jie felt the nearing of death, and quickly undid his clothes and ripped a bottle of medicine off from his belt, chugging it down into his throat!

"Sixth level cold resistance medicine?" Chu Mu was surprised that Yang Jie had such a life-saving medicine on him.

The cold poison was quickly dispersed. Yang Jie, who had a damaged soul now, had a face plastered with fear. With no means for a rematch, he quickly retracted his Ghost Rock Devil Man and forcibly summoned a Fifth Phase Storm Eagle despite having a wounded soul. Climbing onto it clumsily, it quickly rolled up in a gust of wind as it dashed into deeper woods!

Yang Jie's series of motions was incredibly fast and flowed smoothly-clearly very experienced.

How could Chu Mu let Yang Jie escape? He quickly retracted his Ice Air Fairy into his soul pet space, cast Wind Riding on himself, and dashed forward to follow.

“Mo Xie!”

The playful Mo Xie immediately jumped off of the Death Scorpion's body, leaping on two trees and landing lightly. As she landed, she was engulfed by flames and transformed into the glamorous Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox, showing her coordination as she dashed beside Chu Mu.

Yet Chu Mu flipped over and smoothly fell upon Mo Xie's back, almost instantly disappearing into the black forest!

Even after seeing Chu Mu ride away with a fire type soul pet, everyone still couldn't recover from the death of the Four Winged Snake Demon!

“Is that Ice Air Fairy’s ice type talent and defensive talent already at the seventh rank?” Old Teng’s eyes rigidly stared at the fifteen ice swords that were still impaled in the Snake Demon’s body.

Once a soul pet had one type talent in the seventh rank, it could be ranked within commander ranks.

If more than two type talents reached seventh rank, and all the other type talents weren’t abysmally low, it could become medium class commander rank. If three type talents hit the seventh level, it could be high class commander rank

Chu Mu’s Ice Air Fairy already displayed scary ice type controlling capabilities. Many people who were spectating thought that its defense must be weak, yet no one would’ve thought that its defense was just as strong, beating the majority of commander rank soul pets!

“Who is your master? With such power, shouldn’t he have great fame in the nearby regions?” Qing Menger, after finishing off Li Nan, also garnered a deep interest in Chu Mu and his mysteriousness. She also doubted the name Chu Chen, which she’d never heard of.

Ting Yu knew that Chu Mu didn’t like to brag, so she didn’t say Chu Mu’s identity.

Of course, the most shocked had to be Chu Ning, who lived with Chu Mu for over ten years. Of all the brothers, the one who knew the most about Chu Mu had to be Chu Ning. In four years time, his

brother, who was ridiculed and mocked for losing a soul, had become this strong!

Such strength led him to think of the current situation in the clan, and excited tears welled up in Chu Ning's eyes! Chu Mu's resurrection from death and his power let Chu Ning see hope for the Chu Family to become great again!

Chapter 26: I'm Fine, But We May Not Be Soon

“Huahuahua”

The black forest swayed in the cold night wind, causing sounds of rustling leaves.

“Sou!!!”

A red blaze flew by. Trailing it were six ribbon like tails that swept through the forest, which lifted a strong gale as it passed, sweeping all the fallen leaves into the air!

The speed of Mo Xie sprinting was even faster than the Night Thunder Dream Beast's. Therefore, a fifth phase sixth stage Storm Eagle, even with the ability to fly, couldn't possibly be faster than Mo Xie. The only advantage it had was the aerial advantage!

“Ignite!”

Mo Xie constantly spewed fire into the air, creating a cloud of fire that blocked the Storm Eagle from flying higher into the air!

The Gale Eagle's ability was quite inferior to Mo Xie's. Being chased by such a swift soul pet, how could it easily fly away?

“Wind Riding!”

Seeing the height of the Gale Eagle, Chu Mu thought that the timing was right, so he instantly cast an incantation and imbued the effects of Wind Riding onto Mo Xie!

Mo Xie was already running like an arrow. Once Wind Riding was applied, her four paws looked like they didn't even touch the ground!

In the forest, the flame covered Mo Xie suddenly dashed upwards, hopping onto the tree tops in one leap. With another agile push, she charmingly leaped out of the treetops and on top of the black forest!

Flame Dance!

Once she reached the apex of her jump, her front paws lightly tapped the air in front of her, creating a ripple of fire where she tapped, allowing her to jump into even higher into the air!

Feeling the fire nearby, Yang Jie's face was full of fear. He never thought that when he was running away, Chu Mu could still catch him. Additionally, he didn't expect the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox's jaw dropping vertical!

“Phantom Evil Flame Claw!”

An incomparably devilish figure suddenly appeared, glamorously intercepting where the Storm Eagle was heading. Three shocking

evil flame claws violently ripped into the Storm Eagle and Yang Jie's body!!

The Storm Eagle's head and tail were brutally ripped off as Mo Xie's demon fire evil flames quickly spread through the rest of its blood and flesh, disintegrating the Storm Eagle's body from within. Yang Jie's waist was also ripped open, allowing the demon fire evil flames to spread rampantly!!

“Huhu!!” The fast burning demon fire evil flames turned Yang Jie and his soul pet into ashes before they even landed, leaving only a black dust that scattered with the blowing winds!

Chu Mu smiled and rubbed Mo Xie's furry ear, “Good work, I'll allow you to eat a midnight snack tonight.”

“Wuwuwu” Mo Xie let out an excited noise, causing her body to naturally slide downwards.....

“Wuwu!!”

Suddenly, Mo Xie let out an odd cry.

At the same time, Chu Mu felt his body suddenly drop, feeling a gale blowing up from below!

“Are you kidding me, how is there a gap here!!” Chu Mu cursed and fell along with Mo Xie in the next moment!!

East of Manyin City there was indeed a forest, but on both sides of the forest there were discontinuities. This was also the reason why Manyin City's east road was the only way towards Gangluo City. Even if the Chu Family realized that the Yang clan would use despicable methods on their caravan, they couldn't possibly change routes easily.

Chu Mu obviously didn't realize this, and he wholeheartedly wanted to kill Yang Jie. Only when Mo Xie leapt did they realize that there was no more place to jump off of!

This discontinuity outside of the forest east of Manyin City was named Falling Phoenix Cliff, and it was over a hundred meters deep. In this chasm was a primordial forest, wherein lived countless strange and exotic soul pets. It was also an infamously dangerous region in Luo Region. Currently, no faction had the ability to make it their territory.

The midnight wind blew past. The thousand meter long precipice seemed even steeper and dangerous under the dismal glow of the crescent moon. Yet, in this dark night and cliff, a radiant fire figure drew an arc in the skies from above, falling magnificently.

“Pa!!!”

The figure wrapped in evil flames very luckily landed on a hanging and sickly tree. This little tree that survived on the cliff couldn't hold the weight of the flaming figure, and let out a crisp crack before breaking.

The flaming figure slightly adjusted its posture and immediately jumped towards the cliff face.

The Falling Phoenix Cliff was a chasm, so its slope was nonexistent and stood perpendicular to the ground. The evil flamed figure couldn't find anywhere to rest upon, so leaping slightly off of a rock crevice, it leapt downwards.....

The lonely moon hung high, lighting the cliff that stood in the middle of the dark sea of trees. A little figure of flames stuck to the cliff face and dropped frighteningly, somewhat adding a bit of liveliness to the abstruse skies and black forest.....

“Young master! Young master!!”

“Fourth brother! Fourth brother!!”

“Mister Chu!! Mister Chu!!”

Sounds of searching echoed through the skies of Manyin forest.

However, only startled night birds answered with their frustrated calls.

“Where did the young master go?” Ting Yu rode a Gale Colt, yet she was unbearably anxious, causing her face to pale.

“Maybe he was counterattacked by Yang Jie? He shouldn't have

brashly chased him into the forest.” Qing Clan’s slave Old Teng spoke.

“Not possible, not even ten Yang Jie’s would be young master’s match!” Ting Yu immediately shot the old slave who always said the wrong thing a look.

Ting Yu knew Chu Mu was the King of Prison Island. Through three years of blood and killing, he who survived would definitely not make any low level mistakes.

“Upfront seems to be Falling Phoenix Cliff. Sister Menger, quickly come down from the skies.” Chu Ning looked at Qing Menger and said to her.

“Falling Phoenix Cliff?” Qing Menger said with confusion.

“Miss, any further is the infamous ‘forest gap’ within Luo Region. The soul pets there are mostly cruel, and not many people dare to set foot within the area. If you fly in the air like that, especially since your Flame Bird is conspicuous, it could easily be mistaken for an invader in some strong soul pet’s territory, so please hurry up and retract your Flame Bird before it brings trouble for us all.” Old Teng immediately said to Qing Menger.

Hearing Old Teng, Qing Menger didn’t dare to fly any longer, and retracted her soul pet before landing on the ground.

“There seems to be burnt marks here left by young master’s soul

pet.....” Ting Yu smelled a scorched smell and immediately discovered the marks left by Mo Xie’s flaming paws.

Going further, the Gale Colt suddenly stopped. Ting Yu’s body slightly inclined forward. Through the dense branches, she suddenly felt a gust of cold wind towards her!!

Ting Yu sucked in a breath as she looked, dumbfounded, at the vast forest that sank downwards!

“Careful, this is Falling Phoenix Cliff. Tell your Gale Colt to restrict its aura, as this cliff is also home to many strong soul pets!” Old Teng immediately warned.

“Young master!! Young master!! Are you down there!!” Ting Yu yelled downwards.

The rampant winds blew by. The silent cliff echoed Ting Yu’s calls, yet still, no one answered.

“How do we go down?” Ting Yu was sure that Chu Mu fell in accidentally, so she immediately asked around.

“We can’t go down from here. We must circumnavigate to the west side of Gangluo City, where there is a forest, and slowly go deeper to get near to this place.”

Chu Ning’s brows were locked since the beginning. After finally reuniting with his fourth brother, he didn’t expect that fourth

brother would fall into such a dangerous forest gap!

Everyone was sure that Chu Mu fell into the forest gap. Ting Yu tried to create a ladder with her Thorny Rose Demon's vines, but the vines were only thirty meters long. Other than Qing Menger who had a wing type soul pet like Flame Bird, no one else had any way of going down.

"I'll ride my Flame Bird down to check things out." Qing Menger said.

"Miss, you can't, going down with your flame bird is easy....." Old Teng was just going to start persuading.

"Fire light, that must be young master!" Ting Yu immediately pointed at the single light within the pitch black forest.

"I'll go down and pick him up." Qing Menger's courage was considerable as she leaped straight off the cliff, summoning her Flame Bird as she fell.....

Qing Menger's slender and graceful body lightly fell as a bright red symbol appeared under her feet. The symbol was taken over by burning flames and quickly formed a wing type soul pet.

"Huhu" Qing Menger rode her Flame Bird and started the descent.

"Miss!! Miss!!! Going down is easy for you, but coming back up is

so much more difficult! Don't go down!!”

The wind kept whistling in her ear, so Qing Menger only heard Old Teng's shouting, yet she couldn't hear it clearly, so she dismissed it as nothing and kept falling.

“This little girl is still her old self, not thinking anything through.....” Chu Ning watched Qing Menger fly downwards and said helplessly. However, this was good too, because at least they could see if Chu Mu was actually hurt or not.

At the bottom of the cliff, Chu Mu held his hand over his heart, still recovering from the shock.

Beside him, Mo Xie was emitting “wuwu”s as she licked her worn out claws.

“That was so close. From that height, if there were nothing, we truly would've been crippled.” Chu Mu said.

Mo Xie nodded in agreement.

Taking a few heavy breaths, Chu Mu still had lingering fears. Standing up and looking around, he tried to find ways that he could climb back up.

Suddenly, a flaming light lit up above him, slowly nearing his location.

“Mister Chu, are you there?” Qing Menger’s soft voice traveled down.

“I’m here.”

“Are you okay?” Qing Menger asked.

“I’m fine, but we may not be soon.” Chu Mu said, not knowing if he should smile or cry as his eyes landed on the myriads of winged silhouettes that were dashing out of the dark cliff.....

Chapter 27: Forest Gap, Forest Thing

As Qing Menger lifted her head, she saw the countless black figures fluttering towards her, causing her to quickly turn pale in terror.

“Quick, retract your Flame Bird.” Chu Mu said.

Qing Menger quickly jumped down, and retracted her Flame Bird again.

“Get on.” Chu Mu leaped onto Mo Xie’s back and said to Qing Menger.

Feeling the waves of cold air assaulting her from above, she didn’t dare to hesitate, and she hurriedly jumped onto Mo Xie’s back.

“Wuwu!!!” Mo Xie seemed not to like anyone else sitting on her, as she let out sounds of discontent.

“She is also here to help us, just bear with it for a moment.” Chu Mu rubbed Mo Xie’s ear and placated Mo Xie.

Mo Xie was also simply doing it for show. Realizing that the dozens of wing type soul pets had already flown towards them and started a huge gust of wind, Mo Xie started striding. Her flaming paws quickly stepped through the black forest; she disappeared into the grim night scene.....

“Miss!!” Old Teng was stunned. Watching the kid “kidnap” Qing Menger, he didn’t know what to do. After all, he didn’t have a wing type soul pet.

“Don’t shout, you’ll awaken those guys!” Chu Ning immediately shot a stare at Old Teng.

“Yi!! Yi!!”

Yet, just as Chu Ning finished, a shrill sound came from under the cliff. Following the noise were distinct waves of wind that blew through like daggers.

“Now they’re in trouble. Let’s leave here first, and then look for them Gangluo City’s western forest. Staying here would only be more dangerous.” An old counselor of the Chu Family said.

“How can that work? The missus is still down there.” Old Teng said anxiously. If anything happened to Qing Menger, Old Teng wouldn’t be exempt either.

“We can’t even go down from here. Go back to Gangluo City. There, we can unite both of our clans to find them within the forest gap.” Chu Ning said while still somewhat maintaining his calm.

Chu Ning was very careful. He didn’t just say that Mister Chu was Chu Mu. After all, he just managed to come back alive. Chu

Ning believed that Qing Menger wouldn't reveal it, but he didn't trust this clan servant Old Teng that much.

“I guess that's the only way. Let's go to your city first.” Ting Yu couldn't think of any other way. Now, all she could do was go to Gangluo City, and check if there are any Nightmare Palace bases and dispatch some Nightmare Palace experts to look for Chu Mu within this forest gap.

The shrill calls behind them slowly faded. Running madly, the speedy Mo Xie finally lost the big crowd of wing type soul pets.

“So close.....” Once they stopped to rest, Qing Menger also patted her plump chest and let out a breath.

“Cliffs like those are the heavens of wing type soul pets. Flying by with other wing type soul pets is the biggest taboo.” Chu Mu told Qing Menger.

“I.....I didn't know.....” Qing Menger immediately blushed, saying slightly embarrassedly, “Sorry, I couldn't help you and even brought you trouble.”

Chu Mu didn't mind such little issues, especially when he remembered that Qing Menger seemed to be this silly since long ago.

“Do you know how to walk out of this forest?” Chu Mu asked.

“Uncle Teng said that the east side of this forest connects with the western forest of Gangluo City. If we walk east, we may be able to reach Gangluo City. However, I heard that there are many dangerous creatures within this forest gap, making it very treacherous.” Qing Menger said in a small voice.

“Then let’s head east.” Chu Mu said.

“Which way is east?” Qing Menger looked around, seeing nothing but the pitch black forest, unable to discern a direction.

“Just follow me.” Chu Mu survived for over a year in the deepest parts of Prison Island alone, which was much more complicated than the forest gap. How could a small forest gap cause him to lose his direction?

Qing Menger could only nod and follow Chu Mu. However, it seemed to be her first time advancing in a black forest, as she looked afraid.

“If you have any soul pet that can hide its aura, you can summon it. If not, then don’t summon anything, or else it will just bring us more trouble.” Chu Mu reminded Qing Menger.

Qing Menger was just about to summon her soul pet to alleviate the slowly invading fear, but after Chu Mu said that, she could only blink and get closer to Chu Mu.

“Just now your soul pet was an Evil Flamed Six Tail Demon Fox right? It was so speedy!” Qing Menger said lightly.

Li Nan had fought with Chu Ning before, so he didn't have that much battling strength remaining. Qing Menger didn't have any difficulty when dealing with him.

Qing Menger also paid attention to Chu Mu's fighting, so she was also very astonished at the strength of his Ice Air Fairy. Yet now, Chu Mu summoned an Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox, which was even rarer than a Night Thunder Dream Beast, and it seemed just as scarily strong.

“En.” Chu Mu nodded but didn't explain any further. He was only focused on walking forward in order to quickly leave this forest gap and return to Gangluo City.

Qing Menger was naturally talking to Chu Mu because she was afraid, yet Chu Mu didn't seem like he liked to talk, as he put on a cold guise, making Qing Menger unhappily pout.

Qing Menger was born pretty, so there were always many young and handsome talented individuals around her. Qing Menger didn't like their soliciting and flattering, but she also didn't like to be totally ignored by a man that she was curious about.

Before, she was worried if it wasn't too good to be alone with another man but, looking at it now, a good looking girl like her seemed to have no allure in front of this man.

One couldn't blame Chu Mu for being insensitive though. Chu Mu wasn't uninterested in Qing Menger. It was just the opposite. Because of some past memories, he quite liked this little sister, especially since she was a lithe and beautiful girl now.

Yet, Chu Mu's personality was such. Even if beside him was the superior Princess Jin Rou, Chu Mu would still be his icy self. After all, he was used to being alone.....

After walking past midnight, Qing Menger was clearly tired, so Chu Mu stopped, giving the rest of his soul power to White Nightmare before starting to cultivate.

Chu Mu, in this entire process, was like a different person, almost ignoring Qing Menger's presence. Yet, this made Qing Menger's thoughts wander even more. Being a girl deep in a black forest, unable to summon her soul pet and having to rest under a tree, made her uneasy. She wanted to talk with this man, but he was like a statue, completely merging into the surrounding forest and night. There were many times when Qing Menger almost felt as if he didn't exist.

Regardless of where Qing Menger's thoughts wandered as to how to get through the night's torment, the first rays of sun slowly peeked over the horizon, steadily lighting up this vast forest.

All living things were awakening. As the sunlight fell on her face, the half asleep Qing Menger opened her hazy eyes, her beautiful pupils still twinkling blurrily.

Opening their eyes, Qing Menger immediately saw a handsome yet somewhat detached face. Qing Menger subconsciously backed off a little.....

“These fruits can allay your hunger.” Chu Mu passed some fruits to Qing Menger and said lightly.

Qing Menger blinked and slowly took the delectable fruits. She took a small bite, yet her glistening eyes still stared at Chu Mu.....

“What’s wrong?” Seeing Qing Menger’s pitiful look, Chu Mu was completely baffled.

“Nothing.....nothing..... it tastes pretty good.....” Qing Menger shook her head and started nibbling the tasty fruit.

“Yesterday night you slept well, right? But next time don’t salivate on my shoulder anymore.....” Chu Mu said.

“Ah? I leaned on you when I slept...? I...I.....” Qing Menger instantly went red, as she panicked and almost dropped her fruit.

Chu Mu looked at her blankly. Glancing at the ashamed Qing Menger, then looking at little Mo Xie on his shoulder, he let out a questioning expression.

Little Mo Xie on Chu Mu’s shoulder lifted her little head and let out a few embarrassed “wu”s, acknowledging that she didn’t eat a midnight snack yesterday, so she salivated a little with hunger.....

Seeing the cute little fox on Chu Mu's shoulder answering Chu Mu, Qing Menger immediately realized that Chu Mu was addressing his little pet and not her. Her beautiful face instantly reddened, lovely and tender, and she wished that she could find a hole and hide in it.

“Here's the forest gap. I remember there are many Mo Ye's living here. From what I've heard, the quality of the Mo Ye's were also quite high. Maybe we could linger and capture a commander rank Mo Ye.” Chu Mu said.

Qing Menger specifically looked at Chu Mu again to see if he was talking to her. Making sure his eyes were on her, she then said, “It's pretty dangerous here, if we meet any fierce soul pets.....”

“En, true, bringing you along is dangerous, then let's forget about it.” Chu Mu nodded.

Chu Mu didn't mind if he was by himself, because he knew how to avoid the stronger soul pets. But with Qing Menger, he would definitely be weighed down.

Qing Menger's expression froze again, feeling secretly angry, “Why is this guy so annoying, either not talking with me, or talking to me and saying hurtful words. At least I'm a fourth remembrance spirit teacher.....”

With Qing Menger, Chu Mu didn't plan on staying any longer, and planned on walking straight east to try to reach Gangluo City

as soon as possible.

Walking for another day, they met a few soul pets on the way, but Chu Mu let his Night Thunder Dream Beast deal with them. His Night Thunder Dream Beast was at the fifth phase fifth stage right now, and Chu Mu wanted it to get to sixth phase as soon as possible, with growth only happening through constant battling.

“What’s wrong, why did you suddenly stop?” Qing Menger stopped and looked at Chu Mu, who stood before her, and asked.

“There should be a forest lake nearby.” Chu Mu said.

“Forest lake?” Qing Menger’s eyes brightened. If there was water, she could wash her face and take a bath. These two days of walking in the forest made her feel uncomfortable all over.

“Mo Ye’s also like to live in areas with lakes.” Chu Mu said.

“You want to capture a Mo Ye?” Qing Menger said.

Chu Mu shook his head, saying, “I have high standards for my soul pets. I won’t choose any soul pet in such little time; there’s simply not enough time for me to pick.”

“The forest winds that blow from this lake goes east. But, when we were walking over, the wind was northwards. The lake probably changed the direction of wind, meaning there may be some special soul item in the lake, causing normal wind to be

unable to enter the lake and change its direction.” Chu Mu took a deep breath and smelled the forest.

Qing Menger opened her little mouth in surprise, watching Chu Mu with her pretty eyes.

She never would've thought that a person could deduct that an area had a soul item simply from an unexplained shift in wind!

Chapter 28: Chu Family's Clan Pet, Mo Ye

The forest lake was like a little ecosystem of its own. There were often many soul pets that lived here, because many soul pets would come to drink at certain time periods. This naturally included many commander rank soul pets.

Evening was around the time at which most soul pets would appear near the lake. When Chu Mu and Qing Menger neared the forest lake, they could see over ten soul pets drinking near the lake.

The soul pets were varied, with some that even Chu Mu didn't recognize. When Qing Menger saw this many soul pets, her lovely pupils also shone with light, as if she wanted to catch one to become her new companion too.

“Water Moon, Silver Shawl Demon, Cloud Piercing Unicorn, Rainbow Fighting Deer, Demon Spirit Butterfly.....Ya, there really are Mo Ye's.....”

Qing Menger pointed with her delicate finger and secretly counted off the soul pets near the lake. When she noticed the commander rank Mo Ye she immediately looked astonished.

Mo Ye: Beast World – bug type – Armored Beast species – Mo Ye subspecies middle class commander rank.

Mo Ye was a soul pet covered in black ink. Its body shape inherited the blood of a beast type, having a somewhat wolf-like,

somewhat tiger-like, somewhat panther-like, and somewhat lion-like body bursting with strength. Its sturdy and herculean limbs and formidable head always made one feel in awe.

Yet, different from most other beast type soul pets, Mo Ye's didn't have a furry outer coat. The Mo Ye's skin was inherited from its bug type blood, causing it to be covered in pieces of distinct and angular armor.

Mo Ye's, in this aspect, was much like the Light Rhinoceros, but the Light Rhinoceros's armor wasn't as exquisite and smooth as the Mo Ye's.

In reality, the Mo Ye and Light Rhinoceros both descended from the species of armored beasts. The Light Rhinoceros gave off a majestic presence, while the Mo Ye added touches of darkness to its imposing manner.

Horned armored beasts were the mark of the Chu Family. In the Wo Gu Region, the Great Chu Family was famous around the world for its horned armored beasts.

Chu Mu started coming in contact with such soul pets from a very early age. Almost everyone in the family had a first-rate armored beast or horned beast.

The experts in the Chu Family often chose between commander rank armored beasts and horned beasts, usually between the Light Rhinoceros and the Mo Ye.

Chu Mu himself was inclined towards the darker feeling of Mo Ye's, possibly due to the influence of his own father's supremely strong Mo Ye.

“Mister Chu, do you see, there's a little Mo Ye over there, I think it's still very young.” Qing Menger very excitedly pointed at a meter tall little Mo Ye she spotted near the lake.

“En, I see it. It's ink armor is slightly grey, and its tail to body ratio is slightly imbalanced. It's already at the third phase, yet its body size is akin to a second phase. It probably didn't receive reasonable nutrients after it was born, causing it to grow weaker than normal Mo Ye's as well.”

“You know a lot about Mo Ye's, Mister Chu?” Qing Menger asked.

“I guess so. This Mo Ye is third phase third stage, and it seems to have just left its parents to live independently. Yet, such a weak Mo Ye that isn't much different from a second phase Mo Ye would have a hard time surviving.” Chu Mu said.

Able to find a young commander rank soul pet was usually considered very lucky, yet Chu Mu wasn't interested in such a low quality soul pet. In fact, he didn't even bother to catch it, because such commander rank soul pets couldn't cost more than a thousand gold coins, worth less than some higher quality warrior rank soul pets.

Chu Mu's attention wasn't on the Mo Ye. Instead, he started

observing the forest lake, intentionally using his remembrance to detect the magical item.

Very quickly, Chu Mu found the location of the item that let out a special aura. Looking over, it was a proud and aloof Heavenly Demon Orchid standing in the middle of the lake!

Heavenly Demon Orchid, sixth level magical item that lived in deep waters. In a year, there were only three days where it would float out of the water to receive energy from the sun's radiance and air.

The Heavenly Demon Orchid was a demon type's most perfect food, as its effects were even greater than a sixth level demon type soul crystal, allowing a demon type's growth speed to increase, and its effects remained for a very long time.

Books have described that other than the Heavenly Demon Orchid, there was a sixth level medicinal ingredient named Demon Spirit's Tears. Demon Spirit's Tears were the result of countless refinement, filtering, and coincidences of dews condensed on a Demon Tree's leaf.

If such material were joined with the Heavenly Demon Orchid and concocted, it could create Heavenly Demon Tears.

Heavenly Demon Tears was a very valuable medicine. If a demon type soul pet took it, it could immediately cause its growth rate to increase dramatically and continue growing for a long time. It was the best medicine to improve demon type soul pets!

The Night Thunder Dream Beast was currently still at the fifth phase fifth stage. After it had eaten a sixth level tri-type soul crystal, it strengthened its demon mental abilities, yet didn't directly increase its fighting power by much.

However, demon type mental abilities needed stages and phases to be useful. If the Night Thunder Dream Beast were still at the fifth phase fifth stage, it would have a hard time fighting against sixth phase commander rank soul pets, so its phase needed to be improved quickly.

The Heavenly Demon Orchid was perfect to improve its phase. If he went to Gangluo City and bought a drop of Demon Spirit's Tear for around 50,000 gold coins and found a pharmacist to concoct it, it could cause the Night Thunder Dream Beast's power growth to increase drastically within a certain period!

A Heavenly Demon Orchid was worth almost 200,000 gold coins. It was even more expensive than a sixth rank soul crystal. Once combined with other medicines, if one were to buy a Heavenly Demon Tear, it would cost possibly over 300,000, something not many could afford. The appearance of this Heavenly Demon Orchid saved Chu Mu 200,000 gold coins!

Chu Mu knew that the reason such a sixth level soul item hadn't been taken by any soul pet yet is because there was either a soul pet byproduct or a strong soul pet that guarded it, waiting to harvest it when it is fully grown.

In the evening, the soul pets near the lake were still plentiful. Chu Mu and Qing Menger waited until the last rays of sun disappeared over the treetops before proceeding.

Water battles would naturally be fought with the Ice Air Fairy, so Chu Mu immediately summoned it.

“Ling”

When the Ice Air Fairy appeared, icy air immediately spread, inadvertently freezing the water in the lake, creating a layer of ice.

“Ning, bring the Heavenly Demon Orchid back. Remember to be wary of the soul pet underwater.” Chu Mu said to his Ice Air Fairy.

“Ling~” The Ice Air Fairy immediately let out a crisp call, floating into the vicinity of the lake.

As the Ice Air Fairy floated past, the lake water would quickly appear white, slowly forming ice pieces. Chu Mu could even follow the ice pieces straight towards the middle of the lake.

But, Chu Mu didn't follow them. He didn't have many water type soul pets on him, and the Ice Air Fairy had a hard time controlling water, so following it was very dangerous.

“Mo Xie, drive away all the other soul pets near the lake, don't let them near us.” Chu Mu said to Mo Xie who was on his shoulder.

Mo Xie nodded and jumped off of Chu Mus' body, starting to sweep everywhere with her demonic aura.

“Hualala!!”

Just as Chu Mu finished speaking, the lake water suddenly exploded, sending water high into the air!!

Within the waves, three snake-like heads poked out of the water, blocking the Ice Air Fairy's path. Its grotesque heads waved in the water, giving off a frightening feeling!

“Its a warrior rank Deep Water Monster!” Qing Menger instinctively took a few steps back and looked at the three headed creature that appeared in the lake.

Deep Water Monster, a monster that gained a head every two phases. Its three heads signified that it was sixth phase!

Looking at the three long necked heads, Chu Mu smiled, clearly not thinking that the sixth phase fourth stage Deep Water Monster was too tough to deal with.

“Ling!!”

The Ice Air Fairy was now also very battle hungry. Seeing the Deep Water Monster show off in front of it, it let out a threatening

call and instantly started chanting ice type incantations!

“Hualalala!!”

The three heads of the Deep Water Monster immediately locked on the Ice Air Fairy. Its six eyes blinked with a deep blue radiance, causing the lake surface to start to grow turbulent!

Within the lake, nine crazily swirling waves quickly appeared. The streams of water waved their snake like contours and heavily whipped towards the Ice Air Fairy!

“Ling!!”

The Ice Air Fairy immediately let out another shout, releasing a snow white circle of ice from its pure and translucent body. This wave of ice quickly spread. Just as the nine water whips were nearing the Ice Air Fairy’s body, they immediately turned into ice pillars. Its waving motion caused them to completely turn into ice shards, shattering near the Ice Air Fairy’s body.

“I’ll help?” Qing Menger also started to chant an incantation, wanting to summon her water type soul pet into the battle.

“No need.” Chu Mu shook his head.

Whenever they met wild soul pets for battles, Chu Mu usually only summoned one soul pet, because in duels, soul pets could learn more and grow faster.

Qing Menger pouted, feeling bored. Since she entered this forest gap, Qing Menger hadn't even summoned her own soul pet once, constantly feeling like a deadweight.

Qing Menger also witnessed Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy's strong capabilities. The Deep Water Monster utilized its home field advantage in the water to fight with the Ice Air Fairy, but once the Ice Air Fairy casted real ice type techniques, the Deep Water Monster couldn't withstand it for much longer.

The fight slowly fell towards the Ice Air Fairy. Qing Menger could see that winning was only an issue of time for Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy now, so her gaze naturally fell on Chu Mu's little Mo Xie, who was cute enough to melt a girl's heart. She desperately wanted to go over and hug the little elegant fox.

“Wu”

Little Mo Xie remained in her state of Pitiful Appearance, with her long fur slowly drifting in the wind. Standing on the edge of the grass beside the lake, Qing Menger's gaze was on the supremely weak-looking Mo Xie.

“I wonder if this Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox is stronger, or if the Ice Air Fairy stronger.” Qing Menger looked at the exquisite Mo Xie and started guessing.

“Huh, why hasn't the little Mo Ye run away yet? All the other soul pets have run away already.” Qing Menger suddenly noticed

that the weak little Mo Ye was still nearby, and was actually confronting the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox.

The little Mo Ye already had many wounds on its body. Looking at its weak appearance, it was as if a stronger wind could topple it.

However what Qing Menger couldn't understand was, despite knowing that the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox in front of it was hiding its strength and was, in reality, way stronger, it hadn't run away like the other soul pets. It chose instead to stand adamantly and alone against the superior Evil Flamed Six Tailed that was merely in Pitiful Appearance!

Chapter 29: Tenaciously Fighting Mo Ye

“Wuwu” Mo Xie raised her little head and signalled the little Mo Ye. If not for Chu Mu’s command disallowing her to carelessly kill the weak Mo Ye, Mo Xie’s evil flamed claws would’ve taken this little guy’s life immediately.

“Hou!! Hou!!” The third phase third stage Mo Ye also opened its mouth, roaring at Mo Xie and actually charging straight at her!

Mo Xie lightly leapt to the side, easily evading the Mo Ye’s Ripping Claw. Her tail, on the other hand, swept over and tripped the shaky Mo Ye.

After being tripped, the Mo Ye gained new scratch wounds, but still got up. It’s mouth suddenly conjured a Death Ray, and it fiercely spewed it at Mo Xie!

Mo Xie stood in place, yet her tail quickly formed a fan. With a small sweep, she deflected the Mo Ye’s Death Ray as well!

After the Death Ray was deflected, it went straight into a tree and immediately snapped it!

“This little Mo Ye is so resilient.” Qing Menger looked at the adamantly fighting Mo Ye and was surprised, yet felt sorry for it.

“Hou!!” After its attacks were easily dissolved, the Mo Ye again sprinted towards her. Its ink colored armor suddenly flashed with

a black light, causing its body to become a sword adhered by an inkish glow, advancing towards Mo Xie!

“Wuwu!!” Mo Xie still stood in her place. She suddenly extended her body. Instantly, raging demon fire evil flames shot out from under her flaming paws. The demon fire evil flames created a natural protection, surrounding Mo Xie’s body!

The Mo Ye’s Inked Horn firmly slammed into Mo Xie’s demon fire evil flames and, while Mo Xie was unharmed, the Mo Ye’s body was tossed backwards.

Its ink colored armor immediately caught fire, causing a large region on its skull area to be burnt!

“Such a poor little guy. Getting wounded this deeply, if it isn’t treated, it would very easily be bullied by other soul pets.” Qing Menger was a girl, so she easily took pity on soul pets.

On the other side, the Ice Air Fairy had already finished its battle, bringing Chu Mu not only the Heavenly Demon Orchid that was worth 100,000 gold coins, but also the water and demon type soul core of the sixth phase Deep Water Monster.

If Chu Mu bought a water and ice duo type soul crystal, it could increase the Ice Air Fairy’s water controlling powers. However, Chu Mu felt that the Ice Air Fairy could develop the greatest power with pure ice control, so he never fed the Ice Air Fairy any water type soul cores.

“Mo Xie, let’s go.” Chu Mu looked at Mo Xie who was still playing with the little Mo Ye and said.

“Wuwu~” Mo Xie lost interest in playing with a low phase soul pet and immediately jumped back onto Chu Mu’s shoulder.

“Houhou”

However, the little Mo Ye’s eyes under its ink skull helmet were still locked onto Mo Xie, as if it still wanted to fight. Yet, its weak body was already full of wounds, making it unable to stand.

“The little guy seems so pitiful. If we just leave it there, it will get killed by other soul pets.” Qing Menger said, still feeling sorry for it.

Chu Mu looked at the third phase third stage little Mo Ye, but only said, “The Mo Ye’s recovery speed is very fast. Such degree of wounds will heal very quickly.”

“But.....”

“Let’s go, if it can’t live by itself in this cruel environment, even if you help it once, it will still get killed by other stronger beings. Also, the Mo Ye is a proud species, so it won’t accept help from anyone else.” Chu Mu interrupted.

Qing Menger opened her mouth as if to say something, but she found that she couldn’t rebuke what Chu Mu said. Still unable to

steel her heart, she looked at the shivering, little wounded Mo Ye near the lake. Biting her pink lips, she could only hustle to catch up to Chu Mu. Her heart, however, was silently praying for the little Mo Ye that was covered in wounds.

After finishing up fighting, Chu Mu fed the Ice Air Fairy a sixth rank ice type soul core. After the Ice Air Fairy ate the soul core, its body suddenly burst into white light!

Advancement!

After continuously battling recently, the Ice Air Fairy finally entered the sixth phase second stage, almost catching up to Mo Xie, who was at the sixth phase third stage.

Chu Mu invested quite a bit into the Ice Air Fairy, especially the 200,000 gold coin soul crystal, to make this high class warrior rank strong enough to match up against middle class commander rank soul pets. If he continued to strengthen its ice type, it would surely cause its destructive powers to become terrifying in the future.

Before night fell, Chu Mu and Qing Menger stopped their journey forwards, still choosing to rest under a tree and wait for the sun to rise the second day to continue.

Qing Menger found that Chu Mu was very familiar with the wilderness environment, as if he lived in the forest. Even in this forest gap, where danger was everywhere, they rarely ran into any. This way, Qing Menger was also very at ease, finally sleeping well for a night.

Chu Mu still kept his usual habits. After feeding his soul power to the White Nightmare, he started cultivating again, waiting until the darkest part of dawn before finally sleeping.

“Huhu”

When the skies started lighting up, the constantly vigilant Chu Mu heard a rustling in the bushes and immediately opened his eyes.

Mo Xie almost simultaneously opened her eyes, locking her gaze on a little bush beside them. Quickly jumping out of Chu Mu’s embrace, her paws started to flame up again.

“Huhu!!”

The bush opened and suddenly, a black figure darted out very quickly, razing its sharp claws violently over Mo Xie’s body!

Mo Xie stood in place, not even dodging, allowing the claws to slide right off her.

“Wuwu!!” Mo Xie slowly turned around, her eyes intimidatingly watching the inkish and adamant soul pet, feeling somewhat angry already.

“What’s wrong, what’s wrong?” Qing Menger woke up with a

start, somewhat frantically shifting towards Chu Mu, as if some danger had appeared.

“It’s nothing, it’s just the weak Mo Ye from yesterday.” Chu Mu said calmly. However, when he was speaking, he glanced at Qing Menger who leaned onto his arm.

Qing Menger had a great body. Her tight clothes accentuated the elegant curve of her breasts, and this pair of alluring parts were pressed onto Chu Mu’s arm, causing it to very flexibly change in shape.....

Qing Menger’s face immediately reddened, causing her to quickly draw back and inwardly blame herself.....

“This is the little Mo Ye from yesterday? How...how is it that in one night, its wounds are completely healed. I even remember that its skull armor had completely been burnt.” Qing Menger said.

Chu Mu looked at the little Mo Ye and was also somewhat bewildered. Yesterday, this Mo Ye was only at the third phase third stage, yet after getting beaten up by Mo Xie, it had not only completely healed, but had raised a stage, becoming the third phase fourth stage!

The Mo Ye’s fighting intent was very firm. This, Chu Mu understood. Most Mo Ye’s specialty was their species ability to self heal, causing their to heal wounds very quickly.

Self Heal effects were completely as if the soul pet were constantly consuming healing medicine, making their healing speed double that of a normal soul pet.

Yet, what Chu Mu found odd was that even if its healing speed were double of other soul pets, this Mo Ye needed at least two days to heal completely, especially its skull armor area that was severely burnt by demon fire evil flames.

“Maybe this Mo Ye happened to eat some soul item, or else it couldn’t have healed from such heavy injuries in one night.”

Third phase fourth stage and sixth phase third stage weren’t even nearly on the same level. After Mo Xie finally extended herself, the Mo Ye’s ink armor was immediately ripped to shreds, causing the blood and flesh inside to be revealed.

“Wuwuwu!!”

Mo Xie jumped high up, causing the flames on her four paws to increase greatly. When she landed, she fiercely stepped down, causing a terrifying wave of demon fire evil flames to roar forward. The weak little Mo Ye was immediately blasted away, its blood and flesh burnt black!

“You...aren’t you too cruel? All we had to do was chase it away. Why did you have to harm it this much?” Qing Menger looked at the poor Mo Ye that was tossed away by the fire and cutely glared at Chu Mu.

“Don’t worry, it can’t die. It’s just so it doesn’t follow us any longer.” Chu Mu said.

“Wuwu” Mo Xie jumped onto Chu Mu’s shoulder again, complaining that the weak little thing was too annoying.

Under normal circumstances, when Mo Xie released her aura, many soul pets would run away in fear. Yet, this Mo Ye couldn’t be scared away no matter what. Even if it were shaking all over and full of wounds, it still wanted to fight.

“Let’s go.....” Chu Mu didn’t mind it and continued to walk forward. Though the little guy’s healing power was very strong, it could only barely leave the ranks of the weak, still lacking the qualifications to become his soul pet.

Qing Menger looked at the little guy one more time before pouting her lips and following behind Chu Mu.

Gangluo City, Chu Clan Great Lobby

“What.....You.....did you just say.....” Chu Clan’s clan head Chu Ming suddenly stood up from his seat. His somewhat old body unexpectedly shook a little.

“Grandfather, Chu Mu isn’t dead! He really isn’t!” Chu Ning repeated what he just said.

“Ninger, where did you hear this from?” Chu Ning’s father, Chu

Tianlin, also looked shocked.

“At the time in Manyin Forest, I met the two evildoers Li Nan and Yang Jie.....”

Chu Ning immediately repeated his experiences in Man Yin City excitedly to the many Chu Clan members.

Chu Ning knew that the news of Chu Mu being alive would raise a huge commotion within Chu Clan. For safety reasons, he specially let the clan organize an internal meeting and would only then say it.

“Chu Ning, are you sure that this person is Chu Mu?” After hearing Chu Ning’s description, the expression on clan head Chu Ming’s face was also that of incomparable shock!

Everyone at the meeting knew who Yang Jie was. That heinous man was someone the Chu Family had wanted to kill for a long time.

Yet Yang Jie was indeed strong, as anyone normal person couldn’t deal with him. How could anyone at the meeting foresee that Chu Mu, who lost a soul and could never cast a soul pet actually defeated Yang Jie, who many Chu Family experts couldn’t even defeat!

“Yes, it was Chu Mu, it was definitely him, there is no possibility of error! Fourth Brother isn’t the Fourth brother we know

anymore. His power has completely surpassed mine, and by a lot, too.” Chu Ning said emotionally excited.

Chapter 30: The Soul Pet With Exceptional Healing Ability (1)

Chu Ning's description caused everyone present to be both shocked and suspicious. Chu Mu's incident had occurred four years ago and everyone had gradually forgotten about it. Yet, who would have expected that his name would appear on this day. Moreover, it came about in such a shocking message.

Perhaps it was because these people understood Chu Mu too well, but many people didn't really believe it. In a span of four years, going from someone who couldn't even summon a soul pet to defeating Yang Jie, was simply impossible.

"Then... then where is he?" The family head, Chu Ming, had a gaze that was clearly very moved.

"When he was chasing after Yang Jie, he accidentally fell off Falling Phoenix Cliff. Right now, he's in the Broken Forest." immediately said Chu Ning.

"Is it still possible to survive after falling off of Falling Phoenix Cliff?" asked the sixth son of the family head, Chu Tianjue.

"There was no problem. Fourth brother is still okay. Only, he had no way of getting back up. Right now he should be deep inside Broken Forest walking eastward. This child hastily returned in hoped that grandfather would send a few experts to Broken Forest to find Chu Mu." said Chu Ning.

“This... why did he have to fall in there. Broken Forest is incredibly dangerous. Normal people cannot even stay in there for a few days. Furthermore, Broken Forest is so vast that, without the sufficient number of people, it’s impossible to find people in that vast forest...” said Chu Tianjue.

The Chu Family’s family head, Chu Ming, creased his eyebrows. His face was heavy, and after a while, his gaze swept over everyone. Finally, it stopped on Chu Tianjue and he asked: “How many people can we send right now?”

“Father, we’re currently in very dire times. How can we send experts into Broken Forest? Moreover, after falling into the broken forest, whether he’s still alive is yet another question. If we were to send experts, with how empty our Chu Family is, finding him would be nice – at least we could make fourth brother gratified – but if we don’t find him, we will be in the face of an imminent crisis.” said Chu Tianjue.

“Sixth brother, what are you saying? Chu Mu barely managed to survive. In these four years he has definitely experienced a lot before barely managing to return. Even if there’s danger, we must send send a few experts.” said Chu Ning’s father, Chu Tianlin.

Chu Tianlin was Chu Ming’s second son, and his words had a bit of weight within the Chu Family.

“Second brother, I’m not someone who would watch his own nephew suffer hardships, right? Yet, the problem is, right now, we

really can't find anyone to go to Broken Forest. If we are to stubbornly send people, it will only bring us more danger." said Chu Tianjue.

The grizzled bearded Chu Nan sitting next to Chu Ning looked at the family head Chu Ming and slowly said: "We should still carefully consider..."

Chu Nan was the family head Chu Ming's younger brother. His mannerism was rather conservative and traditional. He controlled a third of the Chu Family's power and was the vice-head of the Chu Family.

"Sixth uncle, second grandfather, don't tell me that Chu Mu isn't a descendent of the Chu Family?! How... how can you just sit back and watch him die?!" Chu Ning was exceptionally emotional as he spoke!

"You dare!" The sixth elder Chu Tianjue abruptly stood up from his seat and ferociously glared at Chu Ning, who just spoke rudely.

Chu Ning ground his teeth as if he had already stifled much anger that he had held in for a long time. Unexpectedly, he wasn't afraid of Chu Tianjue's majesty and indignantly said: "Back then, back then, if it wasn't because you guys proposed to change fourth brother's family servant, Chu Mu wouldn't have been kidnapped. You guys caused fourth brother to fall into a deadly situation. Presently, he has barely managed to escape and yet you are so heartless. Could it be that you want to be ruthless towards him?!"

Chu Ning was mad. The Chu Ning that had always remained respectful and reverent to his elders had finally let out these coarse words!

“Impudent! The caravan this time lost half of its resources and we didn’t fault you for it. Yet, you didn’t even reflect and instead are being so rude. You have no respect for your elders!” Chu Tianjue was also angry. His eyes were unexpectedly beginning to transform colors!

“Sixth brother, you don’t need to discipline my child!” Seeing that the sixth brother, Chu Tianjue, was about to use a soul technique, how could the second brother Chu Tianlin remain silent? His eyes also began to change.

“Enough! It stops here! Everyone withdraw!” The family head Chu Ming abruptly stood up and shouted at both Chu Tianlin and Chu Tianjue.

Chu Tianlin and Chu Tianjue didn’t dare to act so presumptuously in front of their father, and revoked their soul techniques; however, their two gazes glared at each other, revealing a bit of anger.

The family clan had already ordered everyone to withdraw, so naturally no one stayed any longer. They all withdrew and, as they left, they discussed things about Chu Mu in soft voices.

“Isn’t this only to save that stupid brat? As for exaggerating the death of Yang Jie, hmph. If we can save him, why wouldn’t I?”

What kind of place is Broken Forest? Even I can't guarantee that I would be able to walk around there for a few days. Who in the Chu Family would even dare enter?" As they walked out of the great hall, Chu Tianjue glared at Chu Tianlin as he spoke.

"You are a timid coward whenever it comes to something big. I honestly have no idea why father would put you in charge of manpower. If you don't send people, that's fine. I'll go myself!" Chu Tianlin glared at Chu Tianjue.

The only people remaining in the great hall were the family head Chu Ming and his eldest son, Chu Tianheng. The two didn't say anything and waited for everyone to leave before the eldest, Chu Tianheng, finally said:

"Father, I'll send my men. Tiancheng has continuously suffered losses. Including this time, when he goes to the Great Chu Family, he will definitely suffer ridicule from those he once defeated. He has to endure such humiliation. After all, he already swore never to set foot in the Great Chu Family..."

"Tiancheng is extremely complicated. Currently, Chu Mu has returned. It is his only hope and, no matter what, we have to bring him back safely."

Chu Ming's face sank. He slowly nodded his head and said: "Take my Family Head Warrant and move the Chu Family Guard out of the city."

"The Chu Family Guard?" Chu Tianheng was shocked as he

looked at the visibly aged Chu Ming. After a while he finally said: “You really want them to go? But...”

The Family Head Chu Ming waved his hands and said: “The fall of the family has begun a long time ago. If it wasn’t for Tiancheng, our Chu Family would have fallen much earlier. We wouldn’t have been able to persevere until now.”

“Alas, although I don’t know what sort of crimes he committed, I’m sure his burden is much more than our trivial family master’s. He only wants to peacefully pass his days right now, and Chu Mu is his only hope...”

Chu Tianheng nodded his head. He clutched the Family Head Medallion as he walked out of the Chu Family’s great hall.

After Chu Tianheng left, the family head, Chu Ming, sat alone on his seat at the head of the room. His slightly conspicuously turbid eyes had clearly grown somewhat lifeless. Ostensibly, he was thinking of the past.

A while later, his eyes finally and gradually grew into focus and he slowly said: “Chu Ning. Aiyah, Chu Ning. Even if Mu Er is the same as the past, where he cannot even summon one soul pet, I will still treat him as my own grandson. There was no need for you to say such words...”

Broken Forest

“Ming!!”

Mo Xie was truly angry. Her claws ferociously streaked across the Mo Ye and instantly, its armor was completely shredded through. Blood violently gushed out from inside!

Mo Xie didn't even use Evil Flame Claw, but as a sixth phase third stage Six Tailed Demon Fox, normal attacks were not something a third phase fifth stage Mo Ye could withstand. Its body seemed to have been ripped apart, as extremely deep wounds appeared.

However, the Mo Ye didn't even let out a painful whimper. After falling heavily on the ground, it continued to unwaveringly stare at the small Mo Xie with unreconciled eyes.

“Don't kill it...” Chu Mu warned little Mo Xie.

“Wuwu” little Mo Xie was secretly bitter, but could only sneer at the Mo Ye.

Little Mo Xie's anger was normal, because this was already the sixth time that the small Mo Ye had challenged her. Each time, Mo Xie had beaten it black and blue, and there were even a few times where it was essentially dying. Not much long after, though, the small Mo Ye would immediately chase after their auras and continue to fight Mo Xie with its full fighting strength.

Chu Mu didn't even know whether to laugh or cry. This small Mo Ye had continuously challenging the higher phased Mo Xie and

unexpectedly grown two phases in these circumstances, reaching the third phase fifth stage. He had never thought that there would be a soul pet that could continuously evolve through continuous injury.

This Mo Ye was incomprehensibly, almost terrifyingly, tenacious. Chu Mu really wanted to know how this Mo Ye accomplished this, so he decided to use his soul capture ring on it again to observe its changes.

Chu Mu's soul capture ring was specially bought. It was a fifth level soul capture ring and he had spent 10,000 gold coins on it. It could hold two fifth stage and under commander rank soul pets, and it was considered an average Soul Capture Ring.

Better soul capture rings could hold even higher ranked and phased soul pets, but their prices were unreasonably high.

The small Mo Ye was simply incapable of resisting Chu Mu's soul capture and was quickly trapped inside the Soul Capture Ring. This time, Chu Mu wanted to examine whether this small fellow had found special healing medicines to speed up his healing everyday, or whether this small Mo Xie possessed an extremely powerful self-healing ability and battle strength recovery.

After feeding the small Mo Ye a few bug and beast type dual core soul cores, Chu Mu didn't pay anymore heed to the small fellow. He continued to walk eastward.

En route, Chu Mu encountered a few stronger Mo Yes with a

better growth and transformation condition. However, in Chu Mu's opinion, these Mo Yes only had average aptitude, and were maybe even sub par. Their phases had all reached about the fifth phase and above. If he wanted to use soul cores to train them and raise their attribute strength, the cost was too heavy, so he wasn't quite satisfied with any of them.

“Did we enter a Mo Ye habitat? The number of Mo Yes here are growing increasingly many.” said Qin Menger.

“Perhaps. There should be a Mo Ye King in Mo Ye Forest. Its strength is not something we can handle.” said Chu Mu.

Mo Yes were middle class commander rank soul pets. After it reached the sixth phase, it was a large threat to Chu Mu, and he was sure that this place did not lack seventh phase Mo Yes. As for the even older Mo Yes, they could have potentially reached the eighth phase, or perhaps the extremely strong ninth phase. Those at the truly terrifying levels were not soul pets that Chu Mu wanted meddle with.

Chapter 31: The Soul Pet With Exceptional Healing Ability (2)

When nighttime arrived, Chu Mu intentionally didn't silently cultivate. Instead, he released the Mo Ye and fed it a few soul cores. He then used beast tongue to tell it not to attempt to escape.

The black colored Mo Ye guilelessly laid to the side. It wasn't afraid of humans at all and extremely perturbedly ate the soul core that Chu Mu provided. Its gaze would occasionally fall on Mo Xie, and then it would resume its calm appearance.

Chu Mu stared at the wounds on the small Mo Ye's body and discovered that from when he confined it in the Soul Capture Ring to now, the wounds on the small Mo Ye caused by Mo Xie had already miraculously healed. At most, he could only see a few scars that were about to fall off.

Chu Mu was truly shocked. He had never seen a Mo Ye with a healing ability that was so unreasonably strong. Such a heavy wound had unexpectedly been fully recovered within half a day.

“Its self-healing effect is: if it doesn't use any recovery medicine, its wounds will recover at twice the original speed.”

“This small Mo Ye's injury recovery rate is much quicker than a normal Mo Yes'. Its recovery rate should be faster than normal soul pets by six times. It's essentially equivalent to perpetually using six healing medicines.”

After discovering this, Chu Mu decisively decided to test this small Mo Ye, and made Mo Xie use her claws to lightly rip open the Mo Ye's ink armor.

The small Mo Ye remained completely calm and allowed Mo Xie to open a small wound on its body. However, after the wound was opened, Chu Mu shockingly discovered that the light injury on the ink armor recovered with a speed that he could see!!

“How mysterious?!” the adjacent Qin Menger astonishingly remarked.

“It seems that the reason why it looks weaker than normal Mo Yes is also because of this. The bug type recovery ability in its blood lineage is much more intense, while its beast type lineage is comparatively much weaker,” deduced Chu Mu.

“It's bug type talent is extremely abnormal, while its beast type talent is inferior. That's rather unfortunate.” said Qin Menger.

Each species of soul pets had its own unique blood lineage. When one element or attribute ability surpassed the normal equilibrium of the soul pet, while its other important attributes didn't excessively decrease, the soul pet was defined as exceptionally talented with incredible aptitude.

This small Mo Ye had an extreme talent in the bug type, especially when it came to its recovery ability. Surprisingly, its healing speed was faster than a normal soul pet by six times.

However, its body quality, such as strength, speed, and growth were all slightly lower. Soul pets like the Mo Ye still required a powerful beast type lineage to guarantee their fighting strength.

“Small Mo Ye, you can leave. You don’t need to be brave anymore. You aren’t her opponent even if you had reached the sixth phase...” Qin Menger, who took pity on the small fellow, gently spoke to it.

“Hou Hou” the small Mo Ye shook its head. Its gaze fell on Mo Xie, and it used an unknown language in a muffled voice, expressing that it wouldn’t give up on defeating Mo Xie.

“Let it continue following then.” Chu Mu didn’t drive the small Mo Ye away. He instead wanted to examine this small Mo Ye.

Gangluo City’s Yang Family

“Yang Jie and Li Nan were killed by a mysterious young man? Do you know that young man’s identity?” said the Yang Family’s family head’s eldest son, Yang Mancan, with a face full of shock.

Li Nan was still fine, as he wasn’t considered a first tier expert in the Yang Family. However, Yang Mancan understood Yang Jie’s strength extremely well. How could he be killed by a young man?!

“This subordinate does not know. The family servants that escaped said that he controlled a Night Thunder Dream Beast.”

said the cyan clothed family servant, half-kneeling on the floor.

“Father, there aren’t many young men in the Luo Region who can defeat Yang Jie. Moreover, they are all extremely well known. Those people shouldn’t have any reason to help the Chu Family. Could it be the Great Chu Family interfering?” said Yang Luobin, who was standing next to Yang Mancan.

Yang Luobin was the family head’s eldest son’s eldest son. He possessed exceptional talent, and he was the strongest young expert in Gangluo City. Within the Luo Region, he had a bit of a reputation.

Yang Mancan creased his eyebrows. If the Great Chu Family in Wogu Region had interfered with the Luo Region’s Chu Family, then their Yang Family would definitely have a hard time defeating the Chu Family. After all, the Great Chu Family’s power was extremely great.

“Send a few people to closely watch the Chu Family. See if the Chu Family has had any unusual actions recently.” said Yang Mancan to the half-kneeling family servant.

“Yes!” The family servant nodded his head and slowly retreated outside.

After the family servant left, Yang Mancan looked at Yang Luobin and said: “Another powerful young man appearing without cause or reason. I don’t know if it was because of the recommendation.”

“It probably isn’t.” said Yang Luobin. After speaking to this point, he suddenly thought of something and said, “Oh, father, I heard Yang Luosen mention that a Nightmare Palace Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince has appeared in our Luo Region. Apparently, he’s carrying out a mission given by Nightmare Palace in the vicinity. Perhaps Yang Jie accidentally offended that Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince...”

“Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince? The most honored young man of Nightmare Palace?” Yang Mancan was stunned, and asked in a slightly flabbergasted voice.

Yang Luobin nodded his head and his expression was solemn as he said: “Most recently, a few regions have been spreading this Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince’s reputation. He is a peak expert of Nightmare Palace and has never appeared before. However, after a few battles, he quickly rose in prominence and finally, one of the opponents he defeated was the rather famous “Blue Nightmare Hunter” Tian Ji.”

Yang Mancan instantly let out a shocked expression. He didn’t expect for such an expert to appear here. If this was the case, Yang Jie really could have been killed by that Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince.

“Moreover, that Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince is the Prison Island King. A few of the people we sent could have been killed by him. If I’m not incorrect, our “Violent Blood Pupil” should be in his hands.” Yang Luosen continued to say.

Once he heard Violent Blood Pupil, Yang Mancan's expression instantly changed and he said: "He was the Prison Island King! That's perfect. Since it's in his hands, we only have to expend a certain cost to retrieve it!"

"Father, that won't do. This Prison Island King is currently a peak expert in Nightmare Palace. Even the Luo Region Nightmare Prince, Yang Luosen, only dares to teach him a lesson. He absolutely will not kill him. If something were to happen to that person here, we would not be able to endure the consequences."

Yang Mancan's eyebrows creased again. He didn't understand the affairs of other regions very well. He had always confined himself within the vicinity of Gangluo City. He never expected a young man's ability to be so great.

"In a few days, Yang Luosen will come to Gangluo City and invite this Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince. We should properly wait upon Yang Luosen and get him to help us retrieve the Violent Blood Pupil." said Yang Luobin.

"Yes, that works." said Yang Mancan, "Oh, Luobin, has your third soul recovered yet?"

"It's almost fully recovered." responded Yang Luosen.

"I told you before that you shouldn't rashly sign soul pacts with young soul pets. Especially the Chu Family's armored rhinoceros. We don't understand it very well. You undoing your soul pact like this truly wastes a lot of your time." said Yang Mancan.

“I also never expected that Mo Ye to be so weak.” a repulsive expression appeared on Yang Luobin’s face.

“Thankfully, you undid it sooner rather than later, otherwise it would have delayed you for even longer. After a few days, when you fully recover, I’ll buy you a somewhat young high class commander rank soul pet. You need to quickly raise its strength.” said Yang Mancan.

Mentioning a high class commander rank soul pet, Yang Luobin’s eyes immediately lit up. He hastily said: “Thank you father.”

A young high class commander rank soul pet, even if its aptitude was average, cost at least 200,000 gold coins. If its aptitude was good, its value could even reach 500,000 gold coins. Yang Luobin had already become a spirit teacher, but had never obtained a high class commander rank soul pet. Hearing his father’s words now, how could he not be excited?

Chu Family, the Chu Family head’s courtyard

Two grizzled haired old men sat on stone chairs in the courtyard. Their expressions were clearly somewhat stupefied. After a while, the somewhat skinnier old man said:

“Brother, aren’t you too inconsiderate of the bigger picture when you send out the Chu Clan guardians to search for Chu Mu? You used to always teach me to be able to be heartless and to understand when to give up on things.....”

Naturally, the person speaking was the second head of the Chu Family, Chu Nan. He was already aware of the Chu Family Guard's departure.

“The descendents of the Chu Family should receive the protection of our Chu Family. If we don't protect this generation well, it will be hard for our Chu Family to change our fortunes.” slowly said the family head Chu Ming.

“If you were moving these people for Chu Xing and Chu He, these teachers, I could understand. But it's for Chu Mu... Your second brother really cannot change his impulsive nature. He really went to Broken Forest... aiyahh, whatever, you sent the Chu Family Guard without telling anyone anything. Me saying anything more is of no use. I hope that Chu Si and the others can gain something.” The second family master Chu Nan sighed. He slowly stood up and left the courtyard.

Deep inside Broken Forest

The party of twenty people were split into two groups. Each group wore matching green and black clothing and dark brown colored clothing, respectively. These soul pet trainers rode their soul pets as they each travelled through the forest.

“Tianlin, this place is relatively close to Mo Ye Forest, right?” The Chu Family Guard leader, Chu Si, looked at the man beside him and spoke.

The Chu Family Guard leader, Chu Si, was approximately thirty five years old. He rode a Light Rhinoceros that had already reached the sixth phase fifth stage.

“We should be. Everyone should be a bit careful. If we are to encounter a powerful Mo Ye, we will be in a lot of trouble.” said Chu Tianlin.

After he spoke, Chu Tianlin intentionally swept his gaze over the other group of people. That group of people was dressed in brown clothing. The leader was a bearded middle aged man.

“Old Qin Jia, you guys should also be a bit careful. Don’t be too reckless.” Chu Tianjian also specially gave them a few words.

“You don’t need to worry. If it wasn’t because our young lady fell into the forest, there wouldn’t be a need to accompany you old geezers,” said the middle aged Qin Family man.

Chu Tianlin ignored Qin Jia’s bad temper. He ostensibly already understood him, and continued to ride his Light Rhinoceros deeper into the forest.

Chapter 32: Mo Ye VS Mo Ye

“Why haven’t we left this place yet? It’s already been a few days.” Qin Menger pouted her small lips. Over these past few days, Qin Menger had grown accustomed to Chu Mu’s calm and unperturbed manner within the forest. Therefore, she wasn’t afraid of encountering any savage soul pets anymore.

“Perhaps we walked in the wrong direction.” Chu Mu looked at the surrounding trees, and he found that he had been circling around in Mo Ye Forest.

“Huh? Then what should we do? I don’t want to stay here forever.” a flustered expression appeared on Qin Menger’s face.

“This Mo Ye Forest has a hallucination effect. It has caused us to perpetually circle around in this forest,” said Chu Mu.

“How do you know?” Qin Menger didn’t understand and asked.

Chu Mu pointed at a tree bark beside him. This piece of bark had been scratched by Mo Xie’s claws, and on top of it was the trace of intersecting claw marks. This had been done when Mo Xie had ripped open the small Mo Ye’s body back then and a bit of her power had overflowed.

“It we can’t get out of here, won’t we end up staying here forever?” When Qin Menger thought of this, her eyes instantly began to water.

“That’s probably right.” Chu Mu glanced at Qin Menger before indifferently speaking.

After hearing Chu Mu’s words, Qin Menger could no longer control her emotions. Her eyes began to water, and she actually began to weep softly.

“I’m joking with you. To me, the hallucination effect in this forest is like walking in my own family’s courtyard. As long as I walk through it once, I’ll quickly be able to find the exit. Don’t worry.” Chu Mu grinned and then laughed.

The depths of Prison Islands had many jungles that were much more complicated than Broken Forest. Chu Mu was still able to unobstructedly exit those forests. Thus, exiting this forest wasn’t that much of a problem.

Having been teased by Chu Mu, Qin Menger’s tears contrarily began to fall even faster. Her small palm slapped Chu Mu, and she cutely scolded “scoundrel.”

Chu Mu thought of the past, when he would often tease Qin Menger so he didn’t scare her without reason. Seeing her cute pitiful appearance, he subconsciously extended his hands, wanting to pinch her tear stained cheeks. However, after extending his hands halfway, Chu Mu suddenly sobered up. His gaze fell onto the beautiful young woman...

Qin Menger was stunned. She blinked her eyes, somewhat

suspicious, as she watched Chu Mu's actions.

Chu Mu shook his head and retracted his hands. He shifted his gaze forwards.

“Hm? It's another small Mo Ye.”

In the forest, an ink colored figure had attracted Chu Mu's attention!

It was a small Mo Ye that was only about a meter long. Even though it didn't have the dark and evil imposing majesty of a fifth or sixth phase Mo Ye, it still emitted a powerful aura.

The conspicuously sharp ink colored armor was like a rocky carving that closely stuck to its sturdy body. Its armor was further like protruding sharp swords that lined its body all the way to its head and it had a rather ostentatious feeling about it. The armor slowly extended to its forehead and nose, and aside from its chin, everything was covered. It gave others an unbreakable, solid feeling.

This Mo Ye's body had many odd and deep ink colored stripes that were like winding snakes. They extended to its powerful four limbs and were like glorified shooting stars, depicting a beautiful armored pattern on every end of its body!

“This Mo Ye can be considered top quality!” Chu Mu's eyes lit up. He didn't expect that after circling the Mo Ye Forest a few times,

he would encounter such a fine small Mo Ye!

Mo Yes were armored rhinoceroses and were relatively mainstream soul pets in the middle class commander rank. Many soul pet trainers would choose a soul pet with beast type strength and insect type defense – making it a tenacious soul pet with lots of life force.

Because armored rhinoceros were mainstream soul pets, appraising a Mo Ye was an extremely meticulous matter. Fortunately, Chu Mu had done research in this area before. According to his estimates, a small Mo Ye that had grown abnormally well had a value that wasn't lower than 700,000 gold coins. If it was sold at an auction, it was extremely like that it would be sold for one million gold coins!

“Devil Tree Battle Soldier, trap it!”

Chu Mu quickly chanted an incantation and summoned the Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier had already reached the fifth phase seventh stage. After it had appeared, its herculean fists drove into the earth. Instantly, a root net appeared in front of the small Mo Ye that had run by!

This fine Mo Ye smashed into the root net and immediately, countless pieces of roots twisted around its body!

“Hou Hou!!”

The third phase ninth stage Mo Ye promptly let out an indignant roar. Suddenly, an ink colored radiance twinkled on its ink armor. The sharp edges on its body abruptly became extremely sharp, surprisingly shredding apart the root net.

“Root Bind.”

Chu Mu immediately issued an order to the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, whose roots grew increasingly long. Even though that root net had been ripped apart by the small Mo Ye, even more tenacious roots wrapped around the small Mo Ye’s body, finally rendering it immobile.

“Hou!! Hou!!”

How would the third phase ninth stage Mo Ye be the Devil Tree Battle Tree’s opponent? It let out an extremely indignant roar.

“You want to make it your soul pet?” Qin Menger asked.

“Yes, it happens to precisely fit my standards.” nodded Chu Mu.

Chu Mu didn’t hastily sign a soul pact with this third phase ninth stage Mo Ye because, from its beast language, Chu Mu knew that it was calling for help from its companions.

“Hou Hou!!!”

As expected, a moment later, a wave of stunning howls abruptly came from within the forest. Subsequently, a violent gale rushed out from within the depths of the forest!

“Beng! Beng!!”

The adjacent few trees suddenly collapsed. A tiger and leopard-like soul pet which was almost three meters in size and was covered in ink black armor abruptly lept out. Instantly, its overbearing aura proliferated in all directions. It scared Qin Menger so much that she promptly hid behind Chu Mu.

“Hou Hou!!”

Suddenly, another indignant roar came from another direction. Immediately, two waves of violent wind smashed against each other, causing the forest to shake!!

Very evidently, there was an even more imposing Mo Ye behind them!!

Its black penetrating gaze lit up from within the trees. A formidable Mo Ye, whose build reached about three meters, slowly strode out from the forest. Its savage, sword-like eyes unwaveringly glared at Chu Mu and Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

“Fifth phase fourth stage, sixth phase third stage.” Chu Mu calmly and coolly glanced at the sixth phase third stage adult Mo Ye that had appeared behind him.

“These two Mo Ye are very strong.” Qin Menger had spent many days together with Chu Mu and was perhaps accustomed to the sense of security Chu Mu brought her. If it was before, and she encountered a fifth phase and sixth phase commander rank soul pet, she would definitely have been shocked pale. Yet she now only revealed the timidness of a small girl.

Qin Menger didn't chant an incantation either, as she felt that Chu Mu alone was enough to deal with it.

In reality, over the past few days, Qin Menger had become aware that the young man in front of her definitely belonged to an abnormal grade of people. If it wasn't because of herself, this fellow definitely could have easily transversed through this exceptionally savage forest. Each time they encountered soul pets, Qin Menger had no opportunity to attack before the situation was quickly resolved by Chu Mu. Ultimately, whatever situation they encountered, Qin Menger simply didn't bother chanting an incantation anymore, to prevent her soul pets from embarrassingly standing to the side, unable to intervene.

“You aren't going to summon your Ice Air Fairy?” astonishingly asked Qin Menger when she saw that Chu Mu didn't intend on switching soul pets.

Chu Mu shook his head and used his soul remembrance to say to his two soul pets: “Devil Tree Battle Soldier, you dispose of the

fifth phase fourth stage Mo Ye. Mo Xie, you deal with the sixth phase third stage Mo Ye.”

It had been a long while since the Devil Tree Battle Soldier had taken action, and it promptly produced an excited roar. As a controller of nature's strength, it could arbitrarily control the surrounding tree roots. The fifth phase fourth stage Mo Ye also began its violent attacks.

Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier had been meticulously trained. Currently, its strength was not inferior to a few low class commander rank soul pets. Along with its wood type superiority over the beast and bug type Mo Ye, it was definitely not a problem to defeat the fifth phase fourth stage Mo Ye.

As for the arrogant Mo Xie, Chu Mu didn't need to worry at all. He only had to use a simple Adhering Flame on Mo Xie, and the experienced Mo Xie would definitely not lose.

“That small Mo Ye has run away!” Qin Menger immediately brought this to the attention of Chu Mu who was focused on battle.

Chu Mu turned his head to look, and he discovered that the small Mo Ye that had been bound by the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's roots had freed itself. Furthermore, it had scuttled into the adjacent trees.

“You guys finish the fight quickly.” Chu Mu gave a simple order to Mo Xie and the Devil Tree Battle Soldier before using Wind Ride on himself and chasing after the small Mo Ye.

Just as he used Wind Ride, a black figure suddenly appeared in a flash behind Chu Mu. The black figure was even slightly faster than the Wind Riding Chu Mu. Unexpectedly, it managed to catch up to the escaping small Mo Ye!

“Beng!!” Two Mo Ye bodies crashed together, and they tumbled onto the ground before resolutely knocking into a tree!

Chu Mu stopped in his tracks and was somewhat flabbergasted as he looked at the obstinate small Mo Ye whose wounds had just healed. He never expected for this small fellow to help him.

“Hou Hou!!!” The small Mo Ye with exceptional healing ability let out a low growl. Its sharp claws fiercely pierced the first-rate Mo Ye’s armor, and a vestige instantly appeared on its armor!

“Hou Hou!!” The first-rate Mo Ye immediately let out an angry roar, and the ink colored radiance on its body twinkled again. Suddenly, a myriad of barbs appeared on Its glossy hard armor.

“Chi!!” The third phase fifth stage Mo Ye’s body was instantly pierced, and a bloody wound surfaced. However, this small Mo Ye that had frequently suffered injuries completely ignored this small wound. From its mouth, it released a Death Ray, directly hitting the ninth stage Mo Ye’s body, knocking it flying!

“Hou Hou!!” seizing this opportunity, the obstinate small Mo Ye turned its head and roared at Chu Mu.

Chu Mu astonishedly looked at the extremely obstinate small fellow. He understood beast language and never expected this small and weak Mo Ye to have such willpower.

Although it was somewhat cryptic, Chu Mu could understand the Mo Ye's roars. It was trying to express: "I am not the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox's opponent, but defeating this third phase ninth stage Mo Ye isn't any problem!!"

Chapter 33: Abandoned Soul Pet

Chu Mu did not expect for this obstinate and small Mo Ye to have such a will to fight. From this small fellow's pitch-black pupils, Chu Mu could see its unreconciled and arrogant pride. Furthermore, Chu Mu could feel an even deeper story behind its arrogance.

“Hou Hou!!”

The obstinate Mo Ye's build was much smaller than the third phase ninth stage Mo Ye. Very quickly, the ninth stage Mo Ye performed Shattering Claw, and ferociously smashed the obstinately small Mo Ye's armor!

The Mo Ye tumbled on the ground, and it smashed into a tree before quickly standing up. Regardless of the blood being shed, its two black eyes were still ignited with a flourishing fighting spirit!!

The haughty first-rate Mo Ye used an indignant and contemptuous gaze, as it looked down upon the extremely small Mo Ye. It produced an angry hiss from its mouth!

Mo Yes were a high ranking species of soul pets, and they possessed a certain amount of intelligence. Fighting other members of their species was common, and the stronger Mo Ye would always be more arrogant.

The first-rate Mo Ye had already reached the third phase ninth stage. No matter if it was phase, stage, or innate talent, it was

much superior to the third phase fifth stage obstinately small Mo Ye.

“Beng!!”

It was the sixth time the obstinate Mo Ye was knocked flying by the first-rate Mo Ye’s Death Ray.

After the first-rate Mo Ye obtained the advantage, it immediately roared at the obstinately small Mo Ye. In a contemptuous manner, it abruptly pounced onto the obstinate Mo Ye. Its front limbs resolutely trampled on the obstinate Mo Ye’s head. After kicking it a few times, the Mo Ye’s skull was splintered!

Although the obstinately small Mo Ye had reached the third phase fifth stage, its beast type talent was too weak. It wasn’t much different from a second phase Mo Ye. On the other hand, the first-rate Mo Ye’s build was comparable to a normal fourth phase Mo Ye. Under such an evident disparity, how could the obstinate small Mo Ye be that robust fellow’s opponent?!

Fresh blood was already flowing, and the small Mo Ye’s head had been somewhat beaten down. To the side, Qin Menger watched on while nearly biting through her lip. If she didn’t know that this small fellow possessed an extremely tenacious life force, she would have already intervened.

Finally, the first-rate Mo Ye stopped its attacks. It looked at the ostensibly and half-dead small Mo Ye before revealing a contemptuous expression. It began to slowly walk away, planning

to leave.

The first-rate Mo Ye's gaze immediately swept over Chu Mu and Qin Menger watching the battle from the side. It seemed to know that these two humans were powerful, and it didn't dare to get near...

“Hou!!”

Suddenly, the obstinately small Mo Ye lying on the ground let out a roar. Its two black eyes glared at the first-rate Mo Ye attempting to leave, and it once again produced a provocation!

The first-rate Mo Ye turned around. It seemed to be surprised that the weak thing still had the strength to roar, as a Death Ray condensed in its throat before shooting out towards the obstinately small Mo Ye!

This obstinately small Mo Ye curled its body up to protect its vitals.

The force of the Death Ray instantly exploded onto its body. Dust flew into the air, and the small Mo Ye was knocked back a few meters again. Its body was full of bloodstains, and there didn't seem to be an intact piece of ink armor anywhere.

The first-rate Mo Ye was aware that the small weak thing would only stop fighting after death. It had already decided to kill the small Mo Ye and quickened its speed, performing Death Assault!!

Shattering Claw!!

This time, the first-rate Mo Ye's shattering claw impressively struck towards the obstinately small Mo Ye's skull. It wanted to give the Mo Ye a fatal strike!

Chu Mu creased his eyebrows, not wanting to see such a unique small fellow die like this. He began chanting an incantation, and planned on giving the obstinate small Mo Ye a Wind Dragon Bind.

However, Chu Mu's incantation came to an abrupt halt halfway!

At this moment, Chu Mu saw a pair of black eyes ignited with incomparably vigorous fighting spirit, as if the fight had just started!

“Hou!!” The obstinately small Mo Ye abruptly let out a roar that caused its skull to fracture again!

This weak small fellow then got up and used its body to withstand the first-rate Mo Ye's Shattering Claw!!

“Beng!!”

Shattering Claw shattered the remaining ink armor left on the small Mo Ye; however, at this instant, the small Mo Ye's claws also flickered with a dark light!

Shattering Claw!!

An identical Shattering Claw. The obstinately small Mo Ye had determinedly defended the attack and, despite the opponent's claw entering its internal organs, it resolutely swept its claws back towards the first-rate Mo Ye's head!!

“Peng!!”

The ink colored armor shattered, and fresh blood splattered outwards. The first-rate Mo Ye's head was bent at an awkward angle, as if its neck was broken. Then, it heavily fell sideways onto the ground, causing a wave of turbid mud to splatter, before tumbling under a tree!

The first-rate Mo Ye's head had suffered from a fatal strike and it struggled a few times, attempting to stand up. However, it continued to fall back down, before finally being unable to stand back up!

“Ta ta ta”

Fresh blood flowed out of the obstinately small Mo Ye's body. Its ink colored armor was full of fresh blood as it swayed about while standing. It gazed arrogantly down upon the first-rate Mo Ye that had fully lost power to fight.

“Hou Hou!!”

The obstinate and small Mo Ye walked towards its opponent and let out a roar. Then, it hobbled over to Chu Mu and let out another few roars, confirming the few words it had said to Chu Mu a few moments earlier.

Both Chu Mu and Qin Menger were extremely shocked. They stared at the small fellow riddled with wounds and, for a moment, they couldn't say anything!!!

A third phase ninth stage first-rate quality Mo Ye possessed fighting strength that was definitely of the best quality. On the other hand, the obstinately small Mo Ye was only at the third phase fifth stage. Regardless of strength, speed or build, it wasn't on the same level as the first-rate Mo Ye. Nonetheless, the obstinately small Mo Ye managed to turn the tides of battle from a state of devastation and defeat against a clearly superior opponent!!

“This Mo Ye is a soul pet with the most staunch fighting spirit. It can be easily knocked down, but it cannot be easily defeated. As long as its eyes haven't closed, it can still fight!”

Looking at the obstinate small Mo Ye whose eyes would only ignite during a fight, Chu Mu thought of a few words in his head.

These words were told to him by Chu Tiancheng. It was also because of these words that Chu Mu decided to step onto the courageous path of a being soul pet trainer again. Furthermore, he had made it a goal to control a commander rank Mo Ye and

persevere step by step through the struggles!

Yet, right now, the Mo Ye lying in front of Chu Mu was really a powerfully small Mo Ye. It was at the third phase ninth stage and regardless of beast type talent or insect type talent – it further possessed a dark attribute – it was much stronger than most other Mo Yes. It belonged to a first-rate level of Mo Ye and after a while of raising and training, it could definitely become a powerful Mo ye!

Nevertheless, the current Chu Mu's attention was not on this defeated first-rate Mo Ye. Instead, he was looking at the third phase fifth stage small Mo Ye who was riddled with scars, but still burning with the most tenacious fighting spirit!

This was the small Mo Ye that truly shocked Chu Mu. Its tenacious fighting spirit was not something that could be measured by normal soul pet terms.

Of the two small Mo Ye's lying in front of Chu Mu, the prior's potential was extremely large. After cultivation and assuming no mishaps, it would become a Mo Ye King.

The latter had an abnormal bug type talent and, after cultivation, an extremely difficult problem would arise. Moreover, because of its inadequate beast type talent, there was a high chance it could lose a Mo Ye's true fighting spirit in the future.

It was a choice. The first-rate Mo Ye could easily allow Chu Mu to control a powerful soul pet, while the obstinately small Mo Ye was

a huge risk, and could very possibly become trash.

“A qualified soul pet trainer must consider the potential of a soul pet and its future growth.” Chu Mu gradually chanted the soul pact incantation!

“Eighth soul pact, open!” Chu Mu quickly finished the soul pact incantation.

A deep blue colored radiance gloriously curled up his body. Slowly, it transformed into a floating halo containing various different strokes of the soul pact incantation.

“Yes, that’s right. Although this small Mo Ye is strong, its aptitude is too poor. The first-rate Mo Ye is easier to train.” Qin Menger nodded her head in affirmation. She squatted down and used a soul core to feed the small Mo Ye so that it would no longer follow them and could live by itself in the wild.

Suddenly, a deep blue halo appeared in front of Qin Menger, making her shocked. She suddenly discovered that Chu Mu’s soul pact incantation was actually being used on the rather poor talented Mo Ye!!

Qin Menger opened her eyes wide and was exceptionally startled as she glanced at Chu Mu. She completely did not expect Chu Mu to forsake the first-rate Mo Ye whose value very well could have reached 1 million gold coins, and to choose the obstinately small Mo Ye. This Mo Ye could very well become a useless soul pet in the future!!

Truly, Chu Mu had chosen this eminently obstinate small Mo Ye. He also knew that although this Mo Ye displayed very tenacious fighting strength, while training it in the future, it could gradually become a soul pet of no value.

However, Chu Mu believed that as long as the soul pet had incomparable resolution, he could definitely transform it into a true expert. This idea of an expert soul pet was not limited to the realms of a Mo Ye. It reached even higher realms that could challenge even stronger soul pets!

The soul pact halo gradually rose up the obstinate small Mo Ye's body. The light and dark of the soul pact were indeterminate.

“Ping.”

Suddenly, the soul pact halo shattered!

It didn't succeed! Chu Mu could feel a sliver of remaining soul remembrance inside the obstinately small Mo Ye's body!

Chu Mu was stunned. He hadn't expected the obstinate small Mo Ye to have already signed a soul pact with a human.

‘What happened? Don't tell me that it wasn't willing to become your soul pet?’ Qin Menger was somewhat shocked as she looked at Chu Mu who failed the soul pact signing.

Chu Mu shook his head and looked at the imperious obstinate small Mo Ye before slowly saying: “It isn’t a wild Mo Ye. Rather, it’s an abandoned soul pet whose soul pact was removed by someone...”

Chapter 34: Family Group Encountering Misfortune

An abandoned soul pet – a soul pet which had previously signed a soul pact with a human, but undid the soul pact later.

An abandoned soul pet could be said to be common among soul pets, yet it could also be said to be an uncommon occurrence.

Those who said it was common said so because as a human's strength increased, the soul pets captured at an earlier stage wouldn't be able to keep up with their master's steps. This was caused by the soul pet's aptitude, as well as various other factors. After losing much use in fights, the master would then abandon the soul pet. Abandoning typically meant releasing the soul pet after undoing the soul pact.

Those who said it was uncommon said so because, no matter if one released their soul pet or their soul pet died, the soul required a year in order to recover. In this year, the soul pet space that belonged to the abandoned soul pet wouldn't be able to hold a new soul pet. A new soul pact could only be signed a year later.

For instance, this obstinately small Mo Ye's was Chu Mu's eighth soul pact (third soul, second soul pet). If Chu Mu were to remove a soul pact with it, his soul would be wounded for a year, and his soul power would not be able to reach its full state. Furthermore, the eighth soul pact needed a year before he could sign a soul pact.

Such a cost could be regarded as relatively large. Soul pet trainers

normally would rather spend a bit of money to use soul crystals, medicine, attribute stones, equipment etcetera, in order to make up for their soul pet's inferiority. They wouldn't easily remove a soul pact with a soul pet.

“This is the reason why you long for the acknowledgment of humans?” Chu Mu didn't immediately perform a second soul pact incantation. Rather, he extended his hand and softly caressed the Mo Ye's fractured skull.

Any soul pet had its own spirit and dignity. Evidently, this abandoned small Mo Ye's dignity had been fiercely damaged by his master one year ago. Thus, now, when it encountered an opponent, no matter how strong, it had a tenacious resolution to continue fighting-even if it meant death. This was all just to prove that it wasn't a weak small thing in other people's eyes!

“Hou Hou~~” the small Mo Ye let out a low roar and stubbornly shook off Chu Mu's hand. It didn't seem to like humans touching it.

“There are differences between individual people. No matter what enormous flaws there are, the soul pets that I, Chu Mu, choose will not be forsaken, as long as I sign a soul pact with them. I will definitely make them strong,” Chu Mu said earnestly.

6“Hou Hou~~” the small Mo Ye also let out a stubborn roar.

Obviously, the small Mo Ye didn't agree with Chu Mu's words. It turned around and walked away. Carrying a body full of wounds, it

slowly walked deeper into the forest. Under the darkness of the trees, its ink colored body dyed in bloody red gave Chu Mu a solitary yet haughty image...

“You’re letting him walk away like this?” asked Qin Menger.

Looking at the small Mo Ye full with dignity leave, Qin Menger didn’t understand why Chu Mu didn’t forcibly sign a soul pact with it. Under those circumstances, even if the obstinately small Mo Ye had the intention to resist, he would still probably succeed.

“It has a shadow in its heart towards humans. Even if I forcibly sign a soul pact with it, that shadow will still continue to remain. If it cannot reconcile that, then it will not be able coordinate with me. Although a soul pet’s strength is admittedly important, if it cannot link its heart and soul with a soul pet trainer, it will pose a large obstruction...” responded Chu Mu.

“Moreover, soul pets all have lives and souls. They aren’t human slaves; no matter how weak or strong they are, their dignity and choice are extremely worth respecting.” Chu Mu slowly spoke.

Qin Menger was stunned. She didn’t think that Chu Mu would say such words. Her beautiful eyes watched the earnest Chu Mu. Suddenly, she felt that the manner this young man had when he spoke gave her a familiar and venerating feeling. Subconsciously, she felt a wave of sadness and thought of things from the past...

Chu Mu unhurriedly walked to the passed out first-rate Mo Ye, but didn’t chant the soul pact incarnation to sign a soul pact.

Instead, he opened his soul capture ring and put away the valuable young fellow.

With the obstinately small Mo Ye's departure, Chu Mu could only choose the first-rate Mo Ye. However, Chu Mu didn't plan on making the first-rate Mo Ye his soul pet, because he had a premonition that the obstinate small Mo Ye would still eventually appear in front of him.

After putting away the high priced first-rate Mo Ye, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier and Mo Xie respectively came back to Chu Mu's side, each with a soul core in their mouth.

Chu Mu recalled the Devil Tree Battle Soldier back to its soul pet space and made Mo Xie return to her pitiful appearance. He then planned on walking towards Gangluo City when he suddenly discovered that Qin Menger was charmingly standing there as if she had just secretly wiped away tears...

“What's the matter? You're crying again?” Chu Mu walked to her side and asked inquisitively.

“Just now... just now the words you spoke made me think of my big brother Chu Mu... he... although he didn't have a soul pet, he was extremely respectful of every soul pet. If... if he were still alive, he would definitely be an extremely formidable soul pet trainer.” the more Qin Menger spoke, the more she grieved. The tears would no longer stop.

Chu Mu was stunned. He looked at the heartrending girl grieving

over him, and extended his hand to help her wipe away her tears. He said: “Then why don’t you just think of me as him.”

“Don’t. You’re a scoundrel from Nightmare Palace who uses other people’s lives to feed your own soul pet. You aren’t the same as him.” Qin Menger instantly shook her head and obstinately wiped away her own tears.

Chu Mu was startled before finally realizing something. Presumably, when he was using his soul power to feed his White Nightmare, Qin Menger had seen the white colored devil flame on his body.

A tinge of bitterness surfaced in Chu Mu. Originally, he had planned on telling Qin Menger that he was Chu Mu, but after thinking about it, he didn’t have to.

Mo Ye Forest really couldn’t be considered that confusing. After Chu Mu walked through it once, he already knew where to walk.

Once he determined the direction, Chu Mu brought Qin Menger towards the exit of the forest. According to Chu Mu’s estimate, after exiting Mo Ye Forest and continuing to walk eastward, they would probably be extremely close to Gangluo City.

“Hui~”

A sudden clamor resounded in the forest.

Chu Mu immediately stopped walking, and his gaze looked through the dense trees. He gazed attentively at the chaotic interweaving of various attributed energies not far ahead.

“What’s the matter?” Qin Menger’s perception was inferior to Chu Mu’s, and once she saw that Chu Mu had stopped, she inquisitively asked a question.

“There are multiple people. They are probably caught in a soul pet encirclement.” Chu Mu didn’t summon a soul pet. He used Wind Ride on himself and jumped onto a treetop and looked down at the forest in front of him.

In the front was a group of cyan black and deep brown color clothed people. Each person had a commander rank soul pet, while also controlling two other medium strength soul pets.

However, these people evidently didn’t understand how to survive in a forest. The moment they encountered danger, they summoned all their soul pets. However, by summoning more soul pets, the horde of beasts would then call for their comrades, causing the surrounding forest to be filled with beasts.

“Chu Family Guard?” Chu Mu quickly recognized the cyan black clothed group of soul pet trainers.

Cyan black garments were the unique symbol of the Chu Family Guard. This was the imperial bodyguard of the Chu Family, and it was composed of purely spirit teachers. Each member underwent harsh training and meticulous selection, and they all held an

absolute devotion to the Chu Family.

“Second Uncle, Uncle Chu Si?” Chu Mu’s vision was superior to most people. He instantly discovered two familiar people, Chu Tianlin and Chu Si, in the midst of the chaotic fight.

In these four years, those two people hadn’t changed much. Their face was a bit more wrinkled, but Chu Mu could still recognize them.

Chu Mu naturally could guess that the dark brown clothed people should be the Qin Family people. The Qin Family had always maintained good relations with the Chu Family. They most likely came this time with the Chu Family Guard to Broken Forest to find Qin Menger.

With the Chu Family Guard and Qin Family people currently stuck in a tough situation, Chu Mu naturally had to think of a method to save them...

“What’s happening up ahead?” when Qin Menger saw Chu Mu jump off the tree top, she immediately asked a question.

“It’s the Chu Family and your Qin Family people. They should be here looking for us. However, they are being surrounded by a Hunting Wolf pack.” said Chu Mu.

“Huh? Hunting Wolf pack!” Qin Menger immediately panicked.

Although Hunting Wolves were servant rank creatures, they were often in packs. If hundreds or thousands of them appeared, it would be terrifying. Even powerful soul pets would be eaten to a point where their bones wouldn't even be left.

“Walk about two hundred meters in that direction before stopping, and then summon your Flame Bird. When you see demon fire evil flame fly into the air, immediately make your Flame Bird use Fire Rain to burn the forest. If you still have other fire type soul pets, you can also summon them. With your speed, you need to create a raging fire.” said Chu Mu.

Qin Menger didn't hesitate and promptly nodded her head. She then ran in the direction Chu Mu pointed towards.

Seeing Qin Menger leave, Chu Mu jumped onto the top of a tree again. He agilely moved between treetops, slowly growing closer to that group of people.

“Mo Xie, it's up to you.” Chu Mu patted Mo Xie as he spoke.

“Wuwuwu~~” Mo Xie understood Chu Mu's intention, and jumped off of his shoulder. She quickly jumped into the pack of wolves, and her small body rapidly moved about in the group of Hunting Wolves.

After Mo Xie had left, Chu Mu summoned the Devil Tree Battle Soldier again. In this forest fight, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's use could be exhibited to the max.

Once he ordered the Devil Tree Battle Soldier to stay in place, Chu Mu used Wind Ride to jump near the Chu Family Guard's position. He hid his aura, not wanting to attract any Hunting Wolf's attention.

“I am the Great Chu Family's Chu Chen. Listen to my plan, and I can help you free yourselves from this predicament.” Chu Mu's voice, through soul remembrance, transmitted into the ears of the surrounding Chu Family and Qin Family guards.

Chu Tianlin was the first to receive the message, and his eyes immediately lit up. His gaze scoured through the forest filled with Hunting Wolves in an attempt to search for his savior.

However, when he discovered Chu Mu's figure on a tree top, he let out an astonished expression.

Under the tree this young man was on, there was a large group of Hunting Wolves moving about. However, these Hunting Wolves unexpectedly had not discovered his existence. It was as if this young man had completely melded into the surrounding environment!

Chapter 35: Raging Flame To The Rescue

“Ao Wu!!”

Suddenly, a miserable cry rang out from the pack of wolves. This wolf howl was extremely coarse, and it possessed even more force than other Hunting Wolf voices. However, one could clearly feel that this miserable cry was an exceptionally painful cry!

“This...” the Chu Family Guard’s leader, Chu Si was somewhat shocked as he spoke.

From this powerful shout, he could tell that it belonged to a seventh phase Hunting Wolf. Further, once a Hunting Wolf reached the seventh phase, it was very possible that it would become the Hunting Wolf pack’s leader!!

“Senior, it seems that someone has killed the wolf clan’s leader.” A Chu Family Guard, who was relatively experienced with fighting in the wild, spoke.

Chu Si was stunned, and shockingly stared at the young man who was able to be within the group of wolves without being detected.

“Could it be that his soul pet that killed the Hunting Wolf’s leader?” Chu Si slowly said.

The young man didn’t look more than twenty years of age. Not only was he able to evade the wolf clan pack’s detection, he also

surprisingly possessed a powerful soul pet that could dive deep into the wolf pack and kill a commander rank soul pet.

“Hu Hu Hu!!”

While Chu Si and the others were shocked, a sudden pillar of demon fire evil flame shot into the air, magnificently blossoming above the treetops.

The moment the demon fire evil flame rose into the air, waves of mysterious heat rushed in from another area in the forest. An instant later, everyone could clearly feel a fire being started on the eastern end of the forest.

The flames rapidly proliferated, and they were extremely fierce. Quickly, it dyed a large part of the forest in red, transforming the trees into blazing trees on fire.

“Immediately recall the rest of your soul pets and use your fastest soul pets to run towards the fire. The faster the better!” Chu Mu instantly transmitted his voice into everyone’s ears!

Chu Tianlin and Chu Si glanced at the youth, but found that he was still in the same spot. They then looked at the torrential wave of flames in the forest and, for a while, they didn’t know what decision to make.

“If we recall our soul pets and the Hunting Wolves chase us, won’t we be completely finished? Additionally, there is just fire

over there. If we rush into it, wouldn't that just be suicide?!" the Qin Family's Qin Jia immediately cursed.

"Tianlin, what do you think?" Chu Si looked at the flames growing in the forest and was somewhat hesitant.

The Hunting Wolves numbered in the hundreds or thousands. If they were to recall their soul pets, summoning them out again would be a bit challenging, so they had to carefully consider this.

"Listen to him, recall your soul pets. Everyone retreat to the flames!" Chu Tianlin also knew that this was a dangerous time and, if he were to hesitate any further, it could lead them to being trapped in in the wolf pack.

Chu Tianlin took the initiative to recall his soul pets first, only leaving out the sixth phase Light Rhinoceros. He made the water type soul pet of a Chu Family Guard member forge a path in front that allowed the rest to charge into the fire.

Since the fire was coming from the east, all the Hunting Wolves in the east had already dispersed. After the Chu Family Guard entered the burning forest, they didn't encounter any obstruction from Hunting Wolves!

"Go! Quickly go!! Don't hesitate!" Chu Tianlin yelled at them! As he spoke, Chu Tainlin's Light Rhinoceros abruptly used the Trample technique on the ten Hunting Wolves ahead, knocking them flying!

Chu Si nodded his head, and he immediately brought the last three Chu Family members out. They rode their soul pets into the burning forest.

“Qin Jia, what are you just standing them for? Get your men to recall their soul pets!” Chu Tianlin loudly yelled at the Qin Family people.

Qin Jia glanced at the Chu Family Guard charging into the flaming forest and grit his teeth. He gave an order for everyone to recall their soul pets and, in one breath, everyone rushed into the extremely hot flaming forest.

“Old Lin, you should quickly retreat too!” Qin Jia looked at Chu Tianlin who was the last to leave and yelled towards him.

Yet, the moment Qin Jia left, two sixth phase Hunting Wolves suddenly appeared in front of Chu Tianlin. They immediately pounced towards Chu Tianlin’s Light Rhinoceros and managed to haul him off of his formidable Light Rhinoceros!

Chu Tianlin had already used a defensive shield on himself. After falling to the ground, he instantly chanted an incantation. A hurricane formed in front of him, and it swept towards the Hunting Wolves in front!

“Huhuhu~”

Chu Tianlin’s soul remembrance was rather strong. Hurricane

had reached at least the might of level seven, and it surprisingly managed to sweep ten or so Hunting Wolves up, tossing them high into the air. Soon, a gap appeared in front of him.

Chu Tianlin's Light Rhinoceros was exceptionally valiant. Its body, brimming with power, charged forth and at least a few Hunting Wolves were knocked flying.

Nonetheless, as the other soul pets were recalled, the only person remaining here was Chu Tianlin. Every Hunting Wolf was ostensibly staring at the one person, Chu Tianlin. Moreover, there were at least twenty Hunting Wolves obstructing the path that led to the raging flames in the east.

Chu Tianlin's expression was grave. He quickly leapt onto his Light Rhinoceros' back and attempted to make a path for himself through slaughter. However, a bloody claw flew past, and a wound instantly appeared on Chu Tianlin's and the Light Rhinoceros' body.

“Head straight towards that part of the forest. I'll cut off the back for you.” Just at this moment of crisis, that young man's voice rang out again.

Chu Tianlin felt a burst of surprise, and he felt that this young man was way too reticent. He wasn't able to sense when this young man had appeared in front of him!

“But this way won't you fall into the wolf pack?” said Chu Tianlin.

“Quickly leave, second uncle, I have a method to escape.” said Chu Mu.

“Second uncle?” Chu Tianlin was stunned. He didn’t understand why this young man with immeasurable strength was addressing him like that.

“Leave!”

Chu Tianlin knew that this wasn’t the time to ask questions, and he immediately urged his Light Rhinoceros. He brazenly charged through the obstructing Hunting Wolves and slaughtered his way into the forest of torrential flames.

As the fire grew larger and larger, by the time Chu Tianlin had made his way into the forest, many trees had already fallen to the ground. Raging flames had spread onto the path, and he was greeted with a heatwave.

“That’s odd. Why does this forest seem to have something like a path?”

After entering the forest filled with flames, Chu Tianlin instantly discovered that the forest was extremely strange. On the two sides of him were flames and, in the middle, there coincidentally happened to be a pathway, as if it had been purposely arranged this way.

Chu Tianlin didn't mull this over for too long. After all, escaping was the most important thing.

The Light Rhinoceros' speed wasn't slow. Quickly, it charged out of the scorching hot forest, and Chu Tianlin found that in front of him, a part of the forest that had been separated. This patch of forest didn't have the slightest bit of fire on it, and the Qin Family and Chu Family Guard were all here.

"Senior, are you okay?" Chu Si immediately helped Chu Tianlin off his Light Rhinoceros.

"I'm fine, I'm fine. It's only my skin that is a bit burnt." said Chu Tianlin.

"Uncle Chu, let my Water Moon heal you." said Qin Menger.

Qin Menger was very careful. She knew that these people would have definitely suffered burn wounds while escaping, so she intentionally summoned her demon type soul pet, the Water Moon Fairy, to heal Chu Tianlin's burn wounds.

Water Moon Fairy: Demon Kingdom – demon type (water type) – fairy species – Water Moon Fairy subspecies – high class warrior rank

Water Moon Fairies had very delicate and petite appearances. From far away, they looked like young girls with white colored hydrophyte hair. Their bodies were very thin, like a jellyfish, and

was almost transparent.

Water Moon Fairies could be considered to be mainstream soul pets. Often, one could see a plethora of female soul pet trainers with one. The biggest characteristic of a Water Moon Fairy was its healing technique that could heal wounds caused by any type except water, ice or dark types.

“Isn’t this the Meng girl?” Chu Tianlin was stunned, and felt that it was rather mysterious as to how the Qin Menger that the Qin Family was looking for would suddenly appear here.

“Yes. Did uncle Chu see Chu Chen?” Qin Menger made the Water Moon Fairy heal Chu Tianlin’s burn wounds first before looking at the raging fire in the forest and speaking.

“Who is Chu Chen?” the others showed confused expressions.

“It’s that young man who saved you from the wolf pack. Don’t tell me he’s trapped inside there?” Qin Menger immediately adopted an anxious expression.

Chu Tianlin was flabbergasted. Finally, he realized that the young man would probably have a very hard time escaping. After all, when he himself rushed out of the encirclement, a large group of Hunting Wolves pounced at him!

“Wu wu wu wu~~”

Just at this moment, an extremely demonic shout rode along with the wind, as it abruptly resounded from within the flaming forest. Subsequently, a silver furred body burning in demon fire evil flame slowly emerged from the flaming forest. Its measured steps seemed to tread in the fire and, as it ran, its glorious six tails would freely wave about in the fierce red fire. It moved as fast as lightning...

Everyone stared blankly, and looked up at the mysterious young man and the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox he was riding. He exuded a breathtaking feeling.

Chu Tianlin looked at the young man who helped everyone escape from the Hunting Wolf pack and was extremely shocked in his heart. He had no idea how he managed to escape unscathed from such a large group of wolves.

“This younger brother, I am from Wangluo City’s Chu Family. This time it’s thanks to your help, otherwise we really could have been besieged by that pack of wolves to death. You have immense kindness and immense virtue. Please receive my respect!” Chu Tianlin was an outspoken man and, if there was a favor, he gave his thanks. He immediately gave the proper thanks.

Chu Mu couldn’t receive his own elder’s kowtow and hastily jumped off of Mo Xie back to help up Chu Tianlin.

“Second uncle, please don’t ever be like this. Look carefully at who I am first...” when Chu Mu looked at Chu Tianlin, he was endlessly moved.

In the Chu Family, this second uncle Chu was like Chu Ning. He had always taken very good care of Chu Mu, and Chu Mu could be sure that of those who came to Broken Forest this time, second uncle Chu would make his way without permission. It was all to find him, and it ought to have been Chu Mu who kowtowed to his family, second uncle Chu.

Chu Tianlin lifted his head and stared at the powerful young man riding the formidable Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox...

Chu Tianlin remembered Chu Ning saying that Chu Mu had fallen into Broken Forest with Qin Menger. He intentionally looked at Qin Menger who was surrounded by Qin Family people before looking back at Chu Mu. Suddenly, he found a bit of familiarity within Chu Mu's valiant and acute face!

“You.. you... you are Chu Mu!”

A while later, Chu Tianlin finally uttered those few words. His face was full of disbelief!

Chu Mu's words instantly rendered the entire Chu Family Guard stunned!

The adjacent Qin Menger, after hearing Chu Tianlin's shocking words, trembled, as her beautiful eyes stared at the cold young man from Nightmare Palace who had been together with her for many days!

Chapter 36: New Soul Pet – Mo Ye

Chu Tianlin's gaze was completely blank. He had not expected for this mysterious young man who was riding the eminently powerful Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox in front of him to be Chu Mu.

Chu Mu was his nephew, and Chu Tianlin had watched him grow up for 15 years. Chu Tianlin knew that Chu Mu possessed an outstanding talent like his father. However, it was a pity that he had a very serious wound that rendered him unable to summon a soul pet until he was 15 years old.

Nonetheless, in a short four years, Chu Mu had completely transformed-regardless of his appearance or temperament. The young man who stood in front of Chu Tianlin emitted a mysterious and imposing aura from head to toe. When Chu Tianlin saw him enter the pack of wolves without being detected, he knew that this was a very remarkable soul pet trainer.

Afterwards, Chu Tianlin then discovered that their rescue had been meticulously planned by this young man. First, he had used a powerful soul pet to murder the wolf pack's leader, causing the wolf pack to lose their organization. Immediately after, he used a forest fire to remove the hunting wolf pack's intention of chasing. Further, within the raging fire, he had used a wood type soul pet to open up an escape path in the burning forest, allowing everyone to escape safe and sound.

Throughout the rescue, he had been meticulously logical, and his strength was unordinary. If he hadn't seen before that he was only

a young man, Chu Tianlin would have thought that he encountered some capable expert. Otherwise, how would he have expected the person who saved them from the terrifying wolf pack crisis to be his own nephew, Chu Mu?!

“It really is Chu Mu. It’s so hard to believe, it’s so hard to believe!!” Chu Tianlin clutched Chu Mu’s shoulders. His face full of emotion could no longer hold back, and hot tears began to stream down.

Chu Ning had said before that Chu Mu was very different. Chu Tianlin didn’t quite believe that he had defeated Yang Jie, this Yang Family expert. However, right now, why would he call this into question? Chu Mu truly wasn’t that weak young boy from back then. He had become an expert who made him feel stunned!!

“Young master Chu.” Chu Si naturally realized that the young man with an out of the ordinary grandeur in front of him was the Chu Mu that they were looking for. Immediately, he gave a half-kneel in respect.

Each Chu Family Guard member, including Chu Si, had completely red faces. They had come to the Broken Forest to search for Chu Mu and to rescue him from this dangerous forest. Yet, who would have guessed that they wouldn’t be able to find him and were instead besieged by a wolf pack. Moreover, it was extremely shameful that it ultimately was due to young master Chu’s help that they managed to escape. This time, when they returned, Chu Si truly didn’t have the face to say he managed to complete the family head’s important task...

“Second uncle, the wolf pack is still behind us. Let’s leave this place first and then slowly talk. Uncle Chu Si, have your men get up and leave here first.” said Chu Mu to everyone.

After speaking, Chu Mu recalled the Devil Tree Battle Soldier back into its soul pet space, and promptly summoned the Night Thunder Dream Beast.

Once the eminently demonic Night Thunder Dream Beast appeared, it instantly caused a gasp from everyone. No one had expected this young Chu Mu to have so many powerful soul pets. He even possessed such a rare Night Thunder Dream Beast.

“Who on earth is this Chu Mu?” Qin Jia’s memory wasn’t good, and he asked the adjacent Qin Menger, whose gaze was still clearly stunned.

Even now, Qin Menger hadn’t returned to her usual state. The only thing in her mind was blank space. As she looked at him ride his Night Thunder Dream Beast towards her, she suddenly thought of the words she spoke before, where she called him a scoundrel from Nightmare Palace. Immediately, she felt ashamed, and she didn’t know what to say to Chu Mu.

“Chu Mu, this is still within the range of Mo Ye Forest. There seems to be a hallucination effect. We’ve been trapped here for very long, and we haven’t been able to leave the entire time. We should take our time.” Chu Tianlin rode his Light Rhinoceros alongside Chu Mu as they travelled. His eyes would perhaps intentionally shift to Chu Mu’s Night Thunder Dream Beast now and again.

Chu Tianlin was a knowledgeable man. A Night Thunder Dream Beast of normal quality could reach a value of 500,000 gold coins on the market.

Yet, Chu Mu's Night Thunder Dream Beast was obviously of top quality. Moreover, it had clearly undergone training and attribute strengthening. From an aura perspective, he could easily sense that it was an extremely first-rate Dream Beast. No matter how he looked at it, it was worth a few million gold. Previously, he had heard Chu Ning estimate that Chu Mu's Night Thunder Dream Beast was at least worth one million gold, but Chu Ning evidently had underestimated this soul pet.

“Second uncle, follow behind me. I'll take you guys out of the psychedelic forest.” said Chu Mu.

Chu Mu had already grasped the Mo Ye Forest's psychedelic effect clearly. It wouldn't be difficult to get out.

“You know how to leave?” immediately asked Qin Jia. As he spoke, his gaze intentionally shifted to the Qin Family servant who proclaimed to have lived in the wilderness for a long time.

This experienced Qin Family servant promptly said: “This Mo Ye Forest's psychedelic effect isn't some casual hallucination. Without many days to grasp it clearly, we simply won't be able to leave.”

“Just follow me and it'll be fine.” Chu Mu looked at the Qin

Family person and indifferently responded.

“Follow him. He’ll be able to take us out.” Qin Menger trust Chu Mu a lot.

As the sun set, what emerged in front of the Qin and Chu Family was a forest slowly growing more and more familiar. This forest happened to be Gangluo City’s Western Forest.

Gangluo City’s Western Forest was exceptionally lush. All sorts of soul pets lived here, but it was definitely not as dangerous as the Broken Forest. As long as there were people who had lived in the wilderness before, it would be easy to figure out the direction and then leave safely.

Therefore, when it only took the entire group a mere half a day to exit Mo Ye Forest and enter Gangluo City’s Western Forest, everyone let out a flabbergasted expression!

“How is it this fast! When we entered Broken Forest then...” that Qin Family servant was dumbstruck.

Back then, they had spent three days entering the Broken Forest and were then trapped in Mo Ye forest for a few more days. Their entire journey had been them bumping into various different things. Each step had been frightening, and it was eminently dangerous.

Yet, on this return trip, they had barely met any soul pets, and

even only used half a day to reach what took them a few days. Moreover, they had safely returned to Gangluo City's Western Forest.

“You still dare speak?!” Qin Jia immediately glared at the servant who bragged about being familiar with the forest environment.

This family servant shivered from head to foot and whispered: “That younger brother must often roam about here.”

“This younger brother, do you often roam about Broken Forest? Otherwise, how would you know this area so well?” asked Qin Jia.

Chu Mu shook his head and said: “It's my first time coming. I only circled once around Mo Ye Forest.”

The Qin Family's family servant felt an urge to spit blood after hearing that! When he lead the way, they had made at least 10 circles around Mo Ye Forest!

Chu Tianlin looked at Chu Mu. His shock at Chu Mu's change still hadn't stopped. After being in contact with him for a short period of time, Chu Tianlin was already sure that the outstanding things Chu Ning told him about Chu Mu were not false. Furthermore, he could see that this was only the tip of Chu Mu's iceberg, because Chu Ning didn't mention that Chu Mu still had an Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox.

“Chu Mu, tell second uncle about your experience over the past

few years. You've truly changed too much. Even second uncle somewhat doesn't believe that you're my nephew." said Chu Tianlin.

"I only wandered about by myself, and I suffered from a few restrictions that prevented me from returning. Fortunately, I managed to train myself out there... second uncle, is my father still well? Third brother should have already spread my news back to the family right?" Chu Mu didn't talk about his experience in detail. Instead, he skillfully changed the subject.

His life in the past four years was something Chu Mu found very hard to put to words. Furthermore, Chu Mu didn't like complainers or making others worried. As long as he could return, then everything was fine.

"When Chu Ning told me, my first reaction was to send word to Wugu Region's Great Chu Family and inform your father. Once he receives the news, he will definitely return as soon as possible." said Chu Tianlin.

"Wogu Region's Great Chu Family? Didn't father swear not to step even half a foot in there anymore? How..." Chu Mu was stunned.

Chu Mu couldn't be considered to have very good understanding of his father's matters. Nonetheless, he had more or less heard a few things.

He wasn't the family head Chu Ming's blood-grandson, and his

father wasn't Chu Ming's blood-son either. Rather, he was an adopted son. From a young age, Chu Mu's father had grown up in Gangluo City and then returned to Wogu Region's Great Chu Family afterwards. For some unknown reason, a conflict had arisen with Wogu City's city lord and since then, his father swore never to lay even half a step inside his own true family. Even if he were to carry a crime and return, he would still return to Gangluo City's Chu Family, and not Wogu City's Great Chu Family.

“Sigh, it's due to our incompetence. Ultimately, we still have to rely on Tiancheng to undertake the heavy responsibility of our family. This time, him breaking his pledge and returning to the Great Chu Family is truly too tough on him...” Chu Tianlin heavily sighed and let out a somewhat sad expression.

Seeing Chu Tianlin's heavy tone, Chu Mo went silent. Regarding his father's matters, Chu Mu only knew a vague bit. As for the deeper things, he had no idea. This time, returning to the family, he ought to learn about his father's matters.

“It's better not to say. These things, it's better for you to ask your father yourself... however, Chu Mu, you really are worthy of being Tiancheng's son. In a short four years, your strength is something I dare not even somewhat assess. Very good, very good. Haha, if those short sighted fellows are to know, their expression will definitely be very nice. Especially the Yang Family!” Chu Tianlin dropped the unhappy subjects and then began to loudly laugh.

Chu Tianlin knew that many people in the family felt that Chu Mu was a dispensable third generation child. They looked down on Chu Mu, but right now, Chu Mu had completely changed. When

Chu Mu was to exhibit his full strength in front of them, those people's jaws wouldn't be able to close. As for the Yang Family, their eyes would definitely jump out.

“Hu hu hu”

As Chu Tianlin was laughing, suddenly, a faint noise sounded out in the thicket next to him.

Chu Mu was the first to hear the noise. Aware that the others might raise hostility, he immediately pacified everyone and said: “Don't worry, it's a small Mo Ye.”

Everyone was shocked. Shortly after hearing the noise, they discovered a small black figure walk out of the thicket. Its black eyes stared unperturbedly at Chu Mu and the small Mo Xie on his shoulder.

“Hou Hou” the small Mo Ye roared at Chu Mu.

Seeing the obstinately small Mo Ye, a smile rose upon Chu Mu's face. Even without using beast language, he could understand what the small Mo ye was saying. Without any hesitation, he slowly chanted the soul pact incantation and opened his eighth soul...

Chapter 37: Causing The Entire Gangluo City To Shake In My Presence

The Chu Family's Courtyard

The Chu Family Guard, Chu Si and the others, half kneeled on the ground. Their heads were lowered as they waited for Chu Ming to speak.

“He helped free you from the group besiegement, and he then brought you out of Broken Forest?” after a while, Chu Ming finally inquired.

“Yes... young master Chu is no longer the young master Chu from back then. He's undergone a huge change.” Chu Si's face was red.

As the Chu Family Guard, they were ordered to protect Chu Mu and then safely bring him back to the family.

In the end, the opposite happened. The experienced Chu Mu brought them out of the group besiegement and then safely led them home.

Chu Si had stayed in the Chu Family for many years and was already considered an experienced soul pet trainer. Yet, this matter that had caused him to lose face had happened, making him feel extremely embarrassed...

“Family head, are you not going to see the young master?” Chu Si looked at Chu Ming as he inquired.

“Returning safely is good. Seeing or not seeing him is secondary. Chu Si, withdraw first.” said Chu Ming.

Chu Si nodded his head and gave a bow before retreating.

“Father, Chu Mu seems to really have changed. Just now I briefly glanced over him and was able to feel his reserved temperament. It was rather mysterious, and I wasn’t able to fully see through it.” said the eldest, Chu Tianheng.

“Then do you feel that he can become a recommended with his current strength?” Chu Ming looked at Chu Tianheng.

Chu Tianheng was Chu Ming’s eldest son, so Chu Ming understood his nature very well. Chu Tianheng normally didn’t speak very much. He was silent and calm, but he was very precise with his judgement of others. Therefore, when Chu Tianheng was unable to see through Chu Mu, Chu Ming was a bit surprised.

“For the time being, I haven’t understood Chu Mu’s true strength. Him being able to kill Yang Jie shouldn’t be false, but both Chu Xing and Chu He’s strength are above Yang Jie’s. There would be a relatively large amount of danger if we were to recommend him. Chu Mu is still a bit young, and it would be easy for him to be at a disadvantage, so we should still let Chu Xing and Chu He deal with it. After all, they have prepared a long time for this, and they will have better plans at dealing with it.” said Chu

Tianheng.

“Mhm, then we should proceed as originally planned.” Chu Ming nodded his head.

Chu Mu’s courtyard was on the eastern end of the Chu Family estate. When he opened his windows in the morning, he could see the sun rising out in the horizon, where the birds would fly. Afterwards, a ray of pure sunlight would shed in front of Chu Mu’s window...

It had been very long since Chu Mu had had this feeling. The moment he woke up, Chu Mu felt that he had returned to four years ago, and that the experiences over these past four years had been but an intense nightmare.

“Wu wu wu”

Mo Xie, who still wanted to sleep, shifted her body, not letting the sunlight affect her sleep. Chu Mu stroked the small fellow’s fur and lightly put her to the side. Then, he had his maid enter and attend to his change of clothes.

The maid had already been changed, and it wasn’t his original maid, so Chu Mu wasn’t too used to this. After washing his face and rinsing his mouth, he changed into a clean set of clothes. The lazy Mo Xie had finally woken up, and she ran over to the basin to wash her own adorable face before shaking her head to cast off the water droplets.

“The weather isn’t bad.” After returning home, Chu Mu’s mood had improved a lot. His only dissatisfaction was that his father wasn’t here.

When he had returned yesterday, Chu Mu had seen the majority of the Chu Family people. Being able to see the faces of his familiar family caused a wave of emotion and gratitude to surface within Chu Mu’s heart.

Of course, Chu Mu wasn’t a such a naive young man. He knew which people treated him well in the family, and which people had neglected him. To these people who neglected him, Chu Mu simply treated them as if they didn’t exist.

“Young master, the family head wishes for you to go the great hall after morning tea.” said the maid to Chu Mu.

Chu Mu nodded his head and sent the maid off. He fed his soul pets their breakfast before eating his fill himself.

At the great hall, Chu Mu could clearly feel that the Chu Family members present today were relatively many. It seemed that there was going to be a large family meeting.

“Chu Mu, come over to grandfather.” Chu Ming called Chu Mu to his side in front of everybody, and had him sit beside his head seat.

Yesterday night, Chu Ming had already seen Chu Mu, and it was the first time Chu Mu had seen this old man’s tearful appearance.

His grandfather, Chu Ming, had always been extremely loving towards Chu Mu. Even though Chu Mu was unable to summon a soul pet, he still harbored no prejudice towards Chu Mu. Moreover, he had protected him, so Chu Mu's feelings for his grandfather were naturally rather profound.

Yesterday night, after seeing Chu Ming's haggard face that seemed to have aged ten years since four years ago, Chu Mu silently decided that he would definitely make the Chu Family rise up within Gangluo City on this trip back.

“Originally, grandfather wanted to have a large feast for you in order to celebrate and welcome you back after such a long time. However, the Chu Family is in troubled times, and is at the time of recommendation. Once the recommendation is over, grandfather will hold a grand adulthood ceremony for you.” said Chu Ming.

Chu Mu nodded his head and didn't say anything else. His eyes swept over the Chu Family members present today.

The Chu Family was split into two branches. The first was the family head Chu Ming's, while the other was the second family head Chu Nan's.

Chu Ming had six sons in total. His eldest son, Chu Tian Heng, and second son, Chu Tianlin, had already been seen by Chu Mu. Chu Tianlin was a quick impulsive and hot blooded uncle. He was also the one who took care of Chu Mu the best.

His son, Chu Ning, had the exact same personality as him. He was full of hot blood and was justice-seeking, unable to tolerate the acts of crafty individuals

Chu Mu's big uncle, Chu Tianlin, was a reserved man whose personality was introverted and calm. Any small or large matter in the family had to go through him. Chu Tianheng had one son and one daughter who, respectively, were Chu Xing and Chu Qian.

Chu Xing was the eldest brother among the Chu Family's third generation, and he was the strongest amongst the Chu Family's younger generation. Chu Qian was the eldest sister in the Chu Family, but had been fancied by the Great Chu Family. Currently, she was a female disciple in the Great Chu Family's inner family. Apparently, she was rather famous.

Chu Ming's third son was Chu Tianqi, who had passed away a few years ago in the wilderness.

His son, Yang He, was the Chu Family young generation's second expert, and had received the Chu Family's attention.

Chu Ming's fourth son was Chu Tiancheng, also Chu Mu's father. Chu Tiancheng had come from the Great Chu Family, and it was rumored in the family that because of the Great Chu Family's successor dispute, Chu Tiancheng, with his meager one person strength, had been cast aside and sent to the remote Gangluo City's Chu Family clan...

Chu Ming's fifth son was Chu Tianren, who was in charge of

foreign family business. He only had one girl, Chu Yishui, in the family who was the small sister of the family.

Chu Ming's sixth son, Chu Tianjue, was in charge of the Chu Family's servants. His power was only second to Chu Tianheng's. His daughter, Chu Ying, had strength that was second to Chu He. She was a relatively overbearing young lady within the family.

In the Chu Family side branch, there was another young expert called Chu Lang. His strength was ranked in the top five among the Chu Family young experts and he had been valued as extremely important by the Chu Family.

The other line of descendents was the second family head Chu Nan's. The heirs of Chu Nan were not many. Chu Nan only had one son, Chu Tianjing, whose son was Chu Yi.

Chu Yi was the most arrogant young master of the Chu Family, and his strength could barely be considered fifth among the Chu Family young experts.

Chu Yi's natural disposition was impudent, and it brought the Chu Family a lot of trouble. Towards others, he was unkind and rude. Back when Chu Mu was unable to summon a soul pet and didn't have the qualifications to become a soul pet trainer of his generation, he often suffered from this fellow's mockery and ridicule.

Yesterday, when Chu Mu returned with the Chu Family Guard, Chu Yi had intentionally used a phrase to mock Chu Mu: "There's

another vermin in the family again.”

Chu Yi was the only grandson of Chu Nan and could be said be very doted upon. Often, there wasn't anyone who provoked this evil Chu Family tyrant.

Of course, Chu Mu had a means of controlling this fellow, through his eldest brother, Chu Xing. Chu Xing's strength was the strongest, and if Chu Yi did anything excessive, Chu Xing would ignore his granduncle Chu Nan's doting on this child and fiercely beat him as always.

When Chu Mu returned yesterday, Chu Xing didn't want to ruin their brotherly atmosphere of reunion, and couldn't be bothered to argue with that fellow and his character.

As for this morning's meeting in the Chu Family great hall, Chu Mu could see Chu Yi's arrogant gaze. If it was before, Chu Mu could have been annoyed, but right now, he acted as if this despicable fellow didn't exist.

This morning's meeting was clearly to discuss the recommendation in three months.

The recommendation was the most important competition in Gangluo City. Each large family would nominate five young experts to enter the entire Gangluo City's public competition.

The original intention of the recommendation wasn't to have a

competition between the large families. Rather, it was for each family to nominate exceptionally outstanding people, and to recommend them to the Luo Region City to participate and see who was the best.

However, as the conflicts between each large family in Gangluo City grew more fierce, the recommendation of young experts in Gangluo City became a secondary matter. Firstly, it would truly be very hard for the young experts from the families in Gangluo City to compete with the gathering of experts from numerous other cities. Secondly, the recommended people would often be preselected by the city's hegemon, the Yang Family. After all, the entire Luo Region was essentially the Greater Yang Family's region.

Therefore, the recommendation gradually evolved into a competition between the various large families' younger generation with territory on the line!

One important factor of the prosperity of a family was its capital, and its deep-seated connections. Yet, even more importantly was the territory each family possessed.

The most important thing a family could not lack was powerful soul pet trainers. As for the origins of soul pet trainer's soul pets, they would often be through their families, whether by means of purchasing them or obtaining them in territories.

The territory of a family often had visible trademarks, and it was prohibited for outsiders of the family to capture and kill soul pets there.

These territories would often have extremely rich sources of soul pets that could fit the needs of various different soul pet trainers. If there was a surplus of supply, they could be sold to other factions, and immense profits could be obtained.

Normally, one piece of regular sixth rank territory had four fairly good commander rank soul pets that could be obtained from within every year. There were also many warrior rank and servant rank soul pets and, through careful selection, could have an aptitude not inferior to commander ranks. In this way alone, a family could virtually be able to cultivate many experts with commander rank soul pets!

Therefore, territory was the most valuable asset of a family, and it maintained the lifeline of a family's development!

The meeting this time clearly was to decide the five members of the recommendation competition. Truthfully, everyone present knew what was going on.

“This time, Chu Xing will lead the team and the team members will consist of Chu He, Chu Yi, Chu Ying and Chu Lang.”

“I hope that you will be able to fight back a few pieces of territory for the family!”

Chu Ming's gaze swept through the five people sitting under him as he seriously spoke.

“Yes!!!”

The five people earnestly nodded their heads and received the Chu Family’s important task.

Hearing that Chu Mu’s name wasn’t in the five people, Chu Ning and Chu Tianlin immediately revealed questioning expressions. They had already told Chu Ming about Chu Mu’s strength, so Chu Ming should have considered putting Chu Mu into the team.

“Grandfather, why aren’t you letting Chu Mu compete?” suddenly spoke Chu Ning.

Chu Ning had witnessed Chu Mu fight Yang Jie and, although Chu Mu could only summon two soul pets, his strength was comparable to those soul masters. If he were to let Chu Mu participate, their hope of winning this recommendation was extremely large.

“That’s right father. Chu Mu’s current strength is very powerful. His Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox seems to have already reached the fifth phase. His Night Thunder Dream Beast is also at the fifth phase fifth stage. Even with this, could it be that it’s still not enough to be in this generation’s top five?” Chu Tianlin was very surprised by Chu Ming’s announcement.

“An Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox!! A Night Thunder Dream Beast!”

When Chu Tianlin spoke of Chu Mu's soul pets, it instantly caused a huge gasp!

Night Thunder Dream Beasts and Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Foxes were rare soul pets. If they were fostered, their strength truly was enough to contend against the Chu Family's top five!

"Chu Mu has just returned to the family and is probably very tired. There's no need for him to participate in such a dangerous competition." said Chu Ming.

"But..." Chu Tianlin and Chu Ning still wanted to persuade him.

Chu Ming creased his eyebrows, indicating that these two shouldn't speak any further.

"Grandfather, since Chu Mu can summon soul pets now, then he should help our family. Fortunately, a few days ago, younger sister troubled me to bring her to our family territory to help her capture a soul pet. How about this, why doesn't Chu Mu accompany younger sister to our territory. It just so happens that I should be using my time to train my soul pets." Chu Yi tactlessly said.

"Yes, that works too. Chu Mu, why don't you rest for the next few days. If you have time, bring younger sister to our territory. There shouldn't be a problem, right?" The second family master Chu Nan nodded his head without waiting for Chu Ming, and he removed Chu Mu from the discussion.

Chu Mu looked at Chu Nan, but indifferently nodded his head: “There’s no problem.”

Chu Mu had just obtained a new soul pet, the Mo Ye. The small Mo Ye was at the third phase fifth stage, and happened to need fights with a few low phase and low stage soul pets to accumulate fighting experience and quickly grow and evolve.

Chu Ming specially glanced at Chu Mu and saw that there was no trace of dissatisfaction. He then nodded his eyes and swept his gaze over everyone.

“Then we’ll end today’s meeting here. Everyone can leave.” Chu Ming said to everyone.

Everyone nodded their heads and paid their respects before leaving. As they left, they ostensibly were all discussing Chu Mu’s Night Thunder Dream Beast and Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox.

Very soon, the only people remaining in the hall were Chu Mu, Chu Ming, Chu Tianheng, and Chu Tianlin, who felt very aggrieved by the situation just now.

“Father, what are you doing? Chu Mu is no longer the Chu Mu from back then. He’s capable of undertaking our family’s important task. Why are you excluding him?!” Chu Tianlin was impulsive and in one breath, he spat out what was making him aggrieved.

Chu Ming ignored Chu Tianlin and instead looked at Chu Mu. He slowly said: “Chu Mu, you should understand why grandfather doesn’t want you to participate, right?”

Chu Mu nodded his head and said: “Grandfather doesn’t want something to happen to me; moreover, grandfather wants me to train a few years and participate in the next recommendation, right?”

Chu Ming and Chu Tianheng both nodded their heads in praise.

The two of them truly had guessed that Chu Mu’s current strength was very formidable, capable of reversing the situation.

However, Chu Mu currently could only summon two soul pets, and his age was a bit younger than the five others. Thus, the probability of danger was higher.

Instead, it would be better to let the very promising Chu Mu develop for a few years and have him participate in five years. At that time, he would definitely be able to sweep through all of Gangluo City’s experts!

“Grandfather is very grateful that you have such a heart. Just now, I was afraid that you thought grandfather was giving you the cold shoulder. Right now, you can be said to be our family’s winning treasure. I’m sure that in five years, you will definitely cause the entire Gangluo City to shake in your presence!” Chu Ming patted Chu Mu on the shoulder and said earnestly.

Chu Mu merely nodded his head, but what he was thinking in his heart was completely different from what Chu Ming was thinking!

“Then I’ll have to trouble you to accompany Yishui to our family territory. You can temper yourself there, and if you have anything you need, don’t hesitate to tell grandfather. Grandfather will try his best to give anything to you.” said Chu Ming.

“Thanks, grandfather.” said Chu Mu.

“Ok, you can go first then. I need to discuss a few things with your big uncle and second uncle.” Chu Ming said to Chu Mu.

Chu Mu gave a simple bow before slowly walking away in large strides out of the large hall.

Seeing Chu Mu leaved so unperturbed, Chu Tianheng’s eyes slightly changed. He said: “Chu Mu has truly grown up. Just now he didn’t even say anything even under those circumstances. Moreover, his gaze didn’t change at all. Such shrewdness and calmness isn’t something your average person possesses.”

Chu Ming nodded his head in agreement and said: “I hope that he will bring our Chu Family hope.”

Once he left the hall, Chu Mu quietly stood in place facing the expansive residence. He looked exactly like an immobile statue.

A while later, a smile slowly surfaced on Chu Mu's face as he thought:

“Five years?”

He simply didn't need such a long time. In three months, he would cause the entire Gangluo City to shake in his presence!!

Nightmare Palace's immense power wasn't something a Luo Region could compare with. Moreover, Chu Mu, who had an eminently high position in Nightmare Palace, already belonged to the ranks of peak experts. In the entire Luo Region, perhaps only the Luo Region Nightmare Prince who was famous both in Nightmare Palace and outside, could compete with Chu Mu. Chu Mu simply didn't need to put the other figures in his eyes.

Right now, Chu Mu was already enough to sweep through Gangluo City. As for five years later, Chu Mu felt that he would be able to sweep through the Luo Region, irrespective of age.

Chu Ming didn't understand Chu Mu's true strength. Yet, Chu Mu didn't mind. In these three months, Chu Mu would keep a slightly low profile until the day of the competition, where he would cause his family, the Yang Family, and even the entire Gangluo City to tremble in his presence!

Chapter 38: Territory Crisis (1)

Over these three months, Chu Mu's most important goal was to raise the Night Thunder Dream Beast, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, and the Mo Ye's strength. In this way, Chu Mu would be more than sufficiently equipped. Even if he were to face a few experts who weren't young people, he still wouldn't need to be too worried.

Of course, one of the best methods to quickly increase his strength was to spend a large sum of money and purchase soul crystals for his soul pets to train with.

Chu Mu still had the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's soul crystal, and he planned on using it for the Devil Tree Battle Soldier to train with when it reached the fifth phase eighth stage.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast had already used its crystal during training already. For a short while, it would be very difficult to absorb soul crystal energy, but Chu Mu possessed a heavenly demon orchid. As long as he spent fifty thousand gold coins to purchase demon spirit's tears, and another fifty thousand coins for a medicinal master to concoct the heavenly demon tears, it probably wouldn't be an issue for the Night Thunder Dream Beast to rise to the sixth phase.

As for the small Mo Ye, Chu Mu felt that he really had to spend a very large sum to purchase first-rate soul cores, soul crystals, and soul items to strengthen the small Mo Ye's beast attribute, thereby increasing its fighting strength.

The first thing he had to buy was naturally a sixth level beast and bug dual type soul crystal, with an emphasis on the beast type. Then, he could supplement the small fellow's beast bloodline deficiency.

Chu Mu still had another first-rate lineage Mo Ye in his storage ring. This Mo Ye's value was nearly one million gold coins. Since Chu Mu was currently lacking in funds, he planned on anonymously putting the small Mo Ye up for sale in the Soul Pet Palace, and selling it to the person who made the highest offer, exchanging it for sufficient coins.

Chu Mu was extremely familiar with Gangluo City, and he easily found the Soul Pet Palace. What made Chu Mu surprised was that when he arrived, he happened to see Ting Yu taking out a Storm Devil Colt, as if she was about to go somewhere.

“Young master Chu...” When Ting Yu saw Chu Mu, a smile blossomed on her face.

It was just recently that Ting Yu had heard from a subordinate that Chu Mu had returned to his Chu Family. She planned on leaving but didn't expect Chu Mu to appear so soon.

“Nightmare Prince!” two black garbed men behind Ting Yu immediately half-knelt, paying their respects to Chu Mu.

Chu Mu nodded his head and said to Ting Yu, “You being here is perfect timing. I've obtained a first-rate Mo Ye, so can you help me sell it at an auction? Then, use the money from the auction to buy

me a sixth level beast and insect type soul crystal. After that, buy me a demon spirit's tears, and have a medicinal master concoct heavenly demon tears. Afterwards, look for any soul items that can be used to supplement a beast type deficiency...

“Young master...” Ting Yu's expression was secretly bitter. After just seeing him again, Chu Mu had ordered her to complete a large pile of trivial tasks. Ting Yu didn't even have time to fret over Chu Mu falling into Broken Forest.

“Aren't you lacking a soul pet? By chance, I happen to be hunting for soul pets, so if I see a fitting one, I'll capture it for you,” said Chu Mu.

With a reward, Ting Yu was obviously happy, and a smile rose on her face as she said: “Young master, I just heard from Gangluo City's market that there happens to be a devil tree heart. This item can be used on your Devil Tree Battle Soldier.”

“Oh?” Chu Mu raised his eyebrows.

Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier was a highly talented soul pet, and it could barely match a low class commander rank.

However, this was far from being enough for Chu Mu. Fortunately, the devil tree heart was a soul item that could greatly increase a wood type soul pet's wood attribute. If he could use it on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, its wood type control would become even stronger. Even if it encountered a commander rank of identical phase and stage, it had a chance of not losing!

“The price is hefty, right?” asked Chu Mu.

“Yes, the base price is already at fifty thousand gold coins.” said Ting Yu.

Chu Mu bitterly laughed, and shook his head. It seemed that his funds would never be enough. Originally, he wanted to use the extra money to purchase some extravagant soul equipment for his soul pets. Yet, that option didn't seem very likely anymore.

Currently, Chu Mu had to feed five soul pets. During his last time in Nightmare City, he had spent 150,000 gold coins on soul cores that had all been eaten by his large appetite soul pets. Right now, he had to spend at least 200,000 gold coins to buy a month's worth of food for his soul pets.

Completing the heavenly demon tears required around 100,000 gold coins, and the auction price of the demon tree's heart was presently 500,000 gold coins. Without 1 million gold coins, it would be very difficult to actually purchase it. After all, it was a soul item that could greatly increase wood type abilities.

There was still the small Mo Ye's sixth level soul crystal that needed at least 200,000 gold coins.

In other words, even if the first-rate Mo Ye were sold for 1 million gold coins, Chu Mu would still be lacking 500,000 gold coins...

“The two of you follow her and make sure of her safety.” Chu Mu said to the Devil Attendants who had a fifth ranking title in Nightmare Palace.

These two Devil Attendant’s strengths weren’t below Yang Jie’s, and Chu Mu himself didn’t need their protection. As for Ting Yu, who was about to become his public representative in Gangluo City, she naturally needed protection. After all, when she went to sell the first-rate Mo Ye on his behalf, it would be very easy to encounter other people’s greed.

“Yes!” The two Devil Attendants promptly saluted and continued to follow beside Ting Yu.

Once he left soul pet palace, Chu Mu returned to his family clan where he intentionally borrowed a large enough soul capture ring from Chu Ming. He planned on fixing his serious lack of funds on his trip into the wild this time.

Chu Mu remembered that the Chu Family’s territory should be in the Luoye Mountain Range, and if one were to continue walking eastward, he or she would reach Broken Forest. The dangers of Broken Forest were very threatening, but the soul pets there were extremely plentiful.

Chu Mu planned on using the opportunity of helping his cousin find a suitable soul pet to wander about in Broken Forest again. Firstly, he would be able to train his small Mo Ye while secondly, he would be able to solve his problem of funds!!

“Brother, brother Chu Mu...”

When his cousin Chu Yishui saw the handsome and pleasant Chu Mu, an adorable smile burst forth on her face as she amiably greeted Chu Mu.

“YIshui, it’s been many years since we’ve seen each other. You’ve already grown into a beautiful young lady.” Chu Mu laughed and stroked this younger sister’s cheek.

In the past, when Chu Mu could not summon soul pets, he was pretty much the most unoccupied person in the family. Moreover, Chu Yishui’s father and mother were not in the clan, so this small girl would play with the only person who would accompany her, Chu Mu, when she had nothing to do. The relationship between the two of them was rather good.

“Mhm, Yishui wanted to speak with brother yesterday, but a number of people were surrounding you and I wasn’t able to speak... that said, brother is turning more and more handsome. Yishui nearly didn’t recognize you.” Chu Yishui was still young and didn’t think very much. Quickly, she was talking very intimately with Chu Mu.

Although Chu Mu was the one bringing Chu Yishui into their territory, for Chu Mu’s safety sake, Chu Ming still specially deployed the Chu Family Guard head, Chu Si, to accompany the two. He wanted to prevent the tragedy from four years ago from happening again.

Chu Si's soul pet that he rode on was a Light Rhinoceros that had reached the sixth phase third stage. Its fighting strength was probably rather formidable. As for Chu Mu, he naturally rode the Night Thunder Dream Beast. Chu Si would blush with shame when his sixth phase Light Rhinoceros was simply unable to keep up with Chu Mu's Night Thunder Dream Beast when they ran at full speed.

“Young master Chu Mu, in my opinion, you fundamentally don't need my protection, right?” Chu Si's ability to judge others was exceptional, and he knew that Chu Mu's strength definitely wasn't as simple as what was portrayed on the outside.

Back in Broken Forest, Chu Si remembered the wolf pack leader's mysterious and ineffable death that caused the wolf pack to lack a leader. Naturally, it was Chu Mu's soul pet that killed the wolf pack leader, so Chu Si was sure that Chu Mu still had even stronger soul pets than the Night Thunder Dream Beast.

“That's true. Uncle Chu Si can attend his own affairs. There isn't a need to follow us.” laughed Chu Mu as he spoke.

“The family head is very sensitive towards young master's safety. It's probably best if I still follow. Once I deliver young master and young lady to the territory, I will go back. Afterwards, the territory's Chu Family Guard will bring you back,” Chu Si said earnestly.

Luoye Mountain Range couldn't be considered to be too far away. After leaving in the morning, they arrived at approximately noontime. There were also a few Chu Family members defending

the Luoye Mountain Range. These people were defending against foreigners who tried to enter the Chu Family territory in order to poach soul pets.

Under Luoye Mountain Range was a simple Chu Family residence, where the Chu Family members who protected the territory or were temporarily here to capture soul pets stayed. Once Chu Mu and Chu Yishui entered the residence under Luoye Mountain Range, Chu Si's accompaniment was complete, and he returned to the family clan.

The extremely excited Chu Yishui ate her lunch before impatiently making Chu Mu let her ride his free and unrestrained Night Thunder Dream Beast into the Luoye Mountain Range to kill. Ultimately, the family servant soul pets weren't able to keep up with the Night Thunder Dream Beast's speed and before long, they were left behind.

Thus, the entire mountain reverberated with anxious shouts of: "Young master~young lady, where are you~~."

"I wasn't able to see that you had already become a fourth remembrance soul soldier. You can have five soul pets, right?" Chu Mu felt somewhat surprised once he learned of Yishui's strength.

"That's only natural." Chu Yishui revealed a slightly proud expression.

"Then what soul pet do you want? The soul pet quality on this territory is barely okay. I'll try my best to pick a top quality one for

you.” Chu Mu looked all around, and he found that the soul pets here were rather many. Nonetheless, he felt that their quality was only average... perhaps Chu Mu’s standards was too high.

“Brother, I want an Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox...” excitedly said Chu Yishui.

“...” Chu Mu was speechless.

It was obviously impossible to help Chu Yishui find an Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox. Even disregarding an Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox, it could already be considered extremely lucky to see a Six Tailed Demon Fox.

“It’s a Demon Spirit Butterfly. I want it...” Chu Yishui seemed to have spotted a cute soul pet that she wanted. However, this was already the twentieth time this afternoon Chu Yishui had said these words.

“Demon Spirit Butterfly, high class warrior rank, wind type, agility type soul pet, fourth phase third stage. It’s maturation condition isn’t bad.” in one glance, Chu Mu was able to discern the Demon Spirit Butterfly that had settled on a tree leaf.

Demon Spirit Butterflies probably were rather favored by females. Such a soul pet had an elegantly beautiful exterior, while also having an imposing and powerful wind type controlling ability. It’s dodging ability and agility level often incessantly annoyed many soul pets, who were ultimately whittled down by the omnipresent wind type techniques and were defeated.

To deal with this soul pet, Chu Mu naturally wouldn't let his first four powerful soul pets deal with it.

Chu Mu made Mo Xie return to her soul pet space for a nap before chanting an incantation and opening the Mo Ye's soul pact.

A black pattern gradually appeared under the Night Thunder Dream Beast, and the obstinately small Mo Ye covered in ink black armor slowly appeared. It calmly stood in the black halo of light, and its eyes apathetically stared in front.

“Mo Ye? A second phase Mo Ye?” Chu Yishui immediately blinked her eyes, and she looked at the extremely weak small fellow. She seemed to want to extend her hand to stroke the small Mo Ye's glossy armor.

If a soul pet trainer didn't have enough experience, he or she could easily mistake a soul pet's phase and stage. Of course, the obstinately small Mo Ye's figure was a bit smaller than normal, so it wasn't strange that the inexperienced Chu Yishui would regard it as the second phase.

“Zhan Ye, the Demon Spirit Butterfly is an agility type soul pet, be careful dealing with it.” Chu Mu said to the small Mo Ye.

Zhan Ye was the nickname Chu Mu gave the Mo Ye. Chu Mu felt that there was nothing that better described the obstinately small Mo Ye's character than the word “[Zhan](#).”

So in Chinese Zhan(战) means to fight. But calling the Mo Ye, Fight Ye, sounds a bit weird, so we'll leave it as Zhan Ye.

“Hou hou~~” Zhan Ye slowly strode forwards, and its two black eyes immediately focused on the resting Demon Spirit Butterfly.

“Brother, aren't you bullying your small Mo Ye? That is Demon Spirit Butterfly is fourth phase second stage.” Chu Yishui felt that Chu Mu could have summoned the wrong soul pet, and she warned Chu Mu.

“Don't worry; it will be able to defeat such an opponent.” A smile rose on Chu Mu's face. He was 100% confident in the small Mo ye.

Chu Yishui was half believing and half skeptical. Her big beautiful eyes watched Chu Mu command the eminently weak and small Mo Ye forward to fight the Demon Spirit Butterfly, which had already exhibited a bit of its demonic aura. No matter how she looked at it, she felt that the small Mo Ye would be knocked flying by a gust of wind.

Indeed...

When the small Mo Ye infuriated the Demon Spirit Butterfly, the Demon Spirit Butterfly used Tornado, and it tossed the Mo Ye aside. The small Mo Ye then heavily fell from the sky onto the ground, causing a Chu Yishui to feel a wave of heartache.

Normally, a third phase fifth stage Mo Ye's build was around 1.5

meters, and the Demon Spirit Butterfly's tornado should not have been able to easily lift up the commander rank Mo Ye's body. However, Chu Mu's Zhan Ye possessed a body that was clearly too weak and small...

Towards Zhan Ye's injury from the fall, Chu Mu didn't pay it any heed. After all, Zhan Ye had the self-healing rate of six times that of other soul pets, and there was a chance that the injury from the Tornado's fall would already be healed before the end of the fight.

"Brother, you can still change soul pets. That small fellow is so pitiful." the more Chu Yishui watched, the more her heart ached.

"Even if I wanted to recall it, it may not want to recall." said Chu Mu.

Indeed, Chu Mu's small Mo Ye had a very obstinate temper. As long as it believed it could defeat its opponent, it absolutely would not give up.

"But..." Chu Yishui was about to persuade him more when she suddenly discovered that Chu Mu's Mo Ye abruptly stepped into a stride. Its speed grew quicker, and its tiny and agile body used the tree to promptly jump over ten meters high!!

Chu Yishui was stunned!

The Mo Ye had just been miserably thrown back by the Demon Spirit Butterfly. How was it that nothing was wrong? It seemed

like it had just been summoned to fight!

Zhan Ye wouldn't rashly launch an attack. The moment it launched attack, it would definitely be a fatal one!

Shattering Claw!!

Its thick, ink armored claws fiercely swatted the Demon Spirit Butterfly's body. One strike to shatter. It seemed to have completely shattered the Demon Spirit Butterfly's wing!!!

“Hou!!” After Zhan Ye finished its attack, its tiger and panther-like body firmly stamped down, and it kicked the Demon Spirit Butterfly out of the air, into the ground.

“Boom!!” Dust instantly flew everywhere! The Demon Spirit Butterfly had been buried deep into the rocky mud, and found it hard to spread its wings and fly again!

Chu Yishui opened her eyes wide as she stared at this scene. For a moment, she couldn't say anything. She did not at all expect this small Mo Ye, under consecutive wounds, to have been able to still burst forth with such strength. In one strike it had defeated the fourth phase second stage Demon Spirit Butterfly.

“This Demon Spirit Butterfly is very average.” Chu Mu called Zhan Ye back, but didn't kill the Demon Spirit Butterfly. However, he didn't let Chu Yishui pick this soul pet.

“Oh, oh...” Chu Yishui still hadn’t recovered from her shock and foolishly nodded her head.

Chapter 39: Territory Crisis (2)

After the fight, Chu Yishui's small mouth stayed agape, because Chu Mu's small Mo Ye was simply a freak! The fellow seemed to have unlimited fighting strength; throughout the entire afternoon, this small Mo Ye didn't stop fighting. No matter if it was a fifth phase servant rank, fourth phase warrior rank, or even stronger soul pets, the small soul pet would still defeat its opponent in battle while staggering around, ready to fall. Yet, not long after defeating its opponent, the small Mo Ye's fighting strength would recover, and it would continue on to fight its next opponent!

Chu Yishui was a Chu Family member, and she wasn't unfamiliar towards Mo Yes. Although she knew Mo Yes possessed extremely formidable self-healing ability, there was none that could compare to a Mo Ye that could continuously fight a whole afternoon and whose wounds would heal so quickly!

“Brother, your Mo Ye is very abnormal. Although it doesn't have much fighting strength, its vitality is too powerful. Without sufficient strength, there's no way to actually injure it.” Chu Yishui said to Chu Mu.

A smile rose on Chu Mu's face. If Zhan Ye wasn't strong, why would Chu Mu sign a soul pact with it? Chu Mu believed that with Zhan Ye's hard work and the training that he gave it, Zhan Ye would definitely become powerful soul pet that surpassed its own species limitation!

Choosing Chu Yishui's soul pet couldn't be done very carelessly and over the course of the afternoon, while Chu Yishui felt that

there were many fairly good soul pets, Chu Mu felt that these soul pets didn't have adequate potential, and wouldn't let Chu Yishui sign a soul pact.

During the day, Chu Mu needed to train the Mo Ye's fighting ability, so he would slowly accompany Chu Yishui as she chose her soul pet. Chu Yishui was also a future hope for the Chu Family, so secretly helping Chu Yishui was also a consideration for the Chu Family's development in the future.

At night, Chu Mu let Chu Yishui fall asleep first, before he quietly left the residence.

Once he left the Chu Family residence, Chu Mu immediately hopped onto the Night Thunder Dream Beast. They sped towards the depths of the exceptionally dangerous Broken Forest...

On the second day, when dawn began to break through the sky, Chu Mu returned from the Broken Forest on his elegant Night Thunder Dream Beast. This time, his gains could be considered fairly good. Chu Mu estimated that the two soul pets he captured could be sold for at least 100,000 gold coins.

“Chi”

Just as Chu Mu was approaching the Chu Family residence, a sudden ball of blue flame peculiarly ascended into the dusky sky. It then blossomed open.

“The Nightmare Palace’s devil fire signal?” Chu Mu was somewhat confused, as he looked towards the place where the ball of flame had shot into the air. He then turned around and immediately rushed towards that place.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast’s top speed was extremely quick. A short while later, Chu Mu had found the location of the Nightmare Palace message and he promptly discovered three Devil Attendants with fifth ranking titles standing on the dusky grass, llike spectres.

The three Devil Attendants saw Chu Mu rush over, and they immediately half-knelt on the ground to greet Chu Mu upon his arrival.

“What’s the matter?” Chu Mu looked at the three Devil Attendants and indifferently spoke.

“Nightmare Prince, your maid had this subordinate deliver you this letter.” the leader of the Devil Attendants respectfully handed over a letter to Chu Mu.

Chu Mu opened the letter, and he read the information Ting Yu was informing him. His eyebrows creased.

In the letter, Ting Yu detailed that while she was going to the auction, the Zhou Family people had proposed a price of 1.2 million gold coins to purchase the first-rate Mo Ye. Ting Yu didn’t hesitate to sell it to them. At the same time, she heard that they seemed to be colluding with the Yang Family, planning to lure a Demon Ant

Emperor to Luoye Mountain Range, and then letting it take over the Chu Family's territory.

Ant Kings were the leader of an ant clan, and could ceaselessly spawn offspring. This kind of Ant King was an extremely dangerous soul pet. Once it became stationed in a certain territory and began to ceaselessly spawn offspring, it would badly ruin the surrounding ecology, causing all soul pets to evacuate. This would then turn the entire territory into an dangerous ant colony!

“These fellows have an undying will to destroy my Chu Family!” sneered Chu Mu.

Since the Yang and Zhou Family's various methods were becoming increasingly many, Chu Mu naturally would not sit and wait. He would also cause them a bit of trouble, and let them taste the flavor of revenge!

“You three, do you know the precise location?” asked Chu Mu.

“This subordinate has already found out through investigation.” said the head Devil Attendant.

Chu Mu nodded his head in satisfaction. It seemed like bringing Ting Yu back with him was a smart idea. Ting Yu was extremely smart, and such matters would be completed with extreme thoroughness. She even thought of Chu Mu wanting to launch a counteroffensive against the Zhou and Yang Families, and she had intentionally left the three Devil Attendants to help Chu Mu.

“I remember that the Yang Family has a piece of territory nearby. Let’s destroy one of their economic lifelines first,” a smile surfaced on Chu Mu’s face. He rode on his Night Thunder Dream Beast, leading the three Devil Attendants directly towards the Yang Family territory.

The three Devil Attendants immediately summoned their soul pets. Like three devoted dark horsemen, they followed closely behind Chu Mu, and rushed headlong through the dusky forest...

After noontime, the sunlight should have been bright and beautiful, but for some unknown reason, a sudden sinister cloud had floated into Luoye Mountain Range. The sinister cloud caused a strange, fiendish gale to blow through the entire mountain range.

“What’s the matter? Just now it was fine, but suddenly there’s a strong wind?!” Chu Yishui used a hand to shield her face, and she looked at the sinister black cloud floating above the mountain and fields in the distance.

“Perhaps it’s the workings of some powerful soul pet.” Chu Mu glanced at the sinister cloud’s position, and a smile surfaced on his face.

The black cloud happened to be over the Yang Family’s territory. It was also a sixth rank territory, but Chu Mu was confident that before long, it would transform into a terrifying ant colony. The environment would suffer from severe destruction, and demonic aura would unceasingly proliferate!

“Eh? Then should we go back?” Chu Yishui timidly asked, as her courage was rather small.

“Don’t worry, we’ll continue looking for a suitable soul pet for you.” Chu Mu was very relaxed as he spoke, and he summoned his small Mo Ye to continue training its fighting.

The Yang Family’s Mansion

“Garbage, you are all pieces of garbage. Such a small matter couldn’t even be done properly. It was screwed up so bad that the Demon Ant Emperor set up its colony on our territory. How is that not going to destroy our territory?!!” the Yang Family head, Yang Kuo, spoke in an extremely indignant manner.

Lang Mancan and Lang Lantian both dropped their heads. Even the Zhou Family’s Zhou Zhi was involved in the scolding.

In reality, the Demon Ant Emperor had been inadvertently discovered in the Broken Forest by the Zhou Family’s people. That Demon Ant Emperor happened to be searching for a new habitat, and the Zhou Family people thought of a brilliant scheme to lure the Demon Ant Emperor without a nest to the Chu Family’s sole sixth rank territory. There, this powerful soul pet would lay waste to that piece of land.

However, who would have expected that the experts who were luring the Demon Ant Emperor towards the Chu Family were mysteriously murdered by the Demon Ant Emperor halfway there.

The Ant Demon King then discovered the Yang Family's fertile territory, and it had unrestrainedly made it its nest. It immediately began to spawn en masse, and in a short two days, at least three hundred Demon Ants had been spawned. If it hadn't been contained in time, even more Demon Ants would have emerged, and it would have been even harder for them to dispose of it.

“What are you still standing there for?! Immediately go and send people to get rid of the Demon Ant Emperor problem. If it destroys that piece of land, I might skin you alive!!” loudly berated the Yang Family head, Yang Kuo. His entire face had turned red with anger.

“Yes yes yes!”

Yang Mancan and Yang Mantian both nodded their heads. The Zhou Family's Zhou Zhi was also extremely sullen. Such a good plan was ultimately ruined, and he ended up being berated by the Yang Family's head.

“Have Yang Lu bring five inner family servants to clean up those things.” said Yang Mancan.

“Yes, this matter wasn't even messed up by us, yet father still scolds us...” Chu Mantian felt a bit aggrieved as he spoke.

The Yang Family's Yang Lu had strength that ranked in the top ten of the Yang Family. His strength was on par with Yang Lengcan, who had gone to Prison Island. His personality was both vicious and cruel, and he was a weapon of the Yang Family. There were many times in the past when it was inconvenient for the

Yang Family to personally appear, and Yang Lu had secretly finished the job for them.

The two people quickly called over Yang Lu and the other five Yang Family inner clan servants. Servants that were able to enter the Yang Family's inner clan meant that they were top tier experts among the Yang Family. It probably wouldn't pose much of a problem for these six people to dispose of the Demon Ant Emperor.

Luoye Mountain Range's Chu Family Residence.

A Light Rhinoceros was wildly rushing through the mountain ranges, and it quickly entered the Chu Family residence. The person riding the Light Rhinoceros happened to be Chu Si.

“Young master, young lady, nothing's happened to you two, right?” Chu Si jumped off the Light Rhinoceros and nervously looked at Chu Mu and Chu Yishui.

“What happened Uncle Blackbeard?” adorably asked Chu Yishui as she blinked her eyes and looked at the heavily bearded Chu Si.

“We've obtained information that a Demon Ant Emperor has invaded in the vicinity. It seemed to have been rushing towards our Luoye Mountain Range. The family head wanted me to come here as fast as possible and bring you two away.” said Chu Si with an anxious face. As he spoke, he intentionally looked in the distance to see if the Demon Ant Emperor's Demon Aura had appeared near the Luoye Mountain Range.

“Oh, in the morning I saw a bit of demon aura condensed into a cloud. However, it should have been in the Yang Family territory. It seems to have taken root there.” Chu Mu nonchalantly said .

“It’s in the Yang Family’s territory?” astonishedly asked Chu Si.

Chu Mu nodded his head and said: “The ant clan’s emperor will discharge sinister clouds and evil air once it has found a habitat.”

Chu Si opened his mouth, and he stared at the extremely calm Chu Mu. Yet, he felt that this matter seemed to be too strange.

“Nothing’s happened to us. Uncle Chu Si can go back first. Once I help Yishui find a soul pet, we will naturally return.” said Chu Mu.

Chu Si still wanted to say something, but Chu Mu very firmly had Chu Si return. Chu Si couldn’t be sure of anything either, and had the Luoye Mountain Range’s family servants properly look over the young lady and young master before hastily departing.

Seeing Chu Si leave, a smile rose on Chu Mu’s face. Since he had already decided on taking revenge against the Yang Family, how could Chu Mu let anything happen to their territory? Moreover, Chu Mu still wanted the Yang Family’s territory to not have the ability to rise back up in value again!!

Watching the sinister clouds on the horizon, Chu Mu silently said:

“The Yang Family has definitely dispatched people to dispose of the Demon Ant Emperor. Hmph, it’s been awhile since I’ve engaged in slaughter!”

Chapter 40: Dark Night High Winds, Killing Night

Dark night and high winds. It was a night for killing.

Guessing that the Yang Clan would dispatch experts into their territory to clean out the Demon Ant Emperor, Chu Mu used his power as a Nightmare Prince and dispatched ten spirit teacher level killers from Gangluo City Nightmare Palace to sneakily set up an ambush in the Yang Clan's territory, waiting for their prey to come.

In the Yang Clan's territory, a house sat in the shallow valley. On two sides of the valley were very steep cliffs. When night came, a black clothed Chu Mu rode his Night Thunder Dream Beast over the cliffsides, and stealthily approached this house of the Yang Clan.

Behind Chu Mu, ten similarly dark dressed Nightmare Palace killers each rode different soul pets over the steep cliffs, also not making a single sound.

“You, go to the front and check if the people that the Yang Clan sent have arrived yet. Everyone else, go in and kill with me. Remember, don't leave a single one alive!” Chu Mu said coldly.

“Yes!!” The ten Nightmare Palace killers immediately nodded and started to move.

How could Chu Mu's massacre simply stop at killing the people that the Yang Clan sent? He decisively killed everyone the Yang Clan had within the territory house, leaving not a single person alive!

Splatters of shocking red blossomed in the dark night. The sounds of people agonizing and soul pets grieving merged together, unceasingly echoing throughout this once silent valley. Blood flowed down the little creeks in the valley, slowly reaching places far away.....

Nightmare Palace killers were all vicious and merciless people. They were put through strict training by Nightmare Palace and were then sent to every corner of the world to act as hired assassins for all sorts of people.

The leader of the ten Nightmare Palace killers was a sixth level title murderer named He Lang. His strength was considered to be at the top ten within Gangluo Palace. This killer was often known for his cold blooded murdering and his sheer amount of people killed. The reason he obeyed the Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince's command was due to Xia Guanghan's orders to have him fully support this Nightmare Prince's attempt to take revenge on Yang Clan.

The Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince's fame was one He Lang had heard of for a long time now. Before, he didn't regard a not even twenty teen as important, and was simply following orders.

But, once he saw the calmness and apathy this teen showed when killing people, He Lang couldn't help but feel astonished. This was

especially so after he realized that Chu Mu had killed even more people than he did. He Lang couldn't help but be alarmed. This youth's killing prowess was even higher than his own, a professional assassin. The Prison Island King sure deserved to be called the Prison Island King-the only man who lived among three thousand prisoners!

“Nightmare Prince, they're here.” The Nightmare Palace killer who was left outside the valley rode his Storm Eagle into the valley and in front of Chu Mu.

After he landed, this Nightmare Palace killer also specially glanced into the corpse covered house and looked amazed. He didn't think that the thirty members of Yang Clan would get massacred in such a short period of time. The corpses of their soul pets almost stacked beyond the walls of the house!

“En, walk forward, we can't let them smell the blood and become alarmed.” Chu Mu nodded, jumping onto his Night Thunder Dream Beast and telling the blood drenched Mo Xie to follow along beside him.

The ten killers also had no hesitation, immediately jumping onto their soul pets' bodies and tightly following Chu Mu. Those with wing type soul pets scouted in front, as they approached the Yang Clan experts who wanted to clean out the Demon Ant Emperor with their blood craze!

In the afternoon, the lazy sunlight fell onto Luoye Mountain

Range. Green rolling hills, vibrant vegetation, and organisms carried on their activities everywhere, creating a sense of calmness and peace.

“Brother, look, the Demon Clouds seem to be getting bigger, will it extend to us?” Chu Yishui looked worryingly at the Yang Clan’s territory far away and said in a small voice.

“It won’t. It’s a high class commander rank Demon Ant Emperor, reaching seventh phase and is very strong, but the extent of its control is but two kilometers. At most, it’ll destroy the Yang Clan’s territory, but it couldn’t possibly reach us here.” Chu Mu said.

“Brother, you know so much!” Chu Yishui immediately smiled, looking on with adoration.

Chu Mu smiled as well.

By day, Chu Mu was the big brother that patiently helped his little female cousin find a new soul pet. By night, Chu Mu would transform into the life-disregarding devil, his hands stained with blood!

Chu Mu was very patient. For almost an entire month, he accompanied his cousin in finding a soul pet, being very picky.

In reality, over the span of the month, Chu Mu would catch some talented warrior rank soul pets almost every night, but Chu Mu wouldn’t give them straight to Chu Yishui.

It wasn't that Chu Mu cared about the money, but Chu Mu knew that a real, powerful soul pet trainer couldn't always rely on the talented soul pets that others gave them. They had to find a soul pet that suited themselves.

If one compared soul pets to fighting weapons, Chu Yishui definitely wasn't suited for heavy long axes or broadswords. She was better suited for light and nimble short swords, which could bring the most out of Chu Yishui's potential.

Over this month, Chu Yishui also learned many things from Chu Mu, like how to judge many soul pets, how to handle battles, how to control one's own soul pet, in addition to the usage of many abilities. This caused Chu Yishui's strength to rise a considerable amount.

Finally, under Chu Mu's approval, Chu Yishui signed a soul pact with a fourth phase fourth stage Demon Spirit Butterfly.

Chu Mu, from the beginning, thought that a smart girl like Chu Yishui would be well suited to handle an agile, swift, and wind controlling soul pet like the Demon Spirit Butterfly. After a month of picking, Chu Mu also picked a Demon Spirit Butterfly of the highest quality.

The Demon Spirit Butterfly that Chu Mu chose was very strong in all aspects, especially the most important one, wind type talent. It had talent akin to Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy's ice type talent.

“Fifth rank demon type, wind type soul crystal?” On the way back to the clan, Chu Yishui looked at Chu Mu’s little gift with surprise, covering her mouth before redirecting her eyes to Chu Mu in disbelief.

“Your Demon Spirit Butterfly has a small weakness; its life force isn’t as strong. You need to slightly strengthen its Demon type, while obviously focus on reinforcing its wind type as well. This soul crystal can somewhat cover this weakness, as well as strengthen its wind type,” Chu Mu said.

Chu Yishui stared blankly at the fifth rank soul crystal in her hands, unable to recover in a short time. Chu Yishui wasn’t stupid. This Demon Spirit Butterfly she caught with Chu Mu’s help was already worth nearly 50,000 gold coins. A warrior rank soul pet reaching 50,000 gold coins was incredible. After all, a normal low class commander rank was only worth 100,000!

Yet now, he gifted another fifth rank duo type soul crystal worth at least 50,000 gold coins. Once the Demon Spirit Butterfly was strengthened, it would be worth 100,000 gold coins, the same as a commander rank!

Maybe, after strengthening it, this Demon Spirit Butterfly still wasn’t a match for a low class commander rank, but don’t forget, it was a warrior rank soul pet, able to be summoned at the Spirit Soldier level. In a similar age group, she had a huge advantage!

“Brother, are you really giving this to me?” Chu Yishui blinked.

“En, keep it a secret, don’t tell anyone else.” Chu Mu said.

“Wa, brother you are so good to Yishui.” Chu Yishui was almost in tears with excitement, passionately hugging Chu Mu’s neck, putting her soft little chest on Chu Mu while planting a big sloppy kiss on Chu Mu’s face.

Chu Mu didn’t expect his little cousin to suddenly attack with a kiss, so he coughed embarrassedly. Though Chu Mu always looked at this girl like a little sister, Chu Yishui was, in reality, fifteen. Under her dress, her fine body gave off an inexperienced allure.

Chu Mu knew that he had no blood relationship with this member of the Chu Clan. When Chu Yishui hugged him with such little restraint, Chu Mu’s thoughts would still run wild.

In one month, Chu Mu of course didn’t purely help Chu Yishui select her soul pet. In this time period, Zhan Ye swiftly rose from the third phase fifth stage to the eighth stage. Chu Mu planned to train it using a sixth rank soul crystal once he returned to Gangluo City.

A third phase soul pet trained using a sixth rank soul crystal was very dangerous. After all, a sixth rank soul crystal had a massive amount of energy. First, the soul pet may not be able to absorb it all completely. Second, it could very easily cause harm to the soul pet. Usually, third phase soul pets were trained with at most a fourth rank soul crystal.

But, Zhan Ye also had the bug type blood. The bug type’s greatest

strength was its powerful life force. A third phase could usually bear a fifth rank soul crystal with some difficulty.

Yet with Zhan Ye, its bug type talent could be said as absolutely overpowered. It's recovery power was six times that of other soul pets, meaning that its life force was also six times that of any similar bug type soul pet. Chu Mu thought using a sixth rank soul crystal wasn't too big of an issue.

Using a sixth rank soul crystal to train Zhan Ye would definitely waste a lot of energy, but to fix Zhan Ye's weakness, Chu Mu still had to steel his heart and use this money.

“Fourth brother, you've probably heard about Luoye Mountain range right? Hahaha, it's simply to satisfying. Those Yang Clan people just had to provoke the Demon Ant Emperor, and now its rooted in their territory, claiming the entire area, while killing everyone living there. After almost twenty days of cleaning, they wasted so many soul pets and finally cleaned out the Demon Ant Emperor. Even so, their entire territory was destroyed, becoming at most a second level territory.” Chu Ning saw that Chu Mu came back and immediately laughed.

“Indeed satisfying.” Chu Mu laughed along.

That night, after Chu Mu killed everyone in the Yang Clan, he led the Demon Ant Emperor into the Yang Clan's house and let it devour all the corpses, destroying all traces of evidence. Though the Yang Clan thought that the entire event was bizarre, in the end, they could only blame the events on the attack of the Demon Ant Emperor.....

Of course, to Chu Mu, it was just a harmless punishment. This was because the real revenge had only just started!!

Chapter 41: Commotion In The Auction House

Chu Mu and Chu Ning chatted for a bit before Chu Ning took Chu Yishui off to train her new soul pet. Chu Mu himself simply left the house and went towards Gangluo City's largest trade fair.

Chu Mu easily found the signal that Ting Yu had left for him, and he found Ting Yu in the VIP room of the trading fair. Ting Yu was just sitting there, patiently waiting for the auction of the Demon Tree's Heart

“Young master, you've returned.” Ting Yu saw Chu Mu walk up and she immediately smiled as she approached to welcome him.

“How have the things been managed?” Chu Mu inquired.

The night he massacred the Yang Clan territorial housing, Chu Mu also conveniently ransacked the entire area for valuables. Because many of the things were easily recognizable as the Yang Clan's, Chu Mu gave them to Ting Yu to convert it all into liquid assets secretly.

“I've sold them all. Young master's share is 2,000,000 gold coins, with the rest being split to the killers.” Ting Yu said.

“En, good.” Chu Mu nodded satisfactorily.

Robbing the Yang Clan once was enough to earn 2,000,000. Such deals were still pretty exciting to Chu Mu.

“Young master, you have 3,200,000 gold coins in total. The Heavenly Demon Tear you wanted has been concocted already, costing 100,000 coins. The sixth rank bug and beast duo type soul crystal was 250,000 here, costing 50,000 more than in nightmare city. Also, with your order, I bought Ink Gemstone worth 250,000 that can improve your armored soul pet’s defense. After all these expenses, there’s still 2,600,000 gold coins leftover. Currently, I’m auctioning for the Demon Tree’s Heart. It seems that there aren’t many rich and overbearing people in Gangluo City. The price is only 700,000 right now, and currently no one has called higher.” Ting Yu said.

“En, take these two rings with you, sell all the soul pets within it. In the last space of the ring is a soul pet for you. Put it in your own soul capture ring and sign a contract with it once you are strong enough.” Chu Mu then gave two soul capture rings to Ting Yu.

“Can’t sign now? Can it be that young master is gifting me a commander rank soul pet?” Ting Yu’s eyes immediately lit up.

Chu Mu nodded and said, “This hunt, I targeted mostly commander rank soul pets. There are a few warrior ranks, but none were fitting for you.”

The auction continued on. Luxurious wood type strengthening soul item such as Demon Tree’s Heart didn’t seem to have much of a market in Gangluo City. What should be worth nearly one million gold was only worth 700,000 currently.

The Demon Tree Heart's effects were very obvious. It was able to make a warrior rank soul pet's plant type strong enough to compare with commander rank soul pets. Such an item was only encounterable by luck and not by demand. Too bad there weren't that many people in Gangluo City willing to pay such a great sum for a mere warrior rank soul pet. With 1,000,000 gold coins, they would probably rather buy a commander rank wood type soul pet.

"Let's do 750,000. Even if we have to remove our soul pet contract, it would take at least a year to recover. Let's buy it still." Yang Clan Head's second son Yang Mantian slowly said.

Yang Mantian had one child named Yang Shang. Yang Shang's strength was just shy of Yang Luobin. He had a warrior rank wood type soul pet. Since the nominations were coming in only two months, to let his son Yang Shang get a better score, Yang Mantian naturally had to painfully pay a big sum!

"800,000 gold!!!"

Yet, what made Yang Mantian's face go dark was, at almost the moment he called for 750,000, the mysterious VIP seat called for 800,000, showing an attitude determined to win.

Yang Mantian wasn't the treasurer of Yang Clan. Especially after the Yang Clan lost a valuable sixth level territory not long ago, his liquid assets had shrunk considerably. The clan head only gave Yang Mantian 500,000 gold to increase his son's strength. For the purchase of the Demon Tree Heart this time, Yang Mantian would

probably have to pay the other 500,000 gold.

“Father, this Demon Tree Heart is very important to me, and its real price is about 1,000,000 gold anyways. We should just skip 850,000, and call for 900,000. Otherwise, if we just keep raising the price like this, we’ll lose even more.” Yang Shang suggested.

Yang Mantian naturally understood such auctioning logic, so he nodded and acted lavishly by calling the high price of 900,000!

Originally, he thought that once 900,000 was called, this Demon Tree Heart would most likely be his. However, at almost the same instant that the auctioneer cried out 900,000, the price of 1,000,000 appeared, immediately subduing all the members of the large clans present!!

This auction was very grand, so many important members of the four big clans were all there. The Yang Clan had the Yang Clan Head’s secondary son, Yang Mantian, leading. The eldest son of the eldest son of the clan head, Yang Luobin, was also there.

The Zhou Clan’s clan head Zhou Ju was the one that came, bringing along Zhou Shen, the young thug-like master of Zhou Clan.

The Qin Clan sent Qing Menger’s father, Qing Chang, and Qing Menger, who wanted to join in on the fun. They also sent many wealthy members that wanted to purchase soul pets, soul items, and soul crystals for their younger generations.

The Chu Clan's representative was the treasurer Chu Tianheng, along with his son Chu Xing and Chu He, who lost his father early in his life.

The Demon Tree Heart really did make everyone's eyes red. Needless to say, however, with anything that costed over 500,000, the Chu Clan would need to think very very carefully, so it was impossible that they would pay such a huge price.

The Qin Clan's younger generation didn't have anyone well-versed with wood type soul pets, so they just symbolically raised the price.

The Zhou Clan didn't want to compete with Yang Clan, so they simply backed off. As for the other rich powers, no one seemed interested.

What should've been a 700,000 coin upset ended up with a high price of 1,000,000, even after Yang Clan jumped prices to show their determination in getting it. Such a situation was definitely rare in Gangluo City. Instantly, everyone was trying to guess which wealthy person was this lavish and courageous!

1,000,000 gold coins wasn't something Yang Mantian could just procure from nowhere. Though he was very angry, Yang Mantian still didn't dare to raise the price any further. He was only able to watch resentfully as such an important soul item was taken by the mysterious rich man.

Today's biggest auction was this Demon Tree Heart, so all the

clans stayed to see who would buy it. After it was bought, they naturally had no interest in staying. They all told their family henchmen to stay and buy the rest of the items at a reasonable price.

“The person in there, someone able to pay 1,000,000 gold without even blinking, isn’t common in Gangluo City, so you must be a reputable person, is it possible to see you?” Yang Mantian’s wasn’t that generous. As he was leaving the auction house, he immediately very “politely” asked to see who it was.

In reality, all the other clans also wanted to know who this lavish man was. After all, 1,000,000 gold was definitely not a small sum.

Yang Mantian stood outside the door, and the other clans also halted their step, watching this position.

The door slowly opened, and a huge commotion started in the auction house as no one thought that the person who bought the Demon Tree Heart with 1,000,000 gold was a pretty girl that didn’t even look 20!

Yang Mantian was slightly struck dumb, his eyes staring at this apathetic feeling woman, and he couldn’t say anything for a long time.

“Any problem?” Ting Yu looked up and at Yang Mantian, her tone indifferent.

Though Ting Yu herself only had a third level title in Nightmare Palace, she had still met countless powerful characters within the palace. In a small place like Gangluo City, Ting Yu was indeed enough to deal with these people.

“This young lady, I am Yang Luobin and I just felt a rush of impulse to get to know a pretty lady like you, so.....” Yang Clan’s eldest grandson Yang Luobin reacted pretty quickly and he stepped up, putting on a gentlemanly appearance.

Yet, just as this self-believed charming person stepped up, the Devil Attendant behind Ting Yu stepped up between Ting Yu and Yang Luobin with a body full of cold air, saying with a frigid tone, “Dare to take one more step forward and you will die!”

Yang Luobin’s smile immediately went stiff. Feeling this Spirit Teacher’s killing intent, he couldn’t help but back off.

The Yang Clan’s people all stared dumbfoundedly at the two Devil Attendants behind Ting Yu!

Yang Mantian also knew how to recognize people. From the coldness given off by the two Devil Attendants he knew they definitely weren’t anyone ordinary. Even in the Yang Clan, they could be considered to be top tier experts. The fact that such people were like servants following behind this girl was enough to show this mysterious girl’s different identity!

“If you have no issues, just get out of the way, don’t block my path!” Ting Yu said coldly to the people of Yang Clan.

Yang Mantian also knew that, in Gangluo City, there sometimes were powerful figures that passed by, some which even the Yang Clan couldn't afford to offend. Yang Mantian didn't want to cause trouble, especially with someone so obviously holding a position that wasn't simple.

Ting Yu naturally put on an arrogant look and walked past the ill-willed Yang Clan. The two Devil Attendants didn't even need to disguise themselves. As killers, even under everyone's watch, they were still their frigid and imposing selves, tightly following behind Ting Yu.

Ting Yu exited everyone's view, as high-profile as ever, before people recovered from their disbelief. Everyone except for one person, who still stared at Ting Yu who had two experts guarding her.....

This person was of course Qing Menger. Qing Menger was also the only person to know that Chu Mu was a member of Nightmare Palace.

"Menger, what's wrong?" Qing Chang looked at Qing Menger's weird expression and questioned.

Qing Menger shook her head and said to her father, "Father, you go back first, I want to look around a bit longer."

"Sure, don't stay for too long." Qing Chang didn't think much and left with his subordinates, specially leaving a few henchmen to

accompany Qing Menger.

“Little sister Menger, did you specially stay because there was something you wanted to tell me?” Yang Shang also didn’t leave immediately. Seeing Qing Menger stay, he immediately moved closer and said solicitously.

Qing Menger was the wooing target of many youth in Gangluo City. She was counted as Gangluo City’s little angel. There were four reasons why Qing Menger was so popular and well received within young people.

Number one-Qing Menger was naturally gorgeous. There almost wasn’t a single girl that could compete with her looks.

Number two-Qing Menger herself was the princess of Qing Clan and had a noble position. If anyone married her, they would gain the support of a big power like the Qin Clan.

Number three-Qing Menger was the Luo Region Sect’s famous female disciple. The Luo Region sect wasn’t something a little Gangluo City could compare to. Even the Old Yang Family’s reputation wasn’t as great as Luo Region Sect’s, so Qing Menger was the target of many people for social climbing.

Number four-Qing Menger’s character was something everyone knew; good temper, never delicate, and being around her felt like being immersed in spring wind. This was the reason she was called little angel by many clan teens.

The reason Qing Menger stayed in the trade fair was obviously not because of this narcissist in front of her. After rolling her eyes towards Yang Shang, Qing Menger walked towards the room where the mysterious girl exited.

Yang Shang was treated without interest, so naturally he didn't follow, in case he made the little angel dislike him.

“Mister Chu, you're in there, right?” Qing Menger specially sent away her subordinates before walking into the room.

Chu Mu was indeed in the room. Telling Ting Yu to deal with all trading matters was so he didn't need to overly expose himself too early. But Chu Mu also knew that Qing Menger had definitely guessed his identity, so when he heard her call for him, he didn't hide, but instead walked straight out.

“What's the issue?” Chu Mu looked at Qing Menger and said.

“I.....I just wanted to.....” When Qing Menger looked at Chu Mu, her face reddened a little, especially when she remembered how she called Chu Mu a scoundrel of Nightmare Palace right in front of him.

“I still need you to help keep me my identity as a member of Nightmare Palace a secret.” Chu Mu said plainly to Qing Menger. After speaking, he didn't stay for any longer, and he walked straight towards the exit of the trading center.

Qing Menger used to be very good friends with Chu Mu. Once the news that Chu Mu was assassinated had spread, Qing Menger also cried for a long time.

Four years passed, and Qing Menger had already slowly forgotten this painful memory. However, she didn't expect that Chu Mu would suddenly appear in front of her, and had changed so much in four years. Qing Menger still found all of this hard to believe.

Over the past few days, Qing Menger always couldn't sleep well. Former events always floated into her mind, happy and pure.

Then, she thought of the few days in the forest gap, and she always felt a weirdness in her heart. Thinking about it over and over again, Qing Menger felt that what she said in the forest gap must have hurt Chu Mu, or else Chu Mu wouldn't have refused to visit her a single time in the month after.

Realizing this, Qing Menger felt like she had to apologize to Chu Mu. It must have been very difficult for Chu Mu to escape death, and he was probably forced to join Nightmare Palace too.....

Today, after seeing Ting Yu, Qing Menger guessed that Chu Mu would probably be here. The smart girl quickly guessed that Chu Mu didn't want to easily reveal his Nightmare Palace identity, so she made Ting Yu cope with the crowd

Yet, when Qing Menger ran over to apologize, what she saw was an unbelievably apathetic face. This teen reeked of a detached attitude. When those black pupils stared at her, they didn't show

any emotion. This disregard and aloofness made Qing Menger feel unprecedentedly wronged.

If Chu Cheng was just purely Chu Cheng, Qing Menger might not have felt this bad. But the teen in front of her was her best friend from four years ago, Chu Mu. Remembering that this friend of hers was now treating her like a stranger, Qing Menger couldn't control her emotions any longer, and tears quickly wet her face as she started sobbing quietly.....

Chu Mu's hearing was very good. Hearing Qing Menger's cat-like murmuring, he turned around and saw a beautiful girl standing elegantly, with a face stained with tears, looking pitiful.

“How are you crying again.....” Chu Mu felt wordless. Didn't he say nothing at all? How was she unfathomably crying again.

Qing Menger felt Chu Mu spoke very strangely, not trying to comfort and instead being impatient, and started crying even harder.

“You're older now, yet you still cry, this is a public place, have you no shame?” . Chu Mu walked up and wanted to wipe the tears off her face. Yet, he suddenly remembered that she had called him a scoundrel, so his movement froze and, after a while, he put his hand back down.

In reality, Chu Mu didn't mind Qing Menger's previous sentence. If not for the exact same situation now, Chu Mu totally wouldn't have remembered. Qing Menger was just overthinking things.

Being called shameless, Qing Menger's face immediately became red again, wanting to cry, yet was too shy to continue.....

“Despicable, how dare you bully my sister Menger, kid, you don't want to live anymore!!”

Suddenly, a rude voice intruded. Right after, a dark yellow clothed Yang Shang casted Wind Riding towards them, looking like he wanted to ferociously slam into Chu Mu.

Chu Mu stood without moving as Yang Shang rushed over. Suddenly, a star-like radiance appeared on Chu Mu. This radiance instantly morphed into a translucent soul armor right before Yang Shang came into contact with Chu Mu, creating a force that sent the angry Yang Shang flying!

Sixth level soul armor, valued at 5,000,000 gold. How could such a treasure be affected by a trash-like Yang Shang. After Yang Shang slammed into the soul armor, he flew back and straight into the auction house, falling right at the auctioneer's feet. This caused the sexy auctioneer to cry out in alarm and create a wave of panic among the people who stayed!

Qing Menger was dazed, astonishingly looking at Chu Mu's slowly fading Starlight Soul Armor.

“That.....that's soul armor!”

Soul clothing was definitely the most luxurious of all items. Especially those made for soul pet trainers. Even Qing Menger only saw monumentally important people in Luo Region Sect wear such items. Additionally, Qing Menger could tell that the soul armor on Chu Mu was definitely not just the normal quality third or fourth level stuff!!

“Bas.....bastard!!” Yang Shang’s face was black with anger. Under everyone’s shocked gazes, he suddenly stood up and started summoning his soul pet!

A blood red sign slowly projected onto the floor. A ghastly blood light rose from the symbol. Immediately after, a huge Blood Winged Trioptic Beast majestically appeared. Its dense air of blood crazily diffused through the entire auction house!

“Fifth phase fourth stage Blood Winged Trioptic Beast!!!”

“The Yang Clan really put down a lot of money, giving such a soul pet to their third generation!!!”

After the beast of blood appeared, it caused another uproar of alarmed sounds!

“Properly teach this guy a lesson!” Yang Shang didn’t even see what Chu Mu used to push him off. This auction place still had many large clan members. Being hit in front of so many people, where would Yang Shang put his face, especially in front of his beloved Qing Menger!

The fifth phase fourth stage Blood Winged Trioptic Beast's appearance immediately subdued everyone. Everyone looked as the deadly soul pet fly over their heads, yet they didn't even dare to breathe too loudly.

“What's the matter?” Chu Tianheng who stayed in the auction area immediately furrowed his brows, watching the direction where the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast flew.

“It's.....it's young master Chu Mu!” A clan henchman immediately recognized Chu Mu and cried out.

“What!” Chu Tianheng's expression changed. However, watching the fifth phase fourth stage Blood Winged Trioptic Beast approach Chu Mu, there wasn't enough time for him to summon his own soul pet to rescue Chu Mu!

Watching the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast flying over full of killing intent, Chu Mu's expression was still stern, and he very calmly casted an incantation.....

If it were before, if someone attacked Chu Mu, Qing Menger would definitely be the first to stand up for him. Yet, maybe after the days in the forest gap, every time they met danger, Qing Menger didn't view it as danger anymore, because all she had to do was hide behind Mister Chu, and she wouldn't even have to summon a soul pet before the danger was resolved.

So, this time, Qing Menger still didn't summon a soul pet, completely habitually hiding behind Chu Mu.

“Mo Xie!”

Finishing the incantation, the fireless Mo Xie quickly appeared in front of Chu Mu. Her ridiculous and gorgeous six tails completely opened up, becoming a scary Six Tail Lock and firmly slamming into the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast!!

Mo Xie had already reached the sixth phase fourth stage, so the power of the Six Tailed Lock was even stronger. As the tails swept past, the massive Trioptic Beast flew back just like its owner, arcing through the auction house and landing in the centre, rolling over to Yang Shang!

The incomparably strong Blood Winged Trioptic Beast was blasted straight out of the sky. At this moment, the entire house went silent!!

“It’s the rare Six Tailed Demon Fox!!!”

“What stage and phase is this Demon Fox, why can’t I tell.....”

“I think its a fifth phase sixth stage Six Tailed Demon Fox!”

After the silence, discussion erupted everywhere!

Though Mo Xie extended her body, she still kept her Pitiful Appearance’s disguise. Though she was sixth phase fourth stage,

she disguised herself as fifth phase sixth stage, not even casting her evil fire demon flames.

“Chu Mu!!”

“Young master Chu Mu.....”

Chu Clan immediately ran in front of Chu Mu, yet everyone stopped midway and looked astonishedly at Chu Mu’s Six Tailed Demon Fox!

“Chu Mu??”

“The Chu Clan’s fourth son’s son?”

“Chu Mu, wasn’t it the guy that had his first soul pet run away, causing him to be unable to summon his own soul pet even at the age of fifteen?”

“Didn’t he die four years ago?”

Hearing Chu Mu’s name, the crowd’s discussion were renewed with vigour!!

The matter of Chu Mu, almost everyone in Gangluo City knew. Seeing the Chu Clan calling this astonishing teen as Chu Mu, they were even more shocked!

Chapter 42: Let Blood Rain

“Everyone get the hell over here and kill this guy for me!!”

Yang Shang clearly hasn't realized who Chu Mu was, simply thinking that he was a collateral relative of Chu Clan. Seeing the Chu Clan's people congregating, he got even angrier, directly commanding his clan henchmen to help him take revenge.

The Yang Clan was this Gangluo City's owner, so the Yang Clan's henchmen were also absolutely unrestrained. Especially with their hurt young master, these guys immediately summoned their own soul pets, wanting to start a big fight right there in the auction house!

“Heng, trying to take advantage of Chu Clan's lack of people?” The forever calm and collected boss Chu Tianheng finally became angry, as he casted an incantation and summoned his own soul pet!

An ink colored symbol blossomed under Chu Tianheng's feet, exploding with a dark light. Following this, a dense aura spread from the dark light, covering the entire trading fair in a split second!!

Within the dark light, a tiger-like organism appeared, covered in distinctly angular armor. Its powerful body suddenly took a step forward, and that area of the auction house tangibly shook!!

“Seventh phase seventh stage fighting beast Mo Ye!!!”

The moment Chu Tianheng summoned his soul pet, the Mo Ye's aura subdued everyone!!

A seventh phase seventh stage commander rank soul pet's aura was scary. The Yang Clan's henchmen's soul pets didn't even dare move under the aura of the Mo Ye!

“People, please don't be rash. If there's an issue, let's sit down and talk it out, or just fight outside. Why fight in my auction house? If you break anything, you would have to reimburse us, and you would also make it hard for us to do business.....”

Just then, seemingly from nowhere, a middle aged man appeared in between the two parties and talked to Yang Clan and Chu Clan with a smile.

After Chu Tianheng saw this middle aged man, he regained his cool and quickly returned to his original unflustered self, retracting his Mo Ye that emitted a feeling of strength from its entire body.

“You should also retract your soul pets, in case you make my place smell horrible. After you retract them, just leave with your unreasonably trouble-making young master, Yang Shang.” Seeing that Chu Tianheng had already retracted his soul pet, the middle aged man turned again and asked the Yang Clan people.

The Yang Clan henchmen were obviously also afraid of the middle aged man, causing them to start to advise their young

master Yang Shang.

Even worse, Yang Shang ground his teeth, looking like he couldn't swallow his anger. Yet, due to this being the auction house, he knew that if he were too impudent, he would bring his clan lots of trouble, so he could only retract his soul pet as well.

“So it's the trash that died four years ago, I didn't think you were still feebly living, and can actually summon a soul pet now. Heng heng, even if you can summon soul pets now, you're still trash. There will be a day where you will die a horrible death!” When Yang Shang walked by Chu Mu, he didn't even bother to disguise his maliciousness, acting aggressively, even in front of all of the other Chu Clan members.

Chu Tianheng could bear many things, yet watching his younger generation getting insulted was something he couldn't. Just as he was about to teach the impolite Yang Shang a lesson, however, Chu Mu stood up in front of him.

“Uncle, let it go.” Chu Mu said lightly.

“Young master, such events can't be accommodated carelessly, or our Chu Clan members would only receive even more insults.” A clan henchman said slightly indignantly.

Chu Mu shook his head and retorted apathetically, “I didn't say I was going to accommodate it.”

Chu Tianheng opened his mouth and wanted to say something, but after seeing Chu Mu's unperturbed look despite the insults or praise, he felt that something was off.

Chu Mu didn't bicker about this event, and he clearly chose to back down. Yet, Chu Tianheng felt that Chu Mu, with his eyes void of emotions, didn't look like he was enduring it. Instead, it looked like he just completely didn't care to bicker with Yang Shang.

In reality, even Chu Tianheng misunderstood Chu Mu.

Chu Mu was now a person even more terrifying than a killer. Fellows like Yang Shang would definitely be dead, so what would it matter if they let him be arrogant for a while?

“So this is Chu Tiancheng's son Chu Mu, turns out he is a fine young man, that's good.” The middle aged man eyed Chu Mu and slowly spoke.

Chu Mu looked up and reciprocated the gaze, but only nodded slightly, not even saying anything. When he did speak, he said to Chu Tianheng, “Uncle, I still have business, I'll leave first.”

“Sure, I'll let my subordinates follow you.” Chu Tianheng said.

“No need, it's more convenient to do things alone.” Chu Mu said.

After finishing that, Chu Mu directly left the auction house.

When walking on the streets, Chu Mu very quickly realized that someone was following him. Turning around, he saw Qing Menger following with her head down behind him, looking like a child who knew she did something wrong.

“I still have things to do; I’ll have a nice chat with you when I have time again.” Chu Mu looked at the gorgeous Qing Menger and smiled lightly.

“Sorry, I know that you didn’t want to reveal your strength too early.....” Qing Menger said quietly.

“Don’t worry. Some people in my clan also knew, so some traitors must have spread the information to Yang Clan already.” Chu Mu said, not worried about it.

“Oh, then.....then will you attend the Recommendation this year? With your power, you will definitely beat everyone.” Qing Menger said.

Chu Mu, because he once lost one soul and two soul pet spaces, received all sorts of insults and ridicule. Qing Menger had always felt sorry for Chu Mu, because she knew that in terms of soul power talent and soul pet knowledge, no one was Chu Mu’s parallel among his age group.

Now, Chu Mu’s power could only be described as tyrannical. If Chu Mu decided to compete in the Recommendation, he would definitely sweep everyone away, making everyone look at him in a

different light!

Qing Menger very much looked forward to Imagining the expressions of the Yang Clan and the Zhou Clan when they saw the once worthless Chu Mu defeat their so called number one expert. She also wanted to see the scene where Chu Mu defeated everyone who once laughed at him.

“I guess I’ll attend.....I’m leaving.” Chu Mu waved his hand and didn’t say anymore to Qing Menger, slowly walking into a deep alley.

Qing Menger still stood there. Looking at Chu Mu and his drastically changed personality, she suddenly really wanted to know how Chu Mu had lived over the past four years.....

His aloof back image slowly merged into the deep shadows in the alleyways. Just as Qing Menger turned and left, Qing Menger vaguely noticed two black shadows appear behind Chu Mu, following behind Chu Mu like emotionless attendants. They disappeared into the alley along with Chu Mu!

“This is.....” Qing Menger looked at the deep yet now empty gallery in astonishment as a strange feeling rose in her heart. She wanted to chase up and ask what was the matter, but she remembered that Chu Mu was now a member of the Nightmare Palace with mysterious conduct, so she thought it was better that she didn’t ask too much.....

Night fell and darkness shrouded the entire Gangluo City. Not

sure if it was the black clouds or the night fog traveling around the region, there was no starlight or sight of moon that night, making it seem particularly cold and dark.

On the south side of Gangluo City, on a spire like lone structure, a dark clothed nefarious figure sat on the ledge of the tower, his eyes shining with a different glint in the incomparably dark night.

Yet beside this silhouette, the silver white and smooth-furred Six Tailed Demon Fox sat silently beside Chu Mu, her white pupils displaying the same emotion as her owner.

“Nightmare Prince, the information you’ve asked for has been collected. The Yang Clan has a total of 70 bases and five sixth level and above territories. Each position has been assigned a foreman for constant monitoring!” An unpredictable voice suddenly floated through the night without any forewarning.

“Has the blocking of the news been done well?” Chu Mu didn’t turn around, lightly speaking to the air.

“Incomplete, but when we start acting, we can ensure that no news of it will be leaked.”

“Begin the operation after ten days. First, send people to closely monitor the Yang Clan’s recent fund allocation. If there are any discoveries, immediately report them!” Chu Mu said.

“Yes!!”

A shadow slowly rose into the air and disappeared into the thick black clouds.....

Sitting on the over one hundred meter tall ancient structure, Chu Mu's eyes looked over the deep night of Gangluo City, and his mouth traced out a demonic and imposing smile.

“Let's start a rain of blood to make this city more interesting!”

The third day

The auction house revealed a message.

It was this message that made the entire Gangluo City shake!!

Gangluo City's auction house usually hosted one auction a month, auctioning off 20 or so items and soul pets, rarely exceeding 2,000,000 gold in net value. Anything past that was considered quite grand already.

The terrifying thing was, in ten days, there would be an auction worth over 10,000,000 gold coins!!!

With a net value of over 10,000,000 gold coins, it meant that, in this auction, every item was worth over 500,000 gold!!

500,000 gold was definitely not a small sum to any family. This

meant that each item in the auction was worth it for every family to fight for. A 500,000 gold item would usually be the anchor of an auction, but for this particular one, every item was worth the value of an anchor item in a normal auction!

Of course, it definitely wasn't possible that every single item was worth 500,000 gold. Instead, it was because the auction house had a treasure that could make every clan in Gangluo City gasp— a sixth level soul armor!!

Sixth level soul armor!!! An ultra treasure worth 5,000,000 gold alone!!

Chapter 43: Devil Tree Demon

Heavy hitting news. In the entire Gangluo City, it had been a long time since a treasure worth 5,000,000 gold had appeared-especially a sixth level soul armor!

Sixth level soul armor had a great meaning. As long as such armor was worn on a soul pet trainer, by adding on a little more defensive ability, the defensive ability would easily reach the seventh level. A seventh level defense could put an end to almost all the attacks from soul pets under the sixth phase commander rank. Even soul pets above the sixth phase commander rank needed to continuously attack to break this defence. Which soul pet trainer wouldn't desire such a supreme protective treasure?

Once such a shocking message spread, almost every family and wealthy merchant immediately went to the auction house to validate the claim. After validating the claim, they all got the same answer: this news was completely real!!

What shocked the powerful people of Gangluo City even more was, other than this incomparably rare sixth level soul armor, the auction house was also selling many young commander rank soul pets, and low quality ones were highly unlikely to appear. Each soul pet was worth over 500,000 gold coins!!

There were many times a high quality commander rank soul pet was the anchor of the show, bringing all the clans and wealthy merchants to fight over it. This time, however, there were plenty of such high quality commander rank soul pets!!

With such a sensationally big event, how could Gangluo City's important people not ask for the identity of the person that was supplying such expensive treasures.

The auction house naturally had to protect this information, and they refused to divulge any information. Of course, the auction house knew that someone who could offer these items wasn't anyone simple, so it was impossible for the managers of the auction house to put themselves in a predicament over a little bribery for the information!

A wave of competition washed through the entirety of Gangluo City. Including many people from factions of other cities, they had all come forth already-all for this astonishing auction house!

Such a luxurious auction, if one wanted to get some treasure, one naturally had to invest a huge sum of money. Especially for the 5,000,000 gold coin sixth level soul armor, if anyone wanted this treasure, every clan had to gather funds from all their industries in different cities, or else 5,000,000 gold wasn't a sum that one could easily get.

Of course, if it were just 5,000,000 gold, a rich family like the Yang Clan might have the capability to pay straight from their pocket. Yet, this auction also had many commander rank soul pets of high quality. If those fell into the other clans' hands, the Yang Clan would definitely feel some threat. The Yang Clan naturally didn't want to show any weakness, so they also had to gather funds from all the different business they owned!

“Young master, won't it be dangerous if you do this? If the Yang

Clan isn't willing to buy this sixth level soul armor, wouldn't all our plans become fruitless?" Ting Yu was worried.

"Currently, the Yang Clan has always been the single biggest faction within Gangluo City, so they must have a fortune saved up to buy treasure. This sixth level soul armor, they definitely need it. Of course, this wasn't the main reason. In reality, out of the entire Gangluo City, only the Yang Clan has the power to buy this sixth level soul armor....." Chu Mu said.

The Chu Clan was currently in a recession. Anything past 500,000 gold was beyond their consideration. Chu Mu believed that in this auction, the Chu Clan would definitely gather some money because no matter what, they still had to strengthen their clan. However, it was impossible for them to buy the sixth level soul armor. They couldn't even raise the price, because everyone knew that though Chu Clan could bring out such a sum, it would severely affect the operation of their clan.

Qin Clan

"What, don't tell me we have to submissively just give away such treasure?" Qin Chang said, puzzled.

The Qin Clan's clan head was Qin Chang. In the clan, the majority of things were done his way. Qin Chang knew that the Luo Region Sect was a very large power, and though Qin Menger received a lot of love from her elders, because of her lack of background, she would often get treated wrongly. Thus, this time, the Qin Clan's clan head was prepared to steel his heart and compete for this sixth level soul armor so that Qin Menger could

defend herself with it.

Qin Menger was Qin Clan's biggest hope. As long as she got some sort of position within the Luo Region sect, Yang Clan and Zhou Clan wouldn't dare to even think of touching the Qin Clan, so the entire clan viewed her with importance. If the clan head insisted on buying this sixth level soul armor for her, not many people would oppose it.

“Father, we can't touch this thing. Just listen to me for once, don't even consider the sixth level soul armor” Qin Menger bit her lips and said.

Not long ago, Chu Mu had already sent Qin Menger a message telling her to persuade her family not to contemplate buying the sixth level soul armor. Though Qin Menger didn't know what Chu Mu wanted to do, from the looks of things, it definitely wasn't something small. It was very likely related to the Nightmare Palace, so Qin Menger didn't want her family to get pulled into the struggle.

Qin Chang looked at his worried daughter and slowly said, “Is it that you heard something from your fellow students in Luo Region Sect...?”

Qin Menger was just worrying over being unable to find an excuse, so she immediately nodded.

“If so, we should quietly tell Chu Clan, in case they fall into it as well.” Qin Chang said.

The Qin Clan and Chu Clan were good friends, so the Qin Clan would always help the Chu Clan from behind the scenes. After all, if the Chu Clan were completely eliminated from Gangluo City, then Zhou and Yang Clans would slowly eat away at the Qin Clan. This principle of interdependence was something Qin Chang understood.

“En.” It’s not like Qin Menger could tell him that the Chu Clan knew already, so she just nodded again.

“This sixth level soul armor is a rare opportunity, we must take it!” The Yang Clan’s clan head Yang Kuo said solemnly.

“But we just lost a sixth level territory.....” The Yang Clan’s many clan members thought that buying this sixth level soul armor was honestly too luxurious.

Yang Luobin stood beside the clan head Yang Kuo, yet he said nothing. The purchase of the sixth level soul armor was undoubtedly for him, the clan heir. As long as he got this sixth level soul armor, then he would stand undefeated in the Recommendation!

The Yang Clan clan head Yang Kuo had clearly decided in his heart already. Such a rare treasure already had a starting price of 3,000,000 gold. If the Yang Clan didn’t compete and another clan steeled their heart to buy it, the Yang Clan’s number one ranking would very likely be overthrown. If this thing appeared in any

other city for sale, then Yang Kuo wouldn't even consider it. But in Gangluo City, he definitely couldn't let it fall into another clan's hands!

“Assemble the money and prepare for this auction.” Yang Kuo took all the power, and didn't give any other member a say in it.

After the Yang Clan meeting ended, Yang Shang's face became gloomy. When everyone left, he muttered, “His heart hurt when he spent 1,000,000 gold for my Demon Tree heart, yet he is willing to spend 5,000,000 gold to buy a soul armor for that guy, truly hateful!!”

“Yang Shang, what are you muttering?” Yang Luobin looked at Yang Shang's unnatural expression and asked.

Yang Shang naturally couldn't expose his jealous side to Yang Luobin, so he immediately thought of something else, “I was angry about that Chu Clan trash.”

“You mean Chu Mu?” Yang Luobin had already known about Chu Mu not being dead, and also knew that Chu Mu seemed to be able to summon soul pets now.

Chu Mu lost a soul, so if he reached the spirit soldier rank and had two souls, it was natural for him to be able to summon a soul pet.

“En, that kid, taking advantage of me being unprepared, made

me lose face at the auction. I can't not take revenge for this!" Yang Shang said fiercely.

"I can bully him to death once, so I can bully him to death twice. Even if you don't want to deal with him, I wouldn't let him live long." Yang Luobin laughed coldly.

"The Chu Clan is on guard already, wouldn't it be hard to bully him to death?" Yang Shang opened his mouth and asked.

"Wouldn't that be easy, just force him to sign up for the Recommendation. Which Chu Clan trash would dare to interfere and protect him in the Recommendation competition?" Yang Luobin started laughing.

"Wouldn't that be difficult? Even if they got rid of that dunce, the Chu Clan wouldn't easily let him compete." Yang Shang said.

"Don't worry, I have a way." Yang Luobin said.

Chu Clan Courtyard

Chu Mu at the moment didn't care much about the auction, instead putting all his efforts into training his soul pet. After all, the reallocation of money took time. Once Yang Clan mustered enough money, it was Chu Mu's massacre time!!

The effects of the Heavenly Demon Tear was quite obvious. Once Chu Mu gave it to his Night Thunder Dream Beast, it immediately

rose a stage, and its following growing speed became noticeably faster as well.

Of course, just using the Heavenly Demon Tear was not enough for the Night Thunder Dream Beast to jump to the sixth phase. It still needed to fight. Without fighting, the Night Thunder Dream Beast's maturing rate would still be very slow.

“Demon Tree's Heart, I've heard this thing even had a chance to cause wood type soul pets to have a species mutation?” Chu Mu looked through books about the Demon Tree Heart.....

Species mutations were very rare, but in this massive world, there were still a few special soul items that could cause species with potentials and talents way past their own species to mutate. However, such special soul items were usually only discovered and couldn't be sought after. They often also only worked on one specific type of soul pet.

Chu Mu grafted the Demon Tree Heart into his Devil Tree Battle Soldier. Without any coincidences, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier wouldn't have any species mutation. After all, the chances were very very low, and Chu Mu couldn't always be lucky.

Though no species mutation happened, this Devil Tree Battle Soldier's wood type powers overcame a great change. Now, casting a seventh level wood type techniques wasn't an issue. Of course, a wood type soul pet's most important quality was still its life force and its defensive ability.

“It gave birth to Demon Wood Skin, which had a defense of the seventh rank intermediate stage, and Demon Wood Roots, which improved its attack significantly too.....” Looking at the Demon Wood Skin of his Devil Tree Battle Soldier, a smile floated onto Chu Mu’s face.

The Demon Tree Heart’s strengthening caused his Devil Tree Battle Soldier to grow an even stronger weapon and defensive skin layer – Demon Wood!

Demon Wood was similar to Mo Xie’s Demon Fire Evil Flames. It wasn’t a species’ special power, but as long as one had it, it could directly increase a soul pet’s fighting strength!!

Playing on the principle of “strike while the iron’s hot”, once the Devil Tree Battle Soldier grew Demon Wood, Chu Mu quickly used his saved sixth level soul crystal and strengthened it.

The Demon Tree Heart was created naturally, and the soul crystal was from a wood type soul pet. These two energies didn’t conflict, so the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, without any mishap, grew to sixth phase second stage!!

After 1,000,000 gold’s worth of strengthening, the wood type of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier could contend against many high class commander ranks!

Additionally, with its powerful defense and life force, maybe, by only summoning his Devil Tree Battle Warrior, he could sweep through most opponents in the Recommendation!

Chapter 44: Mo Ye, A Technique That Drove Opponents Crazy

The next task was naturally to train the obstinately little Mo Ye, who Chu Mu had entrusted with lots of hope!

There also happened to be two things that could strengthen the Mo Ye. First was the Ink Gemstone that could strengthen the bug type defensive armor. A thing like the Ink Gemstone was a perfect fit for the Mo Ye, a soul pet that also owned an ink colored battle armor.

Now, Zhan Ye's ink armor was approximately at the fourth rank intermediate stage. Such defensive talent should count as normal, but Chu Mu believed that in the long term, after the Mo Ye's abnormal bug type talent was developed, his ink armor's defensive capability would definitely increase significantly.

The Ink Gemstone was used similarly to a soul crystal. All one had to do was make a soul pet swallow it, and then let a soul pet trainer use his remembrance to control the energy inside slowly into the soul pet's armor.

The Mo Ye's current phase wasn't high. Originally, it should've been very hard for it to absorb such a high energy Ink Gemstone. However, Chu Mu felt that the little Mo Ye couldn't be trained normally. If he did, the Mo Ye would definitely be a useless member in battle.

Only in the early stages, by utilizing the Mo Ye's six times life

force and regeneration to undergo training methods that surpassed the soul pet's limits, could a better effect be reached.

The Ink Gemstone's effects were very outstanding, raising the little Mo Ye's defensive armor straight to the fourth rank complete stage. He believed that once he let the little Mo Ye absorb the sixth rank soul crystal, its defense would definitely go up to the fifth rank, even though he was only at the fourth phase.

A sixth rank soul crystal had an immense amount of energy. When Chu Mu lead the energy into Zhan Ye's body, Zhan Ye immediately showed a painful expression.

“If you can't withstand it let's call it off and take it step by step.” Seeing the little Zhan Ye in pain and on the verge of shattering its armor, Chu Mu also felt that maybe he was too hurried.

“Houhou” Little Zhan Ye immediately let out a roar, as if very worried Chu Mu would stop. It actually directly closed its eyes, and the painful expression on its face disappeared!

Chu Mu could tell that the little Zhan Ye sorely hoped to become stronger. Chu Mu knew that it had great willpower, so he clenched his jaw and said, “Don't worry, after you withstand this, your body will no longer be weak and your power will raise by another level!”

“Houhou!!” Little Zhan Ye immediately roared again.

The immense beast type energy flowed in, and the little Zhan

Ye's ink armor started shattering completely, as if he were inflating from within!!!

The little Mo Ye was only a bit past a meter big, but under the use of this sixth rank soul crystal, the little Mo Ye's body started tearing and growing!!

When beast type soul pets changed body shapes, their bones usually grew first, leaving the muscles and other body parts to slowly extend on their own.

Yet, this Mo Ye was completely different. It was like some item forcefully opened the Mo Ye's body from inside. Even its joint areas were completely torn apart, leaving only blood and vessels to connect them!!

Chu Mu felt that the gust of beast type energy may be too large and was just about to stop.

However he suddenly discovered that Mo Ye's torn joints were quickly growing muscle and cartilage!!

The ripped open body actually started to swiftly grow new limbs, cartilage, bones, blood, muscle, skin, and armor, all of them growing with visible speed!

Bug type Broken Limb Rebirth!!!

Chu Mu saw this and went dumb!!

Zhan Ye had actually learned the powerful bug type move, Broken Limb Rebirth!!

A bug type soul pet's greatest advantage was its resilient life force. If one didn't completely destroy its vital parts, it would quickly recover. Additionally, some strong bug type soul pets even had the annoying species ability: Broken Limb Rebirth!!

Broken Limb Rebirth was a pretty special move among bug types. Usually, if a soul pet was amputated somewhere, after a long period of recovery, it could still recover. But the bug type move Broken Limb Rebirth could spend its massive health pool in order to quickly regrow shattered or torn body parts!!

“Currently, it has six times the life force and recovery speed of a normal soul pet. If it sacrificed some lifeforce to use Broken Limb Rebirth, as long as its vital organs aren't completely shattered, little Zhan Ye will be almost invincible!” The astonishment on Chu Mu's face was indescribable!

Broken Limb Rebirth was impossible to use infinitely, because one had to use one's own life force as cost of using it.

Bug type soul pets all had 2 or more times other soul pets' life force. Normally, a bug type soul pet's life recovery speed was already many times that of a normal soul pet's, so it could use Broken Limb Rebirth a few times. Many soul pets could use it twice. Being able to use it three times was already incredible.

Yet, Zhang Ye had six times the normal soul pet's life force recovery, as well as six times the life force!

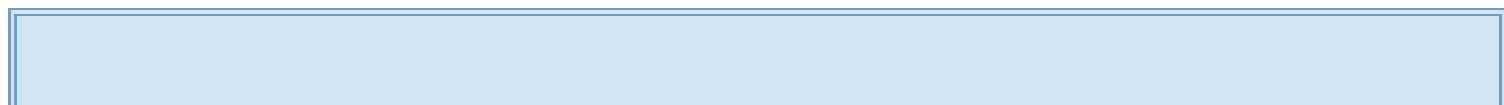
This meant that Mo Ye could use Broken Limb Rebirth six times!!

Many times, when a limb was crippled in a battle, it meant that the end of the battle was near. However, with six chances to rebirth, one could imagine that during fighting, when the opponent saw a soul pet continuously getting deeply wounded yet continuously grow out new limbs and returning to full fighting strength, their expression would definitely be one of maddening frustration!!!

Even, saying something bluntly, if some area were to be damaged and it was hindering the soul pet from utilizing all its power, it could simply bite the part off and grow a new limb to recover its original strength, a move that could make countless opponents mental state fall apart!

Thinking of this, even Chu Mu wanted to lift up his head and laugh into the skies! Choosing this defiant little Mo Ye over the high quality Mo Ye at the time was definitely the right choice!

No matter how strong the high quality Mo Ye was, it could at most cause the obstinate little Mo Ye to use its Broken Limb Rebirth once. No matter how it was trained or strengthened, even if it also learned Broken Limb Rebirth, it wouldn't create an effect as abnormal as Zhan Ye!



Mo Ye: Beast World – beast type (bug type) – Horned Armored Beast species – Mo Ye subspecies – middle class commander rank fourth phase second stage

Ink Claw: fourth rank initial stage. At the fourth phase, with a fourth rank initial stage attacking claw, it was equivalent to a warrior rank attacking talent. Before using the soul crystal, Zhan Ye's claws were still at the third rank initial stage. The sixth rank soul crystal made it increase by a full rank.

Ink Armor: fifth rank initial stage. As a fourth phase second stage soul pet, having a defense that reached the fifth rank was the defensive talent of a normal commander rank soul pet.

Species abilities: Self Heal, Broken Limb Rebirth

Basic abilities: Barbaric Strength, Ripping Claw, Ink Armor Spike

Main abilities: Shattering Claw, Death Ray, Shadow Strike, Dark Steel

Advanced abilities: Fragmenting Stamp, Uninhibited Assault

Zhan Ye's complete transformation made Chu Mu even more confident. Even if he didn't strengthen the Mo Ye's beast type any further, there were probably many people who could only helplessly look to the heavens against an imbalanced soul pet like

Mo Ye.....

“Young master, clan head wants you to go over, as if he had something important to discuss with you.” A servant girl’s voice suddenly came in from outside.

Chu Mu was just immersed in the joy of seeing Zhan Ye’s growth. Hearing this message, he smiled again and said, “I’ll come in a second.”

“Zhan Ye, you rest first. Once your phase and stage rises, there will soon be opportunities for you to show off your skill.” Chu Mu used his remembrance and told the Mo Ye.

Zhan Ye nodded, very calmly laying in the soul pet space, and closed its eyes, entering a deep sleep after its growth.

Following the servant girl to the clan head’s courtyard, Chu Mu immediately saw Chu Ming standing beside the pool, watching the little organisms swimming around in it.

“Grandfather.” Chu Mu walked up and interrupted the old man’s deep thinking.

Chu Ming smiled a shallow yet wrinkled smile, “You’ve come.”

Chu Mu nodded, able to see that Chu Ming had something to tell him.

“Originally, grandfather didn’t want you to participate in this Recommendation, because after all, it is very dangerous.....” As Chu Ming spoke, he drew out the last syllable, and waited a long time before speaking again.

“But who would’ve thought Chu Yi wasn’t content with peace, actually fighting with someone as the Recommendation approached. His soul was damaged, and he is unable to recover without a few months.”

Chu Mu stared blankly, showing signs of surprise.

In reality, Chu Mu was just about to send a Devil Attendant to fiercely “fix” the oppressing Chu Yi, making him unable to join the Recommendation. Then, unable to find anyone else within Chu Clan, Chu Ming would have to let him join the recommendation.

However, even he didn’t think that before he could send anyone, Chu Yi had already hurt himself, saving Chu Mu from “disloyally” hurting his own brothers in the dark.

“Grandfather, I understand you. Don’t worry, I will be fine.” Chu Mu smiled.

Chu Ming originally only wanted to ask for Chu Mu’s thoughts, and he was not prepared to actually invite Chu Mu to the Recommendation, but seeing Chu Mu’s confident look, he thought that Chu Mu was indeed more mature now. Even if he couldn’t defeat Yang Clan’s experts, he shouldn’t have issue with self

protection.

Then this time I'll rely on you. From tomorrow onwards, train with Chu Xing and make preparations for the Recommendation in a month!" Chu Ming patted Chu Mu's shoulder and said seriously.

"I'm afraid I can't train this month. I still have things to do. I'll start training with big brother next month." Chu Mu said.

"You're still busy with something?" Chu Ming said questioningly.

"I was considering my soul pet's future type growth, so I need to find the most fitting battle style through large amounts of books." Chu Mu found a random excuse.

Chu Ming opened his mouth to offer Chu Mu some suggestions. After all, Chu Ming was very experienced in terms of knowledge of soul pet types. However, after some consideration, Chu Ming deduced that Chu Mu was probably like his father. Chu Mu would be like his father in the sense that he would want to chose the path and training of his soul pets himself, so any suggestions could even prove to be a hindrance. With this in mind, Chu Ming decided not to say anything.

"If so, then take your time and think calmly. If you encounter any hard issues please come and ask grandfather." Chu Ming said.

Chu Mu nodded, leaving the courtyard with an attractively evil

smile on his face.

Over this next month, Chu Mu of course wasn't going to research about soul pet typing abilities; he was going to frenzily start his revenge against the Yang Clan!!

Chapter 45: Robbing And Killing Yang Mantian Father And Child (1)

The grand auction was held with a bang. It seemed that all the important figures in Gangluo City were all present, turning out for this extremely expensive sixth level soul armor.

The majority of the items at the auction this time had been supplied by a mysterious person. Seven commander rank soul pets and two exceptionally talented warrior rank soul pets had been provided! As for the other items that had been contested over in the past, this time they had become mere foils.

“Where’s Chu Mu? Has anyone seen Chu Mu?” In the VIP seats, the family head Chu Ming swept his eyes over the Chu Family group of people, but the only person he didn’t see was Chu Mu. He immediately asked the others.

“Grandfather, fourth brother and I already said that he is trying to make a breakthrough, so he needed to concentrate fully on training for a period of time. As a result, he can’t let others bother him, and he didn’t come forth.” Chu Ning said.

“What does father need Chu Mu for?” Chu Tianheng said questioningly.

“Chu Mu might still have a space for soul pets, let’s see if there are any soul pets for Chu Mu. We can work hard for it and also raise Chu Mu’s strength.” Chu Ming replied.

“Big brother, today’s soul pet prices are all past 500,000 gold.....” Vice clan head Chu Nan said intentionally or otherwise.

“This money we need to spend.” Chu Ming said, not giving Chu Nan an opportunity to say any more.

“Grandfather, he can only summon two soul pets. Even if he successfully signs a soul pact, he might not be able to summon it and let it join the fight.” Chu Family’s tyrannical missus Chu Ying was slightly dissatisfied as she spoke.

Chu Ying herself only had a 500,000 gold soul pet, and it was received after years of great effort. For Chu Mu to just receive one out of nowhere was inexcusable to her.

Chu Ming totally didn’t pay attention to his granddaughter’s lamenting, clearly having made up his mind already.

Chu Mu wasn’t in the VIP seats of the Chu Family. Yet, neither was he in Ting Yu’s room. Right now, he wasn’t even in Gangluo City; he was on the road to Huiyan City, a city not far from Gangluo City.

The Yang Family had once shamelessly sent people to intercept the Chu Family’s caravans, inflicting heavy economic losses on the Chu Family, so Chu Mu planned to take revenge for this particular offense.....

In reality, Chu Mu's conduct couldn't be counted as just revenge for this offense anymore. Just a few days ago, Chu Mu led a group of killers from Nightmare palace and killed off three bases of The Yang Family and their four big industries, totalling over three hundred people!

Nightmare Palace's forces in Luo Region weren't too dense, but blocking a message for a few days was still easy for them. The Yang Family hadn't found out that their main industries had all been destroyed, and were still preparing for the popular auction.

The one who designed such a grand auction was naturally Chu Mu. Chu Mu had already told the Nightmare Palace killers to take note of the Yang Family's asset movement, and they finally locked onto it today in the early morning. The Yang Family was going to send twenty experts from Huiyan City to escort 5,000,000 gold from all the east side industries towards Gangluo City.

5,000,000 gold was definitely not a small sum. The Yang Family clan head had even sent second brother Yang Mantian and his son to personally lead the experts in the escort mission!

But, the Yang Family would never have thought that Chu Mu had already found their route through Nightmare Palace's information network and had led twenty one Nightmare Palace killers to lay an ambush on the road towards Gangluo City!

"Father, the auction has started already, will we make it there on time?" Yang Shang rode his Rare Blood Beast alongside his father.

“Don’t worry, the Yang Family is in a good relationship with the auction house president, so delaying our payment slightly won’t matter too much.” Yang Mantian said.

In reality, the escort mission this time to protect 5,000,000 gold from the east was something Yang Mantian didn’t want to do at all. The entire Gangluo City and the cities nearby were all part of the Yang Family’s territory, so which death-seeking fellow would dare to touch their property? This was why Yang Mantian had a bored look on his face since the beginning.

“Yang Shang, I heard Chu Tiancheng’s son of the Chu Family hasn’t died and even has a fifth phase Six Tailed Demon Fox. Is he going to the Recommendation?” Yang Mantian suddenly thought of something and asked Yang Shang.

“En, that kid really is lucky, actually not dying. But in the Recommendation, I will definitely be the first to cripple him!!” Yang Shang said.

“To do big things, one must learn to be ruthless. Don’t let him have a chance of getting up again!” Yang Mantian educated his son.

Yang Shang immediately nodded.

Yang Mantian, somewhat satisfied, rose the corners of his mouth and turned his head back.

Yang Mantian glanced towards the front and suddenly, his brows

furrowed.

It was because just as he was staring ahead, he suddenly noticed a dark clothed man silently standing on the top of a tree, eyeing him coldly.

“Who is it!!” Yang Mantian could feel the killing intent released by the masked man’s eyes, so he instantly shouted!

After Yang Mantian shouted, the Yang Family experts immediately became on guard, their eyes sweeping the surroundings.

Yet, to their shock, there suddenly appeared twenty black shadows among the dark treetops on the sides of the road!!

They were like statues, levitating up high, their eyes coldly looking down upon them. Their scary killing intent even made the nearby temperature drop suddenly!!

“Summon your soul pets!!” Yang Mantian suddenly realized the strength of this mysterious group, so he didn’t dare to be the least bit negligent, immediately roaring to everyone!

The robed teen standing at the highest place looked gravely as the opponents’ soul pets quickly filling this somewhat narrow road, yet he frigidly spat out a few words, “Leave not a single one alive!”

After the order was given, twenty cyan and dark blue devil flames started burning in a ghostlike matter along the sides of the road.

Immediately, a massive wave of devil aura rolled through the road, frenzily battering the Yang Family experts' soul pets!

The tidal devil aura made the entire road feel as if it were covered in freezing flames!

“People of Nightmare Palace!!”

After Yang Mantian saw twenty Nightmares appear in the flames, his face immediately paled!!

How could Yang Mantian not know of Nightmare Palace's notoriousness? Yet, Yang Mantian couldn't understand at all why killers from Nightmare Palace had their eyes on the Yang Family!!

How could Yang Shang's experience compare to Yang Mantian? When the devil aura rolled over, that guy actually panicked and fell straight off his Rare Blood Beast, looking as pitiful as can be!

When the Nightmare Palace killed people, they never said any more than they needed too.

Once Chu Mu passed the command, the twenty Cyan and Blue Nightmares' terrifying soul devil flames rolled in from the sides of the road!!

The devil flames of the Nightmares were scary. After this wave of attack, dozens of soul pets disintegrated amidst the intersection of cyan and blue. There were even a few soul pet trainers that couldn't protect themselves in time, completely disappearing in the ruthless devil flames after letting out a single scream!

Nightmares were not even the Nightmare Palace killers' only soul pet!

Just after the Cyan Nightmares and Blue Nightmares first wave of attacks ended, the killers' close combat soul pets immediately let out frightening roars and started thudding forwards, bringing with them a wave of destructive killing intent as they charged straight into the formations of the Yang Family experts!!

“Longlonglong!!”

Instantly, all sorts of shrieking and beast roars emanated as splashes of blood painted the road!!

Yang Mantian's main soul pet was a seventh phase Blood Winged Trioptic Beast, but even the seventh phase Blood Winged Trioptic Beast could not deal with the attacks from twenty Nightmare Palace. After the second wave of attacks came, to save his son Yang Shang, Yang Mantian's seventh phase Trioptic Beast perished in the frightening devil flames!!

“Fool, get up!! Yang Mantian still managed to stay calm, but how could he care about the sum of money anymore. He grabbed his

shivering son up, summoned his seventh phase Rare Blood Beast, completely ignored the lives of the other Yang Family experts, and charged forward!!

“Nightmare Prince, two ran away.” The leader of the killers, He Lang, stood beside Chu Mu, yet his eyes were coldly staring at the two people carelessly running, Yang Mantian and his son.

“You stay here and deal with the rest.” Chu Mu patted the eager little Mo Xie on her shoulder and ordered killer He Lang.

Mo Xie couldn't wait for the spilling of blood again. Hearing Chu Mu's command, she immediately morphed into a Six Tailed Demon Fox and carried Chu Mu to chase after Yang Mantian and his son!

Chu Mu had long since told the Nightmare Palace killers to seal off this road, so there wouldn't be people from any other faction joining them.

When Yang Mantian brought his son on the run, he discovered there wasn't anyone else on the road. He then realized that maybe there were other Nightmare Palace people, so he resolutely changed directions, and headed straight into the complicated black forest.

Speed wise, even many agility based high class commander rank couldn't compare to Chu Mu and Mo Xie. Chu Mu only rode Mo Xie and chased for a minute before he saw the figures of Yang Mantian and his son.

“Mo Xie, Fire Rain!!”

Mo Xie, who had Flame Step, directly started running through the treetops. Once she neared the father and son, she immediately let out a proud call!

A vast cloud of fire gathered in the skies above the forest!!

This fire cloud was like a burning flame in the sky. As Mo Xie’s silver pupils flashed, hundreds of Evil Fire Demon Flames crazily fell from the skies, almost instantly lighting up this part of the forest!!

“Ao!!!”

When the flames started burning, Yang Mantian’s Rare Blood Beast was immediately frightened. They were already running away in a difficult situation, so when the Rare Blood Beast was frightened and shocked, they both tumbled off it!!

“Beng!!! Beng!!”

Demon Fire Evil Flames fell from above, exploding near the father and son. Yang Mantian’s reaction was fast, immediately chanting the incantation for Ice Armor, covering both himself and Yang Shang!

“Despicable!!!” Yang Mantian’s fierce-looking face shook as he casted another incantation, planning to summon his water type soul pet to control the spread of fire. Suddenly, he saw a black figure slowly walk close from the flaming forest. The figure’s eyes were apathetically staring at him, his cold killing intent from those pupils piercing straight into his soul, making the very depths of his soul shiver!!

The demonic Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox calmly followed beside this man, her unique eyes showing alarmingly vicious light!!

“We, the Yang Family have always been good with Nightmare Palace. Yang Luosen is even the Luo Region Nightmare Prince. This Nightmare Palace expert.....why.....why did you do this to Yang Family?” Yang Mantian took a few steps backwards and feigned calmness as he looked at this imposing teen.

“Yes yes yes, Luo Region Nightmare Prince is my step brother.....” Yang Shang quickly nodded, trying to use Yang Luosen’s name to save himself.

Chu Mu smiled cruelly and slowly ripped off the black halfmask on his face, revealing his appearance.....

Yang Mantian and Yang Shang both stared at the Nightmare Palace expert, but once they saw the demonic face under the lighting of the fire, their expressions froze!!

“Chu.....Chu.....Chu Mu!!!”

Yang Shang's pupil's dilated to the point of exploding, and the shock on his face was incredulous!!

Chapter 46: Robbing And Killing Yang Mantian Father And Child (2)

Yang Shang had seen Chu Mu before at the auction. However, though it was the same face, Yang Shang now felt as if it were two different people.

The current Chu Mu emanated killing intent from every part of his being. His eyes emitted the scariest ominous glint, as if he were a beast ready to explode with power at any time!!

Yang Mantian's face completely sank. He never would've thought that the useless person who should've died four years ago would now display such a terrifyingly imposing manner. He secretly started controlling his Rare Blood Beast, ready to give Chu Mu a deadly blow.

Yang Mantian's Rare Blood Beast was not just any soul pet. It already had Ghost Blood Energy. Once it released its Ghost Blood Energy, its fighting strength would increase greatly!!!

“Mo Xie!”

Chu Mu naturally knew that Yang Mantian's seventh phase Rare Blood Beast wasn't simple, and he immediately told Mo Xie to unleash all of her power!!

Red hot Demon Fire Evil Flames suddenly sprouted out from Mo Xie's paws, unleashing an even larger heat wave that, with a

tremendous demonic aura, crazily spread to the burning forest, causing all the existing flames to waver!!

The sprouts of flame was encouraged by the gale, shifting and swaying!

The strong demonic aura and heat wave combined to instantly subdue the Yang Mantian father and son. Yang Mantian's Rare Blood Beast even stepped back. A seventh phase soul pet actually felt fear from a sixth phase soul pet!!

“Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox!!” Yang Shang stared, gaping at Chu Mu's completely released soul pet. He originally wanted to summon his sixth phase Rare Blood Beast, yet he didn't dare to anymore!!

Yang Mantian could naturally see the scariness of this Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox, so he didn't dare to hesitate, immediately summoning his other soul pet!!

“Aowu~~~~~” A sixth phase fifth stage Terror Wolf lifted a gale, and it slowly appeared in Yang Mantian's summoning symbol.

Yang Mantian's seventh phase Blood Winged Trioptic Beast had already fallen into ashes when it was protecting Yang Shang, so with his third soul damaged, he couldn't summon a third soul pet.

While Yang Mantian was summoning his soul pet, Chu Mu and Mo Xie were both charging up to attack!!

“Molten Fury!!”

Mo Xie’s body looked like it was lit ablaze, her fur turning from silver to a scarlet red. Yet, within the blazing flames, those silver white pupils stayed unusually prominent!!

“Wuwuwu!!!!” Mo Xie rose her head and let out a high pitched call. Instantly, a terrifyingly hot ball of Demon Fire Evil Flame rose up, causing the temperature in the burning forest to raise even more!!

“Chong Mei – Molten Fury!”

When Mo Xie completely casted her Molten Fury, Chu Mu also finished his incantation!

His black pupils suddenly burst with an other-worldly radiance, and terrifying white devil soul flames started burning from Chu Mu’s body. As Chu Mu lifted both of his hands, the pale white flames formed the fire type ability Molten Fury and merged with Mo Xie’s Demon Fire Evil Flames!!!

A sharp red, a demonic white!

The two fires completely merged, having both the flesh-burning high temperatures, as well as the ghostly cool that froze one’s soul!!

Molten Fury was a sixth level fire type technique. Under the effects of Demon Fire Evil Flames, it was strong enough to be a seventh level fire attack.

Now, there was the added effect of the devil flames of a sixth phase fourth stage White Nightmare!!

The White Nightmare was at the monarch rank, so how strong would its flames be? Once merged with Mo Xie's Demon Fire Evil Flames, the fire damage increased manyfold. The overlapping of both fires and both Molten Furies definitely reached the effects of an eighth level fire attack!!

“Huhuhu~~~~~”

The ice armor that Yang Mantian cast was useless, as it was easily melted by the double Molten Furies. Yang Mantian's two main soul pets couldn't even cast anything before being engulfed by the scary flames. Regardless of it was the sixth phase Terror Wolf or the seventh phase Rare Blood Beast, they both let out the most painful roar!!!

Yang Mantian's face was also pale. The white soul devil flames caused even his soul to be in pain. Under this scary attack, his two soul pets also suffered major injuries!!!

“Bastard thing, why don't you summon your soul pets, do you want to die!?!?” Yang Mantian looked over at Yang Shang, who was hiding behind him, and roared!!

Yang Shang's fifth phase Blood Winged Trioptic Beast had long since died in the flames of the Nightmares. After Yang Mantian roared at him, he shook in fear, and it took him three tries before finally summoning his sixth phase Rare Blood Beast!

Yang Shang's Rare Blood Beast could not compare to his father's. Though it was at the sixth phase, it was only slightly stronger than the majority of warrior rank soul pets.

After summoning his Rare Blood Beast, Yang Shang again started chanting while flustered, summoning a seventh stage servant rank Bloodthirsty Beast.

These two soul pets were, in both rank and stage, not on the same level as Yang Mantian's soul pets. These soul pets may have posed a threat to Chu Mu a year ago, but today, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier could easily handle them both by itself.

“Devil Tree Battle Soldier!”

Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier was not any normal warrior rank soul pet anymore. After gaining demon wood, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's attack was now more formidable, and it was able to cast seventh level wood type techniques!!

“Root Puncture!!”

With demon wood added, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's wood type abilities doubled in damage, causing even Root Puncture to

double in amount!!

Fifty demon wood roots suddenly spiked from under the fiery ground, instantly piercing Yang Shang's two soul pets, leaving countless bloody holes on their bodies!!!

After it's control of wood type was strengthened, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier could also microcontrol its techniques, just like the Ice Air Fairy!

The scared pale faced Yang Shang didn't even notice that a demon wood root was aimed at his heart like a javelin!

“Ah!!!!!!!!!!!!!!” A miserable scream suddenly echoed through the forest!!!

The demon wood root violently stabbed in. The ice armor on Yang Shang had long since melted after the Molten Furies came, and he didn't have a chance to cast any defensive ability after. Thus, the root very straightforwardly pierced through his body!!!

If Yang Shang had overcome his fear, maybe he could've held out longer in front of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, but this guy left too many weaknesses open. The adept killer Chu Mu would definitely not let go of such an opportunity to kill the soul pet trainer!

The roots penetrated his body, spraying blood onto Yang Mantian's face. Yang Mantian suddenly looked as if he had lost his soul, his entire face blankly watching the slowly collapsing Yang

Shang!!

His eyes slowly became bloodshot.....

“I will dismember your corpse into a million pieces!!!”

Suddenly, Yang Mantian roared!!

Yang Mantian’s pupils were fully red. At this point, Yang Mantian didn’t have any regard for consequences. He ignored the burn wounds still inflicted upon his soul and started chanting an incantation!!

Violent Blood Pupil!!

When Yang Mantian cast Violent Blood Pupil, it looked like he himself was also adhered by this scary bloody killing intent, as his entire person became like a beast ready to erupt!!!

The Violent Blood Pupil cast a blood shadow upon the seventh rank Rare Blood Beast. As a blood beast, when Violent Blood Pupil was cast on it, its fighting strength rose by an even larger margin!!

Seeing Yang Mantian go completely crazy, Chu Mu only smiled calmly. The seventh phase Rare Blood Beast had already been burned to the point where it didn’t have much fighting strength left. The Violent Blood Pupil cast on it was but its final struggle!

Chu Mu's soul power was limited, so once he had casted Molten Fury, it was hard for him to cast Violent Blood Pupil. Additionally, Chu Mu didn't feel the need to cast Violent Blood Pupil against Yang Mantian, so he just commanded Mo Xie to step over with her devil flames and kill the two soul pets who had been wounded by Molten Fury already!!

When the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's fighting strength increased, it became especially violent. After repeatedly puncturing Yang Shang's two soul pets, they fell into their own bloody pools and completely lost their ability to fight.

Very soon, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, capable of ranged attacks, started crazily casting roots out to bombard the fifth phase ninth stage low class commander rank that Yang Mantian switched too!!

On the road, blood covered the ground. Different colored devil flames swayed in the forest wind. Corpse after corpse littered the floor.

“Cremate them!” The Nightmare Palace lead killer He Lang ordered, and five Blue Nightmares simultaneously cast their dark blue flames, disintegrating the twenty Yang Clan experts' corpses along with their dead soul pets!

“Boss, the person that ran away should be their leader. He was very strong. Leaving the Nightmare Prince to go alone, is that.....”

“En, you go check them out.” He Lang used to be Xia Guanghan’s subordinate and was now Chu Mu’s assistant. If something happened to Chu Mu hem as an assistant, would also be at fault.

“Yes!!” The three Nightmare Palace killers immediately called their wing type soul pets in front of them and agilely jumped on.

But, just as the three killers were about to take off, they suddenly noticed a black figure walk out from the shadows of the forest beside.

The killers all let out questioning expressions, because these veteran killers completely didn’t notice when this Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince returned!

“Let’s change paths and send these 5,000,000 gold coins worth of soul cores and crystals to Soul Pet Palace in Gangluo City, switch them all to gold coins, and send them to the auction house.” Chu Mu said.

“Yes!!” The twenty one killers didn’t ask any questions and saluted.

After speaking, Chu Mu jumped straight onto Mo Xie and followed the path straight for Gangluo City!!!

Seeing Chu Mu ride Mo Xie away, the group of killers felt deep veneration for him!

The power of the leader of Yang Clan's escort was something all of these killers researched clearly. The fact that this King of Prison Island could get rid of him in such a short time was enough to speak for both his power and scary killing methods!

Chapter 47: Using The Yang Family's Money To Auction Against The Yang Family (1)

The Auction Hall

“700,000 gold coins! If there aren't any higher bids, then this third phase eighth stage Mo Ye with a defensive talent will belong to the Chu Family!!!”

A sexy and pretty auctioneer finalized the deal with the strike of a hammer!!

Seeing the hammer fall, many Chu Family members let out unsatisfied expressions. Perhaps it could be said that when Chu Ming raised the price to 700,000 gold coins and took possession of this Mo Ye from the second richest family in Gangluo City, these people had already creased their eyebrows.

Everyone knew the reason that Chu Ming was buying this Mo Ye. It was naturally to gift it to Chu Mu as his new soul pet. However, in reality, almost all of the first rate experts within the Chu Family only had soul pets worth around 500,000 gold coins.

Chu Mu was only a third generation child, and he hadn't done anything of large contribution for the family. Moreover, the Chu Family's economic state had previously taken a severe blow when they attempted to search for him. Yet, right now, he had for some reason received such a large gift. No one would have a good feeling in their hearts.

As for the second family head, Chu Nan, he had already begun thinking of a method to change Chu Ming's plan and give the Mo Ye to someone else. Giving it to Chu Mu was truly somewhat of a waste. After all, such a soul pet couldn't be of use at the recommendation.

"I've heard that these soul pets were all supplied by one person. Furthermore, looking at their breed, they seem to all be from the Broken Forest. I'm not sure which expert managed to unobstructedly transverse through the extremely complicated and dangerous Broken Forest." said Chu Tianheng.

"That's right. Didn't Chu Mu also stay in Broken Forest for a few days? Also, didn't he have that Qin Family girl with him..." Chu Tianlin immediately thought of Chu Mu who had easily brought him out of Broken Forest back then.

"Hmph, if he is such a god, then why doesn't he enter the Broken Forest and capture these soul pets? If he was like this expert who was able to capture fourth phase and under commander ranks, he would be able to strengthen our Chu Family..." Chu Yi very candidly expressed his dissatisfaction!

"I, however, think that young master Chu has this ability. Although he cannot capture as many soul pets as that expert, it wouldn't be much of a problem for him to bring back two commander rank soul pets." said the Chu Family Guard head, Chu Si.

“I also believe so. While in Luoye Mountain Range, I discovered that brother Chu was secretly entering broken forest late at night. Then on the second day, he would safely return...” Chu Yishui immediately nodded her head in support.

“Young children shouldn’t talk nonsense. Stay to the side.” The eldest young lady, Chu Ying, fiercely glared at Chu Yishui and pulled her to the side. She simply didn’t believe Chu Yishui’s words.

Chu Yishui suddenly felt wronged, and she didn’t say anything further.

Capturing a soul pet was not an easy task. The hunter had to be exceptionally familiar with various wild environments. He had to understand under what circumstances he wouldn’t be discovered by a soul pet with an acute sense of smell. He also had to understand how to use the surrounding forestry to hide himself;

Of course, formidable strength was a given. Without enough strength, experience would not help at all, because it wasn’t just anyone who could steal away a young soul pet in the wilderness full of savage beasts from its mother and father’s protection.

Subsequently, it required outstanding courage. Without courage, how could one enter the tiger’s den to capture the tiger?!

The variety of soul pets in the wild were in tens of millions; there were plants, beasts, elements, undead...

Disguises, hiding, ambushes, aerial attacks, traps, poisons, baits, illusions... all kinds of dangers that could not be guarded against. With even the slightest inattentiveness, one was destined to end up lying dead in the wilderness or as a meal in a soul pet's stomach, with not even the skeleton surviving...

“Next, we have the most valuable item tonight. I'm sure everyone knows already – A sixth level soul armor!”

“The usage of a sixth level soul armor doesn't need to be elaborated on by this young lady. Its starting auction price is 3 million gold coins. Each price raise cannot be lower than 50,000 gold coins. All customers may start bidding!”

The auctioneer's voice slowly spread and suddenly, every rich and powerful person in Gangluo City began to raise the price..

The rich and powerful didn't raise the price very much each time, and it increased only in increments of 50,000 gold coins.

“4 million!!”

The Yang Family head, Yang Kuo, aged voice immediately reverberated throughout the auction floor. This was the first time the price had been raised by 500,000 gold coins, and it instantly pushed the atmosphere to an even higher level.

The auction floor went silent for a moment as discussions sprung

up everywhere.

From the Yang Family's manner, they felt that they must obtain this sixth level soul armor!

“How can we make it convenient for that old geezer.” The corners of the Qin Family head Qin Chang's mouth rose, and he immediately had someone raise the price to 4.1 million!!

“4.1 million! At 4.1 million, it can already be considered to be near the price of a sixth level soul armor. However, in even larger cities, sixth level soul armors are normally 5 million gold coins. If it can be purchased for 4.1 million, even if it was a resale, one would still earn a large profit.” the auctioneer added more oil to the fire and provoked the desire of people to raise the price of more.

“4.3 million!!” The Zhou Family head's voice slowly rang out.

For the Recommendation this time, the value of a sixth rank piece of territory was worth about 5 million gold coins. Aside from a sixth rank territory, there were many subsidies that other rich merchants offered and large families used as a bet. The price of these different items reached 15 million.

If one was to purchase this sixth level soul armor and give it to a participating Recommendation member, the chance of obtaining first place was extremely large. Therefore, many heads with spare change had a very large intention of obtaining this sixth level soul armor.

Participants in the Recommendation were not limited to merely Gangluo City's four large families. Instead it was a gathering of all the powers in the entire Gangluo City and its vicinity. According to the final ranking, the total value of rewards that could be earned had reached 20 million. As for the first place reward, it was astonishingly control over a sixth level territory worth 5 million gold coins!

Even if one could not earn first place, the second place reward was a high class commander rank – Chaotic Lightning Crown Fairy – that was worth 3 million gold coins. This was also an exceptional reward. As for the third place reward, it was a seventh level soul crystal of any attribute of one's choice, worth 1.5 million gold coins. These rewards were all equally coveted by numerous powers!

Despite the rewards being significant, the prestige earned after the Recommendation was still the most important!

The Recommendation happened every five years, and each time it was held, it would be extremely grand!

As for the auction this time, with a gathering of numerous important figures who squandered money like dirt, their only goal was the rankings at the Recommendation!!

“4.6 million!!!”

As the price continued to rise, the voices would always be deep or aged. Unquestionably, they all belonged to citizens of Gangluo City who had a bit of qualifications. However, the voice that called this 4.6 million belonged to a young woman, and it caused a wave of shock to sweep through every important person in Gangluo City.

“It seems to be that woman from before who spent a large sum to purchase the Demon Tree’s Heart. Grandfather, this woman’s identity isn’t simple.” Yang Gebin immediately whispered to the family head, Yang Kuo.

Yang Kuo harrumphed before raising the price again: “4.8 million!!”

A price of 4.8 million was in much accord to the value of a sixth level soul armor. The city’s lord Yang Kuo unwillingness to pass on his responsibilities to others allowed everyone to see that he was absolutely going to obtain this sixth level soul armor.

The auction floor promptly went silent, as no one dared to continue raising the price. One reason was because of the old city lord’s abuse of authority. Many rich and powerful people who would dare to raise the price felt that there wasn’t a need to dispute against the Yang Family. A second reason was that although the price was a bit high and the rich people had the money to buy it, they still couldn’t squander money so freely.

In the VIP room, Ting Yu saw that no one was raising the price and began to silently panic. This sixth level soul armor was

bestowed to Chu Mu by Nightmare Palace's Jin Rou princess. If it was taken by the Yang Family and the princess were to ask, Chu Mu wouldn't have a good explanation.

“Just now those soul pets totaled a price of 3 million gold coins. Adding on the 1.6 million from earlier, there's 4.6 million in total...” Ting Yu currently didn't have that much gold on hand, and she didn't dare to negligently raise the price.

Biting her lips, Ting Yu also felt that even if it was taken by the Yang Family people, she couldn't make things easy for them. Thus, she promptly raised the price to “5 million!”

“5 million!!! This is the most standard price of a sixth level soul armor. Right now, if it is even slightly raised, then it will be obtained!!” The auctioneer's voice had clearly raised a few octaves. Perhaps this auctioneer didn't expect either that such a daring woman who raised the price to 5 million and fought for a treasure with the city lord would appear in Gangluo City.

Yang Kuo's face turned a bit more ugly. He had estimated that the price for the sixth level soul armor this time would be under 5 million. Yet, some unknown and aggressive silly little girl had appeared and made things difficult for him, the old city lord, in front of every large faction!

Yang Kuo obviously could not lose face at this moment. He could still afford to spend a few more millions of gold, and he extremely domineeringly threw out a “5.2 million gold coin” value!!

5.2 million gold coins. Everyone in the auction hall instantly went silent.

In a tenth rank city, a sixth level soul armor's price would normally hover between a price of 4 million to 6 million. After all, a sixth level soul armor wasn't a common item.

The auctioneer began to unbridledly add more fuel to the fire in hopes that there would be another person to raise the shocking price. However, 5.2 million gold coins had already subdued everyone.

“In the end, it's the old city master who is bounteous. He didn't even blink at these 5.2 million gold coins.”

“That's right. Although the old man's overbearing attitude hasn't deteriorated at all, that woman of mysterious identity shouldn't raise the price again.”

Seeing that the auctioneer was beginning to senselessly procrastinate, a smile rose on Yang Kuo's face. His gaze arrogantly swept over the mysterious woman in the VIP room.

At this moment, a Yang Family servant hastily ran in front of the old city lord and quietly whispered something into his ear!

Yang Kuo's happy expression just had a bit of a satisfied smile on it because the sixth level soul armor belonged to none other than him. However, after hearing the servant's words, his expression

instantly changed and transformed into an extremely malevolent one!

“Scoundrel!! Why did you get news about this only now?!!”

Suddenly, Yang Kuo slapped the table and stood up. His rage condensed into a sweeping gale that effectively knocked everyone flying out of the room. That servant promptly fell from high above and tumbled down the stairs under shocked gazes!

This occurrence of events caused everyone to let out astonished expressions. They stared at the Yang Family servant in an exceptionally miserable state, and the auction came to an abrupt halt...

“Old city master, why is there need to be so angry. Whatever it is, you must wait for the auction to finish first before speaking.” the auction leader’s voice slowly rang out.

Yang Kuo’s face was twitching because he had just heard the news of everything being stolen from a few large industries in Gangluo City’s eastern end. However, this news had been delayed for a few days!!

Chapter 48: Using The Yang Family's Money To Auction Against The Yang Family (2)

Aside from being angry, Yang Kuo also felt a bit of indescribable fear. Any faction that could suppress the news for a few days was definitely extremely terrifying!!!

The eastern strongholds had been noiselessly plundered; moreover, the 5 million gold coins happened to come from the eastern side. Instantly, the old city lord Yang Kuo thought of something!

“Immediately send people en route towards Huiyan City and see if the goods are still safe!!” Yang Kuo roared at Yang Mancan.

Yang Mancan was also aware of the severity of the situation, and he didn't dare to stay any longer in this place. Promptly, he took his servants as fast as he could out of the auction hall.

The auction hall had a congregation of all of the Gangluo City's large factions. The old city master suddenly lost his temper, followed by a large group of people leaving. This definitely indicated that something drastic had happened in the Yang Family.

“It's been a long time since that old geezer has been that angry.” Chu Nan looked at the family head Chu Ming next to him.

Chu Ming also nodded his head and half jokingly said: “Perhaps his treasury has been plundered.”

“Old city lord, the auction has an auction’s rules. If there isn’t anything else that is important, then the sixth level soul armor will belong to your Yang Family for 5.2 million.” The auction hall head’s words had a certain measure about them. He disregarded the old city lord’s anger and used a calm tone of voice to speak.

“Wait...” the old city lord’s face instantly went dark.

The Yang Family had approximately 5 million gold coins in circulation and from there, they had already spent 2 million gold in order to purchase other treasures from before. Now, there only remained 3 million gold, and this 3 million still needed to pay for the Yang Family’s everyday expenses. It wasn’t that the Yang Family couldn’t pay the money; instead, if the 5 million gold brought over from the eastern industries disappeared, then their Yang Family would definitely enter into an economic recession. If such a large family were to enter a recession, there would definitely be various chain reactions, and the loss wouldn’t merely be 5 million gold coins...

“It’s reasonable to say that we cannot temporarily pause under these circumstances. However, the city lord is the city lord after all. If you give a justifiable reason, there won’t be any harm in waiting for a few moments.” said the auction hall head.

Yang Kuo’s expression turned even uglier. The auction wasn’t under the administration of Gangluo City’s city lord. He couldn’t do anything to this auction head, and if he wasn’t able to give a reason now, he would really have to spend 5.2 million gold coins to purchase this sixth level soul armor.

“Hmph, I, Yang Kuo, oversee Gangluo City and there has never been some major event before. Yet, I didn’t think that a few scoundrels would target my Yang Family and intercept my Yang Family’s circulation of funds. We are currently sending people to investigate this matter!” Yang Kuo’s cold voice resonated through the auction hall.

Yang Kuo’s words caused an audible gasp to resound within the auction hall!!

Everyone understood Yang Kuo’s words. In simpler terms, intercepting the Yang Family’s circulation of funds, as harsh as it was, was money being stolen!

The Yang Family was the sole hegemon of Gangluo City and any faction had to give it a bit of respect. However, there truly was someone with the guts to target the Yang Family. Moreover, from the Yang Family head’s loss of self-control just now, the amount stolen this time probably wasn’t a small amount like 10,000 gold coins. After all, the intercepting of funds this time directly affected the Yang Family head’s decision to pay 5.2 million to buy the sixth level soul armor. Those who had a bit of understanding of the Yang Family’s capital could conjecture that the Yang Family’s loss this time was probably above 5 million...

“It really was his treasury being plundered. Haha!!” Chu Ming’s great laugh suddenly rang through the silent auction hall.

Every faction in Gangluo City knew that the only person who

dared to mock Yang Kuo in front of everyone was the Chu Family head, Chu Ming, who was a bitter enemy of the Yang Family.

It had been ages since Chu Ming had laughed so heartily. Right now, Chu Ming really wanted to meet this heroic thief who had such extraordinary courage. This person had essentially helped to give the Chu Family, which had continuously suffered from the Yang Family's funding ***, a release of resentment, while also dealing a heavy blow to the Yang Family.

The flesh on Yang Kuo's face was twitching, and he had never ever thought that he would encounter such a moment where he would lose his dignity in front of so many large factions.

“Yang Kuo, if you don't have the ability to buy it, then don't occupy the toilet. Thicken your face and give it up. With your abuse of authority as the city lord, committing such a regretful thing isn't very significant. After all, everyone here is already used to it.” Chu Ming began laughing once more.

“Chu Ming, you ignorant geezer, are you courting death?!” Yang Kuo finally couldn't control his face!

“Courting death? Coincidentally it's been a long time since I've loosened these old bones of mine. Come, let's exchange blows with a sixth rank territory as a bet. Do you dare?!” Chu Ming didn't have the slightest fear!

The entire Chu Family was in decline. Regardless of financial, human, later generations or territorial resources, they were inferior to the Yang Family. However, when it purely came to the

two family masters' strengths, Chu Ming was stronger than Yang Kuo. In a one on one, Chu Ming fundamentally wouldn't be afraid of Yang Kuo!

A little while ago, he had lost a sixth rank territory, causing Yang Kuo to feel extremely angry and be in a state where it would be hard to calm down. Right now, his industry had been plundered, and the information had been delayed for three days before he received it. He still had no idea where the 5 million was and ultimately, had exceptionally embarrassingly paused the auction in front of so many people. Furthermore, he had been insulted by a sworn enemy. He was so angry that the blood in his chest had risen to his throat. If he couldn't control it, it would really come spurting out.

“A measly 5.2 million isn't something that I, Yang Kuo, would worry about. Chu Ming, get rid of your villainous success expression. I, the city lord, am not going to bicker with you!” Yang Kuo truly did have the bearings to necessarily swallow the blood back down his throat. With extreme, extreme difficulty, he displayed the airs of an old city lord in front of all the large factions!

“The old city lord is the old city lord. Even in this situation, he's still able to maintain his calm and composure.”

“The Yang Family, as expected, is rich and imposing!”

“The old city lord doesn't need to be worried. Perhaps it's only the mischief of a few small thieves!”

A wave of praise and flattery rose up. As he listened, the old city lord, Yang Kuo, felt his blood somewhat relax. If he were to still renege and purchase, his face as the city lord would still be there.

“Since this is the case, the sixth level soul armor will belong to the Yang Family for a price of 5.2 million!” The auction hall head took control of the situation for the auctioneer.

The 5.2 million was about to be decided, and would naturally suppress the restlessness in the auction all. However, a lot of people could see that Yang Kuo was barely managing to control his face. If he were to truly have the ability to buy it now, he wouldn't have to temporarily stop the auction. Instead, he would very composedly let the auction continue.

“Gangluo City's auction hall has not abided by the rules and temporarily postponed the auction, violating auction taboo. Further, presently, because of a senseless farce, the soul armor has been sold. Did I say that I wasn't going to raise the price?!”

Suddenly, a young woman's voice rang through the auction hall. This voice was somewhat delicate and somewhat cold. Yet, it managed to stun everyone once more!!

The auction hall head was stunned, not believing that, after doing this business for so many years, a woman would criticize him like this!

“This young lady, I'm extremely sorry. The old city lord's

interruption made me confuse the rules. Since the young lady wishes to raise the price, please go ahead. The 5.2 million gold coins has become invalid.” the auction hall head immediately said as he pushed the blame on the old city lord.

The thing an auction hall paid the most attention to was reputation and rules. Thus, this auction hall head could not let the old city lord ruin his reputation.

“This woman is truly domineering. With a few words she managed to give the old geezer Yang Kuo a slap on the face in front of everyone!”

“This woman appeared in the auction hall a while ago. Her status is not simple.”

For a while, discussions pertaining to the mysterious woman flew about. Everyone was trying to guess which divine faction this woman was from!

“You want to use a mere 5.2 million to purchase this sixth level soul armor with a dual ice and fire attribute. Are you really belittling this treasure’s value? I will bid 6 million!” the woman’s voice slowly rang out!

6 million gold coins!!!!

Gangluo City’s auction hall’s most valuable auctions would only have the rare right of possession of sixth rank territories. Their

prices were only about five million. This time, though, the price had directly jumped to 6 million gold coins, and could be counter as the highest price in the past tens of years in Gangluo City!!

Now, no matter if it was a rich businessman, large family or even the Yang Family's old city master, no one had the authority to even speak a word.

“6 million gold coins! This should be the highest price of this soul armor. I don't believe anybody has the ability to raise the price again, right?!” the auctioneer's words were evidently no longer as professional.

6 million gold coins to purchase a sixth level soul armor. Perhaps no faction in Gangluo City would have the guts to do this!

“6 million gold coins. This sixth level soul armor will belong to...” the auctioneer paused and suddenly found that he didn't know that person's name. However, he quickly recovered and said: “It will belong to this young lady!”

“Congratulations to this mysterious young lady for acquiring this sixth level soul armor. The auction will stop here...”

The auctioneer began his closing remarks. However, at this moment, everyone had begun to get up and leave. Among them, a majority were casting glances at the mysterious woman's room!

The door of the room which the gazes were all fixated on was slowly opened, and the pretty face of a woman entered everyone's eyes. The woman was wearing elegant clothes, and she gave people an ice cold feeling.

“It indeed is her... grandfather, it's that woman who spent 1 million gold coins to purchase the Demon Tree's Heart last time.” immediately whispered Yang Luobin to Yang Kuo.

Yang Kuo creased his eyebrows and stared at the young woman...

Everyone in Gangluo City was trying to guess this woman's identity. After all, being able to spend 6 million gold coins to purchase a sixth level soul armor meant that she was definitely not a normal person!

However, as everyone was feeling astonished by this strange woman, they abruptly saw this woman of exceptional status suddenly stop in her tracks after exiting the room and slightly bow her body. It was as if she was waiting for someone...

The auction suddenly went silent and people had their eyes wide open. They stared at the man who walked out from the room wearing an ice-cold mask!

Even in front of everyone's stares, the man's black pupils under the mask remained exceptionally indifferent. Without even looking at anyone present, he arrogantly walked out of the auction under everyone's shocked stares!

Moreover, the woman whose identity was being guessed by everyone closely followed behind him as if she were a maid!

“This... this... man”

“Recently, there’s been a Prison Island King whose reputation has spread to places in every direction. I heard that this young peak expert is currently travelling near Luo Region’s Gangluo City. Could it be that...”

Aside from that young peak expert who had been rumored to be in the nearby area, they found it very hard to think of another person who had this kind of temperament!

“Nightmare Palace’s Prisoner Island King, Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince!!”

A gasp sprung up everywhere!!

The Nightmare Palace’s seventh rank title, Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince. In each and every eighth rank city under Nightmare Palace’s control, he would have the authority of a vice city lord! Yet, this wasn’t even the most crucial point. Instead, it was that this Prison Island King, not long after entering Nightmare palace, had defeated the extremely reputable young peak expert Tian Ji!!

Chapter 49: Chu Family's Overbearing Eldest Young Lady

“Why do I feel like that the figure of this Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince gives me a familiar feeling.” slowly said Chu Ning.

Chu Ning's words made Chu Yishui and Chu Tianlin, who were relatively close to Chu Mu, feel the same way. However, they all felt that this was probably a misperception...

With the exception of Qin Menger, who already knew that the man wearing the imposing mask was Chu Mu, everyone was staring at this man. However, it brought Qin Menger a different feeling – cold, ruthless, cruel, and insufferably arrogant!

Chu Mu knew that his route as the Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince was known by a majority of people so when he wore a mask, he didn't worry about others seeing through his identity. Moreover, if it wasn't for wanting to shake up Gangluo City in the last recommendation, Chu Mu wouldn't have needed to cover up his identity.

The sixth level soul armor originally belonged to Chu Mu, so when he purchased it back, he only had to pay thirty percent of the expenses to the auction.

Right now, Chu Mu had used an enormous sum of nearly 10

million!

With 10 million gold coins, Chu Mu would be able to actually consider going to high ranked cities to purchase soul equipment that directly increased a soul pet's fighting strength!

After leaving the auction hall, Chu Mu immediately arranged the transactions from this auction, and he put the sixth level soul armor back onto his body!

“You guys can go rest for a month.” Chu Mu naturally knew when to stop. After all, the Yang Family was still a family of power, and once he made them heighten their vigilance, it would be extremely hard to plunder their industries.

“Nightmare Prince, not long ago I saw people from other factions in Nightmare palace wandering about in the vicinity. Presumably, it is the Luo Region's Nightmare Prince whose status is relatively the same as yours is about to arrive,” said He Lang.

Nightmare Palace naturally had different factions. Chu Mu and his subordinates were Nightmare Palace assassins under Xia Guanghan's control. On the other hand, the Luo Region Nightmare Prince followed in the steps of the egregious Blue Nightmare Palace Lord, and their people were spread out in the various cities in Luo Region...

“There's no need to clash with them. Just do your own things properly,” said Chu Mu.

“Yes!!” He Lang nodded his head and brought the group of assassins away.

The Yang Family’s Residence

After hearing the news of the Yang Mantian son and father dying coupled with the 5 million gold coins being robbed, the old city lord, Yang Kuo, finally couldn’t suppress his blood. It spurted out of his mouth and sprayed onto the ground!!

“Who is it?!! Who on earth is it?!! Who dared to mercilessly murder my son and grandson?!!” Yang Kuo’s expression was malevolent to the extreme.

In this short period, countless industries of their Yang Family had been destroyed, and 5 million gold coins had been stolen on an unobstructed main street. What made the old city lord unable to tolerate it even more was that his second son, Yang Mantian, had suddenly died in the forest. Even Yang Shan had turned into a scorched black corpse!! A group of Yang Family people waited under Yang Kuo’s indignant bloody roars, with no one daring to speak a word. With trembling fear, they knelt on the ground.

In the past ten years, the Yang Family had continued to grow smoothly and steadily in Gangluo City. Yet, no one expected to face this kind of bloody episode of catastrophe. Anybody could see that this time, the Yang Family was the target!!

“Go, and immediately send people for me and invite the tardy Luo Region Nightmare Prince who hasn’t arrived yet. Have him use Nightmare Palace’s powers and to find out who is doing this!!” indignantly roared Yang Kuo towards Yang Luobin.

Yang Luobin immediately nodded his head in response. Yang Luobin had a bit of blood relationship with the Luo Region Nightmare Prince. Originally, the Luo Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen should have already appeared in Gangluo City, but he seemed to have been delayed by something, and still hadn’t arrived even now. If he were here, then this thing could have potentially been prevented. After all, the Nightmare Palace’s powers encompassed a vast amount of area, and they could easily find out all kinds of information.

“Father... do you still remember Nightmare Palace’s Xia Guanghan?” Yang Mancan’s face sunk as he slowly spoke.

Hearing Xia Guanghan being mentioned, Yang Kuo’s eyebrows instantly creased.

Back then, the Yang Family had requested a Nightmare Palace assassin to come out and bypass Chu Tiancheng to assassinate Chu Mu. The assassin who came happened to be Nightmare Palace’s Xia Guanghan. At that time, the Yang Family believed that Xia Guanghan was only an assassin in Nightmare Palace whose strength was considered formidable. They didn’t believe that he was important. Thus, using their bit of relationship with Luo Region’s Nightmare Prince Yang Gesen, they skimmed out on Xia Guanghan’s reward. However, Xia Guanghan ended up being a fierce person who slaughtered the Yang Family’s experts before

stealing the only complete soul technique in the Yang Family – Violent Blood Pupil”.

“If it really is him, then the only way we can resolve this issue is to invite Yang Luosen.” softly said Yang Mancan.

Yang Kuo didn't say anything, but his face grew even more unsightly.

Just like paper cannot wrap fire, the news of the Yang Family suffering their largest hit in the last ten years quickly spread around Gangluo City. Everyone began to guess which faction had such guts to do so. There were even people conjecturing that it was very likely a large faction with whom the Yang Family had inadvertently offended, since this faction was able to both unknowingly flounder the Yang Family's industries and steal a large sum of money!

Very soon, there was some smart person who recalled the Demon Ant Emperor taking control of the Yang Family's territory in the past, and felt that it was very probable that it was this large faction's method of retaliation. Thus, for a while, the more the news of the Yang Family about to face a catastrophe proliferated, the more it grew...

However, a while later, no other tragedies happened to the Yang Family, and a few people felt that the matter of offending a large faction was unfounded. A few other people believed that this very cell could be the large faction brewing up an even crazier revenge.

Regardless of how abuzz the news of the Yang Family got, it caused any member of the Yang Family feel anxious. The time of Recommendation was about to arrive, and Gangluo City and its affiliate cities had already begun to prepare for this grand occasion that occurred once every five years!

As the Recommendation slowly drew near, the number of people in Gangluo City grew increasingly many. Simultaneously, there were many vagabonds that began to join the various large factions of Gangluo City.

The Chu Family originally was in a state of decline, and there were few experts who were willing to pledge loyalty to them. However, because of news of the Yang Family angering a large faction had spread, the number of people who joined the Yang Family had decreased. This more or less helped the Chu Family recover a bit of their manpower. They no longer were declining, and instead were slowly recovering their power.

There was only a month left until the Recommendation. The family head Chu Ming, the second family head Chu Nan, and the second generation members were all busy with the enlistment of new members, the expansion of their influence, and the planning of their industries.

The third generation disciples were naturally assiduously training, doing their last preparations for the Recommendation that was just around the corner.

In the final month, Chu Mu finally began to train with the other Chu Family brothers.

The Recommendation was split into teams on the basis of power. However, the method of fighting wasn't one big team fight, but rather sequential team fights. Essentially, in every fight, each side would send forth one competitor to face off. Although one didn't have to pay much attention to who fought whom, the sequence of fighters was extremely crucial towards victory. Therefore, each team had to have a full understanding of each team member's strength before corresponding with the most optimum order of battle.

Since Chu Mu had already decided to make everyone stunned during the Recommendation, he naturally would not expose his entire strength during training. Instead, he put a large portion of his energy towards increasing Zhan Ye's strength.

In the Recommendation, there were many opponents who weren't on the same level as Chu Mu. If he didn't have to, Chu Mu simply wouldn't have Mo Xie appear. Rather, he planned on using the Recommendation to have Zhan Ye exhibit his skills!

“Hmph, you don't want the Mo Ye grandfather gifted you and instead want to train this weak fourth phase fourth stage Mo Ye. Could it be that you want to rely on this Mo Ye with bones like firewood to fight?” Chu Ying let out an unsatisfied expression as her words were even harsher towards Chu Mu.

“Sister, Chu Mu has his own method of training soul pets. You don’t need to question it.” The eldest brother Chu Xing glanced at Chu Ying, who had the arrogance of a young lady, and slowly spoke.

Chu Ying, this eldest young lady, ignored her eldest brother Chu Xing’s words and discovered that Chu Mu had completely disregarded her existence. In an even angrier mood she said: “Summon your Night Thunder Beast, and we’ll fight!”

As Chu Ying spoke, she aggressively summoned her sixth phase eighth stage Red Bird.

The Red Bird was low class warrior rank. After reaching the sixth phase eighth stage, it should be able to deal with many fifth phase and above commander rank soul pets. As Chu Ying was able to casually summon this soul pet with such strength, it was no wonder that she had an incessantly arrogant attitude.

“Sister, don’t make trouble!” the eldest brother Chu Xing instantly creased his eyebrows.

“Brother, why are you always biased towards this fellow like grandfather. He can only summon two soul pets. This means that, while fighting, he’ll be at a large disadvantage. If he doesn’t train those soul pets that can be regarded as having a bit of fighting ability, then won’t he just be deadweight?!” Chu Ying’s cutting words didn’t leave Chu Mu any sentiments. Her overbearing eldest young lady attitude, even with her good looking appearance, truly

made it very hard for Chu Mu to have a good impression of her.

Chu Mu lifted his eyelids and looked at the eldest young lady Chu Ying who used to always make things hard for him in the past. He continued to maintain his indifferent and cold bearing...

“You... big brother, look. That fellow simply doesn't even care about me. I must properly teach him a lesson!” Chu Ying was so angry it was unbearable. She immediately used soul remembrance to order her Red Bird to attack Chu Mu's extremely weak Mo Ye.

“Yi!!!!”

Suddenly, a sharp cry rang out. It was just as the Red Bird was swooping down that everyone became aware of a soul pet with the feathers on its body ignited in vigorous flames. It abnormally quickly rushed towards Chu Ying's red bird and knocked it flying!

“A commander rank Flame Bird!!” The brothers in the Chu Family were promptly stunned as they stared at the sixth phase Flame Bird that had suddenly appeared.

Subsequently, a few eyes shifted to the side to the beautiful figure and gracefully moving woman's body. Their eyes lit up a bit as they were clearly admiring this woman.

Qin Menger...” Chu Ying's eyebrows instantly creased. She glared at the the Qin Family's eldest young lady who had abruptly appeared with ashamed anger. This wasn't the first time Qin

Menger had come to the Chu Family. In the most recent period, one could always see her appear here; moreover, it seemed that every time she was here, she was here to look for Chu Mu.

Among Gangluo City's young female soul pet trainers, Chu Ying's strength ranked among the best and she rarely had a worthy match. However, compared to Qin Menger, she was lacking by several levels. Therefore, every time Qin Menger appeared, Chu Ying could only curb her threatening manner and wear an ostensibly envious and hateful expression...

(Pretty funny author's note: The dude wanted to go watch a meteor shower at 9 and climbed a mountain to do so. Then he accidentally fell asleep... He was awoken because of the cold at the dead of night...)

Chapter 50: Cleansing The Chu Family's Inner Dirt

“We’ll speak off to the side.” Chu Mu said to Qin Menger.

Qin Menger nodded her head and recalled her Flame Bird. She ignored the deliberate provocation of Chu Ying and followed Chu Mu.

“Chu Mu, if you don’t train, where will you run?!” Chu Ying was so angry her face was flushed red. Previously, when this eldest young lady had brought Chu Mu trouble, Chu Mu had kept a standoffish attitude. Presently though, Chu Mu acted as if his eldest cousin was nothing but air!

“Sister Menger has recently been coming over here very often. It’s like the past where she would always follow that kid....” Chu He glanced at Chu Mu and Qin Menger, who had walked to the side and slowly spoke.

Chu Xing nodded his head and said: “They’ve had a good relationship since they were small. Way back then at the beginning the two families planned on...”

When he spoke to this point, Chu Xing suddenly stopped. He became aware that there was no need to mention these matters, and the only thing he did was raise the corners of his mouth.

“Hmph, isn’t it just a matter of marriage? What’s so alarming

about it? If I knew that my fiance had lost a soul and had been missing for four years, I would have already broken all ties with him!” said Chu Ying.

“Younger sister, you can’t be so overbearing when dealing with people. Can’t you see sister Menger has always cared about Chu Mu? When news of Chu Mu losing a soul spread, she was still very good towards him. If Chu Mu is really able to marry such an excellent wife...” as Chu Xing spoke, he let out a bit of envy.

Qin Menger naturally had a beautiful character. She always gave others a feeling of refined, quiet elegance that many people enjoyed. This included Chu Xing, but he knew that Qin Menger had always enjoyed being next to Chu Mu and probably liked Chu Mu, so Chu Xing didn’t harbor any delusional thoughts.

“How is she good? Hmph, older brother only knows how to praise others!” in a fit, Chu Ying aggressively turned around and left. She recalled her Red Bird, not wanting to train anymore.

Chu Mu and Qin Menger didn’t walk far. They stopped off to the side to talk, but Chu Mu’s hearing was exceptionally good, and he could hear the conversation between those few.

In reality, Chu Mu also knew that if there weren’t any mishaps, Qin Menger and himself would be married when he turned 20. However, Qin Menger was chosen by the Luo Region Sect and Chu Mu himself was forced down to Cyan Nightmare Island. Over these four years, the two of them had changed a bit, and many barriers

had now formed in between them. Chu Mu wouldn't regard the marriage his family arranged for him in the past as the same thing; moreover, this marriage should have already been undone in the past.

“Has there been any news?” asked Chu Mu as he looked at Qin Menger.

“Yes, I can probably be very sure. I truly didn't expect the Chu Family's continuous decline in these past few years has always been because of them...” whispered Qin Menger.

“In the past, I felt that it wasn't right. As expected, it was them.” a sneer rose on Chu Mu's face.

The decline of the family was not always because of human sabotage. Instead, it was vermin eating away at the inside of the family. Chu Mu was able to understand this simple concept. The Chu Family caravan's route had been known by the Yang Family. Then, someone had tried to destroy the territory at its weakest point. Now, with the Recommendation imminent, Chu Yi had suffered a wound. These all seemed like careless incidents, but if one were to connect the word “traitor” to these incidents, then these incidents would no longer seem as innocent.

Previously, Chu Mu had obtained some information regarding the Chu Family from He Lang. Many things that should not have happened had occurred in a very mysterious manner. Furthermore, he could feel that the Yang Family and Zhou Family were well aware of these Chu Family incidents...

Chu Mu hadn't exhibited his full strength in the family yet precisely because he had surmised this to be a possibility. If he had let the Yang Family and Zhou Family know his strength earlier, then they definitely would have taken corresponding measures and use various crafty plots.

The Nightmare Palace could only obtain a limited understanding, so Chu Mu intentionally had Qin Menger use her Qin Family information resources to thoroughly investigate and understand this matter.

The Qin Family had been affluent for tens of years and through various trade dealings, they had very deep connections with the Chu Family. If they were to thoroughly investigate, then they definitely would be able to find a few fishy trends within Gangluo City's four great families.

As expected, Qin Menger brought back to Chu Mu a traitor; moreover, information on who the traitor was.

“What do you plan on doing?” Qin Menger quietly asked. If a traitor were to appear within the family, the difficulty of finding out who it was was one thing, while trying to remove him or her was even harder. In the event that the traitor still had a lot of authority, it could still involve the entire family's interests. There were many times when one could be 70-80 percent sure, but he or she had to feign that they didn't know.

“There are some things that, if they should be removed, they

must be removed.” indifferently said Chu Mu.

“If you are to dispose of them... no matter what they say, it’s still your....” Qin Menger stared at Chu Mu and suddenly felt that Chu Mu had truly changed a lot. If it was the Chu Mu from the past, he definitely could not have done this.

“After the Recommendation, I will leave this place. Thus, I must thoroughly clean the affairs here.” said Chu Mu. Qin Menger also felt that Chu Mu was a relatively trustworthy person. Moreover, she already knew his identity, so Chu Mu didn’t have to avoid his matters of dealing with the Chu Family.

“Leave this place?” Qin Menger’s clear pupils stared at Chu Mu.

“Yes.” Chu Mu nodded his head before walking towards the training field.

Qin Menger looked at Chu Mu. For some reason, she felt that the Chu Mu from four years ago, compared to the Chu Mu four years later, was a completely different person. From start to finish, he wore an ice-cold facade that made it hard for others to approach him. He was wise and farsighted, cold and detached, calm and collected, and was hardly emotionally moved... the only thing from Chu Mu that Qin Menger still felt was familiar were the emotions that his eyes revealed when he looked at soul pets...

Late at night, next to the old family master Chu Ming's room, Chu Mu stood in front of the window wearing white clothing. His gaze was fixated on the stretching mountain in the distance.

Next to Chu Mu was the family head Chu Ming. Chu Ming was wearing a nightgown and his pale white hair fluttered in the wind coming from outside the window.

“You have something you want to tell grandfather?” Chu Ming looked at the entirely different temperament of Chu Mu compared to four years ago and slowly spoke.

“Yes, I'm sure grandfather has already sensed it but hasn't dared to make sure. Or perhaps you've always been hesitating.” Chu Mu didn't equivocate.

Chu Mu had originally wanted to use Nightmare Palace assassins to resolve the inner dirt within the Chu Family. However, he ultimately renounced this option. Chu Mu felt that a family, if it needed to rely on the forceful intervention of external members to fix its problems, would never be able to take a turn for the better. Only by resolving the problems from the ground up, and changing things from a subjective point of view, would change happen.

“The Recommendation is about to arrive, and I planned on cleaning up this matter before the Recommendation. Alas...” Chu Ming sighed and looked outside the window; it was a while before he spoke.

“Your arrival has also made me firmly decide. Okay, I think it's

time that I renounce the family head position. If a person has grown old, he will always be have too many apprehensions towards too many things.”

Chu Ming’s words made Chu Mu a bit surprised. He looked at the old man, and after a while, a trace of agony rose on his face. It seemed that not using Nightmare Palace’s assassins was the correct decision.

“Afterwards, your eldest uncle will be in charge of the family’s internal and external affairs. Your eldest uncle does things efficiently, and he will understand how to resolve the internal family affairs...” murmured Chu Ming. Clearly, he had already known in his heart, but even now, he was still a bit hesitant.

Seeing Chu Ming’s gloomy appearance, Chu Mu knew that it really was hard for Chu Ming to come to this decision. After all, that person had made a lot of contributions for the family...

“Go back and rest. Give your grandfather some alone time.” Chu Ming waved his hands, indicating for Chu Mu to go back.

Chu Mu nodded his head. Since Chu Ming had already come to a decision, Chu Mu had nothing to worry about. It would be more appropriate for Chu Ming, as the family head, to resolve this issue...

Over the next month, Chu Mu continued to raise the Mo Ye and

Night Thunder Dream Beast's strength. Although Chu Mu would show up on the Chu Family's training ground, he felt that practicing techniques and training strength wouldn't increase a soul pet's strength as fast as a real battle.

Therefore, in this month, Chu Mu had spent most of his time in the Broken Forest. Using the purest types of fights and an enormous sum of resources, he quickly increased the Zhan Ye's fighting strength.

In this month, the Chu Family was still busy with their networking, their economic situation, their prestige, and their strength. It seemed not to differ too much from the previous Recommendation a few years ago, but the internal members of the family could clearly feel that a slight change was occurring in the family.

This change wasn't extremely obvious, but a few people who had a relative understanding of the family system were able to perceive it.

The few principal industries of the Chu Family's business were gradually taken over by Chu Tianheng, and the Chu Family Guard completely fell into Chu Tianheng's hands as well. The Chu Family servants were assigned to Chu Tianheng's command, and Chu Tianjue's power was diminished in this short period of time.

As the Recommendation approached, the Chu Family people abruptly discovered that in one night, the factions under Chu Nan's banner suddenly withdrew from the important Chu Family industries. They were sent to a rather remote subsidiary city, and

were only in charge of a small portion of the Chu Family's industry.

At this period in time, everyone could see that a great shuffling of cards was occurring in the Chu Family in a short amount of time. The $\frac{1}{3}$ of the industry that was originally controlled by Chu Nan suddenly declined, and the economy of the Chu Family once again took a heavy fall...

The Chu Family was already walking at a low point, and the great shuffle this time ended up dealing a heavy blow to the Chu Family. Many people did not understand why the Chu Family was conducting an extremely unsensible reorganization of the family.

“The fundamentals of the Chu Family's major problem have been resolved. There still remains a few leftover stains that will be cleaned out one speck at a time. However, creating such a large fuss while resolving the issue will also bring huge problems. If we don't manage to reimpose Chu Clan's imposing manner through fighting at this time's Recommendation, our family will be on the verge of the significant crisis of collapse!”

“Therefore, the entire family's fate is in the hands of you five. You absolutely cannot let the family down!!”

The new family head Chu Tianheng's voice deeply resonated in the ears of the five Chu Family children participating in the Recommendation!

(Authors note: He got sick from his stupid mistake last time. But it's only a small sickness.)

Chapter 51: Preliminary Competition Of The Recommendation

Chu Mu had Chu Ming resolve his decision and clean up all of the Chu Family's inner dirt. However, Chu Ming's worry held true. Chu Nan really did control one third of the family's industry. The Chu Family had already entered a low point, and once turmoil appeared in its industry, it was very likely that they would get caught in a crisis!!

Moreover, this crisis absolutely had to rely on this grand, once every five years Recommendation to make a recovery!

The Recommendation didn't only concern the exceptionally generous rewards, but even more importantly, they affected the prestige and status of the Chu Family in Gangluo City.

Only the powerful would receive respect and support. The Chu Family required this majesty and prestige as a great family in order to recover from its most disastrous state. Further, as long as the Chu Family could exhibit their might during this Recommendation, even if they were being forcibly suppressed by the Yang Family, assuming that the internal Chu Family could unite, they would slowly be a force to reckoned with and slowly recover. They could definitely reconsolidate their position within Gangluo City!

The Recommendation this time was extremely important to the Chu Family. The five members chosen by the Chu Family also inherited the heavy responsibility of the family!

As the day of the Recommendation approached, the stream of people into Gangluo City grew increasingly many. Even if it was walking down the street, one could distinctly feel the clamor from the vast crowd as if it was a *** holiday.

The Recommendation. A five person team. The stronger ones would naturally be the leading four great families of the Chu Family, the Zhou Family, the Qin Family, and the Yang Family. Aside from them, in Gangluo City, others powers like the auction house, the Soul Pet Palace, and the families from other families in various cities administered by Gangluo City were all strong competitors for this Recommendation. If a small careless error was made and an upset occurred, it wasn't impossible to break through the four great great families and obtain one of the first four spots. After all, this situation had occurred in the past before.

Gangluo City's area was relatively expansive, and the congregation of all the young experts could be regarded as a mixing together of fish and dragons. Therefore, the Recommendation had set up a few gates and filters.

Originally, all of the four great families could directly skip past this screening and enter the preliminary competition. After obtaining victory in the preliminaries, they could then enter the main competition.

However, the Chu Family was no longer like before, and the Recommendation this time was set up so that the Chu Family

didn't have this privilege. The Chu Family disciples had to start from the preliminary competition.

In reality, everyone knew that it wouldn't pose a problem from the five Chu Family contestants to kill their way into the main competition. Moreover, entering the finals wouldn't be an issue. However, in order for the Yang Family to emphasize that the Chu Family was no longer amongst the great families, as the city lord, Yang Kuo was still able to do this petty maneuver.

The new family head, Chu Tianheng, ignored Yang Kuo's despicable move, and still had the five members directly enter the preliminary competition mixed with both fishes and dragons.

“It truly is too excessive. Unexpectedly making us come here to compete. Any one of us five are capable of casually getting rid of five of them. What point is there in competing?!” Chu Ying began her provocative manner of complaining and scowling at anything.

The brothers of the Chu Family all knew of this eldest young lady's temper and decisively decided not to talk. They instead allowed her to complain for half a day to the family servants over there...

“The arena is also so small. Do they think it's going to be a quarrel between a group of small pets? My Red Bird will be able to nonchalantly burn this place down so that nothing remains,” even though she had entered the arena, Chu Ying still didn't stop her grumbling.

“Eldest young lady, can you calm down for a moment? The more you speak, the more everyone will feel that we are both eminently arrogant and foolishly conceited. Then, in the end, we may become a minor team utterly defeated by experts the moment we enter the arena.” Chu Lang’s eyes swept over Chu Ying, who hadn’t finished speaking as he spoke with contempt.

“Chu Lang, are you courting death?! The facts are like this. For what reason do they make us come here...” Chu Ying instantly directed her criticisms towards Chu Lang.

Chu He looked at Chu Lang and whispered to his elder brother Chu Xing: “Chu Lang doesn’t quite understand younger sister’s temper...”

Chu Xing immediately nodded his head and shifted his gaze to Chu Mu. A smile had risen on Chu Mu’s face, and he didn’t say anything.

Chu Xing, Chu He, and Chu Mu were all brothers under the same direct line of descent. They had a lot of understanding towards Chu Ying’s disposition, so no matter what this woman said, they weren’t wrong when they maintained their silence. If one were to answer her, Chu Ying definitely would not let up. Chu Lang was an expert from the side branch, so he clearly didn’t understand such matters...

As expected, even an hour before the preliminary competitions started, Chu Ying didn’t stop complaining about Chu Lang.

Frequently, she made Chu Lang's face flush with anger through her words.

“Younger sister, don't talk anymore, it's time to fight,” the competition had started, and Chu Xing knew that it was time to stop Chu Ying from going too far, so he called her to attention.

Chu Ying glared at Chu Lang, wishing to continue and said: “These inferior opponents, you get rid of them!”

Chu Lang glanced at the team leader, Chu Xing. He would naturally listen to Chu Xing's plans.

“Chu Lang, you go first. The opponent's strength is not strong. Get rid of as many as you can, as long as your soul pets can completely recover their fighting power within two days. Afterwards, Chu Mu will go...” said Chu Xing.

Chu Lang nodded his head, and he was the first to jump into the arena. He chanted an incantation and promptly summoned his commander rank Light Rhinoceros!

Chu Lang's commander rank Light Rhinoceros had already reached the fifth phase eighth stage. Its grandeur completely covered the opponent's fifth phase warrior rank soul pet!!

.....Of the five opponent members, Chu Lang summoned three soul pets and disposed of four members. The last person's strength was slightly stronger, so Chu Mu went to finish it.

Although the last opponent's strength was slightly more powerful, this person still hadn't reached the spirit teacher level, and he could only summon two soul pets.

Chu Mu directly summoned the fifth phase first stage Zhan Ye.

In this period of time, Chu Mu had spent at least 2 million gold coins coupled with seemingly ceaseless fighting without rest in order to forcibly raise Zhan Ye to the fifth phase first stage.

Zhan Ye was also extremely hardworking and, perhaps because it seemed to almost not have used any soul items, soul crystals, attribute stones or other various methods of training, his speed of growth could be described with the words flying speed!

"The fifth phase already? A month ago, wasn't it only at the fourth phase fourth stage?" seeing Chu Mu summon the fifth phase Mo Ye, the other four were instantly stunned!

"How did this fellow do it? Could it be that this Mo Ye is in a bursting growth phase?" said Chu Ying.

A bursting growth phase referred to the continuous growth of a soul pet in a short period of time in which its strength would rapidly increase. This kind of situation normally would only appear through the use of various soul goods. Occasionally, it would happen because the soul pet's innate potential suddenly burst forth.

Chu Mu's opponent was a woman. He could see that this female soul pet trainer clearly knew that meeting the Chu Family team meant inevitable defeat, but she still very stubbornly got on stage and fought.

"A fifth phase first stage Mo Ye. I should be able to deal with it." the female soul pet trainer immediately summoned her first soul pet.

The female soul pet trainer summoned a very common Gila Monster that had already reached the sixth phase fourth stage. Its figure was over four meters large, and when it appeared on stage, it was an enormous creature with a very ample grandiose.

Compared to the Gila Monster's four metered body covered in thick armor, even if Chu Mu stretched it, Zhan Ye was barely two meters, and he was clearly a lot smaller!

The Gila Monster took the initiative to launch an attack. As its heavy body rushed forth, the entire arena seemed to shake. It charged at the ink colored armored Zhan Ye.

The Mo Ye's speed couldn't be considered too fast, but compared to the heavy creature, it was much more agile. It quickly leapt away, before immediately spitting a Death Ray towards the Gila Monster.

The Death Ray exploded on the ground. Energy recklessly swept through, lifting the extremely heavy Gila Monster off the ground!!

Shattering Claw!!

Seemingly just as the Gila Monster exposed its abdomen where there was no armor covering, Zhan Ye's speed suddenly increased. From within the ink armor, its front limbs abruptly extended five eminently sharp ink colored claws that struck the Gila Monster's abdomen!!

A critical strike!

Zhan Ye's attack forcibly knocked the Gila Monster up, whereby the extremely heavy and large soul pet immediately rolled to the side!!

The arena was suddenly covered in silence. The only sound heard was the tumbling of the enormous lizard-like body of the Gila Monster!

“So... so fast!” Chu Xing, Chu He, and Chu Lang all simultaneously showed flabbergasted expressions. They completely did not expect Chu Mu's Mo Ye to dispatch this sixth phase fourth stage soul pet the moment it began its attack!!

The series of moves just now – a jumping dodge, a discharged Death Ray, an explosion of speed and the Shattering Claw attack timing-such a grasp of fighting was definitely not something a

normal soul pet trainer could do. Everyone further felt that there was a bit of coincidence involved.

“I forfeit...”

That female soul pet trainer promptly chanted an incantation without even thinking of summoning her second soul pet. Her face was full of dejection as she communicated to the referee.

A fifth phase first stage commander rank versus a sixth phase fourth stage warrior rank. Presumably, the sixth phase fourth stage warrior rank had a slight advantage. Ultimately, however, in the first bout of attacks, it had been knocked down. With such a large disparity in the fight, there was no point in continuing to compete.

There was a wide difference between the strength of the four great families and the factions of fishes and dragons. It was also precisely because of this reason that the four great families could immediately skip the preliminary rounds.

Although the Chu Family was currently in decline, the strength of its third generation of disciples wasn't weak. Even if they had been pushed to participate in the preliminary competition, they would nevertheless be extremely easy to obtain victory.

“The Chu Family is the Chu Family after all. Their strength is still so tyrannical!”

“Being reduced to the screening... in the end, one member managed to defeat four opponents. The second member was able to

defeat the last opponent in one strike. The difference is too large. I'm sure that obtaining victory in the preliminary competition should be very easy.”

“Ultimately, it will still be a contest between the four great families...”

After seeing the Chu Family disciples' strengths, those who were originally mocking the Chu Family for being degraded to the preliminary competition decisively shut their mouths. The others began to guess.

“The semifinals are in two days. When that time comes, we must keep reservations and wait until the finals before using our true strength.” after the fight ended, Chu Xing seriously spoke to the other four.

“Yes.” Everyone nodded their heads.

“After the semifinals is the main competition. If there aren't any surprises, they will face the Zhou Family. The Zhou Family's circumstance has more or less already been researched. However, they definitely have some hidden strength, so we must be especially careful.” Chu Xing reminded the four people.

“What experts does the Zhou Family have?” asked Chu Mu.

“The hardest person in the Zhou Family to deal with is Zhou Pan. This fellow has a sixth phase third stage Multi Colored Devil Tiger.

Apparently, 1 million gold coins was spent in Luo Region City to purchase it.” said Chu Xing.

Mentioning Zhou Pan, Chu Xing’s face turned a bit gloomy. Clearly, he harbored many grudges towards this Zhou Pan!

Chapter 52: It's Only That My Life Is A Bit Tenacious

The second day after the preliminary competition was the semi finals. For the semifinals, the Chu Family probably should have said that their luck wasn't very good, as they were up against the Soul Pet Palace team!

The Soul Pet Palace faction was extremely huge, and it probably wasn't inferior to the powerful organization of Nightmare Palace that was found everywhere in this world. The main palace of the Soul Pet Palace wasn't in Luo Region, but was instead in some far away region. Thus, in Gangluo City, the Soul Pet Palace's influence wasn't too strong, and they primarily conducted soul pet transactions.

In the majority of cities, Soul Pet Palace would take a neutral stance, and they would rarely side or discriminate in favor of any faction in a certain city. Additionally, if Soul Pet Palace had people stationed in cities, it would maintain a passive stance, and would not conflict at all with any of the big powers of that place.

Gangluo City's Soul Pet Palace team wasn't considered terribly strong, but there were numerous experts in Soul Pet Palace, and the young experts they sent were definitely not normal people.

The arrangement of battle was still Chu Lang leading the way, followed by Chu Mu. In order to preserve physical strength to handle the subsequent stronger opponents, Chu Xing didn't have Chu Lang continue fighting after winning. Instead, after winning one round, he immediately switched people.

Chu Lang had obtained victory in the first round, and so Chu Mu immediately switched in to deal with Soul Pet Palace's second opponent. Chu Mu's opponent wasn't powerful, but it was a spirit teacher that could summon three soul pets. Relying only on Zhan Ye naturally would not obtain him victory, so Chu Mu also summoned the Night Thunder Dream Beast to enter the fight.

After using heavenly demon tears, the Night Thunder Dream Beast entered a burst growth phase. In a short period of time, it had reached the fifth phase ninth stage. According to Chu Mu's estimates, over the next few days, it should be able to evolve to the sixth phase.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast had already used a sixth level soul crystal to train. If it wanted to train again, then Chu Mu would have to purchase an expensive seventh level soul crystal.

The price of a seventh level soul crystal was extremely terrifying. A single type would reach 1.5 million gold coins, while a dual type would probably require 2 million gold coins. Even if it was a great family in Gangluo City, they would not be able to casually purchase one.

Once the fifth phase ninth stage Night Thunder Dream Beast appeared on stage, a sigh rang throughout the arena! Dream Beasts were nobility soul pets amongst the commander rank. With a dual lightning and thunder attribute, its value was even higher. Even with a normal aptitude, it would be comparable to many highly talented high class commander rank soul pets.

The fifth phase ninth stage Night Thunder Dream Beast's fighting power was naturally much stronger than the fifth phase first stage Mo Ye. The Night Thunder Dream Beast fought one versus two, and its fighting style was like an elegant dancer, allowing it to easily dodge the attacks of the opposing two sixth phase warrior rank soul pets. Very soon, it defeated the two soul pets, causing people to let out a rather large gasp of surprise.

Compared to the Night Thunder Dream Beast's beautiful performance, Zhan Ye's fight against a fifth phase third stage commander rank Bloodsucking Hundred Stem Devil was rather strenuous. After all, Zhan Ye's fighting strength was slightly inferior to a normal commander rank soul pet.

Chu Mu didn't have the Night Thunder Dream Beast interfere with Zhan Ye's fight. The early part of Zhan Ye's fight was him silently enduring, suffering from continuous whip-like stem slaps. The Bloodsucking Hundred Stem Devil had hundreds of grass stems on its body and hundreds of tentacle-like weapons. Grass type soul pets harbored a slight advantage when facing beast type soul pets, so it was naturally very hard for Zhan Ye to win.

“Chu Mu, replace your soul pet. This Mo Ye's fighting spirit isn't bad, but there isn't a need to render its body full of bruises. Save up a bit of fighting strength for the fights in the future.” Chu Xing used his soul remembrance to remind Chu Mu on the battlefield.

Zhan Ye's temperament was understood very well by Chu Mu. It definitely would not just casually give up a fight, so he continued to let it fight.

“This fellow, don’t think that you’re infallible with a Night Thunder Dream Beast. Quickly listen to older brother’s plans!” Chu Ying was a bit annoyed as she yelled at Chu Mu.

Chu Mu continued to disregard Chu Ying’s words, and he indifferently stood on the field, unmoving. Like a black colored statue with cold emotionless eyes, he conducted the Mo Ye’s fight.

Finally, after unceasingly persistent attacks, the Bloodsucking Hundred Stem Devil finally exposed a gap. Zhan Ye, who understood counterattacking when the opponent was overextended, immediately grasped the opportunity, and he got close to the Bloodsucking Hundred Stem Devil’s overstretched body.

The moment a plant world grass type soul pet was closed in on, it wasn’t far from death. The opponent realized that Chu Mu’s Zhan Ye could very likely deal an extremely great wound to his soul pet, and he very decisively recalled his own soul pet, proclaiming his loss in the fight.

“Your Mo Ye has a lot of perseverance.” insipidly said the Soul Pet Palace opponent, as he looked at Chu Mu.

Chu Mu only nodded his head and didn’t say anything. After the referee announced his victory in battle, he slowly walked off the stage.

“Hmph, completely depleting this Mo Ye’s fighting strength and then fighting with the Zhou Family is essentially putting yourself

at a disadvantage. Why do you understand nothing about fighting tactics.” Chu Ying’s complaints rang out once more.

Chu Mu lifted his eyelids, but didn’t say anything as he sat next to Chu Xing. He then said: “It’s recovery ability is extremely powerful and will not interfere with tomorrow’s fight.”

Chu Xing could see that Chu Mu wasn’t an impulsive person and nodded his head.

After the semifinals ended, the main tournament was even more grand. The competition of the main tournament was even held in the extremely luxurious Gangluo City Battlefield.

The main tournament was different from the semifinals, as the main tournament could be regarded as the true Recommendation!

The main tournament had two battles in total. Without any particular surprise, the first battle was Huiyan City’s Su Family. The Su Family could be considered a great family, but Huiyan City’s Su Family was only really a side branch, and could only be regarded as an upper class family in Gangluo City. However, compared to the four great families, their foundation was a bit lacking.

Since the Chu Family would have to deal with the Zhou Family in the second battle, and face the Su Family tomorrow, they would have to preserve their strength when fighting the Su Family.

They continued to do things as they did in the semifinals, with Chu Lang starting off. His opponent was a third remembrance soul pet trainer who controlled a sixth phase commander rank soul pet. Chu Lang's strongest soul pet was only the Light Rhinoceros, whose strength was clearly inferior to this Su Family expert.

However, since he controlled a sixth phase commander rank soul pet, this was probably the Su Family's strongest person. As long as they got rid of this fellow, the other four wouldn't be able to hold up.

The average strength of Chu Lang's three soul pets wasn't very different from the Su Family team leader's. However, he had no way of dealing with the opponent's sixth phase commander rank, and ultimately lost in order to preserve a bit of strength.

"Chu He, here you go." said Chu Xing. He had Chu He go and face off against the Su Family's team leader.

The reticent Chu He nodded his head and slowly walked towards the arena. He saw that the opponent's three soul pets had already been summoned, but he only summoned two soul pets himself.

Chu He's strength was second only to Chu Xing. For the time being, Chu Mu hadn't even seen him summon his strongest soul pet.

Chu He's two soul pets were a fifth phase seventh stage Mo Ye and the sixth phase ninth stage Silver Armor Heavenly Bug.

The Silver Armor Heavenly Bug was a warrior rank soul pet. Chu He's sixth phase ninth stage Silver Armor Heavenly Bug had clearly gone through bug type strengthening, and even though it was facing the Su Family's sixth phase commander rank, it would still be able to meet it with ease!

The battle didn't even last ten minutes before the Su Family's team leader conceded. However, Chu He didn't immediately get off the field, and continued to use his two summoned soul pets to get rid of another Su Family opponent. Afterwards, in order to preserve strength, he got off.

Chu Ying's strength identically was not weak. After the Su Family's strongest opponent had been defeated, Chu Ying used under ten minutes to defeat her opponent in an absolutely domineering fashion.

Right afterwards was Chu Xing's fight. His strength was the strongest and so far, Chu Mu also hadn't seen him summon his strongest soul pet. Apparently, it was a sixth phase Mo Ye.

Chu Xing's second strongest soul pet appeared on stage and still easily defeated its opponent. Thus, it managed to preserve the most of its strength.

The last one to go on stage was Chu Mu. His opponent was a spirit soldier that could only summon two soul pets. This ended up making Chu Mu greatly disappointed. It seemed that the Su Family's team leader was the only relatively strong one. The others

were a bit subpar, as they couldn't even gather five spirit teachers from their younger generation.

He continued to let Zhan Ye fight, followed by the Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

Chu Mu wanted to temper Zhan Ye's fighting ability, and even after the Devil Tree Battle Soldier easily defeated its opponent, Chu Mu still did not let it interfere with the Mo Ye's fight.

“That's odd. Didn't this fifth phase first stage Mo Ye sustain a full body of injuries only two days ago from the Bloodsucking Hundred Stem Devil? How is its fighting strength replenished again today?” Many people who saw Chu Mu's battle before let out flabbergasted expressions.

In the past, everyone in Gangluo City knew that Chu Mu couldn't summon a soul pet. Four years later, numerous people discovered that this once ridiculed person appeared amongst the Chu Family's youth, causing them to be exceptionally astonished. They began to secretly lament that the Chu Family truly had no people left, and that they could only use Chu Mu, who had only four years of summoning experience, to participate in the fights.

However, during the few Recommendation fights, Chu Mu's performance had caused many people to be shocked. They didn't think that in four years, this brat who couldn't summon a soul pet would already have a bit of strength; dealing with third-rate opponents was as easy as blowing off dust to him.

Of course, the most prominent thing was still Chu Mu's Night Thunder Dream Beast. It was essentially a great highlight in the arena, but the majority of people believed that the Chu Family had spent a great amount of money to purchase it in order to increase Chu Mu's strength. They didn't think that Chu Mu himself had raised it...

It was precisely because of Chu Mu's unique circumstances that he received a lot of attention. After fighting consecutive fights, there would automatically be people who found Chu Mu's fifth phase first stage regular Mo Ye to have a bizarre aspect.

"Chu Mu's Mo Ye truly had a very strong recovery ability. Generally speaking, it was just like last time: a normal soul pet needed at least six or seven days to recover, but Zhan Ye was able to fully recover its fighting strength in two days. It should be a Mo Ye with an outstanding bug type talent." said Chu Xing as he nodded his head.

"The soul pet brother Chu Mu chose for Yishui was so strong. How can his own soul pet be inferior? That small Mo Ye definitely has many other strengths." said Chu Yishui.

"Hmph, in my opinion, it's just slightly more [tenacious](#)." harrumphed Chu Ying. She didn't think very highly of Chu Mu's small Mo Ye.

TL: In this context I translated 命硬 as tenacious. This is a bit of a tricky word as there's no direct translation in English. It's not entirely tenacious, but rather a step more intense. Essentially, during its life it has encountered tons of bumps and hardships and managed to survive. Through tribulations and near-death

experiences, it has still managed to live and thus made it's life 'tenacious'. In the future when I describe Zhan Ye as 'tenacious', the tenacity I refer to is closer to this.

The sole unique aspect of Chu Mu's Zhan Ye really was its tenacity. However, it wasn't a normal tenacity. In all likelihood, it would be very soon before Zhan Ye could exhibit its abnormal ability!

Chapter 53: The Weakest, Chu Mu, Leading The Fight

“It should be special in some aspect. That Demon Spirit Butterfly that Chu Mu chose for younger sister is really formidable. At her age, there aren’t many soul pet trainers that are her opponent any more.” said Chu Xing.

Chu Ning, who came to spectate the fight nodded his head in agreement. Chu Ning knew Chu Mu’s true strength, and if Chu Mu were to summon the Ice Air Fairy he summoned last time to defeat Yang Jie, these inferior people would be all decimated!

“Spending a month to choose a soul pet will inevitably lead to one lucky encounter with a talented soul pet. It may not be that his insight is good.” Chu Ying continued to maintain her ‘opposition to everything’ attitude.

“Old witch...” Chu Yishui adorably hid behind Chu Ning and timidly cursed in a small voice.

Today, Zhan Ye was evidently particularly active, and he wasn’t like before, where he would adopt counterattack tactics. Instead, from the beginning, he launched a violent offensive, and didn’t give the opponent any opportunity to breathe.

Zhan Ye possessed the Broken Limb Rebirth ability and could unceasingly self heal. However, normally, the opponent wouldn’t

be able to injure Zhan Ye that easily, as his current defense wasn't low.

Through the violent offensive, Zhan Ye displayed his wild side, and didn't give the opponent many chances to counterattack. Quickly, he ended the last fight.

In the previous matches of the competition, aside from the Night Thunder Dream Beast Chu Mu summoned against Soul Pet Palace and the Devil Tree Battle Soldier he just summoned, the majority of the fights had been for Zhan Ye to finish.

There wasn't too much worry with this fight with the Su Family. The important fight was tomorrow, against the Zhou Family. After all, their strength from a holistic perspective was ranked third. If the Chu Family could defeat the Zhou Family, barring any unforeseen surprises, they would be able to enter the top three!

Of course, in order to quickly recover the Chu Family's strength, it would still be best to obtain first place. After all, the sixth rank territory won by first place was actually the Chu Family's territory that had been sold a few years ago when they had no other choice.

After the battle ended, Chu Xing brought the others away and left the arena.

During the past few fights of the competition, none of the Chu Family members would come to spectate. However, the battle

tomorrow was the most important, so presumably, the people of the four great families and other factions would all show up.

The moment they walked out of the arena, they immediately saw another team slowly walking into the arena. Amongst them was a man wearing something distinctly conspicuous that swept his gaze over the five Chu Family people.

“It’s Chu Xing and them...” slowly whispered the Zhuo Family disciple standing next to the bright and neat man.

“It’s Zhou Pan...” Chu Lang glanced at this young man and revealed a bit of evident hostility.

Zhou Pan, who was wearing conspicuous clothing, lifted the corners of his mouth and intentionally walked in front of Chu Xing. With a small smile, he opened his mouth and said: “Tomorrow is the fight between my family and yours. I’m very excited to be able to determine superiority with you in a bout.”

“After being beaten down by me, you won’t be talking like this.” hostilely said Chu Xing.

Chu Mu had left for four years, and didn’t have very much of an impression of Zhou Pan. After looking at him once, he followed behind Chu Yishui.

Chu Yishui also knew that Chu Mu didn’t know of a lot of things, and she immediately moved next to Chu Mu’s ear and whispered:

“Brother, this Zhou Pan is older brother’s formidable opponent. Five years ago, older brother lost at the hands of this fellow. Don’t be fooled by this fellow’s respectable appearance. In reality, his state of mind is more ruthless than anyone. Five years ago, when older brother had already conceded, he wasn’t able to recall his soul pet in time and his most cherished Light Rhinoceros was slaughtered. At that time, the Light Rhinoceros was already at the fifth phase, and its growth potential was very large. If it didn’t die, it currently would probably be at the sixth phase, nearing the seventh.”

Chu Yishui’s words made Chu Mu think of this matter, and he remembered that Chu Xing had been depressed for a period of time because of this event.

Soul pets couldn’t grow forever and, as the soul pet grew and evolved, and its phase and stage rose, it would become increasingly harder to continue raising its strength.

The sixth phase and seventh stage could be said to be a boundary for a majority of soul pets. If a commander rank soul pet could enter the seventh phase, its strength definitely would increase by a huge amount. Only, unfortunately, it wasn’t just any soul pet that could evolve to the seventh phase.

Chu Xing’s Light Rhinoceros had extremely highly gifted growth and everyone in the family believed that entering the seventh phase shouldn’t be a problem. Chu Xing also viewed that Light Rhinoceros as precious as his own life. Unfortunately, it was killed by Zhou Pan five years ago; it was no wonder that the calm Chu Xing could let out such a profound hostility...

“Yi, isn’t this Chu Mu? Can you Chu Clan really not find anyone else to compete? You’ve actually put a person even more useless than Chu Yi as a competitor. There really isn’t a need to just give up completely. Don’t you think that the Chu Clan has been embarrassed enough in the past few years?” The Zhou Family’s Zhou Lijun discovered Chu Mu, and a mocking smile rose on her face.

The Zhou Family’s young lady Zhou Lijun was a tyrannical woman known throughout the entire Gangluo City. Despite having a beautiful exterior, her character instead made others truly unimpressed.

Chu Mu had a bit of an impression of this evil woman. This evil woman had an extremely intense jealousy towards Qin Menger. Since Qin Menger was often together with Chu Mu, Zhou Lijun began to speak of Chu Mu losing a soul as a joke. Ultimately, it seemed that everytime she saw Chu Mu, she would mock and ridicule him, with her words being exceptionally sharp.

In the Chu Family, Chu Ying was the most provokable eldest young lady. However, in Chu Mu’s opinion, Chu Ying merely enjoyed complaining. A bit of it was from her character, while a bit of it was annoying-that was it. However, the Zhou Lijun in front of him was the sort of woman who simply caused others to despise her to the max!

“Zhou Lijun right?” Chu Mu lifted his head and stared at this woman, his face still as grave and stern as before...

Chu Mu speaking caused everyone in the Chu Family to be stunned and they all turned towards Chu Mu.

In the recent short amount of time that they had been associated with him, everyone knew that the Chu Mu who had disappeared from four years had clearly transformed. He had become cold and unyielding, unmoved by successes or failures, and no matter how much he was praised or challenged, he would always have a unperturbed appearance...

However, Chu Mu taking the initiative to speak was extremely rare. Especially under these circumstances, directly calling out the opposing woman's name.

“Brother...” Chu Yishui hugged Chu Mu's arm even tighter, and used her eyes to tell Chu Mu not to provoke this woman whose brain had issues.

“Oh, I heard that after you disappeared for four years you'd turned mute. It seems that this isn't the case. You still know how to speak...” a smile appeared on Zhou Lijun's face. This smile was as ugly as could be, and one couldn't help but want to slap one's shoe across her face!

“Tomorrow, any soul pet you summon will die.” Chu Mu's tone was flat as he spoke.

Chu Mu's words brought about two effects. The Chu Family people all let out startled expressions, while the Zhou Family people were having a hearty laugh.

Zhou Pan swept his eyes over Chu Xing and, with an attitude as if Chu Mu's matter wasn't anything important, he said: "Your younger brother is truly interesting. Lijun, let's go. Tomorrow, perhaps people may die rather than soul pets."

The Recommendation didn't advocate killing, but if the opposing soul pet trainer exposed gaps, letting the soul pet directly attack the soul pet trainer and killing him or her wasn't illegal, as long as one could bear the pressure from the faction behind the person he or she killed.

Zhou Lijun still wanted to ridicule the boasting Chu Mu for a few more sentences, but seeing that her elder brother Zhou Pan had already turned around and left, she sneered and quickly followed behind.

"Fourth brother, tomorrow you must sort out that woman well. For a long time, I've found her unpleasing." said Chu Ning.

"Mhm." Chu Mu nodded his head. There were a few people where, if he didn't fiercely trample their pride, they would never know they were a ***.

After returning to the Chu Family, Chu Ming, Chu Tianheng, and a group of inner Chu Family members began to discuss tomorrow's strategy during battle.

Fighting in turns naturally meant that they had to pay a lot of attention to the order. Especially when the difference in strength wasn't that large, who started the fight and who was the anchor was extremely crucial.

“Chu Mu, do you have any useful suggestions? What do you think their order of fighting will be?” asked Chu Ming.

“I don't have any suggestions. However, I feel that we don't necessarily have to win the first fight. They will definitely send out a strong person to win the first fight...”

Everyone felt that the first fight was a must win because after winning the first fight, they could first know who the next member to go up on stage was. Thereafter, according to whomever the second Zhou Family member was, the Chu Family could send a corresponding person capable of matching this person's attribute. By cycling like this, the chances of obtaining victory were larger.

Of course, the first person to fight couldn't be the strongest person. After all, a fight had many variables, and the anchor had to be the strongest.

In Chu Mu's opinion, the Chu Family should send their weakest member for the first round. By throwing a brick to attract jade, they would be able to use up the battle strength of one of the slightly stronger opposing members.

After conceding, the second Chu Family member who went up would have average strength, but have the right attribute counter.

By doing this, it was equivalent to using a weak person and an average person to get rid of a slightly strong opponent. Moreover, this average Chu Family member would still be able to continue fighting, and use up the next opponent's fighting strength.

As for whether the opponent didn't send out a slightly strong member for the first fight, then it didn't matter. A weakling versus a weakling was a contest of strength, while a weakling versus someone strong was a contest of stamina...

Chu Ming and Chu Tianheng both felt that Chu Mu's words made a bit of sense. Indeed, there was no need to randomly guess the opponent's order of battle; instead changing according to the situation was slightly more suitable...

“In reality, order doesn't matter at all...”

Chu Mu added on another sentence at the end, but the others didn't hear his sentence.

Indeed, order didn't matter at all. If Chu Mu was put first, then he would completely wipe them all out.

.....

Chu Mu's suggestion was to put the weakest first. Ultimately, what made Chu Mu a bit helpless, was that he had been tactfully informed that he would be the first person to go.

“It seems that my low profile was a bit excessive...” after knowing the order of battle, Chu Mu bitterly laughed. Apparently, the others could preserve a lot of energy tomorrow.

.....

The second round of the main competition was a heavyweight competition. The Recommendation battlefield was located on the most magnificent center plaza battlefield of Gangluo City.

The plaza battlefield was composed of a relatively easy to mend soft rock. The battlefield was a rectangle, its length reaching 300 meters, and its width 150 meters. Inside the plaza battlefield stood various carved ancient soul pet patterns on towering white pillars that reached 20 meters in height.

The white pillars weren't concentrated and were scattered in an arc, thereby not obstructing the spectators' line of vision while simultaneously giving the plaza battlefield a few obstacles.

Chapter 54: Instant Combined Kill!

“Chu Mu, you must be especially careful during the first round. If you can’t defeat them, don’t force yourself too much.” Chu Tianheng earnestly said to Chu Mu.

“Mhm, I will take note of that.” Chu Mu nodded his head. There wasn’t a need to explain too much.

Ardent shouts resounded next to his ears. On the battlefield’s contestant seats, Chu Mu’s gaze swept through the surrounding throng of spectators outside the battlefield. In his heart, there unexpectedly flared up a slight feeling of passion.

Chu Mu remembered a time five years ago, when he had attended the Recommendation. At that time, the 13, 14 year old Chu Mu witnessed other people using their soul pets on the extensive battlefield. These people bore the attentive gazes of over 10,000 people, and fought with their opponent to their heart’s content... there were various powerful soul pets with various different attributes and abilities. There were beautiful soul pet techniques, and the nervous moments just before victory or defeat was decided, and then the gasps of shock when the victor was decided. Such a breathtaking event would forever become a longing of Chu Mu, who couldn’t summon soul pets.

From a very early time, Chu Mu had longed for battle. He had longed to stand on the battlefield and use the various kinds of rich soul pet knowledge he had learned on a soul pet he had raised himself. Afterwards, under the shocked and cheering cries of everyone, he would defeat his opponent and obtain veneration,

honor....

Originally, he had believed he was incapable of becoming a soul pet trainer, so he was unable to fight as much as he wanted as he did in his dreams. However, in a span of five years, he had ultimately still arrived here. Despite the complications and the misery, being able to make the family feel proud because of him and being able to make those despicable enemies feel fear was all extremely worth it!

“First round, Chu Mu versus Zhou Lijun!” exclaimed the referee. He used soul remembrance in his voice and decreed the two members of the first round.

Most recently, the most popular topic obviously pertained to the Recommendation. The most talked about topic of the Chu Family wasn't the strongest Chu Xing. Rather, it was Chu Mu, who made everyone feel incomparably astonished.

Chu Mu being deposed of a soul was something everyone knew of. After losing a soul, even despite reaching the spirit teacher level, he could only summon two soul pets. In this way, he was clearly at a disadvantage.

Many people were questioning of Chu Mu's persistence to walk the soul pet trainer path. Furthermore, they didn't think that this fellow who had lost a soul and two soul pet spaces would surprisingly appear in this eminently important Recommendation competition.

Those who had interacted with Chu Mu before the competitions all felt that perhaps this previously joked about fellow in Gangluo City had transformed over these four years. Those who didn't interact with him continued to have a contemptuous bearing, and they felt that the Chu Family truly had no one left, unexpectedly using this fellow who could only summon two soul pets to participate in the competition!

“Lijun, it's best if you don't overdo it. If something happens to this brat and Chu Tiancheng returns, we will have a lot of trouble. That fellow is a madman.” said the Zhou Family's young head, Zhou Shangke.

“There's nothing too bad that should happen, eh? Isn't that Chu Tiancheng currently crippled like him?” objected Zhou Lijun.

“I've heard that his ailment has been lifted. I'm not sure how that fellow's strength will undulate, but it's best to be careful. This full-on conflict would be best handled by the Yang Family.” said Zhou Shangke.

Zhou Lijun still remembered the words Chu Mu said to her yesterday. She wanted to properly teach him a lesson. However, after listening to Zhou Shangke's words, she could only nod her head.

Chu Mu slowly walked onto stage and passed through the arc of pillars. He stood in the centermost part of the arena, his gaze

indifferently staring at Zhou Lijun, who was gradually walking onto the stage.

When Zhou Lijun didn't speak, many people would think of her as an extremely beautiful woman. However, the moment she spoke, that arrogant, haughty, and despicable character of hers would unrestrainedly show. No matter how one looked at it, this person would feel nauseous and disgusted!

Perhaps it was from his own mother's influence, but Chu Mu could easily ignore a woman's breathtaking outer appearance. Instead, he focused on inner character and self-restraint.

“Yesterday, you pretentiously said you were going to kill all of the soul pets I summoned. I didn't think that the first round today would give you such a fantastic opportunity. Come, let's see if you, this wretch, can kill my soul pets!” Zhou Lijun adopted a provocative manner.

The moment Chu Mu entered a battle, he didn't like to waste words and merely slowly began chanting an incantation, summoning his soul pet.

This time, Chu Mu didn't summon the Mo Ye like he habitually did. Rather, he first summoned the sixth phase third stage Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

After undergoing the Demon Tree's Heart and soul crystal strengthening, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's average strength was probably even above the Ice Air Fairy!

“A sixth phase third stage Devil Tree Battle Soldier? I thought you were still hiding some other powerful soul pet. You boasted with merely such a thing...” Zhou Lijun spoke while chanting an incantation, summoning a seventh phase seventh stage Flame Tail!

A Flame Tail was a high class servant rank, and if it underwent various attribute strengthening and reached the seventh phase seventh stage, its fighting strength wouldn't be inferior to a few warrior rank soul pets.

For a majority of fights, soul pet trainers would first summon one soul pet to fight before adopting to the situation and summoning two more soul pets, then followed by three.

However, Chu Mu didn't plan on doing this. He chanted an incantation again, and instantly summoned the sixth phase second stage Ice Air Fairy.

“Ling~~~~~”

It had been a long time since the Ice Air Fairy had fought. After being summoned by Chu Mu, it promptly let out a rather excited cry. Moreover, it used fairy language to tell the Devil Tree Battle Soldier not to steal its opponent.

“Summoning two soul pet so quickly. It seems that he wants to immediately fight a war of attrition and use up Zhou Lijun's soul pet fighting strength as well as her soul power. Afterwards, the next member will get rid of Zhou Lijun.”

“Mhm, however with only two sixth phase warrior rank soul pets, it seems that they won’t be very effective at exhausting her. Instead, the Chu Family will immediately lose a member...”

Many people instantly saw through the Chu Family’s tactic and began to loudly discuss.

Zhou Lijun wasn’t too overconfident and decisively summoned her second soul pet.

Interestingly, the second soul pet Zhou Lijun summoned was also an Ice Air Fairy. Moreover, it had already reached the sixth phase sixth stage, making its phase and stage higher than Chu Mu’s Ice Air Fairy by four stages.

“Let the fight begin!”

After the contestants indicated that their preliminary summonings were finished, the referee immediately shouted, igniting the fire on top of the centermost pillar in the plaza!

“Hu~~~~”

A flame abruptly flew up, suddenly radiating a captivating red fire light. The surrounding seemed to be ignited and it added a bit more of a battle atmosphere!

“Flame Tail, Burning Python!”

Zhou Lijun promptly used soul remembrance to have her beast and fire dual type Flame Tail launch an attack towards Chu Mu’s Devil Tree Battle Soldier!!

Wood types were afraid of fire type techniques, but Chu Mu felt that there was no need to have the Ice Air Fairy put an Ice Armor on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier. Instead, he motionlessly had the two soul pets stand there, letting the two sharp twisting bodies of the fire pythons rush over!

Ice Wall!!!

Seemingly without chanting an incantation, the Ice Air Fairy instantaneously completed an Ice Wall cast. Two walls of thick ice crystals immediately appeared on the plaza battlefield. Their heights unexpectedly approaching the peak of the twenty meter pillars!!

“Did any of you see the Ice Air Fairy chant an incantation?” the moment the Ice Wall appeared, Chu Tianheng felt very surprised, and immediately questioned the other few members.

The others promptly shook their heads, indicating that they didn’t see the Ice Air Fairy chant an incantation. Thus, they could precisely determine that Chu Mu’s Ice Air Fairy had instantaneously released an ice type technique!

“Piercing Branch Chain!”

Under Chu Mu’s orders, the two Heraculean arms of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier suddenly extended. Instantly, two chain-like rattans curled up before quickly extending, piercing forth in a perfectly straight line!

Without even needing Chu Mu’s orders, the Ice Air Fairy let out a shout, and the Ice Wall instantly shattered. In sync, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s perfectly straight chains passed through the shattered ice wall and directly penetrated towards the seventh phase seventh stage Flame Tail!

The Ice Wall acted as a vision barrier and, the moment it shattered, the Piercing Branch Chain abruptly appeared. The seventh phase seventh stage Flame Tail had no choice but to stop releasing its fire type technique and flusteredly jump to the side!

“Beng!!! Beng!!!”

Two Piercing Branch Chains violently stabbed into two pillars, unexpectedly piercing right through them!!

“Demon Wood Flourish!!”

How could the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s technique be so simple?!

Two perfectly straight tree branch chains, one on the left, one on

the right, closed in on the Flame Tail. Suddenly, the Piercing Branch Chains grew numerous tiny branches. These tiny branches were like a plethora of minute snakes that violently shook before quickly growing larger!!!

Green colored tendrils weaved together to form a complicated web of demonic wood in a second. It launched at the Flame Tail's body, attempting to bind it tight!

No one had expected Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier to have a follow up technique. Zhou Lijun also hadn't thought of this. So without promptly adopting defensive measures, she could only watch as the Flame Tail was wrapped up tightly by the chain like thin strips!

“Ice Spike!!!”

Chu Mu immediately gave an order!

Equivalently, the Ice Air Fairy didn't need a chanting time to release the Ice Spike. After letting out a shout, it ripped open the plaza floor and, from within the floor full of Demon Wood Chains, they abruptly spiked out!!!

After the Ice Spikes shot out from the fissure in the ground, they immediately passed through the densely packed thin branches!

In the blink of an eye, the Ice Spikes rose to the height of the pillars and shockingly appeared in the arena!!!!!!

The height of one Ice Spike unexpectedly reached 20 meters; moreover, it seemed to have been instantaneously released!!

In this moment, everyone was stunned, including Zhou Lijun, who controlled the seventh phase seventh stage Flame Tail!

The frost slowly froze the green devil tree's thin branches. Zhou Lijun's Ice Air Fairy's ice armor ability arrived a second too late after the ice spike, adhering onto the green bush-like leaves. Yet, all it did was freeze the crimson blood that leaked out from the green branches!

The audience couldn't see the Flame Tail, but could see that it was enveloped in a dense cluster of green colored branch chains. However, the moment Zhou Lijun's Ice Air Fairy used the defensive Ice Armor, fresh red blood had already begun seeping through the small cracks out of the green cluster of plants. The gorgeous color that appeared in the center of the stage seemed particularly gaudy!

Instant Combined Kill!

The battle had yet to end but the stadium suddenly became several levels softer!

The thick branches quickly retreated into the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's arms. After the effects of the densely clustered binding disappeared, what appeared in front of everyone's eyes was a shockingly merciless tableau!

A seventh phase seventh stage Flame Tail had been stabbed in the abdomen, staked by the lower end of a terrifying and rigid ice pillar. Fresh red blood spilled onto the snowy white Ice Spike. Blood dripped everywhere!

Chapter 55: Summoning Three. All Dead

“Ning, Ice Blade Storm!”

Chu Mu’s ice cold voice slowly rang out, as if a gust of cold air was proliferating!

While everyone was still shocked, the Ice Air Fairy had already begun to chant an incantation. Frosted Ice Blades twinkled under the rays of sunlight as they gradually began floating around the Ice Air Fairy’s body!!

“Ling!!!!”

The Ice Air Fairy let out a long cry and suddenly, the surrounding hundreds of Ice Blades began to violently whirl, forming a large storm. A white mist swept through the arched pillars and quickly swallowed Zhou Lijun’s Ice Air Fairy!

Zhou Lijun abruptly woke up, and she immediately began to chant an incantation, adding an Awning Light Shield around the Ice Air Fairy!!

Awning Light Shield was a spirit teacher technique. This ability, when used, consumed at least half the soul power of summoning a soul pet.

The Ice Air Fairy’s Ice Blade Storm didn’t last very long, and its

might was only at the sixth level. The Awning Light Shield acted as a great defense, and the remaining Ice Blades only managed to leave shallow wounds on Zhou Lijun's Ice Air Fairy!

“Ice Wall!”

Zhou Lijun used soul remembrance to order her soul pet.

Zhou Lijun's Ice Air Fairy clearly could not control the ice attribute as well as Chu Mu's Ning. Even if it was summoning an ice wall, it still needed a short moment to chant a fairy incantation

Two ten meter tall thick walls of ice quickly formed. With this layer of defense ensured, Zhou Lijun immediately began chanting an incantation to summon her third soul pet!

Purple arcs of lightning appeared around Zhou Lijun's body. These lightning bolts moved downwards before wildly interweaving and twisting on the ground. Quickly, they interweaved to form an odd, purple colored design!

The purple colored lightning bolts with a bit of chaotic effect curled up the slender body that rose into the air. It silently floated there, as the surrounding ground was blasted apart by the violent scattered chaotic lightning bolts!!

Chaotic Thunder Sprite!!

Chaotic Thunder Sprite: Elemental World – thunder type – fairy

race – Chaotic Thunder Sprite subrace – high class commander rank

The appearance of the fifth phase eighth stage Chaotic Thunder Sprite immediately set off a wave of sighs outside the stage. Such a high class commander rank soul pet, even if its aptitude was normal, would fetch a price of 300,000 gold coins. If its talent was slightly prominent, its value would easily rise by a million. Just like the second place prize, the Chaotic Thunder Sprite had a value of 3 million gold coins – and its talent was exceptionally high!

The value of Zhou Lijun's Chaotic Thunder Sprite was definitely inferior to the second place prize. Nonetheless, it would appear that its value wasn't like those 300,000 normal quality ones either, especially since it had an eminently brash thunder and lightning aura that gave others a feeling of being struck to death by lightning if one were to approach closer!

Chu Mu's expression was indifferent. While Zhou Lijun was summoning her third soul pet, his Ice Air Fairy and Devil Tree Battle Soldier's brewing technique had already finished. The moment the fifth phase eighth stage Chaotic Thunder Sprite appeared, it instantly faced the attack of Chu Mu's two soul pets!!

Regardless of whether it was the Ice Air Fairy or the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, after undergoing Chu Mu's strengthening and expensive training, releasing a technique of seventh level in might wasn't any problem.

Currently, the technique that Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy and the Devil Tree Battle Soldier were brewing had a seventh level might. Although the Chaotic Thunder Sprite was ranked highly, in front of two seventh level ice type technique and wood type technique respectively, it would still be very hard to bear!!

“Hong!!!!!!”

“Beng!!!!!!”

Ice Air Dance, the seventh level Ice Air Dance quickly formed!

Immediately, it transformed Zhou Lijun's location into a white mist that shot cold lights in all four directions!!!

Root Puncture! Under the Demon Wood's effect, Root Puncture's might had doubled. Over fifty incomparably sharp Root Punctures suddenly shot out of the ground from within the Ice Air Dance technique!!

The towering pillars came crashing to the ground with a rumble under the might of the two powerful techniques, firmly falling onto the Ice Air Fairy that had used the Ice Armor technique!

Zhou Lijun's Ice Air Fairy didn't manage to get up in time before over fifty Demon Wood Root Punctures violently attacked its thick ice armor.

If it were only a few Demon Wood roots, the sixth phase sixth

stage Ice Air Fairy's defense would perhaps still be able to withstand them, but the consecutive onslaught of the 50 plus roots would shatter the defense, even if it had reached the seventh level!!

“Pu pu pu!!!!”

Numerous punctures promptly appeared within Zhou Lijun's Ice Air Fairy. Zhou Lijun herself, standing in the white hazy Ice Air Dance, simply didn't manage to swap her soul pet. The sixth phase sixth stage Ice Air Fairy was instantly penetrated and revealed tens of holes. Finally, under the powerful Ice Air Dance, it was torn into numerous shattered pieces!

The Chaotic Thunder Sprite hadn't even used one technique before it was also engulfed by the seventh level Ice Air Dance. On its body appeared a plethora of wounds. However, that was it. It managed to barely bear being enveloped by the seventh level technique. Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy suddenly let out a long cry!

Superposition!

Double the discharge, the techniques superpositioned! The power doubled!

The Ice Air Dance hadn't dissipated when the Ice Air Fairy that controlled the Superposition technique tyrannically used a second Ice Air Dance. An even more terrifying ice crystal was released around the Chaotic Thunder Sprite's body, as petal after petal of sharp edges tore open the Chaotic Thunder Sprite's body!

The Chaotic Thunder Sprite was only fifth phase eighth stage and its defense hadn't even reached the seventh level. Thus it could only be imagined how terrifying this double superposition technique was!

“Quickly! Soul remembrance protection!!”

Just at this moment, the young family head of the Zhou Family, Zhou Shangke, suddenly yelled towards Zhou Lijun-in spite of the rules,!

Zhou Lijun was stunned, and somewhat ineffably used soul remembrance protection!

However, at the same moment that Zhou Lijun completed her soul remembrance protection, a wave of frightening frost poison was abruptly transmitted from the Chaotic Thunder Sprite's mental feedback!!

Two soul pets had been instantly obliterated, while Zhou Lijun's body, which suffered from the frost poison invasion, shook from head to toe. Unexpectedly, she suddenly sat on the ground, her face pale white and her pupils dilated!!

The arrival of the threat of death at this moment was too sudden!

In that instant, Zhou Lijun felt the onslaught of death. If she had been only a second slower, her soul would have suffered from the frost poison invasion; subsequently, her internal organs would

have been frozen into a piece of ice!!

“Hu hu hu~~~~~”

The icy and snowy gale which the Ice Air Dance had stirred whistled about on the level and expansive plaza battlefield, giving people a feeling of serenity!

No matter if it was a great family member sitting in the audience seats, or the people standing and watching, they were all so shocked that they couldn't speak!!

No one would have thought that Zhou Lijun with both the rank and phase/stage advantage would lose; furthermore, no one thought that her three soul pets would all be instantly obliterated!!

This was a battle where the Chu Family fought a war of attrition while at the disadvantage?

This was even more ridiculous than the large difference when the strongest fought the weakest. Surprisingly, two minutes hadn't even passed before the battle had ended!

Chu Mu indifferently walked forward. His gaze was cold and arrogant as he looked down on Zhou Lijun who sat on the floor and looked as if she had lost her soul. Without any sentiments he said: “You summoned three soul pets, they all died...”

Why would the current Zhou Lijun have the arrogance and

contempt from before? Facing Chu Mu, who just now very terrifyingly didn't have any hesitation to kill, she wasn't able to say anything. Only, she unceasingly retreated...

“You... you unexpectedly dared to kill!!”

Zhou Shangke finally erupted!!

Such micro yet deadly control to manipulate the cold poison to invade was undetectable to all but a few. If Zhou Shangke himself didn't also have an Ice Air Fairy and thus had a very good understanding of Ice Air Fairies' frost poison invasion, the totally oblivious Zhou Lijun would have already died with her three soul pets just now!

Zhou Shangke jumped onto the plaza stadium and ran in front of Zhou Lijun. He picked up and carried Zhou Lijun who was so shocked she couldn't even speak. In his anger, his arms were shaking!

The Chu Family's Chu Tianheng abruptly awoke from his shock and identically forced his way onto the plaza stadium, facing off against the threatening Zhou Shangke!

“These two honorable people. Please leave the battlefield, otherwise don't blame me if I'm impolite!” suddenly shouted the organizer from another high ranking city.

The organizer was from the Luo Region's ninth ranked city, Blue

River City. In the entire Luo Region, he had very renowned prestige, and even the city lord Yang Kuo had to deferentially call him old senior.

Thus, his words held the most authority in the Recommendation. Despite Zhou Shangke's anger, which was on the edge of bursting out, he could only suppress it. Carrying the shivering in fear Zhou Lijun, he walked off the plaza battlefield!

Seeing that Zhou Shangke had already retreated, Chu Tianheng naturally didn't want to break the rules. He nodded at Chu Mu and immediately withdrew.

From the moment Chu Mu defeated Zhou Lijun to when the Zhou and Chu Families conflicted, the entire plaza battlefield was exceptionally silent. This continued on until this organizer from Blue River City said "continue", whereby the area around the plaza battlefield erupted!!

"Is this truly that brat whose soul pet defected four years ago?!!"

"I've never seen such a powerful Ice Air Fairy and Devil Tree Battle Soldier. With such strength, even a normal commander rank would find it hard to deal with!"

"This Chu Mu didn't die. The Chu Family definitely had him undergo secret training for four years. Afterwards, he became a trump card for them at the Recommendation!!"

Various noises rang out. No one expected that the most looked down upon Chu Mu would unexpectedly defeat Zhou Lijun with absolute superiority!

“Chu Ming, oh Chu Ming. I truly didn’t think that you would retain such a trump card. I thought that you wanted Chu Mu to fight a battle of attrition and prudently lose this fight. Who would have thought that you would have spent such hard earned savings to purchase Chu Mu such powerful soul pets. Experience truly matters. Your old shrewdness is more profound than most others!” with an appearance of sudden understanding, the Qin Family head, Qin Chang spoke to Chu Ming.

Chu Ming’s face was creased and his eyes were still wide open. When Qin Chang said these words, he somewhat reawakened.

“Haha, please, please...” Chu Ming politely laughed in reply to Qin Chang.

In reality, Chu Ming actually wanted the person with the weakest strength, Chu Mu, to fight a battle of attrition. Thus this battle would inevitably be lost.

However, how would he have expected Chu Mu to bring him such a shocking outcome?

As for spending a large sum of money to purchase two soul pets with such a terrifying talent, Chu Ming himself was endlessly shocked. He had never spent such money to buy Chu Mu such soul pets. The one thing he had bought for Chu Mu, the 700,000 Mo Ye,

had been declined by him. As for where he obtained such powerful soul pets, Chu Ming himself really wanted to know!

Chapter 56: A Person Is Going To Die, Not A Soul Pet (1)

“Look, quickly, look, I knew it, I knew it, fourth brother is stronger than anyone! These arrogant people, no one believed what I said, now you see! That Ice Air Fairy.....and that Devil Tree Battle Soldier.....” After seeing Chu Mu finally exploding with his true strength, Chu Ning couldn’t hold back the excitement in his heart.

During this period Chu Ning had always felt sullen for Chu Mu, feeling that the clan members didn’t value Chu Mu enough. Now, look at all their eyes nearly falling out. In Chu Ning’s eyes, who was the Zhou Clan number one young expert, or the Yang Clan number one young expert? Once Chu Mu intervened, all of them could only die on the side!

Chu Ying, Chu Xing, Chu He, Chu Lang all still had their jaws open wide. They had seen people playing it low-key, but they had never seen it this low-key. They finally witnessed what it meant to suddenly amaze the entire world with one single feat!

“Good!!! Good stuff!!” Finally, Chu Xing recovered from his bewilderment. His heart churned with ecstasy as he couldn’t help but yell out!

Chu Mu’s victory indubitably tilted the balance of victory towards Chu Clan!

The normally silent Chu He still stood there, but from his

expression and eyes, one could see his surprise and happiness.

As for Chu Ying, who had complained constantly about Chu Mu's poor skill, she had the most vivid expression on her face. She couldn't even believe that the upright and handsome teen on the battlefield was Chu Mu!

“I didn't think that they still had such a trump card. That old thing Chu Ming was really willing to put down a fortune to train that rubbish.” Yang Clan's Yang Kuo's face became sullen as he said with a salty tone.

“En, this was indeed unexpected. It seems like the Zhou Clan is out of luck.” Yang Luobin looked at the strangely stronger Chu Mu, as his eyes revealed a most strange emotion, and even the corner of his mouth was twitching strangely.

After speaking, Yang Luobin specially looked at the male beside him in a long blue windbreaker.

The man's collar was up, covering his chin, leaving only his angular nose and abstruse eyes visible. These eyes hid within the shadows of his long hair, and they looked like they were ruminating.

“What do you think?” Yang Luobin showed signs of obedience, and asked the mysterious young man.

The young man lifted a corner of his mouth and said nothing, yet his expression said he understood things very clearly already.

“Round two, Chu Mu against Zhou Shengcheng!”

The Zhou Clan members all creased their brows, unable to think of who to send out to deal with the powerful Chu Mu. Finally, they decided to send Zhou Shengcheng, who was second only to Zhou Pan!

“Summon your soul pets.” The judge looked at Zhou Shengcheng and commanded dully.

Zhou Shengcheng realized that Chu Mu’s two soul pets were very hard to deal with, so he summoned all three of his soul pets!

Three summoning symbols appeared consecutively on the floor, each emerging from a different color!

A dark shadow slowly enveloped a region of the battlefield. What should’ve been lit with a sunny afternoon now felt like it was occupied by a strange vacuum.

“Umbra!!”

Umbra: Demon World – demon type – dark species – Umbra subspecies – high class servant rank

Umbra was a rather rare soul pet. Although it was ranked as a high class servant rank, it had the power of warrior rank. Additionally, the Umbra that Zhou Shengcheng summoned was a sixth phase ninth stage, and was almost at the seventh phase Umbra.

“At first glance, it is obvious this Umbra has been strengthened with a dark type soul crystal. It’s aura is pretty scary!”

“Umbra is a control heavy soul pet, it’ll be hard to deal with!”

“That sixth phase eighth stage Skyrock Spirit was also very strong, clearly countering Chu Mu’s Ice Air Fairy.”

Zhou Shengcheng’s third soul pet was the very surprising flower type soul pet – Ghost Scythe Flower Demon

Ghost Scythe Flower Demon: Plant World – flower type – Flower Demon species – Ghost Scythe Flower Demon subspecies – low class commander rank

Zhou Shengcheng’s Ghost Scythe Flower Demon was at the sixth phase first stage. From its outer appearance, it seemed not to have been trained with a flower type soul crystal above fifth rank, so its fighting power wasn’t that strong.

“Two odd soul pets, do they want to use this method to defeat Chu Mu?”

“Would you like to switch soul pets?” The judge looked at Chu Mu and gave him plenty of time to switch soul pets out.

Chu Mu shook his head, not planning on switching.

Switching soul pets naturally wasted soul power. Chu Mu’s soul power was very limited, so in fights like this there was no need to switch soul pets.

“Battle, begin!”

After speaking, the sturdy pillar in the middle immediately burst into vibrant flames!!

On Cyan Nightmare Island, Chu Mu had already seen the abilities of an Umbra. He knew that such pure dark type soul pet could unknowingly appear beside him, so he immediately pulled away from the battle.

Sure enough, the sixth phase ninth stage Umbra immediately morphed into shadows at the beginning of the battle, vanishing into the shade behind the slightly dilapidated pillars. Right after, behind the many pillars, multiple shadows appeared, flickering.

“Ning, Ice Wall”

“Ling~~~~~”

Ice Air Fairy let out a long cry. Without any target, it consecutively cast ice walls, creating several of them on the stadium!

The casting of ice wall seemed to have no order, but in reality, Chu Mu was fully utilizing the reflection of sunlight to create a shadowless region near him!

Sure enough, as the sunlight constantly reflected off the ice walls, the region near Chu Mu and his soul pet was void of shadows, and the sneaky Umbra could only linger near the ice walls, unable to get close to Chu Mu and his soul pets.

“First time I’ve seen someone use ice walls that way……”

“True, he’s taught me a new move today.”

Chu Mu’s clever usage of ice wall immediately brought praise from the audience.

Sitting on the seats, when Qing Menger saw this tactic, she smiled slightly, remembering when Chu Mu told her this principle of using light.

Qing Menger remembered that Chu Mu used to always glow with vigor when he started talking about different tactics and ability usages, as if he could actually cast it on the battlefield. But in reality, he could only imagine, unable to make it a reality.

Now, Chu Mu realized one of his battle plans on the field where everyone was watching, so she indeed felt happy for him.

Zhou Shengcheng saw this and immediately ordered his Skyrock Spirit to start shattering the ice walls that the Ice Air Fairy was creating!

“Beng!!!! Beng!!!!”

Walls upon walls of ice with hardness even stronger than rock type techniques shattered into pieces, scattering messily on the battlefield.

Seeing the ice walls shattering, Chu Mu started to back off while telling his Ice Air Fairy to constantly release ice walls. However, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier and Ghost Scythe Flower Demon were engaged in a pure ranged struggle among both Plant World soul pets.

“Seems to be countered.....”

Seeing Chu Mu and his soul pets constantly backing off, Chu Clan’s members all felt difficult for him.

Indeed, from the current situation, Chu Mu was constantly backing up and constantly telling his Ice Air Fairy to cast ice wall

to prevent the Umbra from ambushing him, but with the presence of the Skyrock Spirit, these ice walls would quickly shatter.....

“What will retreating do!” Zhou Shengcheng smiled, commanding his soul pet to push forward, as well as casting a rock type soul technique himself to start shattering the ice walls that the Ice Air Fairy was setting up.

Chu Mu acted very calm, and slowly retreated while still steadily putting down defenses.

Zhou Shengcheng’s combination of soul pets perfectly pressured Chu Mu’s two damaging soul pets. Zhou Shengcheng didn’t seem like he wanted to switch soul pets, so he spent all his soul power on casting soul techniques!

An incantation was slowly chanted. This time Zhou Shengcheng planned to cast the seventh level Meteor Burst, wanting to deal a heavy blow to both of Chu Mu’s soul pets!

“Beng!!!!!”

Another ice wall shattered. In the direct path towards Chu Mu, there were no ice walls left. With no ice walls to reflect light, the reflection effect also disappeared. The scary Umbra quickly used the shadows to strangely appear under the Ice Air Fairy’s body!

Shadow Seizing Soul Fixation!

The Umbra's specialty: Shadow Seizing Soul Fixation. Once casted, the soul pet won't be able to cast anything. Even moving the body would be very tough!

Without any obstacles, the Umbra's technique quickly shrouded the Ice Air Fairy like a black cage, shackling the Ice Air Fairy's body.....

The casting Zhou Shengcheng immediately smiled. Once Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy was restricted, victory was just a matter of time. Perhaps using massive amounts of soul power to cast this soul technique wasn't needed either.

The shadow that shrouded the Ice Air Fairy felt as if it shrouded all of the Chu Clan's hearts as well. Everyone was full of sorrow, because everyone could see that once the Ice Air Fairy was restricted, the battle was nearing its end.

But, just when everyone furrowed their brows, Chu Mu smiled!

The demonic yet slightly ruthless smile, when revealed, caused even his black pupils to unintentionally emit a shivering killing intent!

“Ning, kill!”

Chu Ming ordered out loud to his Ice Air Fairy!

“Ling~~~~~”

The Ice Air Fairy's sound strangely came from a distant place.

When this sound rang out, the body of the Ice Air Fairy that was originally shrouded by shadows slowly started to bend!

When the Shadow Seizing Soul Fixation casted by the Umbra sank in, there were only spots of light slowly dissipating into the darkness and the Ice Air Fairy's body wasn't there!

The sudden vanishing of the Ice Air Fairy immediately subdued everyone. Just as everyone was shocked, the Ice Air Fairy's sparkling body suddenly appeared from an unnoticeable ice wall on the messy battlefield!

Ice Mirror!

No one would've thought that while constantly casting ice walls to defend against the Umbra, Chu Mu had set up an Ice Mirror trap. Now, the Ice Air Fairy appeared behind Zhou Sheng Cheng's three soul pets, only thirty meters away from Zhou Shengcheng!

“Ling!!!!!!”

The Ice Air Fairy's chanting had long since completed. Instantaneously, a coldness razed throughout the battlefield. Countless ice crystals started conjuring above the Ice Air Fairy's head!

The miniscule ice crystals formed into the shapes of ice swords. Very soon, sixteen massive ice swords were formed, each hovering with their tips faced down!!

“Ling!!!!”

With the shout of a fairy, the Ice Air Fairy, under everyone’s shocked gazes, controlled the sixteen six meter long swords to shoot straight from the skies!

The beautiful sun cast rays down, yet cold radiance shone in all directions!

The frightening drop of the ice swords went straight for Zhou Shengcheng himself!

Without using Microcontrol, the sixteen ice swords stabbed towards Zhou Shengcheng! Even if Zhou Shengcheng originally casted Ice Armor for defense, with this sudden barrage of attacks, Zhou Shengcheng had no time to prepare any other defense!

“Beng!!!!”

“Beng!!! Beng!!!!”

“Beng Beng Beng!!!”

Loud bangs resonated through the entire battlefield!

With such an intense barrage of attacks, Zhou Shengcheng's position was disfigured in a moment.

Deep sword shaped pits, shattered ice, fractured ground.....

But, this wasn't what made all ten thousand people on the stadiums feel shocked about. What was really shocking was that Zhou Shengcheng himself was, in front of everyone's eyes, pulverized into meaty pulp by the sixteen ice swords!

Chapter 57: A Person Is Going To Die, Not A Soul Pet (2)

Bloody flesh flew everywhere, and underneath the dregs of ice was Zhou Shengcheng's pulverized body that bloodily and viscously began to slowly seep out....

Such a shocking and merciless scene caused the entire plaza battlefield to fall silent!

“Hong~~~~~”

In the next instant, the entire plaza field loudly erupted. The alarm and excitement that death brought made the entire plaza flare up!

There were many occasions when fights would prohibit the death of soul pet trainers. Furthermore, there were even some stringent fights that prohibited the killing of the opponent's soul pets.

The Recommendation competition's goal was to select the strongest people to enter the following round of selection at Luo Region City. Therefore, while in the preliminary competition, there similarly was a restriction to kill people.

During the main competition, if one were to find the opportunity to directly kill the opponent soul pet trainer, despite there being a prohibition, killing people had already become a tacit acceptance!

However, even if there was some leeway, smashing the opponent member into mincemeat had definitely not happened before in the Recommendation!

This kind of carnage was too ghastly, and no one would have ever thought that in a fight where one side's attribute was being suppressed, such a soul shaking scene would occur!

In one instant, everyone was still discussing whether Chu Mu or not would be able to break away from such restrictions. In the next instant, sixteen ice swords had obliterated a living person, with blood droplets flying everywhere!

“Chu Family brat!!!” the Zhou Family family head Zhou Guixian abruptly stood up from his spot, and his gaze coldly glared at Chu Mu who was on the battlefield. The flesh in his face unceasingly trembled and, from his eyes, one could see that this old man was forcibly suppressing the anger in his heart!!

The sudden standing of the Zhou Family family head, Zhou Guixian, also instantly woke everyone up. Chu Ming's gaze stared back at the old fellow; as long as he moved half an inch, Chu Ming would not idly sit back and watch!

The Yang Family and the Qin Family didn't bat an eyelid, but one could clearly see that the heads of both families were revealing shocked expressions.

“Cough! Everyone needs to calm down a bit!” the organizer had already sensed the sparks flying between the two families and

coldly spoke.

The Zhou Family head Zhou Guixian sucked in a deep breath of air. His gaze abruptly changed from Chu Mu to Chu Ming. Without hiding any of his anger and hatred he said: “I must have your Chu Family pay up the most painful cost!”

“Hmph, bring it on. Cut the bullcrap,” coldly retaliated Chu Ming!

“Whatever issues you may have, resolve it after the Recommendation. Don’t strut around in front of my face. Otherwise, don’t blame me if I’m impolite!” the organizer’s voice coldly rang out once more.

Zhou Guixian forcibly suppressed his anger, and he sat back down in his seat. His entire being was as cold as an iceberg.

Watching the Zhou Family head Zhou Guixian sitting back down in his seat, Chu Mu’s mood slightly eased up. Yet, it was a long time before the billows in his heart calmed down and he intentionally looked at Chu Tianlin and Chu Si next to him...

Chu Tianlin and Chu Si only knew that Chu Mu’s current strength was very powerful, and that his personality had changed a lot. However, they didn’t expect Chu Mu to act so mercilessly, unexpectedly killing Zhou Shengcheng right from the start.

What made Chu Tianlin and Chu Si feel incomparably shocked

the most was Chu Mu's bearing after killing someone. He was indifferent and pitiless, without the slightest hint of emotional fluctuation. Unexpectedly, he had, in an extremely orderly fashion, used the Devil Tree Battle Soldier to protect himself before exceptionally calmly calling back the Ice Air Fairy and using it to begin bombarding the three masterless soul pets with techniques!

“Brother is very scary...” Chu Yishui stared at Chu Mu, and it was a while before she said something.

Yet, Chu Yishui's words truly resonated within the others. Indeed, Chu Mu's actions just now caused Chu Xing and the others to shudder. For instance, if these Chu Family disciples were to be forced to, they could kill someone, but that realm of killing was not something that could reach Chu Mu's level!!

“Chu Family, Chu Mu wins!”

Lacking a master, the soul pets were clearly disorderly when it came to tactics. Without any surprise, the three soul pets were quickly killed by Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy and Devil Tree Battle Soldier!

“Chu Mu!!” The Zhou Family's young family head Zhou Shangke could no longer control the rage in his heart, as he stood offstage, using his soul remembrance to create a roar that resembled a wild beast's. It swept through both outside the battlefield and inside.

“Huhuhu~~~~~” The roar smashed into Chu Mu’s body, but he stood still like a statue. There wasn’t even a trace of undulation in his eyes. Smashing the opponent soul pet trainer into mincemeat and killing three soul pets seemed to be just a mere ordinary event to him.

“You will die very miserably, very miserably!!” Zhou Shangke didn’t dare break the rules of the Recommendation and could only stand outside the battlefield as he wildly shouted!

Chu Mu swept his gaze over the other three Zhou Family people who were a bit stunned. His gaze fell on Zhou Pan last before he indifferently said: “He said before that a person is going to die, not a soul pet. Isn’t this just satisfying his request?”

Chu Mu’s words caused Zhou Pan’s expression to twitch a bit. Indeed, when Chu Mu had said that he would kill all the soul pets Zhou Lijun summoned, Zhou Pan had said “a person is going to die, not a soul pet”.

Such words were clearly a fiercer method of retaliation of Zhou Pan. If there was an opportunity, the Chu Family people definitely had to die. However, Zhou Pan simply didn’t think that the people who would die would be his own Zhou Family people; moreover, he did not think that he would be ridiculed like this.

“Zhou Pan, you go up. Slaughter that brat for me!” Zhou Shangke was nearing the end of his patience, so why would he care any longer about the order of battle!

Zhou Pan creased his eyebrows. Just now, Chu Mu's method of killing people was too strange. If he was Zhou Shengcheng, Zhou Pan wouldn't believe either that he would be able to adopt such effective measures. If this fellow still had a few strange tricks, there was a high chance that he himself would end up the same way.

“Hahaha! You killed well!! You killed well!!!” suddenly a loud laugh reverberated around the battlefield!

Everyone's eyes fell on Chu Xing who had suddenly started madly laughing. The person who had let out this laugh really had been the eminently calm eldest son of the eldest son in the Chu Family, Chu Xing. In this moment, everyone's eyes could feel the wild emotions being released from Chu Xing!

Being influenced by Chu Xing's laughter, everyone in the Chu Family recovered from their shock and they all began to reveal rapt expressions!!!

It had already been many years since the Chu Family had been so overbearing. It had already been many years where the Chu Family disciples had suffered the humiliation from other families!

“You killed well!! You killed well!!!”

“The Zhou Family is a group of garbage. Annihilate them!!!”

“Fiercely *** them. Let them know the strength of the Chu

Family's disciples!!”

Chu Mu's actions instantly ignited the mood of everyone in the Chu Family!

Perhaps they had truly been suppressed for too long. Chu Mu's two consecutive victories, coupled with slaughtering the second Zhou Family expert, transformed their initial shock and horror into a surging tide within the heart!

“How repulsive. How am I, Zhou Pan, afraid of such trash!!” The sudden sound of loud ridicule caused the face of the three Zhou Family members to turn red once more. Zhou Pan had further reached the end of his patience, because he could clearly feel that Chu Xing's ridicule was directed at him!

Zhou Pan didn't hesitate and resolutely walked onto the plaza battlefield!

“The third fight...” the referee watched Zhou Pan walk onto the plaza battlefield and immediately was about to announce the participants in this round.

“Change people.” Chu Mu didn't let the referee continue and instead spoke.

The referee's words came to an abrupt halt and his gaze switched to the other Chu Family members.

Chu Mu chanted an incantation and recalled the Devil Tree Battle Soldier and the Ice Air Fairy back into their respective soul pets spaces before promptly turning around and walking off the battlefield.

“Hahaha, are you scared? Why don’t you dare fight with me?!” Zhou Pan watched Chu Mu unexpectedly take the initiative to walk off the stage and instantly began to laugh.

“Idiot, didn’t you see that Chu Mu has already fought two rounds? If you have the ability, fight two rounds first before contending against Chu Mu!” after Chu Ning heard Zhou Pan’s deliberate mockery, he immediately transformed his soul remembrance into sound and loudly scolded the moronic Zhou Pan.

Zhou Pan could no longer keep his calm like before, and sensing that many people in the surroundings echoing Chu Ning’s scolding of him, a burst of embarrassment ran across his face!

Chu Mu walked towards the arena and slowly walked in front of Chu Xing before saying: “This is your opponent.”

Chu Xing who was wild with joy suddenly became stunned. His two eyes stared at Chu Mu. The current Chu Mu was incomparably cold and he gave others a feeling that he had no emotion whatsoever. Even after killing someone, he was still able to maintain calm and collected...

Everyone knew that aside from those two soul pets of Chu Mu, he

also had a Night Thunder Dream Beast. With the current strength he exhibited, it was definitely possible for him to summon the Night Thunder Dream Beast and fight against Zhou Pan.

According to Chu Xing's thoughts, from being the butt of a joke four years ago to shocking everyone now, Chu Mu would probably continue fighting under the acclamation and energy of everyone's new view of him. This was in order to let everyone know that he, Chu Mu, had transformed in over these four years.

However, Chu Mu hadn't done such a thing. Even when all the Chu Family members had felt pride because of him; even when everyone was cheering and acclaiming his meteoric rise over the past four years, Chu Mu unexpectedly had received and put away the inspiring and blood-boiling glory to give the opportunity to fight to Chu Xing, who so desperately wanted to fight against Zhou Pan again!

“This is your opponent.”

These four simple words caused Chu Xing to be extremely moved. For this day, Chu Xing had already waited five years. Only Chu Mu truly understood this!

At this very moment, what other words needed to be said?!

Chu Xing understood that, in these four years, no matter how Chu Mu had changed or how cold he had gotten, or even how he treated his enemies like oppressively beating livestock, Chu Mu was still Chu Mu. Even if there were tens of thousands of people

crying out in shock, he still wouldn't forget his honor as his brother!

“Chu Mu, big brother won't disappoint you!” Chu Xing gave Chu Mu a heartfelt hug, and resolutely stepped up onto the plaza battlefield! Despite not saying anything, from Chu Xing's decisiveness, one could see that in this fight, even if he were to die, he would not lose the Chu Family's honor!

Watching Chu Xing's figure surging with hot blood from behind, a bit of emotion gradually began to exude from Chu Mu's cold pupils.

Once upon a time, he himself had spectated from the audience with a face of admiration as he watched his big brother, Chu Xing, engage in a fight to his heart's content in addition to family honor. Yet this time, this big brother that he had worshipped and admired had felt pride because of him. This was more valuable than the acclamation and cheering of tens of thousands of people for him!

Chapter 58: Killing To Bring Out The Family's Honor

“Fourth Brother! I did say that you were the Chu Family's hope!! Haha!!” Due to receiving a soul remembrance injury, Chu Ning, who was unable to participate in the Recommendation, heavily patted Chu Mu's shoulder.

The Chu Mu today had brought out through killing an abrupt rise in honor after being laughed at and ridiculed. Moreover, he had brought about the Chu Family honor that had declined for so many years through killing!

After this round of fighting, everyone began to see the Chu Family on a whole new level. This was even moreso for the member of the Chu Family, Chu Mu, who had been regarded as a joke by the Gangluo City people!!!

“You clearly have such powerful strength. Why didn't you reveal it until now? Could it be that you deliberately wanted to create such an effect? First, you wanted to make others think you were useless before suddenly bursting forth. By creating such an effect, did it satisfy your vanity?” Chu Ying was still like her usual grumbling unsatisfied self. However, from her eyes, one could already see an evident change...

The corners of Chu Mu's mouth rose, but he didn't deny that he wanted to create this stunning result. After all, it was so hard now for such trivial glory and honor to cause any emotional movement.

“Although killing people isn’t good, brother truly is very cool.” Chu Yishui, who was the younger sister whom Chu Mu was most familiar with, ran in front of Chu Mu and hugged his arm, rocking back and forth. She was like a young lady who was showing off her powerful brother.

Fighting required morale, and Chu Mu’s two consecutive victories and slaughter had promptly ignited Chu Xing’s fire of fighting.

In many people’s opinions, Chu Xing’s strength was inferior to Zhou Pan’s. However, from the beginning of the fight, Chu Xing’s soul pets displayed coarse and violent attacks, unexpectedly forcing Zhou Pan to summon his second soul pet first!

Zhou Pan’s second soul pet was a wing type Wing Spectrum Demon! The Wing Spectrum Demon was at the low class commander rank. On its pair of wings, respectively, was a strange face. When the wings abruptly opened up, it caused others to feel two pseudo-sinister smiles that fluttered in the air!

What better soul pet was there to deal with a wing type soul pet than a wind type soul pet?

Chu Xing summoned his second soul pet, Storm Fairy, in an extremely decisive manner!

Chu Xing’s Storm Fairy had clearly undergone wind type soul

crystal strengthening. Although it was only at the sixth phase fifth stage, its ability to control the wind was exceptionally powerful. Surprisingly, it could also use Overlay techniques like Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy!

Elemental World soul pets possessed the most perfect control over the elements. Technique Overlay and microcontrol were only achievable by Elemental World soul pets!

Wave after wave of terrifying hurricanes whistled past. Blade after blade of sharp Spurring Wind Blades flew past. The Storm Fairy's suppressing ability was exceptionally formidable. The sixth phase first stage commander rank Wing Spectrum Demon was firmly restricted. It wasn't even able to use its strange method of flying and, ultimately, Zhou Pan had no choice but to consume more soul power to swap out soul pets.

“The Zhou Family has lost. Even if Zhou Pan is able to beat Chu Xing, he definitely can not resist the other three Chu Family members. Especially Chu He, whose strength is not inferior to Chu Xing's by much. There isn't any member capable of directly contending against Chu He!”

“The Chu Family's Chu Mu suddenly exploded with such terrifying strength and immediately won two rounds. Most importantly, he stunned all those Zhou Family fellows so much that they essentially began to cower. The Zhou Family will definitely lose this battle.”

“In my opinion, with the Chu Family now having the formidable Chu Mu, perhaps the Yang Family won't be able to hold its

position!”

Aside from the variable of Chu Mu, the strength of the other members of the Chu and Zhou Families were perhaps more or less understood by others. As long as a slight variance occurred in the tide of the battle, the final outcome could be predicted!

Indeed, Chu Mu's kill brought out the Chu Family's honor, while also fiercely trampling on the Zhou Family's honor. It had caused a huge change to occur in the tide of battle.

Finally, Chu Xing burst forth with unprecedented fighting strength and defeated Zhou Pan in one strike. Additionally, he killed Zhou Pan's strongest soul pet, washing away the humiliation from five years ago!!

Standing in the center of the plaza battlefield, Chu Xing looked at the sorry figure of Zhou Pan that had ran off the battlefield, and a smile finally rose on his face.

This smile was a laugh that truly came from the heart. He laughed because he was overwhelmed by emotions, and he laughed in an incomparably arrogant manner. So many years of hard work and bitterness was all for this moment of victory!

“Zhou Family bastards, get up here! Let me stomp another one of you to death!” today, Chu Xing was full of the Chu Family's coarse and wild demeanor, and he continued to stay on the battlefield to fight!

Of the four great families, presently, the Zhou Family people's faces were the most unsightly. They had never expected to be beaten so miserably by the Chu Family. So miserably, in fact, that this time that they would have no face left!!

Chu Xing fought the fourth Zhou Family member. What made everyone astonished was that Chu Xing had really exploded with all his capacity and, unexpectedly, despite using up a large amount of fighting strength against Zhou Pan, still managed to eliminate two of the fourth Zhou Family member's soul pets!!

“Chu Ying, I leave the rest to you!” After killing two of the opponent's soul pets, Chu Xing decisively conceded to the referee.

Seeing Chu Mu and Chu Xing fiercely *** the Zhou Family, Chu Ying could no longer hold back her male-like war driven heart. After ascending onto the stage, she had defeated the last soul pet of the Zhou Family's fourth member within five minutes!

For the last round, the Zhou Family's last member originally wanted to regain some of the Zhou Family's face, but his completely run-down vigor caused him to lose to Chu Ying, despite having a large chance to win!

Complete victory!

What was originally supposed to be an evenly matched fight ultimately ended up being a complete victory for the Chu Family!

The Chu Family had sent out three members in total and defeated five of the Zhou Family members.

Of the Chu Family's three members, none of their soul pets had died, while the Zhuo Family had paid the painful price of 10 of their soul pets being annihilated, and one person being killed! Moreover, amongst them, the blood reeking Chu Mu had instantly killed six soul pets and the second Zhuo Family expert, Zhuo Shengcheng!

Such a complete victory in the Recommendation was definitely rare, especially when it occurred during the final competitions in the main event between the four great families!

This time, the Yang Family's position was truly threatened. Countless people were beginning to predict whether Chu Mu, who had powerfully risen over the past four years and shocked everyone present could continue to slaughter en masse in the finals of the competition!

Everyone in Gangluo City knew that the conflict between the Yang and Chu Families had reached a completely incompatible state. When the Chu and Zhou Families fought, there had already been many grave casualties. Thus, wouldn't the fight with the Yang Family be even more bloody?!!

Five days after the main competition was the finals. The finals wasn't much of a surprise; the Yang Family that would probably defeat the Qin Family would fight the final contest against the Chu

Family on the plaza battlefield.

The Chu Family's strength originally wasn't inferior to the Zhou Family's. Now with Chu Mu's meteoric rise, a surge of anticipation came for the finals in four days. There were even some eliminated factions that intentionally stayed in Gangluo City in order to see the sparks fly between these two great families in this final fight where blood would dye the battlefield!

In the following fights, there weren't any great changes. The Yang Family defeated the Qin Family. The Qin Family themselves knew that they couldn't beat the Yang Family and decisively preserved their strength. In the subsequent fight, they easily defeated the heavily wounded Zhou Family, and solidly gained control of third place!

As for the Zhou Family, they very miserably became last place!

After the fight with the Zhou Family had ended, the entire Chu Family had flared up because of one person-Chu Mu.

It was unquestionable that, during this fight with the Zhou Family, Chu Mu alone had determined their victory. Moreover, he had brought about the complete victory of this round that had made every Chu Family member want to cry out in delight!

At this present moment, of the entire Chu Family, who would still feel that having Chu Mu attend the Recommendation was a

mistake? Furthermore, who would continue to look at Chu Mu with the slightest contempt? Currently, Chu Mu was the glory of the entire family and also the entire family's spirit. Everyone was even wondering whether, with Chu Mu's current displayed strength, even if they were against the Yang Family in the finals, they could have a very large chance of victory!

“Chu Mu, presently, grandfather truly has no idea what to say. These four years...” Chu Ming put his hand on Chu Mu's shoulder at the family meeting and freely wept in front of everyone.

On the plaza battlefield, Chu Ming was still able to control his emotions. However, after returning home, once he thought of the hot blood and honor that Chu Mu had brought the entire Chu Family, how could Chu Ming remain calm?

This was not only feeling proud about the Chu Family, but moreso feeling proud because he had such a grandson. In the past, each time he saw Chu Mu who was incapable of summoning soul pets, Chu Ming would feel a wave of bitter disappointment. Currently, Chu Mu had completely freed himself from those shadows and chains of the past and had become a powerful soul pet trainer. Chu Ming's present tears were all shed from the depths of his heart!!

“Very good, truly very good. Once Tiancheng hears of this news, his eyes will definitely be brimming with tears of excitement! That won't do, I'll write him a letter now. Have someone inform Tiancheng at top speed. Let Tiancheng know that not only did his son not die, but he also became a responsible expert!!” Chu Ming's emotionally moved body began to tremble.

When he mentioned Chu Tiancheng, a bit of movement occurred in Chu Mu's expression. The clan was his family, and being able to obtain such glory for the clan and allow it to rise abruptly was Chu Mu's mission. However, what would still make Chu Mu overwhelmed by emotions was his father's shock and excitement when he saw that Chu Mu was now strong.

All of Chu Mu's soul pet knowledge had been taught by Chu Tiancheng. It was Chu Tiancheng who had brought Chu Mu into this mystical world of soul pets, and had caused Chu Mu to have such infatuation towards various kinds of soul pets. He also made Chu Mu have a burning desire to become a powerful expert.

Chu Mu knew that his father was suffering from a ban, and would forever be unable to leave Luo Region. It was because of this ban that Chu Tiancheng had invested such enormous hopes into Chu Mu, hoping that he could raise him into a true expert. However, Chu Mu losing a soul had dealt an even heavier blow to him.

At that time, Chu Mu was depressed, dismayed, and even thought about forsaking the path of cultivating his soul. However, Chu Tiancheng continued to encourage him. He never stopped instilling soul pet knowledge into him, causing him to gradually regain his confidence from within the shadows...

Currently, he had finally taken such large strides, and Chu Mu very urgently wanted to have his father, who day by day grew even more weary, see him!

Chapter 59: Yang Family's Mysterious Contestant

Four days passed by very quickly. The last battle with the Yang Family was still going to be held at Gangluo City's center plaza battlefield!

Because of the continuous and intense battling, the battlefield was clearly showing damage. The center pillars had mostly either slanted or toppled over, and the ground was dotted with potholes. Only the centermost pillar that signified the start of a battle still stood, ready to burn at any time.

Today, the plaza battlefield was truly a sea of people. Before it was even time for the battle, people from Gangluo City and other cities had started waiting outside just to get a good seat so they could have the best viewpoint on this hair-raising clash of clans.

The Yang Family originally should've easily been first, but with Chu Mu's power five days ago, everyone now saw the strength in Chu Family's team, so the Yang Family's position was truly threatened!

One sided battles were always hard for people to become interested in. After all, the ending was predictable. However, such unexpectedly even matched battles were the ones that were most eye-catching since, in such battles, there were so many variables, and the constant tipping of the balance of battle would also affect everyone's heart.....

It was still the same area of seats as last time, but this time the Chu Family's seats were clearly higher up, and even the Zhou Family, who were fuming with rage towards the Chu Family, could only sit below them.

Sitting back onto the high seat that belonged to him, the Chu Family clan head Chu Ming was very happy. His eyes happened to fall on Chu Mu, because all of this had happened because of him.

“Chu Ming, let me tell you something.” The Yang Family clan head Yang Kuo sat on his high seat and glanced at Chu Mu beside him, yet a smile appeared on his face.

Chu Ming lifted his head and looked Yang Kuo, who was obviously in high spirits, and said, “Were you going to tell me to surrender now?”

Yang Kuo laughed at the thought and said in a whisper only the two could hear, “Four years ago, Chu Tiancheng killed his way into my house to ask me if I hired someone to assassinate his useless son Chu Mu.....”

Hearing Yang Kuo say such words now, Chu Ming immediately furrowed his brows, feeling an indescribable anger well up!

“I can tell you now, the person who hired someone to assassinate that trash wasn't me.....” Yang Kuo intentionally paused, and then using a disgusting tone of voice he said, “This person was my grandson, Yang Luobin.....See that, he's on the stage right now,

and he will soon fight against Chu Mu. Not dying four years ago was his luck. This time, he will be dead for sure!”

Yang Kuo’s words and manners immediately caused a flame of anger to burn within Chu Ming’s heart. If not for the Yang Family’s experts protecting Yang Kuo, the angry Chu Tiancheng would’ve long since killed this old bastard. How else could he be spared to live until today?

“Father, calm down.” Seeing Chu Ming’s anger that was on the verge of exploding, the calm Chu Tianheng immediately attempted to pacify Chu Ming.

In reality, everyone in Chu Family knew that the person who asked to kill Chu Mu was definitely from the Yang Family, but no one knew who exactly.

Before, the Yang Family had always denied it flatly, but with Yang Kuo saying it now, it was obvious that he wanted to exacerbate their conflict!

“Yang Kuo, your grandson will be dismembered by Chu Mu!!” Chu Ming pushed down his anger and said viciously!

“Oh really, I really do want to see that.....” Yang Kuo was very strange today with his mannerisms, as if he knew that the Yang Family would definitely win this battle!

At the center of the battlefield, Chu Mu stood proudly with a deep purple robe. His black eyes pierced through the three hundred meter long battlefield and stared at the white clothed man!

That white clothed man was Yang Luobin.

Yang Luobin was the strongest young man in Gangluo City. Since four years ago, Chu Mu's conflict with him was at an extreme!

In reality, when he returned to Gangluo City and contacted the Nightmare Palace killer He Lang, Chu Mu had already figured out who paid a heavy price to hire Xia Guanghan to assassinate him.

This person was Yang Luobin!

At the time, the person who should've undertaken the task was the Nightmare Palace killer He Lang who was roaming through Luo Region. Yet, Xia Guanghan just happened to be in Gangluo City and needed a host to feed his White Nightmare, so he took the task personally and kidnapped Chu Mu, forcing him to sign the contract with the White Nightmare.

Maybe Chu Mu should thank this guy that hired an assassin to kill him, or else he may still just be a regular member of the Family that received a regular soul pet.

But to Chu Mu, the best way to thank him was to kill him personally!

“Let’s let Chu He start!” Chu Xing said. After he said it, he specially looked at Chu Mu.

“Let me do it.” Chu Mu slowly opened his mouth and said.

When they walked onto the battlefield, Chu Xing and the other three all felt the cold air emanating from Chu Mu, which was formed from the most condensed hatred and desire for revenge!

“First match, Chu Family Chu Mu vs. Yang Family Yang Zhiren!”

The judge read the two starting members of the Familys out loud.

The deep purple robed Chu Mu slowly walked into the rice colored plaza battlefield. At this moment, Chu Mu could hear the cheering of tens of thousands of people!!

His opponent was Yang Zhiren, the weakest member of Yang Family. He was not even as good as Zhou Family’s Zhou Shengcheng, who was killed.

Seeing that the first to go was Yang Zhiren, Yang Kuo immediately stared blankly, his eyes falling on the young man in a black trench coat, revealing expressions of questioning.

“Brother, letting Yang Zhiren go up first, is that too.....” Yang Luobin looked at this mysterious young man and asked.

The Yang Family's original composition had Yang Shang in it, but Yang Shang and his father Yang Mantian died in the forest not long ago. The Yang Family was missing a member, so they let this mysterious man fill the spot.

In reality, when they were battling Qing Family, everyone had already noticed the existence of this mysterious Yang Family young man in a trench coat with his collars up. Everyone started guessing which young expert the Yang Family was hiding.

But, no matter how much others searched around, there seemed to be no information on this young man. Not even his name was known because, since the start of the Recommendation, this Yang Family young man had not fought a single time.

Because Chu Mu attracted so much attention, countless people had started guessing Chu Mu's real power, and now the Yang Family too had a mysterious person. This mysterious person had never fought before, but from Yang Family members' attitude towards him, this person was definitely very strong.

"I wanted to confirm something first." The trench coat man eyed Yang Luobin and said lightly.

"Confirm what?" Yang Luobin said, not understanding.

"Confirm that he is the person I'm looking for, and whether or not he is worth it for me to fight....." The trench coat man replied.

“That’s.....” Yang Luobin looked awkward, but he didn’t dare to say much in front of the man, so he could only do as he said.

“Match, start!!”

With a shout from the judge, the vibrant flames in the very center of the battlefield lit up once more. It’s raging fire flickered, shining fire light and sprinkling its hot red glow everywhere!

Realizing that Chu Mu was a bloody executioner, Yang Zhiren didn’t dare to have any neglect. He immediately summoned both his soul pets to prevent himself from being killed unwittingly by some strange tactic by Chu Mu.

Yang Zhiren’s two soul pets didn’t have much specialty. It was a Blood Winged Trioptic Beast and a Rare Blood Beast, soul pets that every Yang Family member had.

Yang Zhiren’s Blood Winged Trioptic Beast was at the sixth phase first stage from its appearance. It didn’t look like it was strengthened by any high level beast type soul crystal. Such a commander rank soul pet could be dealt with easily with Chu Mu’s Ice Air Fairy alone.

As for the seventh phase Rare Blood Beast, it should have some fighting strength too, but only some. Compared to Chu Mu’s soul pets, it wasn’t even on the same level.

“Contestants, summon soul pets.” The judge eyed Yang Zhiren, who had summoned two soul pets and then his eyes immediately fell on the motionless Chu Mu.

After the battle began, they could directly enter battle. The judge was just kindly reminding Chu Mu.

But what surprised the judge was that this Chu Family contestant didn't even chant any incantation. He simply moved like a stern statue and walked alone towards the Yang Zhiren's two soul pets!

“Why isn't brother summoning any soul pet?” Chu Yishui stared closely at Chu Mu and looked questioningly.

Chu Xing and the others also didn't understand. It was reasonable to say that, against an opponent, Chu Mu should at least summon his Ice Air Fairy and Devil Tree Battle Soldier or his Night Thunder Dream Beast.

Yet, the flames of battle have been lit already and Chu Mu still hadn't chanted any incantation. Not only did he not chant an incantation, but Chu Mu also just walked straight towards the Yang Family contestant Yang Zhiren!

Noisy discussion immediately started as everyone looked at the purple robed Chu Mu, not understanding Chu Mu's actions. If he walked any further, he was going to enter the enemy's soul pet attacking range. Without a single soul pet, Chu Mu would have to face the direct attacks of the opponent's soul pets!

“Maybe he didn’t forget to summon a soul pet. Have you guys noticed the shrunken Six Tailed Demon Fox that often lies on Chu Mu’s shoulder?” Chu Xing noticed this detail and said.

“Oh oh, almost forgot, Chu Mu still had a fifth phase Six Tailed Demon Fox. The Six Tailed Demon Fox’s fighting strength was very close to commander rank, so this Demon Fox must be pretty powerful.....” Chu Ning nodded.

“But, even if he had already summoned a type strengthened Six Tailed Demon Fox, against Yang Zhiren’s Blood Winged Trioptic Beast and Rare Blood Beast, isn’t that too implausible?”

Chapter 60: You Yang Family, Anyone Who Comes Up, I, Chu Mu, Will Kill

“Wuwu~~~~~”

Little Mo Xie laid down on Chu Mu’s shoulder and was telepathically connected with Chu Mu. Chu Mu’s hatred and desire for revenge transferred to Mo Xie. Though she stayed in her Pitiful Appearance, her silver eyes had already pierced into the eyes of the two soul pets, like icy daggers!

The deep purple silhouette kept walking forward. Compared to the two sturdily built Blood Beasts, Chu Mu seemed weaker, yet the aura Chu Mu had from excessive killing was still enough to subdue the two Blood Beasts!

Thirty meters.....twenty meters.....

In the three hundred meter long plaza battleground, since Chu Mu had stepped onto the battleground, he had kept on walking. Yang Zhiren just watched as this cold man approached him step by step, and felt that Chu Mu, from beginning to end, didn’t even look at him once. He even completely ignored the two soul pets that he had summoned!

“You.....You are courting death!” Though Chu Mu’s imposing manner was very scary, Yang Zhiren couldn’t stand Chu Mu’s belittlement and, as Chu Mu neared the ten meter mark, he shouted angrily and commanded his two soul pets to lunge straight at Chu Mu!

Yet, even though the two Blood Beasts had already leapt forward, bringing a wave of putrid blood scent towards Chu Mu, Chu Mu still kept walking, having no emotional change in his black pupils!

“Mo Xie, kill!”

Feeling the two soul pets nearing, Chu Mu only spat out three words.

Mo Xie’s silver white pupils suddenly burst with a demonic glint and, like daggers, her stare frenzily pierced towards the two Blood Beast!

Evil Stare!!

Mo Xie’s Evil Stare was instantly casted. Whether it was the sixth phase first stage Blood Winged Trioptic Beast or the seventh phase second stage Rare Blood Beast, after being affected by Mo Xie’s two demonic pupils’ stare, their bodies were petrified, standing stiff in place!

The light retracted and Mo Xie lightly leapt off of Chu Mu’s shoulder onto the ground. Her little elegant body instantly blurred into a silver streak the moment she touched the ground!!

Death Assault!!

Mo Xie was like a silver lightning bolt that flashed around everyone's vision!!

Illusion!!!

Just as the silver lightning bolt neared the two Blood Beasts, the brilliant light suddenly split into three, making three, running demon fox lights!!

Evil Flame Claw!!!

The crimson red blade suddenly appeared from within the three light shadows, ripping through the air, and making three shocking scarlet blade awns! Biting cold!

Evil Stare, Death Assault, Illusion, and Evil Flame Claw!

The casting of the four abilities was unbelievably strong with a sixth phase fourth stage Mo Xie. The Rare Blood Beast and Blood Winged Trioptic Beast seemed like they weren't able to fend against it even in the slightest!

“Shua!!!!Shua!!!”

“Shua!!!”

Two ripping noises sounded out, and then one more followed!

“Puchi~~~~Puchi~~~~~”

“Puchi~~~~”

Two dashes of blood, and one dash of blood followed the rhythm of the ripping, as the blood began to spew out like a fountain, creating three bloody mists on the rice colored battlefield!!

The three blood mists came out from three different bodies. Floating two meters high, above the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast's heart, was the Rare Blood Beast's skull that was frozen by Evil Stare, and the wide eyed Yang Zhiren's neck!!

The entire ten thousand people within the plaza stadium became dead silent! People could even hear the three streams of blood spraying out from the bodies!

“Beng!”

While still spraying blood, the first to fall was the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast. Its body slammed heavily into the ground, and its wings shrivelled up, leaking blood!

“Beng!!!” Almost at the same time, the Rare Blood Beast's body fell to the side, but the other half of its skull that was cut slid off, allowing disgusting brain fluids to flow out of the wound!

The last to fall was Yang Zhiren. He held his bleeding throat, trying to save his own life. But at the same time, the unstoppable

Chu Mu walked right past him, as if a grim reaper on foot!

Finally Yang Zhiren fell!

His body convulsed on the ground a few times before losing all signs of life. Blood quickly oozed out of his neck, wiping red onto the battleground floors.....

The entire stadium was as if time froze-staying in a completely frozen and silent state. Only the dark purple robed demonic and charming man moved. He moved past the three corpses and continued walking towards the other end of the battlefield!

One hit!!

Everyone saw that supremely fast soul pet of Chu Mu's only cast one claw ability!

Yet, this claw hit that split into three actually scarily instantly killed two soul pets and one man!!!!!!

Shocking!!

Frightening!!!!

Such bloody scene could only be described with such words!

Even if Yang Zhiren's power was weak, he was, at the very least, a Spirit Teacher. The Blood Winged Trioptic Beast he summoned was at the sixth phase first stage, and the Rare Blood Beast was even at the seventh phase second stage. Although his two soul pets were never strengthened by high level soul crystals, they still had a certain fighting strength. Yet, these two soul pets couldn't even withstand Chu Mu's strange soul pets' single attack, which was even enough to split off and also rip Yang Zhiren's neck apart!!

“Huhuhu~~~~~”

The late arriving evil flame started burning on the body's wound, seeping straight into the inner parts of the three corpses.

Following that, everyone saw an even more hair raising scene!

The scary evil flame burned from within the corpses, and managed to burn all three bodies into ashes within mere seconds!!

A gust of cold air swept through the battlefield. Usually, after every silence from shock was an explosion of uproars.

But, this time, no one could open their mouths, because no one knew how to describe the scene in front of their eyes.

The shock from Chu Mu's eruption of terrifying strength, the appall from Chu Mu's apathetic killing, and the fear from the ruthless burning of bodies!!

In short, the battlefield stayed silent for a long time. Even when the man full of demonic killing intent reached the other side, there still was no sound in the battlefield!

Finally, Chu Mu stopped. At this point, Chu Mu didn't conceal his body full of blood, and unrestrainedly releasing the crazy aura formed from the ravages of four years of torturous death experiences!

With the blood freshened killing intent was also the unsuppressable desire for revenge and hatred!

This desire and killing intent caused the nearby air temperature to drop, and like the cold wind, it frantically buffeted Yang Luobin and the other Yang Family members!

This imposing manner was not something the Yang Family could defend against. Other than the mysterious teen, Yang Luobin and the rest were all forced back a few steps!

“Yang Luobin, listen carefully!”

Chu Mu's eyes were like beasts' as they stared at Yang Luobin. His voice felt like it pierced the soul.

“Four years ago, you told me to die!”

“Four years later, I, Chu Mu, will make all of the Yang Family die with you!!”

From now on, the people from your Yang Family, every person who comes up, I, Chu Mu, will kill until there are none left to kill!”

Chu Mu’s words were sent with his soul remembrance. This blood stained voice therefore spread through the entire battlefield!!

A frightened commotion exploded as no one would’ve thought Chu Mu dared to do such a crazy action!!

The Yang Family was completely subdued by Chu Mu’s imposing manner!

Even everyone in the Chu Family didn’t think that Chu Mu was arrogant enough to challenge the entirety of the Yang Family to the point where he said such vicious words as this, “people from your Yang Family, every person who comes up, I, Chu Mu, will kill until there is none left to kill!”

One person challenging the entire Yang Family, killing everyone that was sent. On this ten thousand people plaza battleground, in this Gangluo City expert gathering Recommendation, doing such an arrogant and scary action needed not only a beast-like courage, but also four years of sedimented hatred and desire for vengeance concentrated by death struggles!!

Someone who would say such a thing was definitely crazy, but at this moment, for some reason, everyone felt this teen wasn’t speaking lies because of a loss of logic when angry. It was just the

opposite. Everyone present could feel the young man's calm, as well as the bloody killing intent that had been formed through blood!!

“Such.....such a boastful manner of expression. I do want to see just what power you have to eradicate the Yang Family!!” The Old city master Yang Kuo was filled with anger as he stood from his place and shouted with his soul remembrance. He wanted to use his own mannerisms to subdue the scary Chu Mu!

Seeing someone humiliate the Yang Family in front of the public, and even swear to kill all of the Yang Family, how could Yang Kuo sit still?

Yet, just as Yang Kuo stood up from his place, an icy voice appeared near Yang Kuo's ear, causing Yang Kuo to shake!!

“Old fellow, do as he says and send your third generation members up one at a time, and let him kill to his heart's content. Otherwise, the Yang Family's entire mansion house will be burned to ashes!”

This extremely icy voice didn't sound like it came from a normal person. Even its voice hid killing intent.

Yang Kuo was dazed. He could feel that the owner of the voice was a real killer!!

“You.....could it be that you are the one that raided our industries?.....” Yang Kuo frantically morphed his soul remembrance into a voice and sent it into the killer’s ear.

Yang Kuo didn’t respond, but this nonresponse was what made Yang Kuo feel even more terrified. The old city master completely didn’t think that the mysterious man who heavily damaged Yang Family a month back would suddenly appear at the Recommendation and sneak attack the Yang Family’s mansion house while most of their experts were at the Recommendation!

Yang Kuo could choose to not believe the killer’s words, but he definitely couldn’t bet the entirety of the Yang Family’s assets, especially after remembering the unbounded ruthlessness the other party had in their actions a few months back!

“Even if they don’t come up, they still have to die!”

Chu Mu’s voice travelled over again. Now, Chu Mu was no longer like a teen contestant in the Recommendation, and was rather like a killing demon full of hatred and vengeance that had been deeply rooted through the four years on Prison Island!

Chapter 61: Yang Family, A Great Catastrophe Is Imminent

Who knew what those merciless killers would do? Yang Kuo was well aware that this situation could not be solved by words. He clenched his teeth and fiercely said: “Yang Fa, go up!”

Yang Fa was the third strongest competitor. After hearing the family head’s words, his face instantly paled.

Just like what everyone was afraid of, Yang Fa had identically suffered from the terrifying killing intent emitting from Chu Mu’s body. If he were to go up, he would definitely be killed!

“Move your ass up there! Don’t lose my Yang Family’s face!” loudly roared Yang Kuo once more when he saw that Yang Fa was unexpectedly hesitating!

Yang Fa trembled all over and, with great difficulty, strode forward one step. However, he didn’t dare to take another half a step!

“Go up, otherwise you’ll die right now!”

Suddenly, a strange voice rang out from behind Yang Fa. Yang Fa instantly felt a cold shiver, as cold sweat began to roll down his forehead!

With the threat of death, Yang Fa could be certain that if he hesitated even a bit more, blood would definitely fly on the spot!!

Finally, Yang Fa stepped forward again and, trembling with fear, walked onto the plaza battlefield. When he faced the cold killing intent of Chu Mu, he felt as if he had sunk into the depths of an ice cave where it was dark and cold...

“Big brother, what are you...” Yang Luobin’s face was ashen, and his gaze was on the mysterious young man next to him.

“If you don’t want to die first, then shut up,” the mysterious young man said coldly.

Yang Luobin was stunned. He looked at the mysterious young man, but didn’t dare to say anything more.

The referee had already felt the nature of the fights in this round of the Recommendation clearly change. He intentionally looked at Chu Mu...

“Summon your soul pets...” Chu Mu indifferently spoke to Yang Fa in place of the referee.

Yang Fa didn’t dare to hesitate at all, and he instantly chanted an incantation. In one go, he summoned all three soul pets.

Chu Mu also chanted an incantation. Suddenly, piece after piece of ice crystals glistening in cold light began to float around Chu Mu's body. As Chu Mu's right finger drew a circle, they slowly condensed in front of Chu Mu...

Due to Chu Mu's killing intent, the plaza battlefield had experienced a temperature drop. As the Ice Air Fairy appeared with its two hands still covered in blood, the plaza battlefield turned even colder. Even the spectators on the outside could clearly feel a cold air sweep through!

Of Chu Mu's soul pets, the one that had killed the most was Mo Xie. After Mo Xie was the Ice Air Fairy!!

“Ling!!!!”

The Ice Air Fairy wasn't the same naive small elemental type from back then. It could sense the resentment and anger in Chu Mu's heart and, after it appeared, it also used its grievance and killing intent to transform into a bone chilling frosty cold that it dispelled!

Chu Mu tilted his head and looked at the stunned referee.

The referee immediately woke up and said: “Fight, start!!”

The flames on the pillars in the center lit up once more. Originally they were eminently gaily-colored, but for some reason, everyone seemed to feel that the flames were now unexpectedly a

bit more pale colored. Ostensibly, they had been influenced by some strange force!

“Ning, Ice Sword Formation!”

“Ling!!!!!!!”

The chanting of the fairy incantation was extremely short. Piece after piece of dazzling ice crystals quickly began floating above the Ice Air Fairy’s head amidst a cold wind that swept up!

The small pieces of ice crystals coagulated and, after the short chanting finished, they astonishingly formed sixteen enormous ice swords that frighteningly hovered above the Ice Air Fairy!

“Ling!!!!!!!!!!!!”

A sharp cry rang out. The Ice Air Fairy’s ice swords shockingly streaked across the air of the battlefield and smashed towards Yang Fa’s soul pets!!

The Ice Air Fairy’s Ice Sword Formation had been seen by everyone before, and its power was definitely that of the seventh rank. However, what made everyone incessantly shocked was that this time, the sixteen ice swords unexpectedly didn’t simultaneously strike. Instead, they formed a shocking diagonal line that successively penetrated Yang Fa’s weakest warrior rank Nine Eared Needle!!

Microcontrol!!

Elemental Kingdom soul pets had a very high level of control towards elemental techniques!!

The sixth phase second stage Ice Air Fairy not only controlled the excellent superposition technique Overlay but it had also learned the technique Microcontrol!

“Beng!! Beng!!! Beng!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

Despite Yang Kuo taking various defensive measures at the beginning, no matter how he defended, this absolute damage ice type technique rendered his defenses useless!!

The warrior rank Nine Eared Needle fundamentally could not dodge the first six meter ice sword. The subsequent sixteen ice swords proceeded to pierce its body, smashing its body into the depths of the plaza battlefield!!!

“Frost Poison Invasion!”

The death of a soul pet meant that its master would die!

The terrifying Frost Poison Invasion seemed to move through the mental remembrance feedback. The instant the Nine Eared Needle died the poison traveled back to the master, and froze Yang Fa's body!!

“Soul remembrance defense...”

Yang Gebin was just about to say something to remind Yang Fa, but discovered that he was already too late...

Yang Fa, whose heart was filled fear, had still forgotten. Or perhaps Yang Fa, in his past fights, had never been aware that ice type soul pets could possess such a terrifying killing technique!

The moment the Nine Eared Needle died, Yang Fa’s face instantly paled. Then, he began to turn ashen as his five pores began to slowly emit a frosty air!

The first appearance of the icy frost occurred in his expanded eyes. Once the eyeballs were completely frozen, Yang Fa’s body immediately stiffened, as if it had transformed into an ice sculpture. Then, it slowly fell backwards...

“Peng!!!!”

Yang Fa’s body of blood and flesh was like a sculpture that suddenly split into a myriad of pieces after crashing to the ground. Piece after piece of frozen flesh, limbs, and blood dispersed as they chaotically scattered over the ground...

The vast number of people watching the plaza battlefield normally should have felt an ardent fervor because they possessed it. Yet, when they saw Yang Fa’s body come crashing down into

pieces, everyone couldn't help but coldly shiver!

There were no noises of discussion and clamor like at the end of fights in the past. The current Recommendation tournament had already fully surpassed what everyone had imagined. They could only, carrying extreme shock in their hearts, watch this fight with their eyes opened so much that they couldn't be opened any more!

“In the past, fourth brother said that participating in the Recommendation isn't a time to defeat others, but rather a time to kill others. I had only thought it was something that fourth brother had said casually. I didn't think that...” said Chu Ning very rigidly.

Chu Ning knew that Chu Mu's strength was very strong, and that he was probably not even weaker than Chu He and Chu Xing. However, he didn't think that Chu Mu's strength would be so terrifying. His Ice Air Fairy's fighting strength was fully comparable to a sixth phase high talented commander rank. It could easily use a seventh rank technique, and it could further use Micro Control to strengthen during a seventh rank technique. Such an attack, unless it was a sixth phase soul pet with high defensive talent, would be very hard to defend against.

Among all of the Yang Family's experts, there weren't very many sixth phase commander ranks. Even if there were, they were very ordinary, and were simply not equal to Chu Mu's highly talented Ice Air Fairy that had undergone first-rate training.

In Nightmare Palace, those that were so called first rate experts, in front of Chu Mu, were just like weeds, easy to kill. There wasn't even a need to mention the young experts of these tiny families!

“Yang Na! Go up!!”

Yang Kuo's face was twitching. A fight they were originally definitely going to win had now suddenly been ridden with so many variable. Presently, this old fellow could only watch with open eyes as his third generation disciples were mercilessly slaughtered by Chu Mu!!

“No, no, I give up. I... I don't want to die!” Yang Na simply didn't dare to go up. The difference in strength allowed him to understand that if he went up, he would definitely die!

Yang Na flusteredly ran out of the arena. Evidently, he didn't want to follow the previous two people's course of action.

Suddenly, a fissure opened up under Yang Na's feet and a terrifying ice spike abruptly pierced out from within!!

“Chi!!!!”

The ice spike, which was 20 meters high, appeared at a strange instance. Even though the adjacent Yang Luobin had felt it, he wasn't able to raise a warning in time. He could only watch the body of fleeing Yang Na be pierced alive. A frightening lotus of

blood flew everywhere!!

“This... this...”

The referee standing to the side aghastly stared at the ice spike. For a moment, he simply didn't know what to decide!

“You... you how can you violate the regulations!” Yang Luobin was struck dumb. He fully didn't expect Chu Mu to unexpectedly ignite the flames of battle off the stage and kill Yang Na, who didn't dare to go on stage!!

“Regardless of whether you come up or don't come up, you all must die!” Chu Mu stood on the battlefield. He fundamentally didn't pander to the Recommendation's rules!

Yang Luobin's face went ashen, then white. He intentionally moved closer to that mysterious Yang Family youth and seemed to be beseeching his protection!

The Yang Family had five members in total. It hadn't even been ten minutes, and three of them had miserably died!

Yang Kuo's face twisted together; his gaze closely looked at the Yang Family's mysterious young man. Condensing soul remembrance into a voice, he somewhat angrily asked: “Why won't you make your move. Could it be that you really want to watch all of our Yang Family's third generation disciples be massacred?!”

“In your Yang Family, aside from Yang Luobin, what do the deaths of the others have anything to do with me?” asked the mysterious young man in an indifferent tone.

“You...” a rush surged from Yang Kuo’s stomach and he nearly spat out blood!

“You fellows offended Nightmare Palace’s Xia Guanghan. Xia Guanghan is a ferocious person, and your clan will sooner or later be exterminated. Right now, it is merely a game of killing between your family and a fellow who has desire for revenge... however, on Yang Luobin’s behalf, I will defeat this Chu Mu and give the Yang Family members who attended the Recommendation a way to survive. I suggest that your members don’t randomly run about. Otherwise they won’t even know how they died.” slowly spoke the mysterious young man.

In the face of a large crisis, Yang Kuo wasn’t able to sense it at all!

Yang Kuo abruptly looked around, and shockingly discovered that, around the entire plaza battlefield, he could faintly see a few ice cold black figures that stood amongst the crowd like statues!!

“Big brother, I beg of you to quickly make your move. Otherwise, the next one to die will be me...” Yang Luobin had completely generated fear towards Chu Mu, and he entreated piteously!!

The corners of the mysterious young man's mouth rose and he said: "Luobin, you've run out of luck, your family unexpectedly incurring the hatred of someone you simply can't afford to offend..."

"Simply cannot afford to offend? Big brother, I don't understand your meaning? This fellow should have died four years... but..." said Yang Luobin.

"You've heard of a person, right? At age fifteen, he entered the securely closed savage Prison Island filled with three thousand Nightmare Palace prisoners. At the age of eighteen, he became the Prison Island King, which caused a stir throughout the entire Nightmare Palace. Afterwards, he defeated the reputable peak young expert, Tian Ji, and became the newest dazzling star of the entire Nightmare Palace!" slowly said the mysterious young man.

Yang Luobin was stunned. He immediately nodded his head and said: "I've heard, I've heard, but what does this have to do with Chu Mu..."

A smile rose on the mysterious young man's face. He didn't say anything, and gradually stepped forward as he indifferently walked past Yang Na's corpse that was still dripping with blood. While all of the Yang Family disciples were stunned by Chu Mu's massacre to the point that their courage had even broken, he unexpectedly didn't have the slightest trace of fear as he stepped onto the bloodstained plaza battlefield!!!

Chapter 62: Chu Mu, King Of Prison Island!

“Constantly killing trash and useless people is truly a disrespect to your identity.....” the coated teen slowly walked onto the plaza battlefield.

The teen didn't summon any soul pets. Even against Chu Mu's Ice Fairy, which was full of killing intent, he still kept his calm composure. He seemed totally not worried that Chu Mu's Ice Fairy would suddenly extend an icicle and pierce his body.

The teen didn't intentionally lower his voice. With the entire battlefield silent, anyone with a sliver of soul power could hear what he said.

Chu Mu slightly creased his brows, his eyes watching the guy who had been watching from the sidelines the entire time.

Of course, Chu Mu had noticed this man. Before, he also heard He Lang mention the Luo Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen. Sure enough, this fellow had appeared!

“Originally, if a famous person like you started a massacre, I, Yang Luosen, wouldn't want to bother your interests. However, I have no other choice now, because the person you are killing is my good for nothing little brother.....” The mysterious teen slowly spoke.

The Luo Region was near Nightmare Palace's territory, so news from the Nightmare Palace always reached the Luo Region quickly.

Undeniably, as a Nightmare Prince with a title starting with Luo Region, he was naturally the strongest member of Nightmare Palace within the Luo Region. Not only this, other than the Luo Region Sect, it was very hard to find anyone that could compete against the Luo Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen!!

In the Luo Region, the Luo Nightmare Prince's fame was even higher than the top tier youth expert Tian Ji. Even within Nightmare Palace, the Luo Region Nightmare Prince was a top tier expert more famous than Tian Ji. Tian Ji was known by the public of Luo Region, yet this Luo Region Nightmare Prince was even more famous, basically representing the strongest young member in all of Luo Region!

Because of this, when this mysterious young man called himself Yang Luosen, everyone in the stadium was immediately subdued. No one had thought that the matchless Luo Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen would appear at the Recommendation!!

The final goal of the Recommendation was to select the strongest people from each area and send them to Luo Region City to compete in an even more cutthroat competition. The reason Gangluo City's Recommendation nature had changed this much was because, even if the strongest members of Gangluo City were sent to Luo Region City, they would still be easily eliminated.

Yet, the Luo Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen was completely the kind that was a popular contestant to become the champion in Luo Region City. The appearance of such a young expert in a little Gangluo City Recommendation was unbelievable!!

“Old city master, is this really the Luo Region Nightmare Prince – Yang Luosen?” The Zhou Family clan head Zhou Guixian said with a face of shock.

Yang Kuo, seeing that Yang Luosen had intervened, slightly eased the tension in his face and nodded heavily. “He is.....”

Knowing that the mysterious Yang Family contestant was Luo Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen, the entire plaza battlefield flared up!!

“Yang Nightmare Prince, this is Gangluo City’s Recommendation, we might not be able to hold a famous entity such as yourself, how I see this is.....” The host of the event realized that this entire Recommendation’s goal had changed already, so he immediately voiced his thoughts very politely to the authority of Nightmare Palace, Yang Luosen.

“This Recommendation, from the very beginning, couldn’t have continued normally. Didn’t you notice that there’s a fellow who doesn’t belong here that’s playing a game of slaughter?” Yang Luosen looked at the host and said lightly.

“How so? Is it because of the Chu Family Chu Mu’s actions? His actions are a bit.....” The host immediately glanced at Chu Mu.

“A group of stupid people.” Yang Luosen laughed, looking closely and intimidatingly at Chu Mu, no longer caring about the host’s words.

“You, if you don’t want to die, get lost.” Chu Mu said coldly. So what if he was against the top tier expert Luo Region Nightmare Prince? If he was an obstruction, Chu Mu would kill him all the same!

“Haha, truly like the rumors, cold as a glacier and ready to kill and shed blood at the slightest notice!” Yang Luosen smiled and continued.

“The majestic Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince is falling as low as using these trashes to release your emotions. This guy definitely won’t let you satisfy your killing, so let I, Yang Luosen, have a fight with you.....”

While everyone was still surprised by the appearance of the Luo Region Nightmare Prince, Yang Luosen’s words created an even larger ripple throughout the audience!

Immediately, the entire ten thousand people exploded into conversation!!

King of Prison Island, Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince!!

In recent times, Nightmare Palace recently had a new star emerge. In a short time, his name had spread far and wide, and he was known as the most ominous and powerful young expert!!

Just not long ago, many people could still remember, in the

auction house, the mysterious man that walked by everyone who looked down on all the respectable people of Gangluo City!

At the time, people confirmed that Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince was in Gangluo City. A month had passed, so everyone thought that the top tier young expert had left Gangluo City already for a different place, but no one would've guessed that the young expert was still in Gangluo City!

Yet, what was even more unpredictable was, when the cold faced expert shed his mask, it was Chu Mu, who everyone took as a laughing matter four years ago!!

Chu Mu was the King of Prison Island?

The Chu family Chu Mu has since long ago been known by everyone in Gangluo City just because of that laughable lost soul. Yet, the Nightmare Palace Prison Island King was famous everywhere, becoming the nearby region's most discussed expert in a short few months. These two people, to the people of Gangluo City, had no connection whatsoever. If not for Yang Luosen revealing otherwise, who could've connected the two matters?!

“From even more accurate information, though the Prison Island King is a Spirit Teacher, he only has two souls, so the reason his fame was even greater when he beat Tian Ji was because he only used two soul pets to defeat the three Blue Nightmares of the top tier expert Tian Ji!”

“Didn't the Chu Family's Chu Mu lose a soul as well?”

“The Prison Island King, Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince only has two souls, meaning he also lost a soul. Can it be that the Chu Family’s Chu Mu really is the Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince, and the only one to survive the dangerous Prison Island that was occupied by 3000 prisoners?!!”

People’s discussion nearby constantly echoed through the old Family head Chu Ming’s ears. His long lost grandson was actually the top tier expert, the Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince.

This meant that, in the four years Chu Mu was gone, there were three years where he was accompanied by no one, except killing to survive the three thousand prisoners of Prison Island!!

Such an intimidating aura formed through long term killing, the calmness after killing, the shocking strength that could easily kill an opponent in one hit.....Chu Ming felt that Chu Mu’s title of Prison Island King was very surreal, yet connected everything-it seemed to be the only explanation!

“Speaking of the past four years, Chu Mu had always avoided it with vague descriptions.....” Remembering asking about Chu Mu’s four years, Chu Ming’s heart wavered. Though Chu Ming didn’t know how dangerous Prison Island was, just hearing about the cruel competition and the great feat of one person surviving among 3000 was enough for Chu Ming to understand just how much blood and tears were shed for Chu Mu to be refined into the cold and arrogant youth he was today!

Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince – Prison Island King – Chu Mu!!

After Yang Luosen said that, the entire stadium blew up again!!

The Chu Family's Chu Mu, was also Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince!! No wonder after four years he had become this merciless and apathetic, and no wonder he could look down upon the entire Yang Family with such arrogance!!

“Chu Mu.....”

At this moment, everyone in the Chu Family scrutinized this glacier-like man, especially the brothers and sisters who grew up with Chu Mu. The shock in their hearts was indescribable. Why had there been no news of Chu Mu for four years, and why did his power increase so greatly after four years.....

Prison Island King, these three words were enough to explain all of Chu Mu!

At this point, everyone's look towards Chu Mu changed. Not only did it have hope, but also shock after learning about the truth. There was also respect for the young man who survived four years of refinement through life and death!

“It seems like your influence has already surpassed even mine.....” Yang Luosen smiled. At this moment he could distinctly feel the entirety of Gangluo City being stunned by Chu Mu!!

“Dead people will not need influence.” Chu Mu said apathetically.

What Chu Mu needed was definitely not the identity of Prison Island King, but instead, he needed the change he underwent through the past four years. This was to shock the entirety of Gangluo City, making the family feel proud of him, and making enemies shake because of him!

“We can’t avoid a fight!” Luo Region Nightmare Prince said.

The Luo Region Nightmare Prince turned around and looked at Lanyu City’s old host and said lightly, “Old Ling, let’s make you the witness for the fight between I, Yang Luosen, and the Prison Island King Chu Mu. When the battle ends, spread the message to everyone to let them know who is truly the strongest of Luo Region!!”

The host, who was called Old Ling, stared blankly and suddenly realized that this Recommendation has completely morphed into the peak battle between two top tier young experts. Old Ling’s expression immediately changed and said, “Both of you are powerful characters of Nightmare Palace, why have a duel in this little Gangluo City.....”

“Be the witness; I want to kill, he wants to die-it’s perfect!” Chu Mu glanced at the host and said.

The host, Old Ling, looked stuck in between a rock and a hard

place. No matter if it was the King of Prison Island or the Luo Region Nightmare Prince, both these young men were top tier experts of Nightmare Palace with superior positions, causing even him, a vice city master of a ninth level city, to be fearful and respectful.

The host was very helpless. He didn't think there would simultaneously be two Nightmare Princes in Gangluo City and, even more, he didn't expect the two Nightmare Princes to start a duel that could cause a sensation throughout the regions in his Recommendation!

Chapter 63: Luo Region Nightmare Prince VS Prison Island King

“Since the two honorable Nightmare Princes wish for Lin Huang to act as a witness, then it can be regarded that the two honorable Nightmare Princes are showing respect for this old man. Thus, this old man will be the referee for the battle between you two.” the organizer Lin Huang also knew that this fight, which was under the attention of tens of thousands of people, was inevitable. He gradually stood up from his spot and walked towards the plaza battlefield!

In Gangluo City, there were many people who felt rather at a loss at what kind of status these two peak experts held, especially the female soul pet trainers like Chu Ying whose thoughts were still confined to only the range of Luo Region.

“Why is Blue Feather City’s vice city lord so polite to them? Aren’t they only young people...” Chu Ying finally could not bear it any longer, and she asked her question.

She didn’t understand these things, but in truth, the people in Gangluo City who hadn’t actually come into contact with the outside world also had no way of knowing the height at which both Chu Mu and Yang Luosen were at.

However, just from the way the vice city lord from the ninth ranked Blue Feather City treated these two young men, one could understand what the unknown height that they stood at in Nightmare Palace signified!

“Younger sister, you are a bit unaware. How about this; the entire Gangluo City is controlled in the hands of the Yang Family, and the Yang Family is like our Chu Family, but a mere branch of the Great Family. The most flourishing cities in the Luo Region are all controlled by the Yang Shi Family...

However, you should know that the faction with the most power in the Luo Region definitely is not the Yang Shi Family. Instead, the Luo Region Sect has great influence over the several surrounding territories. The Luo Region Sect's influence is enough to rival the Wogu City's Great Chu Family.

Nevertheless, above both the Luo Region Sect and the Great Chu Family, standing on top of a myriad of cities within the world presides the Nightmare Palace, whose position is even more superior. It means to stand as the strongest faction!! Nightmare Palace can have numerous cities, and their experts number as many as the clouds in the sky. Any young peak expert from there is enough to sweep through all of the Luo Region's young experts!”

Chu Xing, who had a rich understanding of the outside world, explained to the somewhat ignorant Chu Ying.

Listening to Chu Xing's description, Chu Ying opened her mouth in astonishment. After a while, she finally asked: “Then, Chu Mu being addressed as the Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince, and also whatever the Prison Island King is, what kind of status is that....”

“The Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince is a Nightmare Palace peak

expert who abruptly rose in power over the past few months. Even disregarding his Prison Island King status, his mere victory over the Nightmare Palace expert Tian Ji should already be enough to explain everything. Tian Ji was someone who was enough to wipe out all of our Luo Region's young experts..."

Chu He, who had never spoken before, finally said something. Moreover, as he spoke, his eyes never left Chu Mu...

"Yes. The Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince, aside from surpassing our Luo Region and along with the Nightmare Palace's peak expert Yang Luosen, there probably isn't anyone who is his opponent!"

Chu Ying's previous shock was only from everyone on the battlefield's reaction, as well as that terrifying flare up. After listening to Chu Xing and Chu He's explanation, her heart was full of an even further uproar ***!!

Gangluo City was only a tiny eighth rank city. The strongest person that came out of the Recommendation in Luo Region City was simply looked down upon. To Chu Ying, the strongest person in Luo Yu City was already a bit eminent and unapproachable. Yet, she absolutely would not have thought that Chu Mu's status unexpectedly surpassed the strongest person in Luo Yu City!

Sweep through the entire Luo Region!! These six words were easy to say, but how many people could truly do it?!!

"How... how did Chu Mu suddenly... is he really Chu Mu?" in this instant, in the eyes of the Chu Family disciples, this young man

gave them a completely unfamiliar feeling. In truth, from the moment Chu Mu returned to the Chu Family, no one had seen the true Chu Mu.

“Four years. I didn’t think that in four years, fourth brother who lost a soul and nearly didn’t become a soul pet trainer had already reached such a level in an even vaster region. In the past, I’d only heard these things from other people, and simply didn’t believe that this would happen to someone right next to me. In this lifetime there’s no way to reach that level...” said Chu Xing.

“Chu Mu has already leapt out of our narrow minded world.” a while later, Chu Xing finally spoke with a bit of surprise.

“Can’t Chu Mu only summon two soul pets? Although his Ice Air Fairy and Devil Tree Battle Soldier are powerful, but...” Chu Ying still felt that it was a bit hard to believe.

“Don’t tell me you’ve forgotten about that odd soul pet that just instantly killed two pets and a person? I think that neither the Ice Air Fairy and the Devil Tree Battle Soldier are Chu Mu’s main pet.” said Chu Xing.

Unexpectedly, the Ice Air Fairy that had practically swept through all of the Yang Family’s experts wasn’t Chu Mu’s main pet. Then, how powerful was Chu Mu’s main pet? In this moment, Chu Ying didn’t dare to think any further.

“The two honorable Nightmare Princes, how do you plan on swapping points?” asked Lin Huang.

“I’ve heard that the Eternal Ocean Nightmare Prince has lost a soul, so I, who possess three souls have a clear advantage. Therefore, let’s just do a one soul one on one fight! Four soul pets are the limit!” said the Yang Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen.

After speaking, the Yang Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen intentionally looked at Chu Mu and said: “Nightmare Prince Chu, what do you think of this competition?”

“I don’t care, but I like to kill.” indifferently replied Chu Mu. Even though he had lost a soul, Chu Mu had never believed that he would lose to a three soul opponent. In reality, Chu Mu didn’t want to fight this sort of restricted fight either. However, what was one rule to him? No matter the method of fighting, Chu Mu would fiercely step on his enemy under his feet!

“In that case, then it will be a single control fight with a limit of four soul pets!”

In the soul pet domain, there were very many different forms of showdowns between soul pet trainers. There were methods of fighting purely between soul pets, and there were ways in which the soul pet trainer could participate. Aside from this, when summoning soul pets, there were different kinds of fighting methods.

For instance, single control fighting was very common in the soul pet trainer showdown realm. Each soul pet trainer would only summon one soul pet to fight, and the contest would completely be the most direct form of battle between one soul pet of the soul pet trainers!

Single control fights could be regarded as the best embodiment of a soul pet's strength in a fight. After all, once there were a lot of soul pets, the superposition of techniques, attribute counters, species coordination, use of tactics etc. were numerous factors that influenced the outcome of a battle. However, single control fights was a fight only between two soul pets. Perhaps such a fight didn't have the beauty of numerous techniques and practiced coordinated tactics, but it had the contest of pure strength!!

The two could already be said to have surpassed the realm of a fight between Luo Region's young peak experts. How shocking was that?! Looking at the two men facing off, the hearts of the tens of thousands of people around the plaza battlefield surged up because, perhaps, they would have never been able to personally witness such a fight like today in their entire lifetime!!

As for Yang Luobin, he was currently standing under the battlefield, and he could only look at Chu Mu from below. In this moment, nobody would pay attention to the exceptionally petty and lowly Gangluo City's strongest youth when compared to these two grand Nightmare Princes. The only thing that existed was the profound grief felt by those who once used contemptible methods on Chu Mu!!

It would be alright if Yang Luosen won; perhaps he would still survive. However, if Yang Luosen lost, then he would definitely die!!

“Then, could the two honorable Nightmare Princes please summon their first soul pet to fight!” Blue Feather City’s Lin Huang swept his eyes over the two young Nightmare Palace experts and with a rather serious tone, spoke.

“Ning!” Chu Mu didn’t hesitate at all and decisively had the Ice Air Fairy lead the battle!

“Ling~~~~” The Ice Air Fairy hadn’t killed enough and, when presented with the opportunity to face even stronger opponents, it appeared to be extremely excited!

On the plaza battlefield still remained the remnants and tatters of the Ice Air Fairy’s terrifying ice type magic. Even next to Yang Luosen was the profound sword pit that had nailed Yang Fa’s corpse!!

The Luo Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen began to chant an incantation. His chanting wasn’t hasty or slow. He didn’t intentionally speed up, nor did he intentionally delay. As he summoned, one could clearly feel a wave of cold air diffusing in the surrounding air. Once it began diffusing, a few ice shards began to condense and drift about in the air...

A snowy white pattern gradually appeared in front of Luo Region's Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen. Ray after ray of ice beams began to blossom in the air...

Black Crystal Ice Fairy!!

Its whole body was snowy white and spotless like jade. It was pure and limpid, and sparkling and translucent. A head of snowy white hair waved in the air amidst the sweeping ice cold aura. The upper half of its body was a perfect humanoid sculpture, while the lower half was a collection of eminently restless chaotic black crystals. This caused the noble ice and snow creature born in the polar freezing ice to half-float in the air!

Black Crystal Ice Fairy: Elemental Kingdom – ice type-fairy species – high class commander rank

A sixth phase third stage Black Crystal Ice Fairy!!

It was identically from the Elemental Kingdom, was identically the ice type. It was also of the fairy species, but the Black Crystal Ice Fairy was situated at an entire rank higher than the Ice Air Fairy. Moreover, from its terrifying ice aura, one could see that this Black Crystal Ice Fairy wasn't of some average breed. Not only was its talent powerful, but it had also undergone sixth level soul crystal strengthening!!

Soul core and soul crystal training was extremely crucial. Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy, when at the sixth phase, could already perform such powerful ice type control. One aspect of this was the Ice Air

Fairy's rank and talent, while the other aspect came from Chu Mu's exceptionally strict method of training. When it came to soul cores and soul crystals, he definitely was not the least bit stingy. While on Prison Island, Chu Mu even killed a few extremely dangerous soul pets just to provide his soul pets with a delicious meal.

In one glance, he knew that Yang Luosen's Black Crystal Ice Fairy wasn't of ordinary quality. Most likely, just this one soul pet was enough to sweep through all of Gangluo City's young experts!

“This Luo Region Nightmare Prince is very terrifying...” the Chu Family disciples were instantly stunned by the Luo Region Nightmare Prince's soul pet. As long as one had a bit of soul pet knowledge, he or she would be able to see that Yang Luosen's Black Crystal Ice Fairy clearly surpassed Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy!

No sign of change occurred in Chu Mu's state of mind. His eyes were fixated on Yang Luosen's sixth phase third stage Black Crystal Ice Fairy and he quietly waited for the witness to announce the start of the battle...

“Fight, begin!!”

A dignified voice rang out, and the bundles of flame on the plaza battlefield violently burned. Compared to the previous pale white color, it had changed. This time, the flames appeared to be a slightly dark blue color!

“Ling~~~~”

“Hu~~~~~”

The two ice type soul pets simultaneously chanted ice type incantations while also simultaneously finishing their chants. Suddenly, two Ice Blade Storms that resembled enormous flying snakes emerged on the plaza battlefield. Under everyone’s shocked gazes, they collided on the plaza and, in the next instant, a cold icy storm burst forth in all directions!!!

Chapter 64: A Gorgeous Yet Intense Fight Of Existence

The Luo Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen also belonged to the group of people who didn't waste words once he entered a battle situation. Chu Mu could feel from the killing intent that blossomed from this fellow's eyes that this expression was not something those trash pampered and spoiled from childhood could manifest. Instead, it was something only experts who had truly experienced various forms of life and death could display!

Nightmare Palace's method of raising members was extremely cruel. Those who could truly step into the ranks of peak experts had all done so after hard work, numerous retrospections, drinking blood, eating flesh, and growing up amidst slaughter! The fact that the Luo Region Nightmare Prince's fame was able to cause such a great clamor definitely meant that he wasn't some normal person!

Terrifying frosted ice filled the air and danced about. Like a plethora of white ice knives, they turned the remaining tall pillars on the plaza battlefield into smithereens. The ice type control of the two great ice type soul pets was tyrannical to the max!

Those without adequate battle experience could only see the seventh level dazzling ice type techniques released by the two ice type soul pets.

Yet, those with more profound knowledge of battles felt waves of

shock, because inside these ice type techniques were multiple hidden killing intents! Normal people and soul pets would have been turned into pulps of meat by these attacks long ago!!

The superposition of ice type techniques would occasionally appear and occasionally dissipate. It was simply impossible to grasp the potency of these techniques!

Enormous frozen swords danced about chaotically in the sky. Under the control of the two ice type soul pets, sword after sword turned into shattered ice crystals in front of both Chu Mu and Yang Luosen.

From time to time, the oddly terrifyingly sharp Ice Spike and the sharp sword hidden in the dancing icy snow would appear in front of the audience's eyes. Then, while everyone's hearts was hanging in suspense, it would ingeniously be dissolved by the opponent!

The Ice crystals that transformed into fragments before the icy snow would quickly condense once more. Such repeated changes incessantly confused everyone's eyes. However, what everyone felt was not the chaotic yet gorgeous display in the air, but the waves of terrifying and imposing killing intent that rendered them trembling with fear!!

This was the most pure form of an ice type fight between two soul pets. The killing intent was like the icy cold snowy wind that violently danced about. This was the true strength of two young peak experts. It surpassed the soul pet control ability of everyone present in the same generation. Moreover, many of the older generation considered themselves to be inferior!

“Black Crystal!”

An awn of ice rose out of the Luo Region Nightmare Prince’s hands, and shattered the Ice Sword that Chu Mu’s Ice Air Fairy controlled. Then, he spoke to his soul pet, ordering it!

“Black Crystal! An even colder and even more terrifying freezing ice!

Black Crystal was similar to the Demon Fire Evil Flame on Mo Xie’s body, and could directly increase the might of a soul pet’s ice type technique!

Although the effects of Black Crystal didn’t have the ability to double the damage of fire type techniques like Demon Fire Evil Flame did, when the winner or loser of minute control of techniques couldn’t be decided, it became the crucial key to winning the fight!!

The revolving white colored crystals around the Black Crystal Ice Fairy’s body slowly subsided. Wearing a serene cold, a rather indigo green colored cold awn appeared.

The Black Crystal slowly revolved around the Black Crystal Ice Fairy. Suddenly, an even colder freezing aura wantonly engulfed Chu Mu and the Ice Air Fairy. In that instant, the battlefield in the center of the plaza was completely frozen over!!

Yang Luosen chanted an incantation again. The Black Crystal Ice Fairy released an even more powerful Black Crystal, in addition to using Ice Attachment for the Black Crystal Ice Fairy!

After Yang Luosen used Ice Attachment, the number of black crystals around the Black Crystal Fairy grew increasingly many. Under this effect, any ice type technique used by the Black Crystal Ice Fairy would double in strength!

“Black Crystal Meteor Peak!!!”

The Black Crystal Ice Fairy immediately chanted an incantation!

A vacuous black crystal whirlpool suddenly appeared in the air above the plaza battlefield. As the Black Crystal Ice Fairy let out a long chant, a strange energy suddenly pressed downwards, smashing the ice crystals on the ground into fragments!!

“Beng~~~~~”

A delayed sound suddenly exploded out from within the center of the battlefield!

In the next moment, people finally discovered an upside down, mountain-like icicle that protruded out of the middle of the battlefield. It stood loftily in the field of everyone’s view, and none of them could see the top of it!!!

“Beng!!!!”

Another loud sound. This upside down mountain like icicle that seemed to have fallen powerfully suddenly exploded, transforming into tens of millions of fragments that shot in all directions!!

“Ding Ding!!! Ding Ding Ding!!!!!!”

The battlefield’s length and width was three hundred meters and one hundred and fifty meters respectively. It was also enclosed by a surrounding dense defensive net. However, the terrifying ice type technique that shot black crystals violently struck the defensive net and ripped right through it, creating holes everywhere!

In this moment, everyone sucked in a breath of air. They could clearly see that the waves of people encircling the battlefield had all retreated when the technique was released. A huge ring of empty floor appeared in the area that was near the defensive net!

The spectators who previously had been next to the defensive net inhaled a breath of air!

Among the spectators were a few whom hadn’t cultivated soul power. If such sharp objects were to pierce through the defensive net and strike their bodies, they would definitely be instantly penetrated and die!

Even those further away from the battlefield could feel the terror of this technique. What about Chu Mu who stood at the centermost of this technique then?! This question surfaced in

everyone's minds!

Countless smithereens at the center of the battlefield still filled the air with the particles of black crystal that had violently risen. The air was hazy, and it was impossible to clearly see the state of battle.

However, as the pervading particles of black crystal disappeared, people could see a sturdy, tall, green colored silhouette that gradually came to clarity in the center of the battlefield.

This tall figure was as straight as a pine, and its two feet were dug into the ground. Its arms hung down to its toes, and the feeling it gave was like a small giant with long arms!!

“It's a Devil Tree Battle Soldier-Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier!!”

Everyone was stunned. They didn't expect Chu Mu to switch out soul pets in such a short period of time.

The extremely strong in defense Demon Wood had toughness comparable to rattan wood. Slowly, it undid itself and it returned to the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body. As for Chu Mu, who was being protected by the Demon Wood, he got up and nimbly jumped onto the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's lofty back. Clearly, under the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's protection, he hadn't suffered any damage!

“Chong Mei – Ice Armor!”

Chu Mu’s two black pupils instantly dyed a snowy white color, unexpectedly turning incomparably distant and indistinct!

Ice Armor adhered by the Ice Air Fairy was already on Chu Mu’s body. Thus, his soul technique was naturally used for the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, adding an ice type defense onto its body!

“Demon Wood Piercing Drill!”

“O!!!!” the Devil Tree Battle Soldier immediately let out a roar, and its long arms that weren’t equipped with Ice Armor abruptly swung in front. Suddenly, row after row of eminently solid Demon Wood astonishingly appeared and floated in the air in front of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier!!

“O!!!!!” the Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out another angry voice and immediately, ten or so exceptionally sharp Demon Wood shot towards the Black Crystal Ice Fairy!

The Black Crystal Ice Fairy’s reaction wasn’t slow. It didn’t even have to chant an incantation; it waved its arms and surprisingly, a few Ice Walls came up, appearing in a line in front of it. The Demon Wood flying at it shot into these Ice Walls!

The majority of Plant Kingdom techniques didn’t require stored energy or an incantation to prepare. Therefore, one of the best traits was that it could simultaneously release multiple techniques!

As such, as numerous Demon Wood were flying through the air, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's second technique had already used the roots in its feet that were dug in the ground!!

“Demon Wood Mad Python!”

Two enormous python-like Demon Wood suddenly drilled into the ground, one on the left one, and one the right!

“Beng!!!! Beng!!!”

A few of the large pillars that hadn't collapsed obstructed the two Demon Wood Mad Pythons. After smashing them apart, the two Mad Pythons fiercely charged at the Black Crystal Ice Fairy!!

“Double release!”

In the previous fight, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier hadn't used a dual technique, but that could only mean that the opponent was too weak, and that the Devil Tree Battle Soldier didn't have a need to use it.

“Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier previously didn't have to use its full strength. A Plant Kingdom facing an ice type soul pet; it should have a slight advantage!” Chu Xing had completely been attracted by the gripping and impelling marvel of this fight. Even while he was speaking, his eyes never left the battlefield.

“Double release. There are many sixth phase commander ranks that cannot even do this.” Chu Lang nodded his head.

The difference between a true peak expert and their Gangluo City experts was clearly embodied here!

Many soul pet trainers had plant soul pets with normal aptitudes, so it was even less possible that they could use these abilities. Even if the soul pet’s rank, phase, and stage was higher, it wasn’t strange for it to be instantly killed.

As for true experts, they would have already drilled their soul pets to obtain such powerful abilities at an earlier time!

However, just after Chu Lang finished speaking, his eyes suddenly grew a bit wider, because he distinctly heard Chu Mu chant a third technique.

“Demon Wood Chains!!”

The dual release already made a plethora people exceptionally shocked. Yet, Chu Mu’s Devil Tree Battle Soldier unexpectedly released three techniques at the same time, and they were all high ranking plant type soul pet skills!

Demon Wood Piercing Drill! Demon Wood Mad Python! Demon Wood Chains!!

The sharp Demon Wood penetrated the ice wall!

The Demon Wood Mad Python violently smashed into the Black Crystal Ice Fairy's thick body!

Finally, the four Demon Wood Chains mysteriously shot out from under the Black Crystal Ice Fairy's body and, after criss-crossing a few times, abruptly pulled tight. Unexpectedly, they rigidly hauled the Black Crystal Ice Fairy, which had lost its balance from the Demon Wood Mad Python, from the air to the ground!

“Beng!!!!!!!!!”

Being completely bundled by four Demon Wood Chains, the Black Crystal Ice Fairy fiercely smashed into the depths of the ground. Furthermore, it was immediately dragged along the ground, causing layer after layer of soil to turn over and burst apart!!

Yang Luosen slightly lost his focus. He completely did not expect Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier to be able to reach the realm of being able to simultaneously release three techniques!

The Prison Island King, if he didn't have outstanding strength, how would he be able to survive on the exceptionally dangerous Prison Island?!

When he entered that jungle in the depths of Prison Island, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier which had been continuously fighting against plant type soul pets could already use double release.

Once he used the Demon Wood's Heart and the sixth level soul crystal to strengthen its attribute, this, coupled with Devil Tree Battle Soldier evolving to the sixth phase, allowed the Devil Tree Battle Soldier to reach a level where it could simultaneously release three techniques!!

Chapter 65: Monarch White Nightmare, Disregarding Blue Flames!

The roots of the wood type soul pet buried into the ground. If the other soul pet were to be dragged underground by the wood type soul pet and didn't have enough time to adopt measures, then it would definitely be pierced thousands of times!!

“Beng!!! Beng!!! Beng!!!!!!!”

Wave after wave of noises resonated out from underneath the battlefield. The surface of the ground had been pierced through, and one was able to clearly see sharp, thick Demon Woods stick out. Evidently, underneath the surface of the ground, numerous Demon Wood roots were launching piercing attacks!!

The Black Crystal Ice Fairy's defense was extremely high, and it had perhaps even reached the late seventh level. A normal attack would find it hard to leave a wound, but in this circumstance, where it was being pierced by over fifty Demon Wood roots, even if its defence was even higher, it would eventually be shattered!!

If it were someone else, if his or her soul pet was dragged out of sight and attacked, then he or she would have already panicked. However, the Luo Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen was still able to his maintain calm, and he chanted an incantation!

“Mental Sword!”

An awn of light suddenly shot out of Yang Luosen's eyes; two incomparably strange mental swords astonishingly materialized from these lights. Almost instantaneously, they shot towards the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's head!!

The mental swords were extremely fast, and Chu Mu didn't have enough time to react.

“O!!!!” After suffering from the sword's mental attack, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out a roar, and its body began to clearly tremble...

Mental Swords didn't do extensive damage to the soul pet's soul and mind. Its true use was to momentarily cause pain to the soul pet and make it lose its focus from this pain!

“Beng~~~~~”

As the Devil Tree Battle Soldier momentarily stopped, the surface of the plaza battlefield loudly disintegrated. Subsequently, a violent Ice Blade Storm swept up!!

“Shua shua shua shua!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

The moment the Ice Blade Storm swept up, the Demon Wood roots were torn into pieces, and they chaotically fluttered about!!

After seeing this scene, everyone was further shocked. Despite being dragged underground, the Black Crystal Ice Fairy was still

able to free itself!!

The Ice Blade Storm didn't last too long. Once the Black Crystal Ice Fairy used this technique and freed itself from the Demon Wood Chains that dragged it underground, it once more began floating above the ground!

The Black Crystal Ice Fairy's defense had probably reached the late seventh stage. However, after being violently pierced by over 50 roots, its thick, Ice Armored body had clearly been penetrated in many areas. If it were a soul pet from any other world, it definitely would have died due to its internal organs being penetrated!

Luo Region's Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen chanted another incantation, and extremely decisively recalled the Black Crystal Ice Fairy that was heavily wounded by the Devil Tree Battle Soldier...

“Huhuhu~~~~”

A violent flicker happened to the flames in the center as Yang Luosen was chanting his summoning incantation, and the flames slowly were dyed a deep blue color!

Deep blue colored flames were being held in his two hands and, after Yang Luosen threw them out, two balls of Devil Fire began interweaving ten meters in front of him. Suddenly, a magnificent yet serene and cold Devil Fire Lotus blossomed forth!

“Huhuhu!!!!!!”

The deep blue colored Devil Fire burst forth in front of everyone's shocked gazes. The fire ascended into the air and burned furiously!

In the center of the deep blue colored violent Devil Fire that unceasingly flickered appeared a figure in an even darker shade of color. Suddenly, a wave of cold Devil Fire aura rushed forth and diffused in all four directions!!

As a Nightmare Palace member, one needed to sign a soul pact with a Nightmare! The Luo Region Nightmare Prince, therefore, had a Nightmare of his own!

A fifth phase eighth stage Blue Nightmare!! It was also a high class commander rank, but the Blue Nightmare's fighting strength was definitely above the Black Crystal Ice Fairy's!

Once the terrifying soul Devil Fire of the Blue Nightmare swept up, the tens of thousands of people in the plaza couldn't help but inhale a breath of air!

In Gangluo City, as long as one had a sixth phase commander rank soul pet, he or she would be considered an expert. However, the two soul pets the young man Yang Luosen had just summoned were both high class commander ranks. Moreover, they were of excellent quality. Although it was only at the fifth phase eighth stage, it was still enough to instill fear in the hearts of a few sixth phase commander ranks!

“Dark type and fire type against wood type. Absolute advantage!”

“Everything points to disaster for Chu Mu’s Devil Tree Battle Soldier...”

Plant type soul pets had a clear advantage in battle against the majority of soul pets. However, their biggest weakness was their fear of fire type techniques!

The Blue Nightmare’s Devil Fire didn’t directly increase the burning damage of fire type techniques, but instead gave them the terrifying ability to burn souls!!

Nightmares were Chaos World soul pets, and they possessed control over fire abilities not inferior to pure fire element soul pets. They further had the strange, demonic spirit-like techniques of Beast World soul pets. Nonetheless, the most terrifying aspect of Nightmares was their powerful control over darkness that Other World dark types had!

Such a soul pet with abnormal talent, amongst those of the same rank, was naturally entirely worthy of being a king!!

“Nie!!!!!!!!!!”

Devil Flames surged forth, and a devil’s cry rang out!!

The powerful and tyrannic appearance of the Blue Nightmare was unrestrained!!

“Flame Wave!!”

Yang Luosen issued an order, and the Blue Nightmare’s devil claws violently raised into the air. Instantly, a wave of Devil Fire taller than ten meters rushed towards the Devil Tree Battle Soldier!!

The blue Devil Fire’s temperature was extremely low, and it caused others to feel a bone-piercing chill. However, it still had the same burning effect of a normal fire. Coupled with its terrifying ability to burn souls, it was definitely much more terrifying than a normal fire by a few times!

“Hu hu hu hu~~~~~”

With the onslaught of the Devil Fire, Chu Mu could only order his Devil Tree Battle Soldier to construct a root net to obstruct the Devil Fire attack...

However, while the root net could resist a myriad of techniques with extreme destructive power, under the terrifying onslaught of the Devil Fire, it wouldn’t be of any use!

The Devil Fire waves devoured all the roots, which quickly turned into ashes. The thick defensive skin of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier would be very difficult to be of any clear use under the attack of the Devil Fire!

“Hu hu hu!!!” finally, the Devil Fire rushed over, and quickly devoured Chu Mu and the Devil Tree Battle Soldier!!

The Ice Armor on the outer layer of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier was quickly melted off, and after feeling both its soul and flesh both being roasted, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out a painful cry!

Standing in the terrifying blue colored Devil Fire, Chu Mu’s body didn’t move in the slightest. In an extreme state of calm, he chanted an incantation...

“What is Chu Mu doing? Don’t tell me that he wants to recall his Devil Tree Battle Soldier?”

Seeing Chu Mu’s actions, Chu Ming was stunned!! The Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s body was still being burned by the blue Devil Fire. If it were recalled, then the unextinguished Devil Fire would burn Chu Mu’s soul. Afterward, it would burn Chu Mu’s body from the inside out!!

“Chu Mu, don’t recall your soul pet!!”

Chu Tianheng was aware of this, and he immediately used soul remembrance to condense a voice and shouted towards Chu Mu!!

Chu Mu heard Chu Tianheng’s nervous warning, but he didn’t stop his incantation. He continued to recall the Devil Tree Battle Soldier into his soul pet space!

“It’s over... it’s over...” Chu Xing and the others frightenedly stared at the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, whose body was still wearing Devil Fire as it returned to the soul pet space. They could no longer continue watching!

“Haha, he’s dead! He’s dead!!” Underneath the stage, Yang Luobin saw that Chu Mu unexpectedly made a rudimentary and fatal mistake as he immediately began to howl with laughter!

After knowing that Chu Mu had become a Prison Island King, the fear in Yang Luobin’s heart had reached its peak. He was deeply afraid that Chu Mu would come to kill him. Yet, as long as Chu Mu died, it didn’t matter if the family had offended Nightmare Palace, his older step-brother of the same father but different mother, Yang Luosen, would definitely protect his life!

Yang Luobin’s laugh lasted a long time. His eyes stared at Chu Mu, wanting to see this fellow’s miserable state. He wanted to see Chu Mu being roasted alive by the Devil Fire until death...

The deep, blue colored Devil Fire flickered around Chu Mu’s surroundings, and his two eyes were full of marks of a few deep blue colored flames. The expression on his face was unperturbed and indifferent. He simply didn’t reveal a pained expression from the Devil Fire burning...

The Devil Fire continued to burn, but as the Devil Fire around Chu Mu’s body began to sway, people began to gradually discover that Devil Fire unexpectedly hadn’t burned Chu Mu’s body.

Faintly, they found that a strange, pale white Devil Fire had indistinctly outlined Chu Mu's body!!

“Why is he unscathed after recalling the Devil Tree Battle Soldier that was wearing Devil Fire?”

“That's right. It seems that he didn't use any technique. Why didn't the Devil Fire cause any burning damage to him?!”

Loftily standing tall within the Devil Fire, Chu Mu who didn't use any soul technique simply didn't feel any harm from the Devil Fire. Moreover, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier he had recalled into the frail soul pet space was still unscathed. This weird phenomenon caused everyone to be suspicious...

“A pale white colored fire. What is that white colored thing keeping away the blue colored Devil Fire?!”

Finally, someone discovered the pale white Devil Fire burning on Chu Mu's body. Instantly, discussion began to spring up everywhere!

The majority of people in Gangluo City only knew of Cyan Nightmares and Blue Nightmares. They had never heard of an evil creature with white colored Devil Fire!

Seeing Chu Mu standing tall within the Devil Fire, the expression of Yang Luobin, who had just been laughing heartily, froze. Currently, Chu Mu completely gave others a feeling of endless evil.

Such evil gave others a fear that made them tremble!!

White colored Devil Fire. Chu Mu's strength had already surpassed the knowledge of Chu Xing and the others. They could only questioningly turn their gazes towards Chu Tianheng, attempting to obtain an explanation from the more knowledgeable Chu Tianheng.

Yet, Chu Tianheng's expression was lifeless, because the silently burning white colored Devil Fire on Chu Mu's body happened to be one of the Nightmare Palace's most terrifying soul pets – the White Nightmare!!

The White Nightmare was an extremely terrifying monarch rank. How many people in the entire Luo Region even had a monarch rank soul pet?

The pale white Devil Fire without any temperature serenely burned on Chu Mu's body. However, the shock it brought Chu Ming was like a raging wave of fire that fiercely surged!!

Chu Ming's experience was much richer than Chu Tianheng's, and he had an extent of understanding towards the Nightmare Palace's cultivating method of feeding soul power to soul pets.

In the past, Chu Ming had heard a rumor that Nightmare Palace had used 1000 soul pet trainers as soul pet food to breed a White Nightmare. At that time, his blood had run cold.

Yet, what made his soul feel even more shocked was that his own grandson, Chu Mu, had unexpectedly signed a soul contract with the most nefarious soul pet in this world!

Constantly being pursued by this monarch rank devil until death!

Day and night having to bear the torture of the soul Devil Fire!!!

In these four years, how did the Chu Mu, who lost a soul and signed a soul pact with a White Nightmare, survive?!!

Chapter 66: Should I Laugh Or Cry? The Mo Ye's Turn To Fight!

The moment an identical species, the Nightmare, appeared, the White Nightmare in Chu Mu's body would become restless!!

Chu Mu's pupil had already gradually turned from a black color to white. Two balls of incomparably astonishing pale white Devil Fire had shockingly been printed in his pupils. His entire being seemed eminently devilish!!

The Luo Region Nightmare Prince was stunned, and he stared at Chu Mu in horror. Suddenly, Yang Luosen realized something!!

“Get back!”

Presently, Yang Luosen was clearly letting out a rather flustered expression. He chanted an incantation and, under everyone's questioning gazes, forcibly recalled the Blue Nightmare which had held the advantage back to its soul pet space!

“Big brother, what are you doing? Why did you recall your Blue Nightmare for no reason? Aren't you going to directly burn him to death? Big brother... big brother, quickly attack...” puzzledly yelled Yang Luobin from under the stage.

The expression of the Luo Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen had already slightly changed. Hearing Yang Luobin, this stupid fellow, persistently talk nonsense in his ear, in a fit of anger, he

said: “Shut up. Do you want my Blue Nightmare to become food?!”

The aura of the Blue Nightmare gradually faded, and the white colored Devil Fire on Chu Mu’s body also slowly dissipated. The white torched pupil returned back to its normal deep black color!

Chu Mu swept his gaze over Yang Luobin who had sunk extremely low and sneered. His eyes fell on the Luo Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen’s body, and he said: “Your reaction was very quick.”

The Luo Region Nightmare Prince presently didn’t have the calmness of earlier. He watched the last sliver of Devil Fire disappear back into Chu Mu’s body and, after a while, he finally said: “I originally thought that the name ‘devouring soul White Nightmare’ was exaggerated. Yet, I didn’t expect your body to truly harbor such a terrifying thing!”

This place was the Luo Region and, in the end, it had a bit of a distance from the Nightmare City. Regarding Chu Mu and Tian Ji’s battle, an extremely detailed version had not been spread here. As for what kind of powerful soul pets the Prison Island King had, no one had a very profound understanding.

As for the matter of the White Nightmare, practically no one had obtained that information. Only the Luo Region Nightmare Prince, who was also a Nightmare Palace member more or less, received this bit of information before finding Chu Mu to fight.

Perhaps it was fortunate that the Luo Region Nightmare Prince

had found out this information. Otherwise, just now, his Blue Nightmare really could have become the White Nightmare's food.

“Even if you have a White Nightmare, you currently cannot summon it. Moreover, your White Nightmare is fundamentally a freak. You feeding this dangerous thing is simply playing with fire***.” said the Luo Region Nightmare Prince, Yang Luosen.

Chu Mu didn't care. He had already overcome the most difficult period. Currently, he was a seventh remembrance spirit teacher. As long as he could reach the spirit master level and summon the White Nightmare, his battle strength would substantially increase!

Yang Luosen sucked in a deep breath of air and realized that the reason the man in front of him was able to become the Prison Island King was definitely not because of luck. He no longer dared to have any contemptuous thoughts, and he first chanted an incantation, summoning his third soul pet.

A golden pattern slowly engraved itself under Yang Luosen's feet, and it formed a gorgeous golden totem!!

“Ao Hu!!!! Ao Hu!!!!!!”

A furious roar suddenly rang out, causing a wave of distinct shaking to sweep through the plaza arena!

A golden awn of light shot out in four directions. It was dazzling

and magnificent, unexpectedly even shrouding the blazing sun's raging flames!

“Ao Hu!!! Ao Hu!!!!”

The roars rang out again and, in the middle of the golden radiance, one could see a golden colored lion-like creature proudly stand tall. As its roars rang out, a wave of beast aura violently discharged!!!

Its ostentatious fur was like long golden barbed swords. Its dense and coarse mane fluttered in the wind, and it had a tall and straight body full of arrogance. It had four robust legs filled with destructive power, in addition to a long, photoelectric tail!

Radiance Lion!

Beast World – beast type – lion species – Radiance Lion subspecies – high class commander rank!

A wild aura, an imposing figure. Purely from its outer appearance, it gave others a formidable grandeur that was hard to prevail over!!

Another high class commander rank soul pet had appeared; moreover, it had reached a terrifying sixth phase fourth stage. The Luo Region Nightmare Prince's soul pet's powerful strength had shocked everyone once again!

Ostentatiously domineering and wildly aggressive. These two phrases were exceptionally reflective of this high class commander rank Radiance Lion. Once the soul pet appeared, the Luo Region Nightmare Prince, Yang Luosen, was clearly rather confident. Obviously, this sixth phase fourth stage Radiance Lion was this fellow's true main fighting pet!

Seeing the Radiance Lion appear, Chu Mu's eyebrows creased.

The Radiance Lion was an extremely pure beast type soul pet, but it possessed a bit of the light attribute!

Chu Mu's Night Thunder Dream Beast had currently reached the sixth phase first stage. It was enough to face up against it, but the strengthened dark attribute happened to be countered by the Radiance Lion!

The Night Thunder Dream Beast's demon type techniques were used through the dark type, and they primarily restricted the opponent. If these restriction techniques were to be suppressed, then the Night Thunder Dream Beast would only have its speed left. However, purely relying on speed without attacks simply wouldn't defeat the Radiance Lion. In order to face the Radiance Lion, it probably would be hard for the Night Thunder Dream Beast to be of evident use!

“What? You don't have a suitable soul pet?” a smile rose on the Luo Region Nightmare Prince's face, but he didn't hastily attack Chu Mu.

“Chu Mu still has a fifth phase ninth stage Night Thunder Dream beast, but it happens to be countered by the Radiance Lion...”

Quickly, Chu Xing and the others realized why Chu Mu creased his eyebrows...

“Chu Mu lost a soul and two of his soul pet spaces were deposed. Moreover, he currently only has five soul pets. Aside from the strange Six Tailed Demon Fox that hasn't fought, there only remains the Night Thunder Dream Beast and the fifth phase Mo Ye... it seems that Chu Mu has no choice but to make the Six Tailed Demon Fox with hidden strength fight first...” said Chu Xing.

“However, how can that Six Tailed Demon Fox defeat that sixth phase fourth stage Radiance Lion? Furthermore, from one glance, you should be able to tell that the Radiance Lion has undergone expensive soul crystal and other soul item strengthening. Perhaps it possesses a few terrifying abilities.” said Chu Ying.

As the Chu Family disciples were anxious for Chu Mu, the Chu Mu's standing figure on the battlefield slowly chanted an incantation...

“He still wants to summon the Night Thunder Dream Beast...” Chu Ying immediately saw that Chu Mu had released a black colored pattern...

Nonetheless, when Chu Ying discovered the soul pet that gradually emerged from the black colored pattern, her voice grew softer and softer. Slowly, she revealed an astonished expression!!

Numerous people had heard that Chu Mu had a fifth phase ninth stage Night Thunder Dream Beast, so when he chanted the incantation to summon a soul pet, they all believed that Chu Mu would probably summon the Night Thunder Dream beast. Even if it weren't the Radiance Lion's opponent, it would exhaust the Radiance Lion a bit.

However, what no one expected was that what Chu Mu had summoned this time fundamentally wasn't a Night Thunder Dream Beast. Unexpectedly, it was a war beast Mo Ye, whose figure hadn't even reached two meters and was covered in ink colored armor!!

A fifth phase first stage war beast Mo Ye!!

People originally believed that the Prison Island King, whose reputation had spread far and wide, would summon a third soul pet that would shock everyone. Nevertheless, Chu Mu had ultimately summoned a fifth phase first stage Mo Ye.

The war beast Mo Ye's rank was lower than the Radiance Lion by a class, and its phase and stage was different by a phase and three stages. It was still a question if the war beast Mo Ye could even resist one of the Radiance Lion's attacks!!

“This... this... did Chu Mu summon a [wrong] soul pet? Why did he summon the fifth phase first stage Mo Ye...” stunned, Chu Xing looked at the Mo Ye that Chu Mu had trained most often and, for a moment, didn't know how to assess it.

“This Mo Ye’s condition of growth is very average, and it isn’t like a soul pet with abnormal talent. Furthermore, it differs by one phase and three stages from the Radiance Lion. Is there even a need to fight...”

The fifth phase first stage Zhan Ye appearing in such a climatic battle immediately caused the entire scene to seem a bit weird. Or, in other words, one didn’t know whether to laugh or cry.

Everyone here wanted to see a shaking to the core fight between the strongest of the younger generation. However, Chu Mu’s summon this time had immediately made the entire atmosphere of the fight sink.

Anyone could see that Chu Mu’s summon this time was probably to protect the Night Thunder Dream Beast by randomly using a soul pet as a bedcover. Yet, even using a bedcover as an explanation was a bit farfetched. After all, it was still a question as to whether that war beast Mo Ye, whose physical body wasn’t extremely good, could even resist one of the Radiance Lion’s powerful attacks!

At this moment, a smile finally rose on Yang Luobin’s face, which had been sullen for a long time. When he saw that Chu Mu already had no soul pets left to summon, in this regard, Chu Mu would definitely lose!

However, what Yang Luobin felt a bit weird was that he sensed that the constitution of the Mo Ye that Chu Mu summoned was

somewhat familiar...

“Luobin, why does it seem like I’ve seen that Mo Ye before?” Yang Mantian condensed his soul remembrance into a voice and spoke to Yang Luobin.

“Yes, I also have that feeling...: Yang Luobin nodded his head. He started at the Mo Ye that looked like it was draped in an ink colored beast’s armor...

Suddenly, Yang Luobin felt that Mo Ye’s stare. Those eyes caused Yang Luobin to feel extreme familiarity!!

“This... this Mo Ye... could it be that this Mo Ye is...” Yang Luobin was a bit stunned. Although its physical appearance had further matured, Yang Luobin was still able to recognize that this was the Mo Ye with a deficient beast type talent that he had forsaken a year earlier!!

“Hahaha, hahahaha~~~” Suddenly, Yang Luobin began to laugh loudly. His laugh was so sudden and abrupt!

“Chu Mu, you’re truly going to make me laugh to death. Your Mo Ye was discarded as trash by me a year ago. I didn’t think that you would pick it back up and treat it as a piece of treasure, moreover summon it at this time. Luckily, you are this so called Prison Island King, and a Nightmare Palace Nightmare Prince. There’s no one more stupid than you for choosing this Mo Ye as your soul pet!” seizing the opportunity, Yang Luobin condensed soul remembrance into a voice and began to unrestrainedly mock Chu

Mu.

Yang Luobin's words caused everyone to feel a wave of shock. They didn't expect Chu Mu's fifth phase first stage Mo Ye to unexpectedly be a forsaken pet...

Forsaken pet. The majority of them were washed up soul pets, and their value was extremely low. When capturing these soul pets, the most unlucky thing to happen was to capture a forsaken soul pet that was discarded because a clear inferiority had appeared in its late stage development talent!

Chapter 67: Continuous Revival, The Undying Zhan Ye (1)

Chu Mu could understand Zhan Ye's mood. Presently, his gaze had fallen on Yang Luobin, and after seeing this fellow loudly laugh like a clown, a smile rose on his face.

Chu Mu was very surprised. He didn't expect Zhan Ye to be a forsaken soul pet of Yang Luobin...

“Zhan Ye, it seems that the spotlight still belongs to you today. Let that fellow know how the stupidest thing he did was to forsake you!” laughed Chu Mu.

He began to chant an incantation. In the past, Chu Mu never rashly used demanding soul power soul techniques, but currently, Chu Mu didn't preserve any of his soul power...

As the incantation was uttered, Chu Mu's two eyes were gradually obscured by a layer of bloody fog. This captivating red was extremely abstruse, and it gave others a demonic feeling when they looked at him!

Blood colored demon pupils!!

This was the Yang Family's ultimate technique!!

After Chu Mu used the technique, it immediately made the

eyeballs from everyone in the Yang Family almost fall out!!

The most pure and captivating red color. Chu Mu's Violent Blood Pupil was shockingly the most valuable Violent Blood Pupil, with the highest completeness level in the Yang Family!!

As the color of Chu Mu's two pupils changed, the abstruse Mo Ye's ink colored eye also changed, and it was gradually replaced by a red color filled with an ominous glint!!

The Yang Family Head Yang Kuo's face was already completely black. Even he, the family head, didn't dare to learn the technique, Violent Blood Pupil, that unexpectedly fell into Chu Mu's hands. It had now been learned by the Chu Family and moreover, was used in front of his face...

The price of the complete Violent Blood Pupil was nearly ten million gold coins. Yang Kuo could be sure that even Yang Luosen, the strongest member of the Yang Shi Family, would not even be able to obtain and learn this Violent Blood Pupil soul technique that allowed one to raise four stages in strength at the initial stage!

Hou!!!!!!!”

Zhan Ye abruptly let out a roar, and a layer of fiendish and bloody light was astonishingly attached to his body. It was as if a blood armor had melded into his ink colored armor, causing Zhan Ye's aura to suddenly increase by leaps and bounds!!

Fifth phase sixth stage!!

Under Violent Blood Pupil's effects, Zhan Ye shockingly rose five stages, reaching the fifth phase sixth stage!!

When increasing a beast type soul pet's strength, Violent Blood Pupil's effects were primarily based on a soul pet trainer's soul remembrance and technique quality. However, if a soul pet itself was full of surging beast blood from enormous resentment, then Violent Blood Pupils' effect would still increase a bit more!!

Chu Mu's initial stage Violent Blood Pupil's effect originally could only increase a soul pet's strength by four stages. However, in Zhan Ye's heart, there burned a terrifying fire of war, and it essentially caused Zhan Ye's strength to rise by a stage, making it reach the fifth phase sixth stage!!

Seeing Chu Mu use Violent Blood Pupil on the fifth phase first stage Mo Ye's body, Yang Luosen was also stunned. He did not understand Chu Mu's action at all.

Yang Luosen knew that Chu Mu still had a formidable soul pet. If he were to use Violent Blood Pupil on that soul pet, then its fighting strength would definitely increase by a huge margin. However, Chu Mu instead performed it on the fifth phase first stage Mo Ye's body. Even if it grew to the fifth phase sixth stage, there was still a definite gap with his sixth phase fourth stage Radiance Lion!

“Shattering Claw!!”

Yang Luosen ordered his soul pet to immediately attack the Mo Ye!

The Radiance Lion abruptly leapt forward. The instant it began moving, it unexpectedly crushed the earth’s surface as it charged as fast as lightning towards Zhan Ye, who was under the Violent Blood Pupil’s effect!!

Shattering Claw!!!

The Radiance Lion’s Shattering Claw was much more terrifying than Zhan Ye’s attack. The powerful strength suddenly smashed Zhan Ye’s location into pieces!!

The Violent Blood Pupil clearly affected Zhan Ye. His speed was distinctly faster. When the Radiance Lion struck out with its tyrannic shattering attack, Zhan Ye quickly jumped away!

“Beng!!!!!!”

However, the Radiance Lion’s speed was above Zhan Ye’s. The moment Zhan Ye dodged the attack, the Radiance Lion’s follow up technique was impressively performed. A second Shattering Claw fiercely fell towards Zhan Ye’s position!

Zhan Ye didn’t have enough time to jump away, and he was immediately struck by the shattering force. The ink armor on the

side of its shoulder revealed clear indications of being smashed!

“Beng!!!”

After the second Shattering Claw finished, the Radiance Lion’s continuous attacks still didn’t stop. Its terrifying lion’s claws flickered with a cold light, and it powerfully bombarded Zhan Ye’s body!!

The attack with full force knocked Zhan Ye flying. A large portion of the ink colored armor on Zhan Ye’s body was shattered even more, and it landed heavily under a pillar over ten meters away!

“Ao Hu!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

The Radiance Lion’s force was simply unstoppable and after it easily knocked Zhan Ye away, it didn’t continue chasing. Instead, it immediately used the opportunity to charge towards Chu Mu!

Facing such a ferocious and violent lion’s pursuit, Chu Mu nevertheless remained like a statue and stood still. He didn’t even chant an incantation!

Zhan Ye’s vitality was incomparably tenacious. Perhaps the Radiance Lion’s consecutive attacks could have instantly killed a normal fifth phase sixth stage commander rank soul pet, but it definitely could not kill Zhan Ye!

As expected, just as the Radiance Lion approached Chu Mu, a cross between an ink and blood colored figure appeared and fiercely slammed into the Radiance Lion's body!

The Radiance Lion's body immediately went askew, and it was knocked into an adjacent half-demolished pillar by the ink colored armor figure. Suddenly, a loud explosion rang out, causing the pillar to shatter and collapse!!

“Ao!!!!!!” the Radiance Lion let out an indignant roar, and its golden body suddenly let out a dazzling radiance!

Light Burn!

The radiance discharged by the Radiance Lion possessed a visible burning effect. The ink armor wrapped around Zhan Ye's body immediately displayed marks of being burned. It caused the dark attribute ink armor to unexpectedly melt apart!

“Hou!!!!!!” For Zhan Ye, the moment a fight started, its willpower when in pain definitely did surpass the scope of normal soul pets. Even after its armor had been burnt to the flesh, Zhan Ye still tenaciously firmly bit the Radiance Lion's neck. Despite it being very hard for its teeth to penetrate the Radiance Lion's skin, it wouldn't let go!

“Ink Armor Spike!”

Seeing Zhan Ye tightly biting onto the Radiance Lion's neck, Chu

Mu immediately issued a soul remembrance order to Zhan Ye!

A dark light immediately flickered on Zhan Ye's body. From the already broken battle armor abruptly appeared protruding ink armor spikes that were like bone spikes!

“Pu pu pu!!!!!!”

Ink Armor Spikes were the sharpest offensive weapon of a Mo Ye. At such a close distance, the Radiance Lion simply could not dodge, and a few shallow bloody holes were poked into its body. Slivers of blood began to flow out of these bloody holes!

Yang Luosen creased his eyebrows. Violent Blood Pupil's effects could make a soul pet virtually lose its sense of pain. This Mo Ye had already suffered large wounds, yet its fighting strength hadn't decreased at all. Instead, it was even more bold and fierce!

“Trample!”

Yang Luosen let out an order!

The Radiance Lion suddenly lifted up its front limbs brimming with power and, after letting out a wild roar, fiercely trampled onto the ground!!

“Beng~~~~~”

The moment it trampled, a wave of enormous energy exploded outwards from the Radiance Lion. The ten meter in perimeter battlefield immediately split, and it deeply caved in!!!

The instant the energy swept through, Zhan Ye, who was biting the Radiance Lion's body, was essentially knocked flying. The exterior of the ink armor on its body displayed even more intensive cracks!!

“Ao Hu!!!!!!”

The Radiance Lion's attacks didn't stop. Before the energy from Trample had completely dissipated, it abruptly charged towards Zhang Ye, who had been knocked flying. Unexpectedly, even prior to Zhan Ye landing on the ground, it once more delivered a fatal strike!!

Light Burn Shattering Claw!!!!

A dazzling radiance condensed on the Radiance Lion's claws. It suddenly leapt up, and its golden body descended and flitted past Zhan Ye's location. Its claws frighteningly struck Zhan Ye's body!!

“Beng!!!!”

Zhan Ye was knocked flying once again. Its firm ink armor shattered in mid air, and pieces of himself mixed with fresh red blood fell onto the ground!

“The difference is too large. Even with Violent Blood Pupil, it’s to no avail.”

“Chu Mu has to switch soul pets. Otherwise, that Mo Ye will be killed.”

The difference in strength was seen in everyone’s eyes. Although the Mo Ye had the powerful life force of a bug type, it would still be killed by the eminently powerful Radiance Lion!

“Kill it!”

The Luo Region Nightmare Prince wasn’t a compassionate and lenient person. He wouldn’t give up this opportunity to heavily damage Chu Mu’s soul, and he instantly ordered his Radiance Lion to deliver a fatal strike to the Mo Ye!

“Beng!!!!!!”

In the plaza battlefield, there were another two twenty meter tall pillars that were shattered to pieces by the Radiance Lion’s enormous strength. The dust spread through the battlefield from the violent wind that was raised!

This strike had extremely powerful strength, and it was enough to match a seventh ranked technique’s strength!

When the energy exploded, everyone sucked in a breath of air. Carrying rather shocked gazes, they stared at Chu Mu...

Once a soul pet died, the soul pet trainer's face would immediately pale a bit. After all, one of his or her souls would have received a serious wound...

“Ao Hu!!!”

In the proliferating yellow dust, the golden bodied Radiance Lion with powerful majesty suddenly appeared and promptly charged towards Chu Mu!

The moment a soul pet trainer's soul was injured, it would be very hard to perform soul techniques. This was an exceptionally good opportunity to kill the soul pet trainer. Yang Luosen naturally would not give up on such an opportunity!

Chu Mu still didn't move. He slowly chanted an incantation, and he put an Ice Armor defense on his body again...

“It still hasn't died?” Yang Luosen discovered that Chu Mu was completely unrestricted when he performed Ice Armor, and he let out a rather flabbergasted expression.

However, Yang Luosen paid no heed to this. The attack just now would cause the Mo Ye to have a heavy wound even if it didn't die!

Shadow Claw!!!

The Radiance Lion suddenly stopped mid chase ten meters away from Chu Mu. Its claws swept through the air as it swatted in Chu Mu's direction!!

An unceasingly expanding shadow claw astonishingly appeared. It rapidly flew towards Chu Mu, and its size seemed to cover Chu Mu's whole body!!

“Beng~~~~~”

The Ice Armor instantly shattered under the Shadow Claw attack. However, a starry radiance immediately condensed on Chu Mu's body, almost as if Chu Mu had been draped by a starlight battle armor!

A sixth level armor with Ice Armor allowed one's defense to shockingly reach the seventh stage. How could the Radiance Lion's Shadow Claw attack break that so easily?!

The enormous shadow claw instantly disappeared under the sixth level soul armor's defense. Chu Mu slid back ten meters on the ground before gradually coming to a stop.

Yang Luosen seemed to have already known that Chu Mu wasn't that easy to kill, and he immediately ordered the Radiance Lion to launch another attack!

“Hou!!!!!!”

However, just as the Radiance Lion charged at Chu Mu, a Death Ray appeared from within the turbid *** that hadn't fully dissipated. The Death Ray suddenly exploded onto the Radiance Lion's body!

The Radiance Lion hadn't prepared for this at all, and it was knocked a few meters flying by this ball of energy. It rolled over a few times...

The tumbling body of the Radiance Lion hadn't fully stabilized when the Mo Ye's figure unexpectedly appeared again!!

A Shattering Claw ferociously struck the Radiance Lion's body. Although it didn't deal any real damage to the Radiance Lion, it still knocked it flying. Its sturdy golden body heavily fell underneath a pillar of rubble!

“How... how is this possible?!!”

Seeing Zhan Ye that seemed to not have suffered any wounds, everyone in the plaza let out shocked expressions!!

Chapter 68: Continuous Revival, The Undying Zhan Ye (2)

“Just now wasn’t its outer layer of ink armor already shattered completely? How is it totally fine now?!!”

“Substituted soul pets. He definitely substituted a soul pet!!”

Just now, the Radiance Lion’s consecutive attacks was something even perhaps a commander rank soul pet would die under. Even if the Mo Ye had bug type lineage, and its life force was incomparably tenacious, under such a powerful force, it would definitely be so heavily injured that standing would be difficult.

However, Zhan Ye, who had currently knocked the Radiance Lion Flying, unexpectedly didn’t have any other scars aside from a few bloodstains and bruises. It was completely as if he had only suffered light wounds!

“Does Chu Mu have two Mo Ye’s?” immediately asked Chu Ying. She remembered that Chu Mu, from start to finish, only had a weak Mo Ye...

Chu Tianheng, who stood in front of all the Chu Family disciples stared at the bloodstained ink colored armor and half broken arm that had fallen in the ruins.

“This... this seems to be a unique bug type technique...” Chu Tianheng’s expression was rather stunned.

“What technique?” instantly asked Chu Ying. As for Chu Xing, Chu Lang, Chu He and the others, their gazes immediately shifted towards Chu Tianheng.

“It seems to be Broken Limb Rebirth!” it was a while before Chu Tianheng replied.

Chu Tianheng remembered that after a few special bug type soul pets suffered a heavy wound, their body would secrete a special fluid that consumed some of its life in exchange for a quick rebirth of its body. As long as it hadn't been instantly killed, it was equivalent to having many lives!

Broken Limb Rebirth was a technique that appeared on a few arthropod soul pets at the very beginning. As soul pets gradually evolved and mixed with each other, it slowly appeared on a few soul pets with armor. Further, as a few soul pets' abilities transformed, Broken Limb Rebirth was no longer limited to four limbs; rather, it became the entire body...

To many bug type soul pets, Broken Limb Rebirth was essentially equivalent to shedding the heavily wounded outer shell after receiving a heavy wound, then replacing it with a new body!

The beast and bug type soul core of the Mo Ye species didn't have the Broken Limb Rebirth technique. Such a rare and unique thing practically could not appear on a soul pet with a beast type lineage...

However, the moment it appeared on a bug type soul pet with beast type lineage, then Broken Limb Rebirth's effects would be considerably terrifying. As long as the heart and skull weren't instantly shattered, the soul pet would be able to rebirth its innards in a short period of time and recover its full soul pet strength!

The Luo Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen didn't expect Chu Mu's Mo Ye to unexpectedly possess such an ability. His eyebrows tightly knit together, and he once more ordered the Radiance Lion to attack Chu Mu's Zhan Ye!

“Radiance Lion Sword Ray!”

The robust Radiance Lion had already crawled to its feet. Its two eyes were full of indignance and, after letting out a roar, all the ostentatious sword-like fur on its body suddenly stood up!

The dazzling gold light on the Radiance Lion's body flickered and suddenly, a radiance abruptly condensed into a single point. A golden colored sharp sword of light astonishingly discharged from the Radiance Lion's sword like fur, violently stabbing at Zhan Ye's position!

A dozen Radiance Lion Sword Rays flickered; with Zhan Ye's speed, he was simply unable to dodge.

Seeing these sharp sword rays stab towards it, the Mo Ye just curled its body, protecting its own head, and braced for the onslaught of these dozen sword lights.

“Shua shua shua shua!!!!”

The Radiance Lion Sword Light was not able to be minutely controlled, allowing for the swords to attack successively. Instead, they pierced the ten meter area around Zhan Ye; among them, only three Radiance Lion Sword Lights managed to pierce Zhan Ye’s ink armor. Three bloody wounds were pierced open on its body!

The three sword rays quickly morphed into burning wounds that began to spread in Zhan Ye’s three bloody holes...

“Again!”

Yang Luosen issued an order again to the Radiance Lion, having the Lion continue to use Sword Ray to attack the Mo Ye!

The golden light on the Radiance Lion’s body began to circulate once more. Very soon, a dozen golden sword rays flew in a perfectly straight line at the Mo Ye!!

The three sword rays from before hadn’t completely disappeared. Another three sword rays then stabbed into Zhan Ye’s armor, causing a bloody fluid to spill once more!!

Six sword rays were stabbed in its body. If it were any other beast type soul pet, it would have already died.

However, Zhan Ye was currently displaying its abnormal life force. Despite being pierced by the six sword rays, its two pupils carrying a bloody glow that continued to burn with the most vigorous fighting spirit!

“Zhan Ye, Rebirth!”

The sword rays carried a burning effect against dark type physical bodies. Moreover, Zhan Ye simply could not carry on fighting with six bloody holes...

“Hou~~~~” Zhan Ye let out a stifled roar. The six deep bloody holes dripping with blood suddenly excreted an odd bug type black colored liquid mixed with red bloody traces. The liquid and bloody traces were like bloody pus that filled up the six bloody holes!

This time, there wasn't any dust from the debris to block a line of view. Everyone could clearly see the odd transformation happening to Zhan Ye's half prostrated body on the ground.

Presently, they could see the pus fill up the bloody hole before gradually overflowing.

After overflowing, the bloody pus and the odd liquid began to quickly solidify, unexpectedly gradually transforming into a solid ink colored armor that once more covered Zhan Ye's flesh riddled body!!

The ink colored armor with clear edges revealed a rather gold

attributed lustre that gave others feeling of unbreakableness!!

Seeing this newly born ink armor, over ten thousand people opened their eyes wide. If it weren't for the bloody stains that still remained on Zhan Ye's body, everyone witnessing this spectacle would even believe that Zhan Ye hadn't even suffered a wound!

The terrifying bug type ability Broken Limb Rebirth unexpectedly truly appeared on a Mo Ye. With such an ability, as long as it's life force was enough, it was practically immortal!

Yang Luobin was already completely stupefied. If he didn't see it with his own eyes, how would he believed that the Mo Ye that he forsaked would possess this eminently abnormal ability after it transformed?!

“Luobin, I remembered that this Mo Ye had an extremely abnormal bug type talent. Its life force seems to even be higher than a normal Mo Ye's. Doesn't this mean that...” Yang Mantian abruptly thought of something and condensed his soul remembrance into a mental voice that entered Yang Luobin's ear.

Yang Luobin was stunned and suddenly thought of this. Its life force was much higher than a normal Mo Ye's. This meant that this Mo Ye's Broken Limb Rebirth wasn't limited to only two times!!

Yang Luobin was completely stunned and his gaze fell on the fifth phase sixth stage Mo Ye that was in a great fight with the Radiance Lion!

If he had known that this Mo Ye could comprehend such an ability, even with its enormous beast type lineage defect, why would Yang Luobin undo the soul pact? He definitely would have raised it like it was a treasure!

As expected, the Mo Ye's third rebirth caused Yang Luobin to be even more regretful. It was all he could do to not charge onto the stage and kill Chu Mu before stealing back the soul pet with an incomparably abnormal ability!

The sixth phase fourth stage Radiance Lion, a high class commander rank that had further undergone various beast type strengthening. Even if it was facing a normal sixth phase first stage commander rank, this soul pet may even be instantly killed. However, its fight with the Mo Ye, which had only reached the fifth phase sixth stage even under the Violent Blood Pupil's effects, had lasted so long. However, it still wasn't able to obtain victory; instead, the wounds grew more and more and deeper and deeper under the crazy and eminently obstinate Mo Ye's attacks.

“Die for me!!!”

After the third consecutive rebirth, the Luo Region Nightmare Prince finally found it hard to maintain his calm. His face revealed a clearly angry expression, and he unexpectedly used a seventh rank soul technique!

The Luo Region Nightmare Prince could also use Violent Blood Pupil, but the Violent Blood Pupil he learned could only increase

the Radiance Lion's stage by two at the most. It simply wouldn't be of very much use. Yang Luosen instead used this soul power to perform Heavenly Flame Rite in an attempt to burn this extremely annoying Mo Ye to death!

Heavenly Flame Rite. It's power was capable of reaching the seventh rank!

A captivating red color suddenly appeared in the air above the plaza battlefield. A dazzling flame shrouding everything below!!

The group of flames gave off the radiance of a sunset as it descended downwards on the Mo Ye's location!

Suddenly, from the bottom of this group of falling fire appeared a flame that looked like a large dragon. This large dragon flame struck Zhan Ye's body before abruptly spiralling into the air. It quickly twisted upwards and soared high up. The vertical radiance was like a large dragon ascending into the sky!

“Ice Armor!!!”

Chu Mu was aware that it would be very difficult for Zhan Ye to defend against a seventh rank fire type technique. Practically the instant Zhan Ye was engulfed by the Heavenly Flame Rite, he added an Ice Armor defense onto Zhan Ye!

“Hong hong hong~~~~~”

The terrifying Heavenly FLame Rite caused an even more dazzling flame to cover the plaza battlefield again. The Heavenly Flame Rite ascended into the air, displaying its elegance and obtrusiveness!!!

“Beng~~~~~”

The figure burning from head to toe in fire heavily fell from high above and landed in front of Chu Mu. Presently, Chu Mu’s face was clearly rather pale...

Seeing Chu Mu’s face show a rather pale white, a smile rose on Yang Luosen’s face. This time, the Mo Ye probably didn’t have the possibility of self-healing rebirth...

“Three rebirths. Your Mo Ye’s ability is truly abnormal. If you were to foster it up, it would have definitely been extremely hard to deal with. However, you seem to not understand how to cherish soul pets...” said Yang Luosen. He had a hint of arrogance in his words, as if he had already become the victor of this battle.

Chu Mu’s black eyes stared at Yang Luosen. A demonic smile appeared on his slightly pale face...

“Zhan Ye, Broken Limb Rebirth!”

Chu Mu didn’t use soul remembrance but rather directly articulated it.

The scorched black body from the burns began to slightly move. Right afterward, the burnt ink armor of Zhan Ye that looked like a old-fashioned bug armor gradually began to shed from its body...

The scorched black carapace shed apart, and the flames were swept away. However, underneath the completely burnt ink armor appeared a new ink armor. Its edges were clear, and it twinkled with an ink colored gloss. It fundamentally didn't contain any indications of being burnt!!!

The fourth Broken Limb Rebirth!!!

This battle brought the audience of over ten thousand people enough shock. In their hearts was an uproar *** that never subsided. Yet, right now, looking at the Mo Ye's abnormal fourth Broken Limb Rebirth, the great waves were surging more than ever, and it reached a high tide that it had never reached before!!

So the author used a quasi play on words where he attempted to use waves to describe the emotions in the audience's heart and a high tide to depict a climax. So in other words, the last part of the sentence can be rewritten to flow in more coherent English as the emotions were surging more than ever and it reached a climax that it had never reached before.

Chapter 69: Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil

After witnessing this spectacle, Yang Luosen's face turned ashen!

Just try and think of killing a soul pet nearly three times, yet it is always able to energetically stand up. The feeling of unceasingly exhausting one's own soul power and soul pet's fighting strength would cause this person to be incomparably irritated, and perhaps even a bit frantic!

He had consumed a large amount of soul power to use the seventh rank Heavenly Flame Rite. Precisely because of the prolonged battle, the Radiance Lion's fighting strength gradually decreased. The wounds on its body grew increasingly more, and an excessive amount of fighting strength was exhausted.

He originally believed that this time he would thoroughly slaughter the weak Zhan Ye, but Zhan Ye had unexpectedly used Broken Limb Rebirth!

“Zhan Ye, Dark Steal!”

Black lights on its ink armor flickered and Zhan Ye's body abruptly extended, transforming into a dark light that charged towards the Radiance Lion's position; its speed astonishingly rose!

“Uninhibited Assault!”

“Hou~~~~~”

Zhan Ye opened his mouth wide and let out an angry roar. The tiger claw mirage that covered its glossy armor transformed into multiple ink colored claw images that fiercely attacked the Radiance Lion's body!!!

“Beng!! Beng!!! Beng!!!!”

Third layered uninhibited attack. The three streams of energy were like tides of energy. Each layer was stronger than the previous, and they all smashed into the Radiance Lion's body!!

The Radiance Lion was knocked flying, and a bloody hole was astonishingly struck open on its golden body. Blood splattered out!

“Ao Hu~~~~”

The Radiance Lion let out a pained and angry roar as it heavily fell into the midst of the ruins!!

“Zhan Ye, close quarters combat!”

After the Radiance Lion was knocked down, Zhan Ye instantly charged towards it, not giving the Radiance Lion a chance at all to get up!

Ink Armor Spike!!

The sharpest weapon of Zhan Ye was absolutely not its claws. Instead it was the ink armor spikes that suddenly extended from its ink colored armor! These ink colored bone armor spikes were like bones that fiercely stabbed into the Radiance Lion's body. Amongst them was one spike that deeply penetrated the bloody wound opened by the Uninhibited Layered Attacks just now!

“Ao Hu!!!!!!!!!!!!!!” The Ink Armor Spike penetrated deep into the flesh, further carrying a dark corroding attribute that corroded the Radiance Lion, causing its wound to be incapable of healing!

The light type had an absolute counter towards the dark type, but if the dark attribute's overbearing effects were to enter the light type's body, it also would cause an extremely serious dark type corrosion!

Dark type corrosion not only corroded its innards after entering the body, but also corroded its skin; instantly, the Radiance Lion's defensive skin's resistance ability was decreased!

The black poison-like substance slowly appeared on the Radiance Lion's skin, causing the silver colored domineering fur to even slowly darken a bit!

The Radiance Lion's defense was also the hardest layer for Zhan Ye to break through. Presently, its fur had been corroded by darkness. Thus, the eminently powerful life force Mo Ye had an absolute advantage in physical combat over the Radiance Lion, who had exhausted a large amount of physical energy!

As expected, after its skin's defense decreased, the wounds that the Radiance Lion suffered were even deeper. When it came to fighting willpower, crazy was the only word that could be used to describe the bloody and merciless close combat fight that Zhan Ye exhibited!!

“Ao Hu!!!!!!”

The Radiance Lion's painful howls unceasingly rang out. Fresh blood dripped everywhere and unexpectedly, there no longer was a fully intact piece of skin on its body!

The dark type corrosion effect on a light type soul pet's body wouldn't last too long, but Zhan Ye's Ink Armor Spike attacks never stopped. The moment the Radiance Lion's defensive skin recovered its golden color, it was inflicted by the corroding poison, and it rapidly darkened....

Zhan Ye possessed self healing and a formidable life force. As the wounds on the Radiance Lion's body increased, Zhan Ye simultaneously grew more riddled with scars. However, as the Radiance Lion's wounds increased, its fighting power would also decrease, while the deranged willpower Zhan Ye would only grow more savage amidst the blood!!

On the plaza battlefield, the gold colored Radiance Lion and the ink colored Mo Ye were engaged in an incomparably terrifying flesh contact fight. Seeing the captivating red blood unceasingly spill, and the white bone revealed through the ripped open

wounds, the spectators from far away were all holding their breaths and watching with rapt attention. From time to time, they would inhale a cold breath of air.

The bloody flesh fight between the two soul pets caused a rather frightening feeling to emerge within the people, while Yang Luosen's face was extremely unsightly. The Radiance Lion was definitely Yang Luosen's strongest fighting power, and his main soul pet. He had originally planned on having the Radiance Lion defeat Chu Mu's third soul pet before having it fight with Chu Mu's strongest Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox. However, he never expected that the Radiance Lion which he was so intensely proud of to be so heavily wounded by a fifth phase first stage Mo Ye...

Zhan Ye's wounds were currently slowly healing. The Radiance Lion's wounds were growing increasingly severe, and its movements were also increasingly sluggish. Moreover, its movement already appeared to be rather slow.

Previously, the flesh fight consisted of both sides tearing and ripping at each other. However, presently, it was clear to see that the Mo Ye that unceasingly increased its courage as the fight went on, harbored the absolute advantage. It began to crazily execute bloody attacks against the Radiance Lion!

“A fifth phase first stage, adding on the Violent Blood Pupil's effects, only makes it the fifth phase sixth stage. Yet, it still managed to render the highly talented sixth phase fourth stage Radiance Lion into such an injured state...”

“Its life force is formidable, and it possesses a self healing ability several times higher than a normal Mo Ye. It has used Broken Limb Rebirth four times; this Mo Ye is too abnormal.”

The clear shift in the tide of battle had already occurred!!

“Hou!!!!!!!!!!”

Shattering Claw!!

Dripping in blood, the terrifying pressure from Zhan Ye’s attack wasn’t any weaker in the slightest!

The shattering claw fiercely struck the Radiance Lion’s body. Riddled with bruises, the Radiance Lion finally could not bear it, and its body slid backwards a few tens of meters, creating a dirt wave...

“Hou hou!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

Arrogantly looking down on the Radiance Lion that now found it hard to stand up, the Mo Ye that was releasing as much of a terrifying fearlessness as it possibly could, let out a haughty roar!!

Dripping in blood and riddled with bruises, it still had a violent wild nature. Those blood red pupils were burning with a flourishing fighting spirit!

Of the tens of thousands of people on the plaza battlefield, which one of them would have imagined that a fifth phase first stage small Mo Ye would defeat a sixth phase fourth stage Radiance Lion!?!

However, presently, the final one that stood coarsely, wildly, and haughtily on the battlefield was the Mo Ye with the ink colored armor. Despite being covered with cuts and bruises and being obviously rather small, it brought everyone an intense feeling of shock within their hearts!!

.....

Watching Zhan Ye defeat the sixth phase fourth stage Radiance Lion, Yang Luobin's entire being seemed slightly soulless. He simply couldn't believe that this was the same Mo Ye that he had forsaken...

The disciples of the Chu Family were currently so shocked that they couldn't speak. They had finally understood why Chu Mu would only train this seemingly normal Zhan Ye in the one month; they also finally understood why, in front of the sixth phase fourth stage Radiance Lion, Chu Mu didn't summon the Night Thunder Dream beast, but instead sent out the fifth phase first stage Zhan Ye.

Such an abnormal ability and such an unyielding fighting spirit. If Zhan Ye were to keep increasing his phase and stage, it would practically be able to fight those of a higher rank!!

.....

The Luo Region Nightmare Prince, Yang Luosen, gloomily stared at his dying Radiance Lion. He chanted an incantation, and used Hurricane to sweep Zhan Ye away...

A recall pattern slowly appeared beneath the Radiance Lion dripping with blood. A golden light slowly enveloped its body, and it quickly disappeared from the battlefield.

Chu Mu could feel the change in the Luo Region Nightmare Prince, Yang Luosen's, eyes. This fellow could evidently no longer maintain the calmness he had held at the beginning of the fight. An ice cold killing intent was slowly assailing the surroundings!

Chu Mu knew that Yang Luosen definitely still had an even stronger soul pet. Although the Radiance Lion's attacks were incapable of instantly killing Zhan Ye, his strongest soul pet wouldn't even give Zhan Ye the chance to revive. Thus, Chu Mu wouldn't carelessly have Zhan Ye directly attack Yang Luosen.

"Return." Seeing Yang Luosen already chanting an incantation in the midst of the dense discharge of fiendish energy, Chu Mu didn't have any hesitation. He decisively recalled Zhan Ye whom had already displayed its most wild and arrogant aspect...

"Being able to summon this soul pet of mine, your strength truly surpasses Tian Ji's by a lot. However, it ends here for you!" Yang Luosen's expression was ice cold. As he chanted an incantation, one could faintly make out a bloody figure appearing behind Yang

Luosen!

A bloody pattern gradually emerged on top of Yang Luosen's head, forming a weird, contrasting imprint with that strange bloody figure. It gave people a terrifying feeling of fresh blood...

Yang Luosen's entire being seemed evidently more strange amidst the bloody figure. He broke into measured steps as he slowly backed up a few steps, leaving the bloody pattern and bloody design in place!

Seeing Yang Luosen's summoning, Chu Mu's expression didn't change. He lightly patted Mo Xie who was lying on his shoulder, and he indifferently said: "It's your turn to fight."

"Wuwuwu~~~~~" Mo Xie had the appearance of someone who just woke up. She drowsily yawned, and her two silver eyes stared at the bloody figure and bloody pattern. She fully maintained an appearance of wanting to continue napping.

Jumping down from Chu Mu's shoulder, with a body full of grand silver fur, Mo Xie gracefully broke into measured steps. She fundamentally had no fear of that torrential fiendish aura, and she slowly walked towards the blood beast gradually appearing in the pattern...

Yang Luosen was a person from the Yang Shi Family. The Yang Shi Family had become famous because of their blood beasts; since Yang Luosen had come from the Yang Family, he naturally would possess a powerful blood beast. Moreover, it was very probable

that this blood beast had accompanied this fellow as he grew up, becoming Yang Luosen's strongest soul pet!

A dense, bloody aura began to pervade the air. People could clearly feel the imposing aura and each of their gazes closely stared at the pattern created by Yang Luosen!

The first thing that appeared from within the bloody pattern *** was a set of drooping bloody flesh wings. This set of flesh wings had glossy skin; simultaneously, one could see pieces of eminently malevolent wing bones. Furthermore, amongst them, there were three piercing bones that directly extended out of the flesh wings, forming a bent blade that resembled a bone scythe!

‘This is...’

Seeing the drooping wings, everyone from the Yang Family immediately let out shocked expressions!

Looking at it from a distance, the creature that appeared and now hovered above the bloody pattern *** was an enormous blood colored bat full of a terrifying aura. It had a set of wings that could cover its entire body, but people from the Yang Shi Family knew that this was definitely not some bat soul pet. Instead, it was the most frightening subspecies of blood beasts – a Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil

Chapter 70: Ghost Type Seal, Blood Devil Seal

Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil: Dead Spirit World – ghost type – Blood Devil species – Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil – high class commander rank

From head to toe the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil exuded a killing aura of death. Simultaneously, it was enveloped by a dense, bloody smell. It had malevolent bony claws that hung down to the ground. From the terrifying sharp teeth exposed on its red colored face to the two eyes emitting a green light on its forehead, it gave everyone a feeling of their blood somewhat running cold!

A Dead Spirit World ghost type soul pet, sixth phase fourth stage – high class commander rank – Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil!

In the Luo Region and a few nearby regions, due to the geography and environment, it was essentially very hard to see a Dead Spirit World soul pet. Therefore, any Dead Spirit World soul pet in these areas was very rarely seen!

At a very early age, Chu Mu had learned about various sorts of soul pets from books. The Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil was only briefly explained by his father, who had known about them from his experience and knowledge. It was a hybrid of a ghost type blood devil and a beast type blood beast; a creature that was demonic to the max!

Chu Mu had seen Dead Spirit World soul pets before. In the depths of Prison island in a few marshes where the aura of death was extremely heavy, Chu Mu had encountered ghost type soul pets. These things would truly appear and disappear unpredictably, their methods of attack would be bizarre and strange, and without the most cautious approach, one would be killed.

“Wuwuwu~~~”

The small Mo Xie had already stopped in her tracks. Her fluffy delicate manner, compared to the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil, was exactly like an extremely weak and small organism.

“I’ve already heard rumors of your Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox’s terrifying fighting strength. Yet, I would like to witness how your Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox can contend against my Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil!” Yang Luosen was clearly rather gloomy. When his Radiance Lion was defeated by Chu Mu’s Zhan Ye, Yang Luosen was no longer as calm as before. His entire person seemed to be shrouded by a layer of shadow, and he emitted a rather terrifying cold aura!

“I’ve already played enough. The Yang Family has lived a bit longer because of you, but they still must die!” indifferently said Chu Mu. His two black eyes suddenly let out a somewhat clear killing intent!

“Mo Xie, kill it!” orally ordered Chu Mu!

Once the yawning Mo Xie received Chu Mu's order, she finally raised her head. Those two silver pupils abruptly fixated upon the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil!

“How is Chu Mu still so unperturbed? Could it be that his Six Tailed Demon Fox is extremely formidable?” the Chu Family people had already begun to break into a cold sweat for Chu Mu.

From that terrifying bloody fiendish manner, one could clearly see that, even if it was a species of identical rank and of identical phase and stage, the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil was clearly much stronger than the Radiance Lion. Could Chu Mu's Six Tailed Demon Fox really deal with this creature?

“Mo Xie, get rid of Pitiful Appearance!” said Chu Mu.

“Wuwuwuwu!!!!” Mo Xie instantly raised her head arrogantly, and the howl of a wolf reverberated in the air above the plaza battlefield...

“Huhuhuhu~~~~”

As the long roar persisted, six red colored and extremely strange Demon Fire Evil Flames appeared, hovering around Mo Xie's body. They rotated around her body before gradually transforming into incomparably bright colored flaming vortexes that spiralled downwards!!

When the Demon Fire Evil Flame rotated down to her flaming

paws, the flames suddenly ascended, quickly filling the area surrounding Mo Xie's body. In an instant, Mo Xie's body abruptly extended!!

A free and easy slender body extended out; her silver white fur wildly fluttering in the wind caused Mo Xie to seem both gentle, beautiful, and noble. Nonetheless, the ostentatious opening of the six long, chain-like silver tails caused her to emit a coarse and wild aura!!

The unfolding of the gorgeous six tails rendered an enormous demonic aura suddenly, and it violently discharged from within the vigorously burning Demon Fire Evil Flame. This aura alone knocked against the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil's bloody fiendish aura, and it instantly created a terrifying atmosphere, causing the surrounding debris-like objects to all be knocked away!!!

“Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox!!!”

The moment Chu Mu's Pitiful Appearance was removed, an uproar arose throughout the entire arena. Everyone's gazes were fixated on the soul pet radiating imposing demonic aura from head to toe !!

While it was true that ghost type soul pets were rare, as long as one entered a few areas where the aura of death was dense, he or she would be able to see the figures of a few ghost type soul pets.

However, Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Foxes were truly the

rarest of the rare! They possessed the powerful explosive force of beast types, the terrifying speed of demonic types, and their Demon Fire Evil Flame was comparable to the formidable destructive power of Elemental World soul pets. The perfect combination of three types, even without any attribute strengthening, made their fighting strength comparable to many commander rank soul pets!

“Mo Xie, Molten Fury!!”

Chu Mu coldly issued an order!

“Wuwuwu!!!!!!”

Mo Xie let out a long howl, and Demon Fire Evil Flame suddenly ignited within her silver white pupils!!

Molten Fury’s might have originally reached the sixth rank. Under Mo Xie’s Demon Fire Evil Flame’s effect, it was comparable to a seventh rank fire type technique!!

The torrential flames abruptly blossomed in front of the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil like a dazzling and gorgeous fire lotus, and a torrential heatwave instantly surged forth!!

“Death Assault!”

Molten Fury ignited a raging conflagration and as the imprint of the blaze shot forth, Mo Xie, whose speed was terrifying, abruptly

transformed into a ray of silver white colored lightning that rapidly charged towards the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil!!

An instant later, Mo Xie's speed was nearly twice as fast as when she instantaneously killed the two soul pets and one human previously. Everyone could only see a mere bolt of silver lightning that hurtled through the plaza battlefield!

“Illusion Evil Flame Claw!!”

Mo Xie's silver figure split into three, making it seem like three Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Foxes had suddenly appeared on the battlefield!!

“Shua shua shua!!!!”

Three sounds practically layered on top of each other, and one could clearly see three Evil Flame Claw edges streak across the vital areas of the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil!!!!

The instant Mo Xie's attack arrived, the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil used its wings to cover its body, and Mo Xie's three claw blades immediately ripped into the flesh wings!!

Three long vestiges appeared on the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil's wings. The terrifying burning of the Demon Fire Evil Flame promptly burned the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil's flesh wings!

Witnessing this scene, Yang Luosen immediately creased his eyebrows. The Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil's flesh wings were one of its primary methods of defense, as its defensive strength was much stronger than its body. He originally thought that the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox's Evil Flame Claws would only leave a shallow mark. He didn't expect it to instead rip open three clear-cut wounds that directly affected the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil's flying ability!

When Mo Xie was still in the Moonlight Fox phase, her offensive talent was extremely terrifying. After mutating into the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox, her direct attacking strength could be described as even more abnormal. Adding on the Demon Fire Evil Flame's effects, instantly killing a few sixth phase commander rank soul pets was of no issue.

“Blood Devil Seal!”

Yang Luosen recognized that Chu Mu's Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox was a soul pet with abnormal talent. He immediately ordered his Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil to use a ghost type technique!

The Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil let out a chilling ghostly howl. Its long, devilish claws intersected together as they abruptly ripped apart the air!!

Two red colored slashing blood seals astonishingly appeared and descended from the air, pushing down on a large area of land!

It seemed to have locked onto Mo Xie's location for, when the two intersecting blood seals pressured downwards, they slowly shrunk before finally sealing Mo Xie's body!!

“What technique is this?”

“I've never seen such an ability before...”

The Blood Devil Seals were like long intersecting bloody claws that sealed the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox's body. It wouldn't deal any damage to it, but they were like two bloody claws that firmly held the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox in place. The Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox simply could not move budge even a little bit!

“This ghost type sealing technique causes the soul pet's body to become incapable of moving!!” Chu Tianheng instantly creased his eyebrows. The technique used by the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil happened to be an extremely troublesome sealing technique among ghost type techniques!

“This is rather troublesome. Chu Mu's Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox's speed is an extremely large advantage. Being rigidly caught by two ghost claws like this, could it be that it wants to rely on fire type techniques to contend against the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil?”

Seeing Blood Devil Seal being used, the corners of Chu Mu's mouth faintly rose. The moment he lifted his gaze, he happened to catch the Luo Region Nightmare Prince, Yang Luosen, looking at

him with a rather satisfied appearance...

“If your Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil were to be facing other soul pets, such a terrifying ghost type sealing technique would truly cause a headache. Only, it’s a pity that your luck isn’t too good. I’ve played with you for such a long period of time that the Yang Family residence is probably already burning in flames. As for you, you can die with satisfaction!”

Chu Mu didn’t like speaking while fighting, but when he spoke, it meant that he had absolute certainty of victory!

“Adhering Flame!” practically without chanting an incantation. Chu Mu transformed the last bit of his soul power into flaming energy that adhered onto Mo Xie’s body!!!

“Wuwuwuwu!!!!!!”

The flames on Mo Xie’s body grew even more violent, and they seemed to completely dye her silver white fur a red color...

A silver white colored radiance suddenly blossomed from within Mo Xie’s two eyes. A silver white colored moon imprint strangely appeared on Mo Xie’s forehead!!!

Seal Break!!!

Silver Moon Fox’s unique technique, Seal Break!! Despite already morphing into a Evil Flame Sixt Tailed Demon Fox, all of Mo Xie’s

techniques were passed on to her during her metamorphosis!!

“Wuwuwuwu!!!!!”

A demonic silver light shot in all four directions, and the moon imprint on Mo Xie’s head became even more dazzling. The Blood Devil Seal containing her body was instantly shattered under the radiance!!!

“How is this possible?!” Yang Luosen immediately opened his eyes wide. He couldn’t believe what he was seeing, as he watched Chu Mu’s Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox use a seal break ability!!

An enormous demonic aura was discharged once more in the Demon Fire Evil Flame that swept forth. The Adhering Flame effects caused the fire aura to become even more intense!

Blink!!

As if she was teleporting, her fire and demonic aura surging forth, the ostentatious slender fiery figure of Mo Xie, the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox, seemed to maintain her location. However, in front of the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil astonishingly appeared Mo Xie’s true body!!!

Chapter 71: Nameless Old Servant

Blink was an extreme speed demon type technique that allowed a soul pet to continuously fluctuate positions and continuously launch attacks!

Mo Xie's strongest talent wasn't in the strength of her attack, but rather her terrifying speed. The moment she used Blink, it was like creating illusions of multiple Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox all launching violent attacks!!

“Shua shua shua!!!!”

The claws carrying flames with the Evil Flame effects consecutively ripped at the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil's body. All the attacks managed to strike the Ghost White Bone Blood Devil's flesh wings!!

The Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil had the ability to fly, but from the moment it was summoned, this ghost type soul pet wasn't able to fly any higher than five meters. Mo Xie's fierce and terrifying attacks struck the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil before it had managed to fully ascend into the sky. Unexpectedly, it had ripped its wings into tatters, and the Blood Devil's body was dripping in a rather dark colored blood as it descended to the ground.

Yang Luosen was stunned. His gaze fell onto the terrifying Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox. He did not anticipate an Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox would possess a seal breaking technique. He

further did not think that the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox's speed, strength of its torrential Demon Fire Evil Flame had already completely surpassed a normal commander rank soul pet!

At the same time that Yang Luosen was overwhelmed with shock, the people both inside and outside the battlefield were so stunned that they couldn't speak. In their opinion, the sixth phase fourth stage Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil was already an exceptionally terrifying soul pet. If there weren't species like the Blue Nightmare in the commander rank, then what else could be the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil's opponent?

However, presently, everyone was witnessing of the power of one of the most rare soul pets in history, the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox, and were witnessing what was called a fight that surpassed ranks!!

“This Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox cannot be described by common sense. Its strength is comparable to a high class commander rank pure beast type soul pet. Its flames match a high class commander rank fire type's power. Its speed even surpasses a high class commander rank demon type's agility...” Chu Ming looked at the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox destroying the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil and slowly spoke.

The Recommendation today had brought Chu Ming too many shocks. Perhaps Chu Ming was somewhat unwilling to believe that the demonic male standing on the battlefield dressed in dark purple clothing was his grandson. He had already reached a level that Chu Ming himself would even find hard to touch!

“Evil Flame Claw!!!!!!”

The claw blades fiercely tore open the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil’s shoulder. The Demon Fire Evil Flame against the claw blade’s radiance depicted a gorgeous lustre that, with an extremely sharp edge, ripped apart the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil’s long arm.

“Evil Flame Claw!”

The moment Mo Xie landed on the ground, Chu Mu immediately issued a follow up technique order!

Mo Xie’s quick and violent lightning-like body had just landed on the ground before it abruptly turned around. When it ran at a rapid speed, it carried a wild demonic aura, as it once more used Evil Flame Claw on the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil’s body!

The remnants of her ardent radiance from the previous strike had yet to dissipate. The second imposing attack lacerated the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil’s stomach!!

“Flame Dance!”

Mo Xie’s body was still in midair when Chu Mu issued another order!!

Her gorgeous yet wild body made a strange step in midair, and suddenly, at this Flame Dance location, a ring of fire appeared that proliferated like a ripple in water....

Stepping in the air to rapidly pursue, the moment Mo Xie's attack finished, her Flaming Dance in the air caused her to run in a reverse arc and, using her terrifying speed, she once more rapidly pursued the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil!

As they saw this scene, the tens of thousands of people in the plaza all watched with wide open eyes. They had never believed that an Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox could use Flaming Dance to forcibly change directions. In the shortest amount of time possible, she launched a third attack!

Earlier, the Radiance Lion could also launch a subsequent second attack after its first attack. However, the period of time after its second attack was extremely long and, as long as one had enough speed, it was definitely a situation that was easily avoidable. However, for this Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox, its three attacks were practically like one technique being used. Unexpectedly, they were so perfectly linked together that three exquisite tracks of attacks were drawn out on the battlefield!!

“Illusion Evil Flame Claw!”

Mo Xie's Flame Dance attack caused its body to astonishingly split into three demonic silver white figures. Her unassailable claws respectively ripped at three vital spots on the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil's body!!

“Shua!!!!”

The three simultaneous attacks struck open the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil’s flesh. Suddenly, a terrifying Demon Fire Evil Flame rushed into the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil’s body through the three deep wounds and violently began to burn its blood, flesh and skeleton...

“Huowu!!!!!!!!!!!!”

The Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil let out a pained devilish cry. Its voice incomparably and plaintively resonated through the entire plaza. Those who heard it felt their blood run cold!!

Yang Luosen was completely stunned. Carrying a rather scared gaze, he stared at the Ghost Wing White Bone Blood Devil whose body was rapidly being burned by the flames...

The soul pet he was so intensely proud of, in front of a high class warrior rank soul pet, unexpectedly wasn’t able to resist very much.

Identical at the sixth phase fourth stage, but its rank was higher by an entire rank. Even if Demon Fire Evil Flame was a definitive counter over ghost type soul pets, how could the difference in strength be so distinct?!

Yang Luosen didn’t understand, nor was he willing to believe he

lost.

“Hu hu hu~~~~~”

A strange mental ragain fire suddenly threw itself at Yang Luosen’s soul!

Yang Luosen’s face abruptly changed, and he used the fastest speed he could to create a soul remembrance protection. However, Mo Xie’s Evil Flame Invasion had double the damage. The hastily created soul remembrance defense was simply unable to resist the soul invasion of the Demon Fire Evil Flame!

The scorching fire energy burned into the middle of Yang Luosen’s soul; moreover, it began to burn his body. Presently, one could clearly see flames flicker out from within Yang Luosen’s body!!

Yang Luosen let out a painful howl, and his two hands trembled as he fetched a fire poison resistant medicine, and he frantically poured it into his mouth!

The seventh level fire poison resistant medicine, for one bottle, required a price of nearly 100,000 gold coins. After Yang Luosen poured it into his throat, his body instantly emitted a white gas, and his entire skin was flushed red as he kneeled on the ground and gasped for air...

“Mo Xie, kill him.”

Chu Mu didn't have any trace of mercy!

“Wu wu wu!!!!” Mo Xie didn't like to be merciful either. Her body abruptly transformed into a silver light that rapidly charged in front of Yang Luosen!!

Her claws were already extended and, as he watched the terrifying Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox appear, Yang Luosen's pupils ceaselessly dilated. In this instant, his arrogance had been ripped to shreds. So much so, that not even a sliver remained as he felt death approach!!

His soul having suffered from grave burn wounds, Yang Luosen was currently unable to summon any soul pets. The demon aura had already assaulted his senses, and his gaze seemed to be praying as it turned towards the crowd of humans.

A black figure suddenly appeared strangely on the plaza battlefield, and abruptly stood rigidly in front of Yang Luosen!

“Wind Dragon Bind!”

A soft incantation was chanted and instantly, a gorgeous wind dragon wildly coiled up around the black figure's body!!

“Eighth rank Wind Dragon Bind!!!”

A majestic Wind Dragon Bind twisted around the black figure's body and shockingly, under everyone's astonished gazes, quickly began to rotate.

The charging Mo Xie immediately smashed into the tenacious wind dragon, and her body was knocked up, flying up a whole fifty meters!

“Mo Xie, Flame Dance!”

Mo Xie's body fell from a height of 50 meters and as she was ten meters from the ground, her front limbs abruptly took a step in the air, and her body obtained a slight buffer...

A clever way of emancipation, Mo Xie descended onto the ground. Her body still slid back very far, sliding all the way to the Chu Mu before stopping in front of him.

“Huh!!!!!!” Mo Xie bared her teeth and her gaze coldly stared at the black figure in front of Yang Luosen as she revealed a rather ominous glint!

The moment she encountered a powerful opponent, Mo Xie's vicious tendencies would inevitably be revealed!

Chu Mu creased his eyebrows as he looked at the skinny old man standing in front of Yang Luosen, and his expression clearly changed as well. This old man was able to appear in front of Yang Luosen in such a short period of time while further using the

eighth rank effect Wind Dragon Bind; his strength was definitely deep and immeasurable!

“Nightmare Prince Chu, swapping pointers is just swapping pointers. There’s not a need to become a killer, right?” said the old man in a flat tone.

“Who are you?” Chu Mu’s gaze still continued to be fixated on the old man.

“I am a nameless old servant of Nightmare Palace who follows besides the Luo Region Nightmare Prince, protecting his life. If Nightmare Prince Chu can give up here, this old servant will immediately bring the Luo Region Nightmare Prince away. If you still wish to kill him, then this old servant must commit an offense.” said the nameless old servant.

Although the nameless old servant spoke very flatly, Chu Mu could clearly feel that this old fellow’s manner was a bit contemptuous and aloof. Further, he also possessed a somewhat overbearing loftiness.

“Chu Mu’s gaze coldly glared at the old man and in an indifferent tone he said: “Bring your master and scram.”

The moment Chu Mu said this, the nameless old servant immediately creased his eyebrows. Very evidently, he didn’t expect Chu Mu’s tone to be so impolite.

Yang Luosen was already gnashing his teeth at Chu Mu, since his confidence and dignity had been savaged by Chu Mu in such a way.

“Chu Mu, the only reason why I’m being rather polite to you is because you’ve received the princess’ appreciation. There are many people who are stronger than you...” the nameless old servant’s tone turned rather cold.

“Scram!” Chu Mu simply didn’t wait for this fellow who took advantage of his seniority to finish his sentence as he coldly interrupted!

The nameless old servant’s face instantly ashened. Originally, it was because of the recent clamor of the Prison Island King’s reputation and his identity as a Nightmare Palace youth that he wasn’t willing to argue with him. Yet, he didn’t expect this person from the younger generation to not be satisfied with small gains and be so condescending.

A bit of anger had already risen in the nameless old servant as he began to slowly chant an incantation...

However, the moment he finished half of his incantation, a cold mental voice transmitted into his ear: “Old fool, if you don’t scam within ten seconds, I will kill you as well!”

The nameless old man was stunned. His eye immediately scanned through the crowds of people, and he was faintly able to see multiple figures carrying a cold aura that stood like statues among the crowd...

“Xia Guanghan’s assassins...” the nameless old servant clearly didn’t realize that Chu Mu would still have so many underlings and his face turned unsightly...

This nameless old servant’s strength was definitely above these assassins, but the number of concealed Nightmare Palace assassins in the arena were numerous. The combined strength of these cold-hearted and merciless fellows made it so that killing him was absolutely not a problem.

Chapter 72: Exterminating The Yang Family

(1)

“We’re leaving...” the nameless old servant’s expression was clearly rather contorted, yet he chanted his incantation and summoned an abnormally large eighth phase Storm Eagle!

Once the eighth phase Storm Eagle appeared, it immediately caused an uproar around the arena...

The nameless old servant grabbed the extremely weak Yang Luosen, and he jumped onto the eighth phase Storm Eagle’s back. He issued an order, and the Storm Eagle promptly lifted its enormous wings....

“Bring me... older brother, bring me...” Yang Luobin had already learned of Xia Guanghan, this ferocious fellow, from Yang Luosen at an earlier time. There was a high chance his clan would suffer a calamity and, seeing that the nameless old servant was bringing Yang Luosen away, he immediately began begging in a lowly manner.

“Bring him.” Yang Luosen ground his teeth and spoke to the nameless old servant.

The nameless old servant had the Storm Eagle slightly descend, but very quickly he heard Chu Mu’s ice cold voice.

“I only said that you could take your master and scam. I never

gave you permission to take away people that I must kill.”

Chu Mu's gaze coldly stared at the old man. The white colored devil flames on his body were unexpectedly burning on his exterior!

The nameless old servant's eyes immediately let out a rather cold and ferocious expression. Evidently, he was rather angry at Chu Mu. However, knowing that Chu Mu still had numerous Nightmare Palace assassins near him, he had no choice but to swallow his words and harrumph. He ignored Yang Luobin, and he proceeded to bring Yang Luosen high into the air above the plaza as they slowly disappeared among the clouds.

“Big brother... big brother...” Yang Luobin's expression instantly paled, and he loudly yelled towards Yang Luosen!

Yang Luosen currently had no more face left. Moreover, he had also sensed the numerous nearby Nightmare Palace assassins, which Chu Mu had brought with him. At once, he no longer dared to stay any longer and flew away with the nameless old servant.

Seeing Yang Luosen leave, Yang Luobin's face promptly paled. He hastily left the plaza battlefield and ran towards Yang Mancan.

The person Chu Mu wanted to kill the most was Yang Luobin. How could he let this fellow flee?!

Without needing Chu Mu's order, Mo Xie instantly flew out, and

she used Death Assault on Yang Luobin!

No matter whether Yang Luobin ran or not, his speed was not faster than Mo Xie's. In the blink of an eye, Mo Xie appeared in front of Yang Luobin!!

Yang Luobin's face drastically changed, and he immediately chanted an incantation, wanting to summon a soul pet to protect him!

“Evil Stare!”

Chu Mu immediately issued an order to Mo Xie!

Mo Xie's demonic pupils released a silver radiance. This eye beam transformed into two, long silver swords that ferociously stabbed into Yang Luobin's mental world!

Yang Luobin was only a fourth remembrance spirit teacher; how could he defend against the sixth phase Mo Xie's mental attack? Moreover, Mo Xie's mental attack technique further received the influence of Chu Mu, this seventh remembrance spirit teacher!

As Yang Luobin began to chant an incantation, his two eyes were instantly flooded by fear and halfway through his incantation, it was promptly cut off. He was somewhat absent minded as he watched the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox extend her claws!!

“Chu Mu!! If you dare harm my son, I will definitely annihilate

your Chu Family!!” In the audience, Yang Mancan, who wasn’t able to save him in time, was flushed red as he used soul remembrance to yell at Chu Mu!!

Chu Mu turned his head and indifferently swept his eyes over Yang Mancan. Yet, he still let out a sneer, completely disregarding Yang Mancan’s threat; he immediately gave Mo Xie an order!

Evil Flame Claw!!

Long claw blades shockingly ripped open Yang Luobin’s neck!!!

“Shua!!!!”

Yang Luobin was stuck in his terrified expression, but his head had already begun flying and unceasingly tumbled in the air...

“Pu Chi~~~~”

A geyser of blood abruptly spurted out of Yang Luobin’s neck. It was an obtrusive yet captivating red that caused those that saw this scene to involuntarily suck in a deep, deep breath of air!!

Yang Luobin’s body slowly fell to the ground and, as it lay there, the blood still continued to flow out from his neck...

“Beng~~” The head that flew high into the air created a bloody blossom as it splashed when it finally fell into the pool of blood...

“I’m... I’m going to kill you!!!!”

A mad roar suddenly rang out from the audience. Seeing his son being killed, Yang Mancan was like a wild beast filled with anger. He charged onto the battlefield, and his two eyes were astonishingly filled with bloody slivers!

When Chu Tianheng saw that Yang Mancan had charged onto the plaza battlefield, why would he hesitate? He immediately used Wind Ride on himself, and quickly appeared in front of Chu Mu; practically without any hesitation, he chanted an incantation!

“Eldest uncle, may I create a bloody spectacle?” seeing Chu Tianheng fly in front of him, a demonic and ruthless smile rose upon Chu Mu’s face.

Chu Tianheng was stunned and, as he looked at Chu Mu, a rather questioning look appeared on his face. Chu Mu didn’t wait for Chu Tianheng’s response. He glanced at Chu Tianheng’s seventh phase seventh stage warbeast Mo Ye and slowly raised his left arm...

Chu Mu’s killing of Yang Luobin seemed to have instantly ignited the sparks of war between the Chu and Yang Family. As Chu Tianheng and Yang Mancan faced off, all of the other Yang Family members successively poured onto the plaza battlefield.

The Chu Family people also realized that the clash between the two families had already reached its peak. Chu Ming took the initiative to use a flying type technique and flew over the plaza

battlefield...

The old family head was already in a position to attack, so how could the Chu Family members still remain spellbound. In an instant, everyone used their own soul techniques to assemble around Chu Mu's location.

The two large families of people seemed to all have been gathered in the plaza battlefield; both sides had 56 people each. If they were to summon their soul pets, there would definitely be over 100 soul pets on this plaza battlefield!

It had always been a rare occurrence for a large scale massacre to appear in Gangluo City, because the Yang Family had always overseen the city. However, this time, sparks were flying between all of the people from both the Chu and Yang Family. As long as these sparks were ignited, there definitely would be a large war with a few hundred soul pets on the plaza battlefield!

“Chu Tianheng, I'll give you ten seconds to hand over Chu Mu so I can personally slaughter this half-breed. Otherwise, today I will definitely massacre your entire Chu Family!!” Yang Mancan had already entered a state of near eruption. His entire being adopted the malevolent and terrifying manner of the seventh phase eighth stage Blood Wing Trioptic Beast that he had summoned.

How could Chu Tianheng hand over Chu Mu? He stood next to his seventh phase seventh stage warbeast Mo Ye without any fear of Yang Mancan's threat!

“Father, our overall strength is weak, we aren’t the Yang Family’s opponents.” Chu Tianjue glanced at the grave face of Chu Ming and whispered to him.

Matter Having just arrived here, Chu Ming also knew that a great battle was unavoidable. His gaze was keen as he stared at the old Yang Kuo, who continued to sit in the audience with a strange expression!

The over one hundred people from the Yang and Chu Families both had their members use their soul remembrance and were in the process of chanting an incantation. The moment the family head from either side gave the order, there would definitely be a chaotic fight between hundreds of soul pets on the battlefield!

“Sto... Stop, everyone retreat!!”

Suddenly, a loud voice rang through the air of the plaza battlefield!

Everyone was stunned, and their eyes all fell on the old city lord Yang Kuo who sat in his seat with a very puzzling expression.

In reality, many people had noticed that the old city lord Yang Kuo had been abnormal today. During the fight, Chu Mu had killed five young experts of the Yang Family and, moreover, killed Yang Kuo’s eldest son’s eldest son. In any moment, a great fight was about to erupt. However, Yang Kuo had decided to reach a compromise at this exact moment.

The Yang Family's power was clearly above the Chu Family's. If they were to truly begin fighting, their Yang Family would pay a bit of a price, but would definitely be able to eliminate the Chu Family. Nobody could understand why Yang Kuo would suddenly interfere with this fight!

“Father, what are you...” Yang Mancan had a face of astonishment, as he stared at his own father. The bulging veins on his face were still twitching!

“I said to stop. Could it be you didn't hear me?!!!” angrily roared Yang Kuo!!

Yang Mancan's face was already both black and blue. His entire body trembled, and he clearly could not control the burning anger in his mind. Yet, Yang Kuo had issued this order to compromise!

Chu Mu looked at Yang Kuo, and a smile appeared on his face as the corners of his mouth drew back. He slowly put down the hand he had raised in the air...

Such a simple gesture, yet it had a completely different meaning. This was because as long as Chu Mu closed his left fist, then it would mean that the thousands of members in the Yang Family residence would be buried in a sea of fire!

“Father, could it be that you want me to swallow...” Yang Mancan's face was twitching. He was about to release his anger towards his father, but halfway through his words, numerous black figures jumped out from the crowd. Each one of them stood

coldly like ice around the confrontation of the two factions. They emitted a killing intent that caused others to tremble all over!

The black figures continued to increase and before long, there unexpectedly were over fifty extremely ice-cold soul pet trainers. All of these soul pet trainers let off an ice cold feeling, and there wasn't any trace of emotion emitting from their eyes. Instead, their gazes were extremely penetrating!

“This is...” the faces of the Yang Family members that covered nearly seventy meters immediately changed. They stared at the extremely cold Nightmare Palace assassins!

50 Nightmare Palace assassins. Every one of them had the strength of a spirit teacher. Moreover, each one of these assassins had a terrifying Nightmare that could directly destroy a soul pet's soul with fire. The moment these fifty Nightmares were summoned and their soul devil fires were simultaneously released, a majority of the Yang Family would be injured!!

An ice cold frosty aura engulfed the plaza battlefield, and the temperature suddenly dropped. Everyone was able to feel the strange atmosphere, and the spectators on the surrounding outside were very clearly conscious about the possibility of a large chaotic fight breaking out. Those that were afraid of suffering from collateral damage began to flusteredly leave this place!

The Chu Family had about fifty people in total, and among them were many who hadn't reached the spirit teacher level. The Yang Family's strength easily surpassed the Chu Family's.

Nonetheless, as these fifty Nightmare Palace members stood still like statues here, the Yang Family members didn't dare to move at all. The flames of anger that burned through Yang Mancan's body presently had no choice but to be suppressed!

Seeing the fifty Nightmare Palace assassins, the old city lord, Yang Kuo's face was extremely unsightly. Presently, he had no choice but to watch from the high seat onto the plaza battlefield. If he couldn't resolve the grievances this time, their Yang Family would definitely be thoroughly eradicated today.

"Chu Ming, the grievances between our two families has lasted a long time, but in reality, there was never a profound bloody sea debt. Currently, the conflicts between our two families has arrived here. If we were to start a large fight, it wouldn't be of any benefit to either of our two families. Therefore, wouldn't it be better if we sat down and slowly talked it out?" the attitude of the old city lord, Yang Kuo, had completely changed.

Listening to Yang Kuo's words, everyone was extremely shocked. When had the perpetually arrogant and despotic Yang Kuo become so lowly? As for the Chu Family, which had suffered from the Yang Family's resentments, none of them were convinced, as they looked at this old city lord which would do anything to eradicate the Chu Family.

Nevertheless, Yang Kuo had no choice but to quietly quell his anger. There were fifty Nightmare Palace assassins standing there. Additionally, there was still a portion of them hiding outside their old Yang Family residence. At any moment, they could thoroughly

burn down their ancestral residence.

In front of him, there were at least fifty Chu Family spirit teachers. Adding on the Nightmare Palace assassins, this amount of strength was enough to sweep through all of Gangluo City's factions. If Yang Kuo's attitude were to even be a bit more unyielding, blood would definitely spill on this battlefield!

“Nightmare Prince Chu, my grandson Yang Luobin has committed many offenses in the past. It is because I, Yang Kuo, did not teach him strictly enough. Now that you've already killed him, then regard it as resolving the grievances in the past. In my opinion, if we were to start fighting, your Chu Family will probably suffer injuries and deaths. This is a bit of a hindrance to your Chu Family. Why don't we gently resolve things instead... I, Yang Kuo, can promise that the territories and industries that used to belong to your Chu Family will all be returned to you. Moreover, our Yang Family will also confer one fourth of our territory to your Chu Family, and one third of our industry profits into your Chu Family's account books. Why don't you treat this as payment for the grievances in the past and also as our Yang Family's sincerity to coexist with your Chu Family in Gangluo City. As for the other details, we can still sit down and slowly talk it out. There's no need to gather here...”

Yang Kuo's face full of wrinkles would become as petty and low as he needed it to be. Those who knew Yang Kuo were a bit unbelieving, as this now deferential fellow was really that hegemonic and capriciously mule headed Gangluo City city lord.

Chu Ming and Chu Tianheng, these two people in charge of the

Chu Family, had their eyes on Chu Mu. Chu Mu's current identity wasn't ordinary. Moreover, he had fifty Nightmare Palace assassins that were comparable to a clan's power. Whatever Chu Mu, who had complete control over the situation, said went.

“I don't want territory or industry. I only want a small amount of circulating capital.” Chu Mu barely hesitated before indifferently speaking at Yang Kuo.

Chu Mu's words caused everyone to feel a bit surprised, because the current situation was extremely clear cut. As long as Chu Mu gave an order, with a small price to pay, the group of Yang Family people would definitely be all eliminated. If he was even a bit more unyielding, then perhaps the entire Gangluo City would belong to the Chu Family.

Of course, there were others that faintly let out a sigh of relief. After all, the casualties of a large fight between clans was extremely disastrous. A small careless mistake, and it could deal a fatal blow to the entire clan.

“This... this is easy, this is easy. As long as the Nightmare Prince Chu is willing to give me such face, we will do our utmost best to confer the capital to Nightmare Prince Chu.” Yang Kuo instantly put on a smile.

“Then I invite the old city lord to be a guest of our Chu Family for a few days to discuss the agreement, conditions, payments, the contract and others?” Chu Tianheng seemed to understand what Chu Mu wanted to do, and he immediately spoke to Yang Kuo.

Chu Tianheng's words clearly indicated that they wanted a hostage in order to prevent the shameless acts of the Yang Family.

"Father, you can't..." Yang Mancan's blood had already risen to his throat. A little bit more, and it would be spat out in anger. Only, he could see that in the current predicament, if he were to truly make an attack, the one who would die would definitely be him. Moreover, just now, Yang Kuo had used soul remembrance to tell Yang Mancan that there were Nightmare Palace assassins hiding in the family residence.

"Don't worry, don't worry. Such a matter has to be slowly talked over." Yang Kuo's face was all black, but he was still able to feign a smile as he accepted the conditions in an extremely sullen manner.

After agreeing to be their hostage, the old city lord strode forward in solitude and, with incomparable difficulty, walked towards the Chu Family's side.

Yang Kuo, this old fellow, naturally needed Chu Ming to be looked after. Chu Ming immediately stood next to Yang Kuo, and silently chanted an incantation, sealing Yang Kuo's soul remembrance. For a short period of time, Yang Kuo would not be able to use soul techniques or summon soul pets.

After his abilities were sealed, Yang Kuo glanced over at Chu Mu and said: "This old fellow is already so sincere..."

Yang Kuo knew now that everything Chu Mu said went. If Chu

Mu didn't nod his head, a massacre was unavoidable.

Chu Mu nodded his head, but didn't give any more conditions.

“Then... then I would invite Nightmare Prince Chu to withdraw your people from my Yang Family residence...” humbly said Yang Kuo.

Yang Kuo's words immediately caused a wave of shock to run through the Chu and Yang Family people. All of their eyes fell on Chu Mu.

The battle strength of fifty Nightmare Palace assassins was already extremely terrifying. Yet, this still wasn't all of Chu Mu's subordinates. Some of them were unexpectedly still hiding outside the Yang Family residence...In this moment, everyone came to a sudden understanding. They also understood why the old Yang Kuo would beg for reconciliation at this moment like an old dog. Simultaneously, everyone felt a shudder; Chu Mu had unexpectedly already predicted all of this would happen. Before the Recommendation had even arrived, he had sent a group of assassins to hide in the Yang Family's empty residence. Such a method was truly fierce enough!

However, just as everyone felt endlessly shocked by the faction strength of Chu Mu, Chu Mu's next words nearly caused Yang Kuo and Yang Mancan to spurt out a mouthful of blood!

“All my people are here.”

Yang Kuo had been captured as a hostage. Without this old city lord, who in the entire city of Gangluo City would be able to suppress the Chu Family's Chu Ming, this spirit master? Therefore, the Yang Family presently didn't dare to make any rash moves. After the matters between the two families during the plaza battlefield had died down, Yang Mancan, who now held power, could only obediently transfer a large amount of the family capital to ransom back the old city lord.

After this matter had passed, Chu Mu's name was known by everyone in Gangluo City. Many days later, the entire Gangluo City was still in a restless state, because there were many people who had predicted that Chu Mu, this Nightmare Palace Nightmare Prince's intervention would cause the entire structure of Gangluo City to completely change. It was very likely that the Chu Family could come to control everything in Gangluo City.

As for those in the Chu Family, Chu Mu's position naturally rose to the top. Everyone looked up at Chu Mu with deferential and respectful gazes; many of those who had offended Chu Mu in the past had offered a humble apology in hopes that Chu Mu, who possessed a force that could rival a clan, would be magnanimous.

For things in the past, Chu Mu was simply disinclined to be bothered about it. He further didn't have the inclination to dig up those in the family who had used to look down on him. In Chu Mu's eyes, these people were already a group of lowly people who didn't have any significance. No matter how much they praised, Chu Mu wouldn't be moved at all.

“Chu Mu, eldest uncle said that the Yang Family has sold several of their territories and has already sent 10 million gold coins...” Chu Ying intentionally ran to Chu Mu’s room to speak to him.

After the Recommendation, Chu Ying’s attitude towards Chu Mu had done a 180 degree turn. A smile was always worn on her face, and she no longer dared to have a grumbling appearance.

Chu Mu wasn’t interested in Chu Ying’s appearance and, in reality, Chu Ying would only slander and mock Chu Mu in her words. Perhaps it could be said that those who she didn’t look well upon with would be unrestrainedly cursed at. Chu Mu, who understood this eldest young lady’s temperament, naturally wouldn’t bicker about the matters of the past.

“Mhm, almost there.” Chu Mu nodded his head. After speaking, Chu Mu left his courtyard and went towards Chu Tianheng’s residence.

Chu Ying still wanted to say something else, but when she saw that Chu Mu wasn’t paying any attention to her, she felt a wave of disappointment. Despite wanting to follow him, she didn’t dare.

“Young master, you’re planning on letting the Yang Family go just like that? But the Yang Family has done such excessive things to you.” asked Ting Yu who was following beside to Chu Mu.

Ting Yu essentially understood Chu Mu a bit now. What made her feel a bit outrageous was that Chu Mu’s attitude towards the Yang Family seemed to be a bit lenient. Unexpectedly, he only

wanted a bit of capital to resolve the grievances between the two families.

Chu Mu looked at Ting Yu and cracked open a smile, saying: “Did I say that I would let them go just like this?”

“Then young master’s intention is...”

When he walked into Chu Tianheng’s courtyard, Chu Tianheng was seated on a stone chair with a letter in his hands that he was reading.

“Eldest uncle.” Chu Mu walked in front of Chu Tianheng.

“Eh, it’s Chu Mu.” Chu Tianheng nodded at Chu Mu and had him take a seat next to him.

Chu Tianheng saw that Chu Mu’s gaze happened to be on the letter in his hand and he immediately smiled and explained: “It’s your elder sister Chu Xian. She currently has become an outstanding figure within the inner clans disciples. With a few years of training, she should be able to rank in Luo Region’s young battle ranking.”

Speaking of Chu Xian, Chu Tianheng’s eyes revealed a somewhat gratified expression.

“It’s been a long time since I’ve seen older sister Xian Xian.” said Chu Mu.

Chu Mu’s memory of Chu Xian was rather profound. She had a beautiful face and a moving body. She always gave others a feeling of young vigor. No matter who it was, he or she would easily be influenced by her smile and beauty. Amongst the entire Gangluo City, Chu Xian’s reputation was even above Qin Menger’s.

A few years earlier, Chu Xian had been regarded as important by the Great Chu Family and been chosen as an inner courtyard disciple. She had already been cultivating in the Great Chu Family for a long time now.

“She mentioned that she would return to Gangluo City in a year...” said Chu Tianheng.

“Oh, then eldest uncle can write back telling her she doesn’t need to return to Gangluo City.” said Chu Mu.

Chu Tianheng was stunned. He put away the letter in his hands and stared at Chu Mu.

“Eldest uncle should understand my intentions.” said Chu Mu.

Chu Mu essentially understood Chu Tianheng rather well. Chu Tianheng was a steady person, and he was able to hold his temper during a lot of things. Moreover, when he truly was going to make a move, Chu Tianheng definitely would not be compassionate or

lenient. He could be classified as a swift person with decisive reactions. In this regard, Chu Mu felt that it fit the demeanor of a family head better than his always apprehensive grandfather, Chu Ming.

Chu Tianheng obviously understood Chu Mu's intentions. Back then, at the Recommendation, Chu Mu had asked him whether he wanted to see a bloody spectacle.

“I understand. Only, how do I put it, that Gangluo City has also been our foundation for 100 years...” said Chu Tianheng.

“This Luo Region is the Yang Family's territory. We will only suffer restrictions here. Moreover, after this affair is over, the Yang Shi Family will definitely interfere...” said Chu Mu.

Chu Tianheng stared at Chu Mu. Looking at Chu Mu's decisive eyes, he suddenly saw the reflection of a certain person and the trace of a bitter smile appeared on his face: “I've already discussed this matter with your grandfather...”

“Grandfather should already understand then.” said Chu Mu.

Chu Tianheng hesitated a while. Ostensibly finally making his decision, he said: “Since you want to kill, then be a bit more thorough. Eliminate the root of the problem so that future problems don't arise!”

Chapter 73: Exterminating The Yang Family

(2)

A bewildered night. A slightly cold and ghostly moonlight slowly fell onto Gangluo City in the dead of night. On Gangluo City's empty streets, in the intricately laced alleyways, a few black figures could be faintly seen flitting by one second, disappearing the next.....

Black clouds rolled gently, and starlight leaked through. Within the leaked glow, black wing typed organisms flew past silently, lifting a wave of cold air as they lightly breezed past the somewhat empty city.

Between the uneven architecture, the night invader Dream Beast maneuvered its elegant and evilly handsome body magnificently through the city skies as it ran straight for the Yang Family mansion.

The night was a Dream Beast's heaven because they could make dreamlands however they pleased.

Furthermore, the dark type Night Thunder Dream Beast was even more the darling of the night. It was full of intelligence and demonic nature, and it also had an arrogance and wildness about it that caused it to look down upon all other trivial and ugly creatures. The dreamlands that he brought were definitely not fake, but of the most real terror!

At this time, it was indeed Chu Mu that was riding his sixth phase

first stage Night Thunder Dream Beast through the night skies of Gangluo City. After reaching the sixth phase, the Night Thunder Dream Beast's body shape hadn't changed much. However, its arched dream horns and feathers that smoothly extended until its tail had undergone a clear change. Possessing a Dark Type caused the Night Thunder Dream Beast to be full of the characteristics of darkness and evil. The lightning reserved within its black and flowing feathers added even more to his wildness.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast also had the ability to leap into the night. Once Chu Mu slowly neared the Yang Family mansion, the night's darling ran into the night sky and finally merged completely into it. Even the many soul pets outside of the Yang Family's mansion with strong detective abilities wouldn't be able to capture Night Thunder Dream Beast's Night Dance.

“Night, let these guys feel the power of an invader of the night!” Chu Mu looked down at the Yang Family mansion and said to Night Thunder Dream Beast.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast slowly descended from a high place with vaguely visible dark energy ripples between its two curved dream horns.....

“Dream Underworld!!!”

Dream Underworld-the Night Thunder Dream Beast's advanced technique. It was a demon type mirage technique castable only at night!

Dreams noiselessly floated into the thoughts of all the Yang Family members. The Yang Family guards patrolling unknowingly felt an irresistible sleepiness attack them, causing even the soul pets that accompanied them to yawn endlessly.

The dream beast's techniques were one of the most bizarre among the demon type. In Gangluo City, there was almost no one who owned a Dream Beast, so the people of the Yang Family would never have thought that a sixth phase Dream Beast had unknowingly trapped twenty family patrols in a dream land already.

“Chong Mei – Dream Underworld!

Chu Mu's pupils slowly let out a dark, star-like glow. This glow gradually morphed into a dreamy dark pulse that slowly spread nearby. Quickly, another round of guards that were replacing the first round also fell onto the ground along with their soul pets.....

“Huhuhu~~~~~.”

Wisps of deep blue soul flames slowly rose. It's cold radiance calmly started burning, causing those guards who fell into a dream to turn into ashes without feeling any pain. “Chu Nightmare Prince, twenty killers and thirty Devil Attendants are ready for action.” The Killer leader He Lang said.

As he spoke, the killer leader specially glanced at the slowly disintegrating bodies, and he was secretly surprised. Though this Night Thunder Dream Beast hadn't been summoned at the

Recommendation, its power to control dreams was very scary. Additionally, Chu Mu was himself a Seventh Remembrance spirit teacher. Together, they easily dealt with a large batch of Yang Family patrols.....

“En, release your demons.” Chu Mu nodded and told He Lang.

“Yes!” He Lang saluted, and he immediately passed on a command to all the Nightmare Palace members.

Most of the demons had special restrictive abilities that could secretly control demons and kill them effortlessly.

As a killer, what they needed wasn't only a destructive evil soul pet like the Nightmare, but also a demon type soul pet that could stealthily dismantle their enemies. This way, they could kill people before the enemy even had time to summon their soul pet.

Dark night, silence. Only within Yang Family could the occasional clamor be heard. However, these people even now didn't know that the entire Yang Family's outer defenses had already been dismantled by Nightmare Palace's demons.....

“Yi~~~~~”

All of the Chu Family and Nightmare Palace experts had already shown themselves. A sharp sound of a flare blew up in the air and, immediately, over hundreds of soul pet trainers summoned all their long ranged soul pets.....

A long stream of incantations started around the entire Yang Family mansion. Colorful lights immediately appeared, creating a magnificent ring of light around the center of Gangluo City.

In the next moment, sounds of air whistling could be heard!!

The Fifty Nightmare Palace members each had a Cyan Nightmare or Blue Nightmare. All of their soul flames were used to cast the sixth rank fire type technique Molten Fury, crazily exploding in clumps onto the Yang Family's mansion. Cyan and blue soul flames instantly shrouded the entirety of the Yang Family's residence, causing shrill screams to start!

“Huhuhuhuhu~~~~”

A large wind violently started, causing a banshee-like screeching sound to start. Immediately, a ten meter tall whirlwind that spiraled into the night sky brought with it millions of rapidly dancing wind blades.....

Before the fire type techniques even withered away, the wind type technique rolled in. A large part of the residence collapsed under the fire that had been scattered all over the place. Between the scattered flames and the ruined residence, one could see the Yang Family members covering their heads and sneaking away like rats.....

Devil flames and wind were only the beginning. Large area of effect abilities quickly followed in the ruthless shower of abilities!!

The sky was covered in the roar of ice. It became a world of ice and snow, freezing the Yang Family and causing everything to fall into fragments amidst the chaos!

The ground split, allowing shocking rock spires to poke upwards and destroy all the houses. They even penetrated some soul pet trainers who didn't summon their soul pets in time!

The dazzling golden light burned with a combination of Light Type and Fire Type. No matter how wide and open the Yang Family residence was, there still was nowhere to escape to!!

Hundreds of soul pet techniques barraged them. The entire Yang Family, under the continuous attack, was quickly destroyed. Burnt to a crisp, frozen, cauterized. There were even a few members who were buried alive in their sleep.....

“Beast type soul pets, kill!” Killer leader He Lang shouted loudly!!

Immediately, the entirety of Gangluo City was filled with terrifying beast roars. There were over 100 Chu Family and Yang Family experts, and almost every person had two or more close range beast type soul pet. After switching and summoning, the roaring was even more deafening!!!

“Longlonglong!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

The tall outer walls were easily toppled, and the beast wave

rolled forward, booming and reducing any obstacle to rubble!!

The genocidal war had started, and the entirety of Gangluo City was startled. In every street and alley, scared shouts could be heard. The wealthy merchants who lived near the Yang Family staggered towards the smoke-filled area of massacre!!

With such a commotion within Gangluo City, it naturally alarmed both the Qin Family and Zhou Family. These two families thought that the battle between families had been settled over at the Recommendation, and hadn't thought that it would be reignited on such a calm night!!

The blood was crimson and eye-shocking. The two families observing from afar didn't intend to interfere at all. Of course, if one party interfered, then the other would definitely not just remain indifferent!

The flames of war blazed through the city, and it caused smoke to fill the air!

When the full moon reached its apex, the battle had converted towards a large scaled skirmish. Chu Tianheng led the Chu Family Guard into the Yang Family's inner residence and fought head on with the Yang Family's soul pet trainers within the ruins!

Chu Tianheng's seventh phase seventh stage Mo Ye was matched against Yang Mansen's seventh phase eighth stage Blood Winged

Trioptic Beast. These two strongest beast type soul pets had a powerful impact. Often, one could see a patch of fifth phase soul pets knocked away during the battle between these two beast type soul pets.

Yet Chu Ming, who was even stronger than Yang Kuo, was a key member in this slaughter. His eighth phase commander rank Light Rhinoceros was the single most terrifying soul pet in Gangluo City. Even the old Yang Kuo had to fear it somewhat. Today, that eighth phase Light Rhinoceros was almost unstoppable. Even the vice family head Yang Ling was effortlessly trampled on!

Chu Mu was a spirit master, able to summon four soul pets. Yet, of his soul pets, other than a few old timer experts of Yang Family that could somewhat fend him off, there wasn't a single other soul pet trainer that could. He alone was enough to fight all the experts of his generation within the Yang Family. Yang Kuo's brother and cousins were almost all killed by the techniques of Chu Ming's four soul pets!

The Yang Family's second generation experts were lead by Yang Mansen. The second strongest, Yang Mantian, had long since been killed by Chu Mu. The rest of the people quickly engaged with Chu Tianling and Chu Tianjue. Chu Mu, who should've gone for the third generation Yang Family members, directly joined the battle of the second generations!

The Yang Family's third generation experts had already all been killed by Chu Mu. Chu Xing, Chu Lang, and Chu Ying and the other third generation members were more than enough to deal with the rest and clean it up!

As for all of the Yang Family's external experts and loyal servants, they had either run away, died, or been dealt with by the Nightmare Palace killers and Devil Attendants!

Chapter 74: Exterminating The Yang Family

(3)

Yang Mancan was already fuming with anger. He never would've thought that the Yang Family would be in such a position because of a trash that should've died four years ago.

Yang Mancan's eyes were fiercely fixed upon Chu Mu. Suddenly, he let out an angry roar, “ Even if I die, I'll kill you!!!!”

Yang Mancan's eighth phase sixth stage servant rank was originally fighting with Chu Tianheng's seventh phase first stage Light Rhinoceros. After suddenly struggling free, it actually ran straight towards Chu Mu, who was currently killing Yang Kuo's fourth son, Yang Fu.

“Chu Mu, careful!!” Chu Tianheng communicated with Chu Mu through remembrance immediately!

Chu Mu quickly started an incantation, and added a layer of Ice Armor to himself!

The Ice Armor's effects could allow Chu Mu's defense to reach near eighth rank. Unless Yang Mancan's eighth phase sixth stage servant rank Bloodthirsty Beast's claws were above the eighth rank, it was impossible for it to breach Chu Mu's defense.

Servant ranks might easily make it to the eighth phase, but Yang Mancan's Bloodthirsty Beast's claws were clearly only at the

seventh rank. Adding on the effects of Blood Ripping Claw, it could just barely break Chu Mu's defense.

“Shua!!!!”

A scratch went past, and it left a bloody line on Chu Mu's chest. This wound wasn't deep, though, as it just barely ripped through Chu Mu's skin.

“Wuwuwu!!!!”

Seeing Chu Mu hurt, Mo Xie immediately let out an angry roar!

Mo Xie immediately broke away from her opponent and cast Death Assault, becoming a silver blur that went towards the Bloodthirsty Beast, knocking a few soul pets in front of her away on the way!

“Six Tail Lock!”

Chu Mu calmly stared at the Bloodthirsty Beast who continued to attack, and he commanded Mo Xie!

Under the effects of Violent Blood Pupil, Mo Xie's power was already at the sixth phase eighth stage. Her silver body passed right in front of the three meter long Bloodthirsty Beast. Her long and chain-like six tails flipped upwards, and they actually lifted up the three meter long Bloodthirsty Beast!!

“Wwuwuwu!!!!

Mo Xie let out an angry roar at the cold moonlight. Immediately, a pale glow fell upon Mo Xie, and her massive demonic aura was released at the same moment!!!

Feeling such a powerful aura, everyone nearby immediately let out expressions of shock, eyeing the devilish Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox that contributed to everyone’s shock!!

The gentle yet gorgeous Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox’s silver fur danced in the air. Compared to the Bloodthirsty Beast’s three meter body, she seemed relatively fragile, but this Bloodthirsty Beast was directly picked up by the tail lock of hers and raised high up!!

“Gezhigezhigezhi~~~~~”

The six tails started constricting, causing a hair raising sound to rise. The Six Tail Lock’s follow up technique, Bone Lock, caused a soul pet’s muscles and bones to be rawly snapped by the six long tails!!!

Under the effects of Violent Blood Pupil, Mo Xie’s power was already at the sixth phase eighth stage. With the species ability kept through Mo Xie’s mutations, under the effects of Moonlight, her power spiked up even further. Six Tailed Lock’s power was even more terrifying than Mo Xie’s claws. Even an eighth phase sixth stage Bloodthirsty beast couldn’t block an attack from Mo Xie

at her peak!

Bones twisted. The powerful and hard to defeat eighth phase sixth stage Bloodthirsty Beast was crippled under this scary atmosphere.....

However, Mo Xie's Six Tail Lock followup abilities hadn't finished. The splendid silver fox tails suddenly burst into demon fire evil flames, burning the eighth phase sixth stage Bloodthirsty Beast's body!

After seeing this scene, Yang Mancan's face paled. The following evil flames that invaded also instantly burnt his soul!

Seeing Yang Mancan's soul damaged, how could Chu Tianheng let go of this opportunity? Immediately, he commanded his seventh phase Light Rhinoceros to attack Yang Mancan!

Horn Kill!

The Light Rhinoceros morphed into a massive diamond shaped light horn, and its long horn drove straight through Yang Mancan's fifth rank soul armor defense, piercing his body!

“Ao!!!!” The Light Rhinoceros whipped its head upwards, and Yang Mancan's body was thrown straight up!!

The Light Rhinoceros then leapt upwards, its two claws ripping two dazzling and intersecting light blades into the air!!!

“Shuashua!!!!” As the two claws ripped open the dark night, it also shredded Yang Mancan’s body to pieces!!

Blood and meat fell from the skies and onto the ground, disgustingly pasting onto the floor.....

Seeing Yang Mancan’s dead body, all of the Yang Family members were dazed. Once Yang Mancan was dead, who else could stop Chu Tianheng’s soul pets?!

After killing Yang Mancan, Chu Tianheng swiftly commanded his soul pets to defeat the remaining soul pets of Yang Mancan.

“Chu Mu, are you alright?” Chu Tianheng looked at the mark on Chu Mu’s chest and asked.

“It’s of no importance.” Chu Mu glanced at the Yang Family mansion which was in ruins, and he opened his mouth to say, “Uncle, we’re more or less done.”

Once Yang Mancan died, the Yang Family had no power left to defend. Very quickly, the battle became a one-sided slaughter.

Blood soaked the floors, reddening a large area, and even soaking into the streets. Soul pet corpses and human corpses were strewn everywhere.....

Before dawn, there was always the darkest part of the night. Yet, as this moment came, the entirety of Yang Family only had the defenseless, the old, the pregnant, or the weak.

Nightmare Palace killers had no feelings of pity. As long as they were on the enemy's side, they would kill them all ruthlessly, definitively leaving none alive.

The Chu Family was different. They only got rid of Yang Family's soul pet trainers and, as long as the rest weren't in the way, they wouldn't kill them.

“What do we do about the rest of these people?” Chu Xing glanced at the remaining hundred members of Yang Family.....

Chu Tianheng looked immediately to Chu Mu, wanting to know Chu Mu's solution. From what Chu Tianheng understood, with Chu Mu's current status in Nightmare Palace, he wouldn't have any mercy for these people. After all, there were a few young generation trainers of the Yang Family still alive.

“Uncle, bring our Family members and leave, this Luo Region isn't fit for us anymore.” Chu Mu didn't look at the remaining Yang Family members and said to Chu Tianheng.

“And those people?” Chu Tianheng said surprised.

“Let them perish by themselves.” Chu Mu said lightly, yet not providing any explanation for his actions.

Chu Tianheng blanked, and his eyes observed Chu Mu, yet he couldn't read even a little hint of mercy in Chu Mu's cold and apathetic eyes.

“Okay, let's leave here.” Chu Tianheng nodded and didn't ask Chu Mu for a reason, as he started to gather all the members of direct descent of Chu Family.

In reality, before they even started to exterminate all of the Yang Family, the Chu Family had already quietly sold all of their wealth, and they were ready to start a Family migration with everything they had.

The suggestion of migrating the Family was raised by Chu Mu. In the entire Luo Region, other than the Luo Region Sect with experts everywhere, it was almost the land of Yang Family's everywhere. Dealing such a destructive blow to Gangluo City's Yang Family meant they would definitely suffer revenge from the Luo Region Yang Family, so the Chu Family definitely couldn't stay in the Luo Region for any longer.

In reality, from the very beginning, Chu Mu had already made plans to migrate the Family, so when the Yang Family suggested a peaceful solution, Chu Mu only wanted the Yang Family to pay enough money. As for territory and industries, he didn't ask for them because of the Family migration this time.

This time, the Chu Family's migration only included all the direct descendants of Chu Ming as well as important Family

servants. Before Chu Mu returned to Gangluo City, the Chu Family was weakening by the day, and non-direct descendant members were fewer and fewer. Because of that, after making the decision of moving the Family, Chu Ming and Chu Tianheng also bluntly dismissed all those who weren't core members, and they started a migration.

The location of migration had been discussed a few days ago, and they planned to move to South Region, which was even more south than the Wo Gu Region.

Now, the Chu Family had pillaged near 30 million gold's worth of assets. Adding on the selling of all Chu Family property, they had almost 60 million gold. Once these assets were brought to the South Region, they could buy any piece of land and make it the base of the Family for future development.

30 million was enough to buy a seventh level territory. With a seventh level territory, the Chu Family could barely return back to its original state. Rather than trying to develop under the suppression of the Yang Family in the Luo Region, they might as well just exterminate the Yang Family of Gangluo City and migrate to the more remote yet less restricted South Region in order to create a land of Chu Family.

Of course, Chu Mu had another very important reason for telling the Family to migrate.

Having the Hidden Dragon Egg that was split off from the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, Chu Mu knew that many people wanted it. If Chu Mu stayed as Xia Guanghan's subordinate and Xia

Guanghan found out, with Xia Guanghan's character, he would definitely kill him with no mercy and steal the Hidden Dragon Egg.

However, the Hidden Dragon Egg wasn't Chu Mu's greatest worry. His real worry was still the continuously mutating Mo Xie. Xia Guanghan had already seen Chu Mu's Moonlight Fox on Cyan Nightmare Main Island.

Three years later, Chu Mu owned a Evil Flamed Six Tail Demon Fox, and after a while, if Mo Xie continued to mutate, Xia Guanghan would definitely realize that Chu Mu wasn't just switching soul pets and that it was his Moonlight Fox mutating instead.

A continuously mutating soul pet was truly a priceless treasure that would make anyone's eyes red. Continuing as Xia Guanghan's subordinate was definitely very dangerous, so Chu Mu wanted to leave Xia Guanghan's control in the near future.

Freeing himself of Xia Guanghan's control wasn't too hard, yet his Family in Gangluo City could easily be affected because of him. If they moved to somewhere far away, Xia Guanghan would be hard pressed to take revenge on the Chu Family, and Chu Mu would then be no longer be bound by anything, becoming truly free.

Chapter 75: Advancement, Eighth Remembrance Spirit Teacher

Dawn broke, dispelling the darkest moments of the night.

As the first morning light fell, what twinkled under it wasn't the usual dew on the plants in the Yang Clan's mansion, but was crimson blotches.

This ray of sun witnessed a revolution of Gangluo City in the past ten years. The largest and most powerful Yang Clan of Gangluo City, in one night, was strewn with corpses and bathed in blood, leaving less than one hundred dependents shivering in the blood, with the rest running away. The old city master mansion was now blood-stained grounds.

Yet, one of the four big clans of Gangluo City, the Chu Clan, also disappeared without a trace. No one noticed when this clan left. It was as if they had evaporated into thin air, leaving only messy horse tracks that lead eastward.

Gangluo City's east side had two roads, one was northeast towards the Jia Region, and the other went towards Huiyan City, which was the road at where Chu Mu had robbed the Yang Clan's money.

On the way to the Jia Region, Chu Mu rode his Night Thunder Dream Beast along to constantly create messy horse prints.....

“That should be enough?” Chu Mu turned around to look at the marks along the road and then looked up at the dense stormclouds.

Chu Mu originally only wanted to check when it would rain, but he unexpectedly noticed a fire red organism fly close by from Gangluo City.

The fire red organism slowly approached Chu Mu, and it fell in front of him.

Chu Mu recognized this organism. It was naturally Qing Menger’s Flame Bird, and the person on it was the gentle and moving Qing Menger.

Seeing Qing Menger, Chu Mu smiled and asked, “What is it?”

“Are you leaving?” Qing Menger’s gaze flickered. Before, Qing Menger had heard from Chu Mu that after he was done with the Yang Clan, he would leave. Thus, once the bloodbath ended, Qing Menger immediately headed towards the Chu Clan, only to find that everyone had left already, so she chased the horse prints east.

“En, there’s still much to do.” Chu Mu said.

Chu Mu had already heard some news of his father from Chu Tianheng and Chu Mu, but Chu Mu temporarily couldn’t go searching for his father, because Nightmare Palace had already sent him news to meet up with Princess Jinrou at the Jia Region.

To garner the most time for the Chu Clan to finish migrating, Chu Mu still couldn't openly disobey the wishes of Nightmare Palace. Therefore, Chu Mu still had to go to the Jia Region to look after Princess Jinrou.

“Then.....then we.....how will I be able to find you.....” As she spoke, Qing Menger's eyes already started tearing up. When there is a slight loss of control in emotions, tears will start falling.

“There's no need. You can cultivate well in the Luo Region Sect, and the Gangluo City will become the city of the Qin Clan.....” Chu Mu looked at the poor Qing Menger. In reality, most of Chu Mu's feelings for her were brotherly love and nothing more. As for the marriage, it seemed to have long since been disbanded, and only Qing Menger herself still cared about it.....

As Chu Mu saw it, after the clan moved, he probably wouldn't have anymore interactions with Qing Menger, unless she was willing to move with his own clan to the South Region.

“Why is there no need.....” Qing Menger felt that Chu Mu didn't care about her, and tears instantly slid down her cheek, as she looked awfully wronged.

“I won't stay here, if there's a chance in the future.....let's leave that for the future.” Chu Mu extended his hand and wiped the tears off of the pitiful girl.

Qing Menger looked teary eyed at Chu Mu and murmured, “I have something to tell you.....”

“Maybe next time, saying it now isn’t meaningful.” Chu Mu shook his head and glanced at the flickering shadows within the forest.

Chu Mu had already disbanded all of the Nightmare Palace’s killers. These killers were Xia Guanghan’s people, so Chu Mu didn’t wish for them to find out the direction of the Chu Clan’s migration. Yet, if Qing Menger kept in contact with him now, once he struggled free from Xia Guanghan, Qing Menger could very likely become a target of Xia Guanghan.

Qing Menger looked dazed at Chu Mu. The Chu Mu four years later suddenly felt incomprehensibly foreign. Such unfamiliarity made it hard for her to stop her tears.

“I wanted to tell you since last time.....” Qing Menger seemed to muster the courage, yet she then she remembered the embarrassing nature of her next sentence and lowered her head, unable to look at Chu Mu’s eyes.....

Finally, Qing Menger said what she wanted to say to Chu Mu. Once she said it, Qing Menger’s face was already bright red, tender and alluring.

Yet, when she rose her head and tried to take a peek at Chu Mu’s reaction, she stared dumbfoundedly.

Qing Menger looked on as she saw Chu Mu had long since rode away on his Night Thunder Dream Beast. A sour feeling welled up

in her heart, and the tears in her eyes couldn't help but drip down her face in heated trails.....

This moment was like four years ago again, when she hesitated and didn't speak, wanting to find a better moment to tell him. Yet, in a moment, this person disappeared completely from her life.....

On the empty roads, Chu Mu sat alone on his Night Thunder Dream Beast, running towards the Jia Region. With a low emotional quotient, he didn't notice that the girl he left behind already had a face covered in tears.....

Four years of killing made Chu Mu distinctly slower in such thoughts. Yet, even if Chu Mu noticed, he would at most have given a promise to Qing Menger-a meaningless promise. Rather than that, it would be better to think of such problems in the future when they meet again. Then, there wouldn't be that many restraints.....

Gangluo City was in the northeast part of Luo Region. Passing through a few cities and finally reaching the regional boundary meant the arrival of the Jia Region.

After running for an entire night, Chu Mu also felt tired, so he randomly picked a little city and landed.

As usual, when night fell, Chu Mu fed his soul power to his White Nightmare, and immediately he felt white flames appear on his body.....

Chu Mu furrowed his brows. The spontaneous ignition of the white soul flames meant that the White Nightmare's power had increased another stage, and it also meant that Chu Mu would have to withstand the burning pain of the white soul flames as it grew.....

Such pain was completely unbearable to the normal person, as dying probably felt better. Yet, with years of training, Chu Mu's soul was, to some degree, resistant to white soul flames already, so the pain was somewhat weakened.

“Sixth phase fifth stage.....” When the white flames slowly died down, Chu Mu smiled bitterly. If it were at the sixth phase fifth stage, Chu Mu would have to feed most of his soul power to it again.....

When Chu Mu hit seventh remembrance spirit teacher, he could gradually use forty percent of his soul power. However, once the White Nightmare grew, he would only be able to use thirty percent.

Helplessly shaking his head, Chu Mu could only close his eyes and continue to cultivate to let his soul power recover swiftly.....

Yet, what made Chu Mu happy was, just as his soul power was moderately recovered, he suddenly felt a relaxation throughout his

body as his remembrance also increased!!

“I’ve advanced!” Chu Mu felt joy. He didn’t think that after he exterminated Yang Clan, he would reach the eighth remembrance spirit teacher!

A soul pet trainer’s real power was mostly concentrated on the soul pets they controlled, and their personal cultivation level was second. In reality, many soul pet abilities were affected by the soul pet trainers’ level, receiving certain boosts.

For example, the power of Mo Xie’s Evil Stare was decided by Mo Xie’s own mental strength. However, it also accounted for Chu Mu’s soul remembrance. If the opponent’s soul remembrance were lower than Chu Mu’s, Evil Stare would definitely work very well against their soul pet. The same was true vice versa-if the opponent’s remembrance was higher than Chu Mu’s, then Mo Xie’s Evil Stare would be less effective.

Chu Mu also had the soul technique Chong Mei, which allowed Chu Mu to copy his own soul pet’s ability. The copied ability’s power was also decided by Chu Mu’s soul remembrance and technique level!

Eighth remembrance spirit teacher, when looking through all of the Luo Region, was still considered top tier. In fact, amongst the younger generation, there were very little people with a remembrance as high as Chu Mu.

Chu Mu’s cultivation speed was very fast, especially in the four

years where he signed the pact with White Nightmare. The White Nightmare constantly ate at Chu Mu's soul power. Once Chu Mu didn't have enough, it would eat Chu Mu's soul. This way, Chu Mu was constantly spurred on, completely excavating all his potential in training. Reaching the eighth remembrance spirit teacher at the age of eighteen was rare, even in Nightmare Palace.

“Two more remembrances. Though my increases in power have been getting slower and slower, I'm certain I'll get to spirit master.....” Chu Mu smiled and said confidently.

Once he reached spirit master, Chu Mu would be able to summon three soul pets. With three soul pets, he would no longer be at a disadvantage against other spirit teachers.

More importantly, once he reached spirit master, Chu Mu would finally be able to summon the terrifying monarch ranked white nightmare that he had been feeding for the past four years!

According to Chu Mu's estimation, the monarch rank white nightmare's fighting strength was even higher than the unmutated Mo Xie, and the White Nightmare would possibly be at the seventh phase at that time.

Once the seventh phase monarch rank was summoned, Chu Mu's power might no longer be restricted to the younger generation. Many soul pet trainers would no longer be his match.

Also, Chu Mu's spatial ring still had a Hidden Dragon Egg. If Chu Mu didn't guess incorrectly, it was also at the monarch rank. Once

he reached spirit master, Chu Mu could start training the offspring of the powerful Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon.

Reaching the eighth remembrance, as the remembrance went up, Chu Mu's perception increased as well. At that moment, Chu Mu also released his remembrance to see just how far he could perceive now.....

Chu Mu originally just wanted to test out his stronger remembrance, yet he suddenly noticed a tiny energy ripple that came from above the house, seemingly to sneakily approach his room!!

Chapter 76: Meeting A Powerful Enemy Alone

Chu Mu was alarmed. To the constantly killing Chu Mu, such a tiny energy ripple and reserved aura was too familiar. It was the hidden ability of some night attacking soul pet!!

“Wuwu~~~” With her strong perceptive abilities, Mo Xie also immediately sensed that something was off, as she quietly let out a muffled hum and bared her teeth, her silver eyes silently watching outside the window.

Chu Mu looked gravely out of the window, and he quietly casted an incantation to add the effects of Ice Armor onto himself.

Mo Xie had already lightly jumped onto the floor. Her four paws quietly started burning with Demon Fire Evil Flames, ready at for the appearance of the soul pet any time!

Outside the window, a black head suddenly appeared. Hanging downwards, its green eyes looked straight into Chu Mu’s room, emitting a dangerous light!!

“Wandering Eyed Ghost!”

Chu Mu, in one glance, figured out the organism that had poked its head out.

Wandering Eyed Ghost: Undead World – ghost type – Wandering Eyed Ghost species – middle class commander rank

In this area, ghost type soul pets should be very rarely seen. Yet, in front of him was one, and it was clearly going for him. At this moment, Chu Mu already guessed something!

“Mo Xie, Evil Flame Claw!!” Chu Mu immediately commanded!!

Mo Xie had long been waiting to attack. The moment Chu Mu gave the command, her body darted forward. When she was still airborne, her body suddenly blazed with demon fire evil flames, almost instantly removing her Pitiful Appearance as transformed into the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox, directly ripping towards the Wandering Eyed Ghost!!!

The Wandering Eyed Ghost originally wanted to ambush Chu Mu, yet it didn't foresee that Chu Mu had already discovered it, so it didn't have time to dodge. A large gash was instantly inflicted by Mo Xie onto its pale face, causing her demon fire evil flames to dart into this ghost type soul pet's body!!!

“Ewu!!!!” The Wandering Eyed Ghost immediately let out a vicious scream, and its white, pall-covered body fell backward from the third floor, and it heavily landed on the somewhat unfrequented streets!!

“Damn it!!”

On the roof, an old man's angry voice sounded!

“Vine Dragon Dance!”

The old man immediately sent a command to his soul pet.

Chu Mu in his room suddenly felt the entire room start shaking. Quickly reacting, Chu Mu immediately jumped out the window.

“Beng!!!!!”

Almost just as Chu Mu jumped out of the window, the room that Chu Mu was in suddenly made a loud noise, and the entire four-floor building collapsed amidst the rumbling sound!!

When Chu Mu was still in the air, he started to chant an incantation, and very decisively summoned his Night Thunder Dream Beast. The Night Thunder Dream Beast ran out from the dark and, almost just as Chu Mu was about to land, appeared under Chu Mu and carried him forward swiftly.....

“Hong hong hong hong!!!!!”

Ten meters of housing fell towards them. The Night Thunder Dream Beast continuously made a few lightning quick dodges and narrowly brought Chu Mu out of the collapsing house and into the empty streets.

Upon reaching safety, Chu Mu also turned around, and he suddenly saw a giant vine appear from the rubbles of the hotel!!

This vine was twenty meters long and was completely from the bottom of the hotel. As it waved around, it waved the entire structure to the ground. It openly extended onto the houses on this street, as if it was a flexible plant constantly waving around!

“Heavens, what is that?!”

“Is that a Devil Vine!!!!”

Screaming sounds immediately echoed through the little alley, and the nearby residents awoken by the terrifying creature ran far away!

Seeing the massive dragon and snake-like organism, Chu Mu couldn't help but draw in a breath. Even if he had sixth rank soul armor, if he took a hit from that massive vine, he would be injured!

“Little kid, you seem to be quite fast at reacting. But, if you obediently take this death, maybe you'll be spared from the pain.” From the other house, a somewhat bony old man stood there and watched Chu Mu from above with his brown eyes, like an eagle.

Seeing this old man, Chu Mu immediately creased his brows. This old man was someone that Chu Mu recognized-it was the unnamed servant that Yang Luosen brought. Chu Mu didn't think that the old man actually chased him and harbored a killing intent

for him!

Chu Mu naturally knew that the old man was very powerful so, without any hesitation, he started chanting another incantation.....

Chu Mu's two eyes slowly became red and let out a ruthless aura. This aura slowly infected Mo Xie, who was facing off with the ghost type Wandering Eyed Ghost.....

Mo Xie's pupils slowly turned red and blinked demonically. This glow then slowly burst open and fell upon Mo Xie like a blood red armor.

Violent Blood Pupil!!

As Chu Mu's remembrance increased, the effects of Violent Blood Pupil also increased significantly. Mo Xie's power abruptly increased from the sixth phase fourth stage to the sixth phase ninth stage, raising a total of five stages!

“Wuwuwu~~~~” Her long fur danced in the wind as she showcased her demonic aura and braveness, facing off against the seventh phase second stage Wandering Eyed Ghost!!

The Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox's talent was, in itself, comparable to many commander rank soul pets. Mo Xie's continuously mutating soul pet talent was even higher than normal, and when combined with Chu Mu's type strengthening on

her, simply speaking from talent, Mo Xie was already comparable to a high quality high class commander rank. Thus, fighting the seventh phase high quality middle class commander rank Wandering Eyed Ghost wasn't unimaginable.

The always wild Mo Xie was almost without any fear, jumping straight towards the elusive Wandering Eyed Ghost!!

“Wandering Eyed Ghost, entangle this Six Tailed Demon Fox. Devil Vine, block off this kid's retreat paths. Storm Eagle, kill his Dream Beast!” The nameless old servant immediately gave his servant a command!

The Wandering Eyed Ghost's face was torn by Mo Xie, and it was already furious. When Mo Xie charged towards it, it also let out a shrill ghost scream and pounced at Mo Xie!!

“Beng!!!!!!”

The terrifyingly destructive Devil Vine again appeared with its massive vine, and it actually laid across the entire street, shattering the limestone pavement and toppling a bunch of houses on both sides!!

Chu Mu was just about to ride his Night Thunder Dream Beast that way for escape, but he was immediately blocked off by the Devil Vine. Without another choice, he could only switch directions!!

“Yi!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

A shrill sound came from the air and a dark, cyan, and massive figure brought a scary gale with it as it dived down. Instantly, the entire alleyway was in turmoil, and the ruins created by the Devil Vine flew up into the air!!

Realizing the terrifying power of the eighth phase Storm Eagle, Chu Mu didn't dare to fight it head on, so he immediately commanded his Night Thunder Dream Beast to cast Night Dance in order to merge with the dark!

The Night Thunder Dream Beast took strides and continued to run, its black body slowly merging into the darkness with Chu Mu as it ran, disappearing into the night.

“Heng, an insignificant little trick, think you can escape?” The nameless old servant snickered but immediately casted an incantation!

When the spell was uttered, the nameless servant's eyes suddenly glinted with a piercing light that shrouded the night with its sharpness, almost instantly seeing through the Night Thunder Dream Beast's Night Dance!

“Wing Slash!”

Finding Chu Mu's tracks, the nameless old servant instantly commanded his storm eagle to attack Chu Mu!!

“Yi~~~~~”

The storm eagle let out a sharp scream, and its dark cyan wings violently flapped once, bringing it into the air so it could quickly divebomb again as it extended its blade-like feathered wings!!

“Shuaa!!!!!!”

The dark cyan Wing Slash was ten meters long, and it was like a long crescent blade, chopping from above!!!

“Peng~~~~”

The Wing Slash fell straight onto Chu Mu, and his Ice Armor instantly shattered. The sixth level soul armor shined dimly, and even its defenses were also almost broken through.

“Demolition Wave!!”

Chu Mu tightly held onto Night Thunder Dream Beats and commanded it to cast its ability!!

“Hui!!!!”

An electric like dark pulse immediately appeared on the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s dream horns. With a neigh from the Night Thunder Dream Beast, the dream horn shot out a dark energy

entity!!

“Weng~~~~~”

A dark light shot past, and dark ripples went out with the dark light as the center. The ripples transformed into a vibrating energy that shattered everything nearby!

“Yi!!!!!!!”

The Storm Eagle’s body was very quick. Just as the Night Thunder Dream Beast emitted its Demolition Wave, the eighth phase soul pet had already flown into higher clouds, causing its dark cyan body to disappear.

“Ye, dodge!”

Just as the Night Thunder Dream Beast finished its attack, its body immediately leaped to the side continuously.....

“Beng!!!!!!!”

A large bang exploded under the Night Thunder Dream Beast, and the massive snake-like vine again poked out of the ground, brashly brandishing its fearful body!!

Countless thin vines suddenly extended from the huge vine, and the Night Thunder Dream Beast kept jumping around, constantly

switching positions.

“Thunder Tailwhip!”

“Hui!!!!!”

The Night Thunder Dream Beast’s white tail was quickly charged with purple lightning. With a sweep of its long and elegant tail, it broke off dozens of vines that tried to bind the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s body.

“Kid, weren’t you so arrogant that day in Gangluo City? Why are you like a dead dog now, dodging left and right? Let me see your arrogance again!” The nameless old servant laughed out loud.

In Gangluo City, Chu Mu had a group of Nightmare Palace killers, so the old servant was wary, naturally causing him not to dare to attack. Yet, now that Chu Mu was alone, the old servant had to wash away his former shame and also take revenge for Yang Luosen’s Ghost Winged White Bone Blood Demon!

Chapter 77: Wanting To Kill, Acting An Escape

Nightmare Palace had clear rules that young members who had the title of Nightmare Prince wasn't subject to allocation by any high level member. Even if they committed heinous crimes, only the eighth level title Lu Shanli and the Inner Nightmare Palace elders were qualified to adjudicate them.

Also, in order to protect the younger generation's power, the higher generation members were not allowed to fight against the younger generation members. After all, with a difference in age came a difference in power.

The nameless old servant was clearly an older member like such. An old member that was still a spirit teacher without even an eighth phase commander rank was definitely a third-rate character among the Nightmare Palace older people.

Yet, such a third-rate character of Nightmare Palace was still an unprecedentedly strong foe to Chu Mu, who was still in his teens!

Out of all of Chu Mu's soul pets, other than Mo Xie, who was imbued with Violent Blood Pupil and Blood Light, who could compete against the old fellow's Wandering Eyed Ghost, Chu Mu's other soul pets would be hard pressed to deal with the eighth phase second stage Storm Eagle and the seventh phase third stage Devil Vine.

Upon meeting such a strong enemy, Chu Mu decisively chose to

run. However, this old fellow was very experienced in controlling his soul pet, so even when Chu Mu was riding the extremely agile soul pet Night Thunder Dream Beast, he was still limited by the Devil Vine, making it hard for him to leave the battlegrounds.

“Honghonghong~~~~”

On the sides of the street, another group of structures fell. The Night Thunder Dream Beast suddenly sped up and started running very quickly over the rooftops.

“Change position!”

Chu Mu naturally knew that the Devil Vine had more than one giant vine, so he immediately told his Night Thunder Dream Beast to switch directions!

“Honghong~~~~~”

Indeed, the room ahead suddenly collapsed, and another massive vine lifted up from below, like a green monster that escaped the earth!

The Night Thunder Dream Beast had already switched positions, perfectly dodging the next attack.

“Mo Xie, run!” After merging into the night, Chu Mu immediately told Mo Xie through remembrance.

Mo Xie's body immediately morphed into three mirages to dodge the Wandering Eyed Ghost's claw, and she ran towards Chu Mu's position.

The nameless old servant let out a humph, naturally seeing Chu Mu's attempt to escape and immediately sent a command to the eighth phase Storm Eagle!

“Yi!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

The massive Storm Eagle let out a shrill screech, and dived down from the skies. A cyan color covered the steel-like feathers, and the eagle became a dark cyan meteor, splitting the night sky of the little town and falling straight down!

“Huhuhuhu~~~~~”

A swirl of spinning air pressured from above. When Chu Mu lifted his head, he was surprised to find the cyan colored bird already falling from above.

“Mo Xie, Molten Fury!”

“Wuwuwu~~~~~”

The running Mo Xie immediately let out a long call, her blood razed pupils burning with the most vigorous flames!!!

“Hong!!!!” A dazzling hot fire lotus suddenly exploded above Chu Mu, its piercing fire light lighting up this little night town, illuminating all the buildings bright red!!

Fire light marked Chu Mu’s face. The head raised Chu Mu discovered that the eighth phase Storm Eagle’s body only slightly paused under the power of Molten Fury. Relying on the powerful stream of air surrounding it, it travelled straight through the exploded Molten Fury, still charging straight towards him and his Night Thunder Dream Beast!

“Night, Extreme Speed!” Chu Mu immediately casted and added the effects of Wind Ride onto his Night Thunder Dream Beast,.He then told his Night Thunder Dream Beast to cast an acceleration technique.

“Hui!!!!” The Night Thunder Dream Beast let out a neigh, and its handsome running body suddenly sparked with messy purple electric light!!

“Sou!!!!!!!!!!!!!!” The Night Thunder Dream Beast suddenly sped up, and the electric light traced the path of the Night Thunder Dream Beast as it sped across the night sky.....

The effects of Extreme Speed and Death Assault were different, as it couldn’t instantly cause a soul pet to double its speed, but it could allow it to be 30% faster for a long period of time.

With the Wind Ride that Chu Mu applied as well, the Night

Thunder Dream Beast's speed was increased by 50%!!

The Storm Eagle's Starfall ability fell, and it heavily dropped into a citizen's house, instantly causing a shattering force field to proliferate wildly outwards from the point of landing!!

The eighth phase Storm Eagle's Starfall was at least at the seventh level, and it could cover a radius of twenty meters. With the Night Thunder Dream Beast's 50% increased speed, it could barely run out of the attack range!

“Huhuhu~~~~~” The terrifying energy gushed towards Chu Mu from behind. Chu Mu turned around to look at the house that had turned into a crater, and he also had a lingering fear.

This eighth phase Storm Eagle's techniques were all of the seventh level. With Night Thunder Dream Beast's defense, once it was hit, it would definitely be heavily wounded.

Seeing Chu Mu's Night Thunder Dream Beast being this swift, the nameless old servant's expression became gloomy, and his eyes quickly noticed the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox that lagged a few steps behind.

“Don't let that Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox leave!” The nameless old servant commanded immediately!

The Storm Eagle flew out of the shattered ruins and locked onto the charging Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox.

It's dark cyan wings quickly flapped, and the storm eagle flew back into the air in a spiral. As it was spiralling, it again used its immense power to make a huge gust of wind turn into a powerful whirlwind!!

The Storm Eagle's Whirlwind was formed very quickly, and it could reach ten meters in range. Turbidly, it stood in the middle of the town. Even the residents far away were fearful of this sight!!

If the Whirlwind was only at the sixth level, then Mo Xie could completely rely on her speed and run straight through. Yet, this whirlwind was clearly at the eighth level, so charging in would definitely cause her to get sucked up and ripped to pieces!

Mo Xie's escape route was sealed, and the smart Mo Xie immediately switched directions of escape, instead running towards the main road!!

“Beng!!!!!!!!!!”

The empty limestone road exploded suddenly, and the omnipresent Devil Vine appeared again, crashing straight into the running Mo Xie from below!

“Wu~~~~~”

Mo Xie let out a whimper, and her soft body was tossed into the air before heavily falling into the streets had long since been in

shambles!

“Kill this Six Tailed Demon Fox first!” The nameless servant knew that chasing Chu Mu back was difficult, so he immediately commanded his three powerful soul pets to attack the injured Mo Xie.

Mo Xie’s defense wasn’t that strong. That hit to her abdomen had clearly caused a very serious wound, affected her speed heavily. She could no longer explode with the speed she had before and, with the continuous attacks of the Devil Vine, Mo Xie’s space for evasion slowly shrank.

Not far off, Chu Mu turned around to look at Mo Xie, who was surrounded by three soul pets and his face became grave!

“Wuwuwu~~~~~”

Mo Xie’s voice immediately travelled into Chu Mu’s mental world. Seeing Mo Xie dragging her wounded self, constantly dodging through the shattered streets and houses, Chu Mu gnashed his teeth even harder!

“Night, Night Dance!” Chu Mu immediately commanded his Night Thunder Dream Beast.

Night Thunder Dream Beast turned around, and firmly ran into the darkness outside of town, its figure slowly disappearing into the night.

The nameless old servant glanced at Chu Mu, who abandoned his own soul pet and smiled, saying condescendingly, “Also a craven and cowardly person only interested in living. Heng, without this Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox, he is but trash-easily killed at any time!”

Chu Mu had killed Yang Luosen’s strongest main soul pet Ghost Winged White Bone Blood Demon, and now the old servant was going to kill Chu Mu’s Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox. It could be counted as revenge for Yang Luosen.

.....

The sparse black clouds slowly dispersed, causing the hazy moonlight to become brighter, falling upon the constantly rumbling town.

The denser the moonlight, the stronger the effects of Moon Essence. Mo Xie’s abdomen wound was currently quickly healing, and her speed slowly became 30% faster than her normal speed.

“Ugh~~~~~”

The blood colored ghost claws ripped through the black night and slashed across Mo Xie’s body. Just as it was about to rip through Mo Xie’s neck, Mo Xie’s figure suddenly became a phantom and slowly faded in the moonlight.....

Mo Xie's real body slowly appeared in the silver light. Suddenly, she stepped onto her devil flames and casted Flame Step to bizarrely change direction, running instead in the opposite direction.....

“Pupupupupu!!!!!!”

Like a storm, dark cyan feather blades rained down from above, covering Mo Xie's original route. Yet, having cast flame step to gorgeously change directions, Mo Xie ran right in tangent of the feather rain, just managing to dodge the Storm Eagle's ability.

“Damn it, what variety is this Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox, why is its speed and dodging capabilities so abnormal!” The nameless old servant cursed!

The effects of Moon Essence and Violent Blood Pupil caused Mo Xie's power to be raised to the seventh stage, yet with an outstanding talent in speed, Mo Xie, in the encircling of the three soul pets, though pressed and hurried, hadn't really been locked down. Within the encirclement, Mo Xie's absolute speed was displayed brilliantly.

“Wuwuwuwu~~~~~”

Suddenly, the repositioned Mo Xie let out a call, and her two eyes burned with a crimson red flame!!!

Molten Fury!!

Mo Xie's Molten Fury was cast again. The sixth level Molten Fury, under the effects of demon fire evil flames and her amazing control of flames, had the reached seventh level!

Mo Xie's attack wasn't directed towards any soul pet but was sent straight towards the nameless old servant!!

The old servant laughed coldly, and he very leisurely casted a spell, applying the seventh level defensive skill Gem Armor onto himself. Such a seventh level fire attack couldn't do anything to him, at most wasting some of his soul power.....

“Chong Mei – Molten Fury!”

Suddenly, a cold voice sounded out in the dark night, lowly echoing through the nameless old servant's ears!

The old servant was startled, and he bewilderingly turned around. Shocked, he found a pair of pale white flamed pupils staring at him hidden in the night!

Chapter 78: Greater Fame

A lot of the time Chu Mu and Mo Xie's synergy didn't need any form of communication. Not only that, Mo Xie was Chu Mu's first soul pet, so how could Chu Mu abandon Mo Xie and run away himself!?

The pale soul flames of anger burned brightly, and it revealed Chu Mu's tall and straight figure!

Though the flames were silent, they emitted the coldest of auras, making even the nameless old servant feel waves of coldness, causing his soul to shiver under the influence of this soul flame!

Right after Chu Mu fed his White Nightmare, he reached the eighth remembrance spirit teacher, and the soul power within him was perfectly at its full capacity. Even after giving Mo Xie Violent Blood Pupil, he could still cast Molten Fury!

“Wuwuwu~~~~~”

Mo Xie's Molten Fury had been completed already. The crimson demon fire evil flames violently exploded where Mo Xie's gaze fell, causing an even more shocking fire lotus to cover the skies of the town. The waves of flames were burning bright red as they came crashing down with all its heat!!

At the same time, the pale white fire lotus blossomed within the red demon fire evil flames. Demonic white, lavish red, and the ghostly burn of the soul coupled with blazing heat of the evil

flames!

The sixth level technique Molten Fury had reached the seventh level under the casting of the eighth remembrance soul pet trainer Chu Mu. With the soul burn of the pale white soul flames, the technique neared the eighth level!

Yet, this wasn't all its power. Mo Xie's demon fire evil flame Molten Fury interlaced with Chu Mu's, causing this technique to reach the terrifying power of the eighth level!!

The Seventh level and eighth level were only one level apart, but it was a distance countless soul pets could never leap. Once leaped, their power would increase by a large amount!

Chu Mu and Mo Xie's Molten Fury overlay was double the strength of the most basic eighth level technique. Such an attack would seriously wound even an eighth level defense, let alone the puny seventh level defense of the nameless old servant!

“Honghonghong!!!!!!!”

Pale white and vibrant red!

They magnificently blew up above the entire little town, sending scary fire energy rippling outwards. Everything in a fifty meter radius was toppled, and the destructive fire waves got as far as hundreds of meters away, starting a wave of panicked screams among the citizens of the town!!

The unnamed old servant wore a fifth level soul armor. Under the effects of the seventh level technique Gem Armor, it caused his defense to barely reach the eighth level. However, the power of the Molten Fury that costed Chu Mu more than half his soul power was immense. With the addition of a molten fury cast by the seventh phase Mo Xie, its power was even stronger than double a basic eighth level ability!

Eighth level power was something only an eighth phase high quality commander rank or seventh phase Monarch Rank could use. Even though the nameless old servant had thought Chu Mu might come back to catch him off guard, he never thought that Chu Mu had such a potent combination of techniques hidden!!

At the Recommendation, the battle with Yang Luosen was single control. Though almost every soul pet had been summoned and had used all their power, a Chu Mu forced to do single control was definitely not on the same level as a Chu Mu that was completely unrestricted. This was true especially when he had enough soul power, Chu Mu could borrow the White Nightmare's flames without any apprehension!!

The blazing flames of fury immediately engulfed the nameless old servant's body. His pupils continuously dilated as he looked shocked at the consuming flames, yet he couldn't put up any resistance!!

The Molten Fury burned. The nameless old servant's three soul pets had also been blasted away from the flame's impact. Within a hundred meter radius, all the streets, residences, and shops were

decorated with two different colored flames.

Dust permeated the space, and everything was in shambles. The thousand or so residents of the town had mostly moved far away as they looked worriedly at their burning village, showing emotions of great shock.....

This little town's strongest soul pet trainer was but a spirit soldier that had a fifth phase high class warrior rank-the Raging Flame Fairy. It hadn't even learned the technique Molten Fury, and its strongest attack could, at most, cause a building to be set on fire.

Now, compared to this terrifying Molten Fury, the Raging Flame Fairy's fire type abilities were like a little candle compared to the raging fire-not even worthy of mention. After seeing this frightening fire, the little city's soul pet trainers had no other emotion than shock. They didn't even dare to band together to protest against Chu Mu, who had damaged the entire town.

.....

Standing on the streetside with flames dancing everywhere, Chu Mu retracted his Night Thunder Dream Beast, who was somewhat afraid of fire and looked towards a hidden figure at the end of the street!

With her silver fur floating around, Mo Xie also jumped out of the ruins and slowly walked up in front of Chu Mu, her demonic eyes watching the shadow that was trembling with trepidation.

“You think I can’t detect you just because you didn’t attack?”
Chu Mu’s eyes suddenly glowed with a demonic silver glow!

Chong Mei, Evil Stare!!

After using almost fifty percent of his soul power, the recently leveled up Chu Mu could still cast a lower cost technique!

Evil Stare. Even though it was only a fifth level mental technique, because Chu Mu was a full four remembrances higher than Yang Luosen, this demon type mental technique could cause a formidable mental attack towards Yang Luosen!

In the far end, Yang Luosen’s face was already pale to the extreme. At the Recommendation, his soul had already been burned by Mo Xie’s demon fire evil flames, and he had already been hurt. Though there were still two souls untouched, if he had to summon again, it would definitely increase the burden on his soul. Not to mention that all his powerful soul pets had been damaged by Chu Mu already.....

Yang Luosen could trust the nameless old servant, and thought that he could easily deal with Chu Mu. However, he didn’t think that even under the three powerful soul pets, Chu Mu could still run away and turn around to burn the nameless old servant to death!!

A deep chill suddenly settled on his entire body. At this point, Yang Luosen could only pray that the three soul pets of the old

servant that were sent flying would quickly come back and preoccupy Chu Mu.....

However, the Molten Fury that was double the strength of a beginner eighth level move had blasted the three soul pets over a hundred meters away. The Devil Vine and Wandering Eyed Ghost, who were afraid of fire, didn't dare to come near, and the Storm Eagle was still buried in the ruins.

“Mo Xie!”

Chu Mu flipped over and landed on Mo Xie.

If Chu Mu cast the double molten fury against a powerful opponent, Chu Mu would definitely not cast it lightly and would instead choose to cast it at a crucial moment instead. The most important thing was to cast it while the opponent was looking at one without alarm, or with belittlement. One could then kill them out of surprise. Since Yang Luosen saw this, how could Chu Mu still let him leave alive?!

“Wuwuwu~~~~~”

After Chu Mu sat still, Mo Xie rose her head to howl. Her speed suddenly increased twofold as she casted Death Assault.

Evil Flame Claws!!

The flames imprinted their light onto the little town, and a

flaming red edge passed over!!

The crimson blood was splattered out in the flames, yet in the next moment, disintegrated in the flames. Invading his inner body, the flames burned Yang Luosen's body to ashes!

The Luo Region Nightmare Prince, other than Luo Region Sect experts, was the strongest teen of all. Yet from that day on, the Luo Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen would no longer exist. The entirety of Luo Region would never again hear about him intensely defeating some powerful expert. He would only evaporate into thin air, and slowly become forgotten under everyone's confusion and doubt.

But not long ago, the news of the Prison Island King defeating the Luo Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen had already been spread. In a short few days, the Prison Island King Chu Mu became even more famous, becoming known by almost everyone within Luo Region!

.....

The Recommendation of Gangluo City had tens of thousands of people as witnesses. The news of Prison Island King Chu Mu defeating Luo Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen spread quickly. With Luo Region as the center, it spread towards the nearby regions. In a month, the news reached Nightmare City and caused countless powerful characters of Nightmare Palace to let out exclams in admiration.

Chu Mu beating Tian Ji caused his fame to quickly rise in Nightmare Palace, as well as regions near Nightmare Palace. Yet, with this battle of Gangluo City, Chu Mu's fame would become even more widespread, moving him from semi-top tier young expert to a true top tier young expert. Surely, many regional top tier young experts were already rolling up their sleeves, eager for a battle, hoping to meet this Nightmare Palace Nightmare Prince that had become famous in the past half year.

The Luo Region Nightmare Prince Yang Luosen found Chu Mu not purely because he heard of Chu Mu and wanted to compete; he also received instructions from Blue Nightmare Palace master.

Yet, knowing that the Luo Region Nightmare Prince, who was even stronger than Tian Ji, had lost to Chu Mu, the Blue Nightmare Palace master's expression became even more unsightly.

Now, the Blue Nightmare Palace master was somewhat sure that the reason the Princess told Xia Guanghan to stay low-key and pick a close squire was to find a backup member for the Fight Under the Heavens. Now that Chu Mu displayed a power worthy of the top tier young experts, if he could completely emerge in the following time, in ten years, he would definitely have a position matching Xia Guanghan.

One Xia Guanghan had already made Blue Nightmare Palace master have a headache. If there was another Chu Mu, it was likely that, in no time, his Blue Nightmare Palace would be stolen by Xia Guanghan, who was trying to become a palace master!

Cyan Nightmare Palace, Blue Nightmare Palace, and the White Nightmare Palace. The three palace masters were all tenth level titles. Xia Guanghan, in recent years, was like a rising sun, having a ninth level title already. One mishap could mean Xia Guanghan taking his position as Nightmare Palace palace master.

“This Chu Mu can’t be left unmanaged. I need to think of a way to get rid of him!” The Blue Nightmare Palace master had already gnashed his teeth. He didn’t dare to attack Xia Guanghan, but Chu Mu of the younger generation was easier to deal with. The Blue Nightmare Palace master naturally wouldn’t let Chu Mu continue to develop.

“Master, I have a person to recommend. This person may be able to rid you of this worry.” The Blue Nightmare Palace master’s old servant obsequiously said.

“Speaking of which, it better be a young generation expert, or else it would likely bring blame upon me.” Blue Nightmare Palace master said. Deaths and injuries between young generation experts were very common. The Blue Nightmare Palace master’s position had already been impacted by Xia Guanghan, so he didn’t want any unhealthy news of him to reach the elders of the Palace.

Chapter 79: Ancient City On The Plains, Jia City

“This person is named Zuo Xiao, and he happens to be an expert from the younger generation. However, he is not one of our Nightmare Palace people. He is a vagrant assassin, and he resides in the Northern Kingdom Region. His reputation is very high, and the peak experts of many regions are somewhat afraid of him. This assassin has most recently been roaming about our Blue Nightmare City. I can have others use a large amount of gold to hire him.” said the old servant.

“If it’s an assassin, then why would I need to have a young person do the job. I might as well hire an older assassin to deal with it.” said the Blue Nightmare Palace Lord.

“There is something that Master doesn’t know about. This Zuo Xiao is apparently Kang Cheng’s disciple. If he is to undertake the task, then even if he kills Chu Mu, with Kang Cheng’s existence, it would be hard for even Senior Yuan to look into it. Such fire will not burn your body.” A devious smile sure of success appeared on the old servant’s face.

“Oh? Surprisingly, he is the madman Kang Cheng’s disciple, eh? It’s been a long time since I’ve heard news of that madman... Zuo Xiao, right? Then it will be him!” said the Blue Nightmare Palace Lord.

The Blue Nightmare Palace Lord could dispatch a few experts to kill Chu Mu, but in the future, Chu Mu would probably be beside the Princess very often, and he would receive the attention of a few

experts. The moment an expert not in the younger generation attacked Chu Mu, those people definitely would not sit back and watch. The best plan was to have a peak expert in the younger generation to get rid of Chu Mu in a fight where outsiders couldn't interfere.

.....

The news of Chu Mu defeating the Luo Region Nightmare Prince quickly spread to Jia City.

Jia City couldn't be considered to be far from Nightmare City. Moreover, one quarter of the cities in the Jia Region were controlled by Nightmare Palace. Despite Jia Region being a part of the Jia Family's control, they still maintained an amicable and low key relationship with Nightmare Palace.

With the Nightmare Palace's Princess Jin Rou's arrival, the head of the Jia Family in the Jia Region naturally had to personally receive her, and then invite her into the city lord's residence.

Princess Jin Rou's travels were relatively frequent, so many bodyguards didn't have any breaks. It was only because Chu Mu was a peak expert in the younger generation and Nightmare Palace valued letting experts from the younger generation roam about in order to fight and temper themselves that peak experts from the young generation didn't have that many restrictions. If the princess didn't firmly request for it, Chu Mu didn't have to follow beside the young princess as a bodyguard.

Chu Mu himself didn't like being restricted. If Xia Guanghan hadn't issued an order, then Chu Mu wouldn't have intentionally headed in the opposite direction of his migrating family towards Jia Region to meet up with the young princess.

The Jia and Luo Region were neighboring regions. Without any surprise, the news of the fight in Gangluo City should have arrived at the young princess' ears. Young Princess Jin Rou had felt rather astonished, not expecting Chu Mu to have such potential to defeat the Luo Region Nightmare Prince, Yang Luosen, who had a quite a bit of reputation.

Inside the luxurious residence of the city lord

“Princess, your new bodyguard's strength is rather strong.” the personal servant of the princess let out a faint laugh as she spoke to Princess Jin Rou.

“Mhm.” Princess Jin Rou merely nodded her head. Distantly, she thought of a scene three years ago. An indifferent young man sat on the protective railing on the deck as the ocean waves crashed against the boat. He faced the blowing ocean wind, and he practiced a poor quality Adhering Flame technique with concentration. On his shoulder would always lie a gentle and beautiful small fox that was extremely adorable.

“I remember at that time that it was only a Moonlight Fox, right? Have you replaced it?” Princess Jin Rou lowered her head and pondered.

“Princess, what did you say?” respectfully asked the servant. She thought that the princess was giving a command.

“Nothing.” the princess shook her head. She didn’t say anything else, and she slowly got up, delicately undoing the thin skirt. She strode towards the bath while giving off a delectable heat...

The various painted curtains under the mist from the water became rather transparent. Through this thin shower curtain, one could faintly see this princess’ elegant figure after undoing her garments. Even if it was only faintly discernible, it still gave off a feeling of enticement that was hard to resist...

.....

In the northern part of Jia Region, Chu Mu rode on the Nightmare Thunder Dream Beast as they slowly entered the eighth rank city.

Compared to the Luo Region, the Jia Region’s territory was clearly narrower. Chu Mu rode on the Night Thunder Dream Beast for nearly ten days during his journey and had almost reached the southern center of the Jia Region.

Jia City was situated in the southern center region. After passing through the eighth rank city in front of him and then traveling another day, he would be able to reach Jia City and reconvene with the small princess’ ranks.

Although he had a rather good impression towards this Jin Rou Princess, Chu Mu didn't want to follow along beside her. Presently, Chu Mu wanted to migrate with his family towards the northern area and reach the Wogu Region's Great Chu Family. Then, he could make sense of why his father still hadn't received news of his survival and returned.

When Chu Mu returned to Gangluo City, Chu Ming had immediately written a letter to Wogu Region's Great Chu Family to inform Chu Tiancheng of the news.

Chu Mu had already stayed in Gangluo City for three months. If Chu Tiancheng was in Wogu City's Great Chu Family, he would have definitely obtained the letter. Furthermore, he would have already returned to the family.

Only, in these past three months, not only did Chu Tiancheng not return, he hadn't even sent back a letter in reply. Chu Ming expressed that he didn't know what was going on. Chu Mu was a bit worried, and he wanted to go to the Great Chu City to see what was going on.

However, after dealing with the matters involving Gangluo City's Yang Family, Xia Guanghan ordered that Chu Mu had to head towards Jia Region. Chu Mu, who was still under Xia Guanghan's control, could only head first to the Jia Region.

.....

After resting in the city for a day, Chu Mu rode on the Nightmare

Thunder Dream Beast towards Jia City on the second day.

Jia City was a tenth rank city, and it was naturally located in the heart of the Jia Region. Although it wasn't as boundless and developed as Nightmare City, its scope wasn't that small.

After crossing over the slowly undulating hillside, as he stood at the top of the hill, he could see a gentle and smooth plain. At the very end of his field of vision happened to be a city wall that stretched to either end of the horizon. Underneath the clear blue sky, it was exceptionally grand, and it gave off a strong aura of an ancient city on the plains.

“Yi~~~~~”

In the sky, a wing type soul pet fledged past. Chu Mu didn't know the name of it, and it spread its wings and soared into the vast space between the heaven and the earth. When the wing type creature gradually began to disappear into the blue sky, Chu Mu had already ridden his Night Thunder Dream Beast down the gradient slope of earth, slowly transforming into a black speck that gradually approached the ostensibly ancient and vast Jia City.

.....

The Nightmare Thunder Dream Beast, this kind of soul pet, was able to travel in the city. After entering the city gates, Chu Mu didn't have to recall Night.

The strength of a soul pet determined the status of a soul pet trainer. The sixth phase Night Thunder Dream Beast in Jia City was considered a relatively outstanding creature and, after entering the city, Chu Mu's didn't suffer from any obstructions. He easily entered the main street that led towards the city lord's residence in a straight line.

Chu Mu didn't hastily head towards the city lord's residence to see the princess. Instead, he conveniently visited the Soul Pet Palace and the auction.

Chu Mu currently had 10 million gold coins. Although this money temporarily couldn't be used to purchase seventh level soul crystals to train his own soul pets, Chu Mu could afford to generously purchase some soul equipment to increase his soul pet's fighting strength.

Mo Xie's fighting strength was rising. She possessed absolute speed dominance, abnormal attack talent, and a powerful fire type attribute. Amongst the commander rank domain, she was relatively perfect.

However, any soul pet could unceasingly pursue even more strength. Mo Xie's defense was clearly a weakness, and if she were able to reach the seventh stage, Mo Xie would be able to become perfect.

Therefore, Chu Mu felt that it was necessary to purchase a piece of soul armor to increase Mo Xie's defense.

In order to raise Mo Xie' defense to the seventh stage, Chu Mu had to purchase a sixth level soul armor and combine it with Mo Xie's natural sixth level flexible fur.

However, a soul armor would always be the most extravagant item in the domain of soul pets. Even if it was Chu Mu, who had the enormous sum of 10 million gold coins, he felt that it didn't just mean he could be prodigal with it.

According to Chu Mu's estimates, a sixth level beast type defense soul armor's price probably wasn't any less than the sixth level soul armor on his own body. It required at least 5 million gold coins.

As for Zhan Ye, its attacking power that was extremely weak was a very serious problem. Chu Mu felt that in order for Zhan Ye to be able to become a soul pet that truly surpassed its rank, phase, and stage when it fought, without any special soul items to strengthen its beast attribute, he had to use soul armor to increase Zhan Ye's fighting strength.

Zhan Ye currently was at the fifth phase first stage. Its attacking claws were only at the fifth stage and, without Violent Blood Pupil, even with a technique's effect, it could only barely scratch open the sixth stage defensive skin of a soul pet. However, if he combined its souls onto the soul claw, its attacking power would immediately increase.

The soul claws were similar to that of a soul armor in that it was also a soul equipment, but was meant for offense. It allowed this soul claw to combine with a soul pet's soul. Often times, the soul

claw didn't take any form; when the soul pet used its claws to attack, the moment the soul pet thought of it, the soul claw would appear, and the outside of a soul pet's claw would form a sharper energy claw blade...

The price of a soul claw wasn't lower than a piece of soul armor. If Chu Mu was to spend a large sum of money to purchase the sixth level soul armor and soul claw, 10 million gold coins would definitely be instantly spent.

Moreover, if the price of these two expensive soul equipment were to still go up, Chu Mu would be so broke that he wouldn't even be able to purchase the minimum baseline of food for his soul pets.

As his strength increased, a soul pet trainer's soul pets would also increase. Furthermore, placing a soul pet into a soul pet space didn't signify that the soul pet didn't need to eat. Therefore, towards high ranking soul pet trainers, while the one time use of a soul core was a large consumption, when it was added up, the sum was considerably terrifying. Especially for Chu Mu, who was a soul pet trainer that strove to provide top quality food.

Presently, Chu Mu's soul pets were all being fed with sixth level soul cores. Practically every two days, they had to be fed one core. Occasionally, a soul pet would throw a tantrum and, after giving it a midnight snack, Chu Mu, who treated all of them equally, had to give the rest of his soul pets a midnight snack. Thus, several thousand gold coins were instantly exhausted.

This was still merely sixth level soul crystals as food. When the

time came to feed seventh level soul crystals, Chu Mu couldn't guarantee that he would spent up to a million gold coins in one month. Therefore, ten million gold coins, to Chu Mu, was definitely not enough...

Chapter 80: Coincidentally Encountering Princess Jin Rou

The capital garnered from Gangluo City's auction hall was naturally inferior to the auction halls of the tenth rank city, Jia City. In Jia City, it was relatively easy to purchase a sixth level soul equipment, as long as one had enough capital.

When Chu Mu entered the auction hall, he searched through the auction list of the day and quickly found the sixth level full form offensive soul equipments.

Soul pet species were different, and their methods of attack were different. Soul claws were, in fact, a restricted concept and merely portrayed the soul equipment transforming into a claw. In reality, offensive soul equipments could transform into a weapon on any part of a soul pet's body, for instance its talons, teeth, bone horns, wing blades, arms...

Soul claws merely only reflected the structure of a claw as they were made. Once the soul pet used its idea to transform it, the soul equipment's effect could then be applied onto a claw.

A full form offensive soul equipment was at an even higher level. It could transform into any method of attack for a soul pet, suiting its needs.

Once equipped with this full form offensive soul equipment, the moment a soul pet used its thoughts to control it, the soul equipment's effects would adhere to any attacking part of the soul

pet.

For instance, in Zhan Ye's case, if it were using the Ink Armor Spike technique, the effect which was originally attached to its claws could identically be used on its ink armor spikes, causing the might of this technique to instantly increase.

On the list that Chu Mu saw in the auction hall, he didn't immediately search for a soul claw. Instead, he found a sixth level full form offensive soul equipment....

Without any doubt, the full form offensive soul equipment's price would be much more expensive than that of the single form offensive soul equipment.

"A full form offensive soul equipment is extremely suitable for Zhan Ye. This soul pet that has numerous methods of attack..." when he saw the sixth level full form offensive soul equipment, Chu Mu was tempted.

Zhan Ye had many methods of attack: his claws, horn, armor spike, and iron tail. If such a soul pet were to have a full form offensive soul equipment, its fighting strength would then holistically rise!

"The base price is 5 million gold coins..." when Chu Mu saw the base auction price, his heart cooled off. With a base price of 5 million, its true price would definitely be over 10 million. Chu Mu only had so much capital on him...

Chu Mu hesitated a long while at the auction hall. Ultimately, he decided to try and contest for it. If he could purchase it for 10 million gold coins, Chu Mu would still grind his teeth and buy it. After all, such a soul equipment was really worth the fighting value it brought.

The fifth phase Zhan Ye definitely could not merge a sixth level soul equipment into its soul at the moment. If he was able to obtain it, this soul equipment would be used on Mo Xie first to increase her fighting strength. When Zhan Ye reached the sixth phase, he would then wear this full form soul equipment that was suited for it.

.....

Chu Mu entered the auction hall, which had many items that Chu Mu was interested in. There was one time when Chu Mu figured that 10 million gold coins wouldn't be able to purchase the full form offensive soul equipment, and instead wanted to buy a sixth level black crystal soul pearl that would increase attribute damage.

A black crystal soul pearl; this soul equipment was created by smelting the souls of powerful black crystal soul pets. This ice soul pearl would then merge into a soul pet's soul, and the soul pet would be able to create black crystals.

During the Recommendation, when the Ice Air Fairy had fought the Black Crystal Ice Air Fairy, the turning point of the battle had occurred when the Black Crystal Ice Air Fairy used its black crystal effect.

Black crystal had effects similar to the Demon Fire Evil Flame, and it could directly allow the damage of a soul pet's ice type techniques to increase a few times.

As for the black crystal soul pearl, it allowed a few ice type soul pets to directly have control over black crystals, making the damage of their ice type techniques increase.

The soul pearl on the auction was a sixth level black crystal soul pearl, and it could increase the damage of ice types by at least fifty percent. If he could equip it to the Ice Air Fairy, then its ice type damage would increase by a large margin. Simultaneously, its defense, because of the black crystal, would increase. Therefore, when the black crystal soul pearl hovered around the price of 6 million gold coins, Chu Mu was a bit tempted...

However, Chu Mu ultimately didn't shout out a price. The price Chu Mu could accept for the black crystal soul pearl was 5 million gold coins. Spending an extra 1 million gold coins for this equipment was a bit of a concern for Chu Mu.

The full form offensive soul equipment which was identically at the sixth level, if its price surpassed 10 million which was what Chu Mu could sustain, Chu Mu would also unhesitatingly forsake this purchase.

Chu Mu himself could also be considered someone who started with nothing. Of his 10 million gold coins, 5 million would not have easily obtained without the Nightmare Palace assassins. Chu

Mu wasn't Mr. Moneybags, and when it came to purchasing things, the items still had to be at reasonable prices!

“Ning, in the future, I'll buy you an even better one.” Chu Mu specially consoled the Ice Air Fairy.

“Ling~~~” Although the Ice Air Fairy which had followed Chu Mu for three years was experienced at fighting and mature, its intelligence was still like a slow minded child-very naive.

Not long ago, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier had obtained the Demon Wood's Heart. The Ice Air Fairy naturally didn't have any objections as the Devil Tree Battle Soldier was honest and considerate. When it came to throwing tantrums in order to eat midnight snacks, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier would always be very calm...

As for the Night Thunder Dream Beast, Chu Mu had an extreme necessity to purchase it a speed type soul equipment.

.....

Finally, the sixth level full form offensive soul armor was being auctioned off.

It had to be said that Chu Mu was lucky. After unceasingly calling out prices with the other few competitors, Chu Mu unexpectedly purchased the full form offensive soul armor for a low price of 8.7 million...

Chu Mu was extremely surprised that he was able to acquire the sixth level full form offensive soul equipment at this price. After all, 10 million for such a soul equipment was fitting or perhaps even a bit low.

In reality, during the auction, Chu Mu had felt that the auction's atmosphere was extremely strange. However, Chu Mu didn't think too much about it, and had raised the price according to his own standards. Finally, it had mysteriously ended up in his hands.

.....

Inside the VIP auction room.

“Hmph, go and find out which fellow dares to come in and look for trouble!” said the Jia City vice city lord, Jia Qing, whose face looked a bit unsightly.

“Forget it. The princess doesn't have a strong desire to purchase it...” said the princess' maid, Jin Kui.

Princess Jin Rou didn't say anything and slowly stood up, walking outside. The four dainty maids followed her, followed by the eight Nightmare Palace bodyguards...

The smile of the Jia City's vice city lord, Jia Qing, froze and his gaze ferociously swept over that unsensible fellow in the other room.

The princess has gone on a tour of Jia City and had planned on sitting in on the auction once she got there. Jia Qing, who had pretty much followed along, intentionally had someone instruct officials of the auction hall to get rid of the bidding of other people. This way, the princess could purchase the items she wanted at a low price.

For such a task, Jia Qing naturally had to subvert the prices. However, in order to make the princess satisfied, changing the prices was something Jia Qing was still able to manage. Yet, who expected that an unintelligent fellow would appear halfway through the auction and purchase a full form offensive soul armor for a low price of 8.7 million.

The princess didn't like having others bid, so Jia Qing planned on using his own funds to bid for the princess. Yet, he was refused, and this full form sixth level soul armor that was underneath the standard price by about 2 million gold coins was purchased by this fellow from somewhere unknown.

As for Chu Mu, he naturally didn't understand the reason. He still believed that his luck today wasn't bad, while simultaneously inwardly rejoicing that he didn't spend 6 million to purchase the sixth level black crystal soul pearl.

.....

“Father, I've discovered that the young man wearing black garments is the customer in the VIP room.” said the eldest son of

Jia Qing, Jia Luoming.

Jia Qing's gaze immediately swept forth and quickly discovered Chu Mu walking out of the auction floor and into the auction hall's long hall.

“Go and teach that fellow a lesson!” whispered Jia Qing.

The princess hadn't bought the sixth level full form offensive soul equipment, but Gu Qing himself had to replenish the nearly 2 million gold coins from the lowering of the price. Even if he was the vice city lord, he wasn't generous enough to allow someone else to take advantage of such a large convenience.

Jia Luoming immediately nodded his head and brought two family henchmen. They quickly walked towards Chu Mu, who had just finished the transaction procedures.

.....

“What's the matter?” Chu Mu lifted his eyelids and stared at the three fellows blocking his path.

“What hole did you run out of? You don't understand customs at all and unexpectedly stole the princess' item. Do you even know how to write 'death'?!” sneered Jia Luoming.

When princess was mentioned, Chu Mu's gaze immediately went to the splendid hall in the auction hall and as expected,

discovered that not too far away were numerous bodyguards and maids who were escorting an elegant woman. This woman was slowly walking out of the auction hall's long hall.

Seeing Princess Jin Rou, Chu Mu finally responded. It seemed that this full form sixth level soul armor hadn't been acquired at such a low price due to his own luck. Instead it was that he happened to encounter Princess Jin Rou...

.....

“Princess, that black clothed young man seemed to have been fighting over items with you?” when they walked out of the auction floor, Jin Jui quickly noticed Chu Mu who walked of the auction hall's long hall...

“Mhm.” Princess Jin Rou merely nodded her head and didn't even look in Chu Mu's direction. As a princess, she didn't have to care about everything.

“Princess, don't worry, we'll give that untactful brat a lesson.” immediately said Jia Qing.

Princess Jin Rou glanced at Jia Qing. She seemed to feel that Jia Qing's flattery was a bit low level. In one glance, Jia Luoming had already found that person for trouble and she indifferently said: “The price competition was fair. Being overbearing like this isn't good. There isn't a need to make things difficult.”

“Princess is truly kindhearted and generous.” instantly praised Jia Qing. Yet, he didn’t call Jia Luoming back; instead he respectfully brought the princess out of the auction hall’s long hall.

After walking out of the auction hall’s long hall, a golden colored princess carriage was already stopped outside. On the street, numerous people had surrounded it, forming a circle as they jealously talked about whether this was the Nightmare Palace’s young princess’ imperial carriage.

When Princess Jin Rou, wearing a thin purple colored veil, walked out, a sigh rang out in the surroundings...

“Princess, just now, that person was a bit familiar. He seemed to resemble that new bodyguard a bit.” whispered the princess’ maid, Jin Kui, as she helped the princess into the carriage.

“Huh?” Princess Jin Rou faintly raised her curved and long shapely eyebrows.

“Beng!!!!”

Suddenly, a loud clamor rang out of the auction hall’s long hall, giving way to a panicked shout.

Princess Jin Rou spread open the curtains and stared at the spacious entrance of the auction hall. She happened to see the tall and straight figure of a handsome man, full of a cold aura, walk out

of the long hall. Following beside him was a Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox with six glorious tails, carrying a rather demonic charm....

Chapter 81: Fight Under The Heavens

“Despicable, kill that scoundrel for me!” outside of the long hall, Jia Luoming’s angry roar immediately rang out.

Immediately following the roar, one was able to clearly sense a summoning radiance flicker from inside the hall. Several roars of soul pets chaotically rang out from within.

Chu Mu paid no attention to what was behind him. Very calmly, he walked forward and, welcoming Princess Jin Rou’s gaze, he slowly walked towards her carriage.

When the eight bodyguards saw Chu Mu approach, their cold gazes instantly locked onto Chu Mu. As long as Chu Mu dared to step forward another few steps, they wouldn’t even question his intent and would instead directly start attacking!

“Retreat.” Princess Jin Rou naturally recognized Chu Mu. The corners of her mouth faintly rose, forming a light smile.

Princess Jin Rou smiling was naturally because Chu Mu had such a callous and wild nature.

If she was him, after entering Jia City, the first thing she would do was to report to the city lord’s residence to meet her, while being deeply afraid that being a bit late would result in condemnation.

Yet, Chu Mu, this fellow, after arriving in Jia City, didn't immediately go to the city lord's residence. Rather, he ran to Jia City's auction hall and leisurely competed in the auction at his own wishes. Interestingly, he happened to encounter her and purchased the sixth level full form offensive soul equipment at a low price when Jia Qing lowered it by 2 million, taking advantage of this great convenience.

Princess Jin Rou faintly smiled, but Jia Qing's face was black. His two faintly indignant eyes glared at Jia Luoming and the two family henchmen, who were in rather miserable states...

"Alarming the princess, hmph hmph, you deserve to die!" Jia Qing didn't take note of Princess Jin Rou's "retreat". He had already begun chanting his soul pact incantation, planning on summoning soul pets...

"City lord Jia Qing, please calm down a bit. This is the princess' personal bodyguard, Chu Mu, Nightmare Prince Chu. He came from..." the princess' maid, Jin Rou, immediately began to advise the vice city lord, Jia Qing, to stop.

Jia Qing's incantation still hadn't been completed. Yet, upon hearing the princess' servant, Jin Rou, speak, he was stunned. His gaze carried a bit of astonishment as he stared at the black clothed young man.

"This person is Chu Mu, the princess' personal bodyguard?" asked Jia Qing.

“Yes.” Princess Jin Rou only gave a simple reply. She put down the curtain and dignifiedly sat back down in the carriage, not saying anything further.

“The Prison Island King, Chu Mu. The same Chu Mu that not too long ago defeated the Luo Region Nightmare Prince, Yang Luosen?” the maid, Jin Kui’s, voice wasn’t too loud, but the surrounding people all heard it. Each of their eyes uniformly fell onto Chu Mu’s body.

The fight in Gangluo City had already been a month ago. Naturally, the neighbouring Jia Region had been affected by the fight, and a majority of people knew of the Prison Island King, Chu Mu. Therefore, once they heard this name, many people let out shocked expressions. They wanted to see what special traits that this young peak expert, whose name had most recently skyrocketed, possessed.

“Chu Mu... this brat is really Chu Mu?” Jia Luoming’s expressed was extremely stiff as he chased after from within the hall. The two family henchmen, whose faces were covered in dirt and had just now roared that they were going to kill Chu Mu presently didn’t dare to approach even a little bit.

It had to be said that most recently, Chu Mu’s reputation had indeed been extremely resounding within this region. Although Jia Luobing was a first tier expert, there was still a definite discrepancy with those peak experts whose name had travelled far and wide. This was coupled with the rumors that often mentioned that Chu Mu, this Prison Island King, was a one hundred percent homicidal maniac. Jia Luoming wasn’t someone who would dare

to casually attack such a person.

“Bodyguard Chu, why haven’t you made your salutations after seeing the princess?” maid Jin Kui glanced at Chu Mu. She was also inwardly angry. This Chu Mu seriously did not understand the customs; even disregarding not reporting to the princess upon his arrival at Jia City, he wasn’t even conscious of having to salute the princess when he saw her...

Chu Mu no longer had to kneel half way as a greeting. He casually dipped his head, and put his hand on his stomach and said “Greetings Princess”, and it was enough.

“Let’s go back back to the residence.” said Princess Jin Rou.

Chu Mu immediately summoned the Night Thunder Dream Beast and jumped on. He followed beside the princess’ golden painted carriage. He completely disregarded Jia Luoming, who had tried to cause trouble with him.

Jia Qing, Jia Luoming, and the group of henchmen were stunned for a half a day before finally compliantly following behind the princess’ procession. They were both confused and fearful...

En route to the city lord’s residence, Jia Qing and Jia Luoming finally figured out this mishap. Of course, Jia Qing obviously was inwardly regretful. The princess evidently wanted this full form offensive soul equipment, but it ultimately ended up being a convenience for Chu Mu. Yet, he also couldn’t have Chu Mu spit it back out.

.....

The Prison Island King, Chu Mu, appearing in Jia City had caused a commotion that wasn't small. Especially since Chu Mu was also unexpectedly the Nightmare Palace's Princess Jin Rou's personal guard.

Princess Jin Rou's status was noble and, although many people had only seen her in a masked veil, everyone was sure that Princess Jin Rou was an absolute beauty. This made numerous young handsome men fall in love with her incessantly. It naturally was the desire, even in their dreams, of a myriad of young experts to be able to approach this princess.

Chu Mu had most recently received the glory from showing off his skill. Adding on his status as the jealous and envy inducing position of the princess' personal guard, it was very easy to cause a stir amongst Ji City's young experts.

Regarding the prevalence of duels in the soul pet trainer domain, defeating Chu Mu would allow one's reputation to soar, while simultaneously attracting the attention of the exceptionally high status princess. Each and every proud and arrogant young expert had the intention of challenging Chu Mu to a duel.

Of course, even with the intent, it didn't necessarily mean that numerous people formally challenged Chu Mu. Those that felt they were inferior to the Luo Region Nightmare Prince, Yang Luosen, could only mutter a few artificially disdainful words, but wouldn't

actually issue a challenge. Those who believed that they had the strength to fight still had to take into consideration whether publicly challenging Princess Jin Rou's guard would offend the princess. Ultimately, only the young experts from the Noble Jia Family had the thought of doing so, and happened to be waiting for a good moment to issue their challenges.

.....

Nightfall came, and a cold frost was slightly descending. In the Jia Family's rather oddly trimmed courtyard, three of the princess' maids with provoking bodies respectively stood in each corner of the white stone pavilion. The personal maid, Jin Kui, stood diagonally to the princess.

Outside the pavilion were eight guards with black garments who stood still like statues. There was no movement and no trace of even a bit of life in them.

Chu Mu, as a personal guard, didn't have to stand outside the courtyard and suffer from the cold wind like the eight statue-like guards. Instead, his eyes were full of boredom as he leaned against the jade table next to the princess. His gaze was fixated on the courtyard pond that resembled a small lake...

Princess Jin Rou was always wearing a veil, covering her face. Chu Mu had a rather good impression of this princess, but could not always stare at her veil and imagine her absolutely beautiful face behind the veil.

Princess Jin Rou seemed to enjoy pondering alone, especially when she could see the flowing water. Presently, her beautiful eyes were staring at the tranquil pond. She silently watched on, not saying anything...

“Chu Mu, you lost a soul. That soul, how did you lose it?” finally, a soft and splendid voice broke the autumn silence. It gave others an indescribable feeling of pleasure, as if one was listening for the first time to a ballad gently echo through the silent and murky night...

“Chu Mu, the princess is asking you a question!” Jin Kui immediately raised her voice a few decibels and shouted at Chu Mu.

Chu Mu came back to his senses and glanced at the maid, Jin Kui, who was panting with rage. He then looked at Princess Jin Rou before saying: “I signed a soul pact with a high ranking species, but the soul pet defected.”

“Rubbish!” Jin Kui immediately glared.

Princess Jin Rou waved her hands, indicating that Jin Kui should refrain from talking like this.

Jin Kui was about to say something, but she hesitated. She glared at Chu Mu with her big eyes, warning him to quit acting so callous and to stop deliberately not treating the princess seriously.

Chu Mu wasn't actually not taking Princess Jin Rou seriously. Only, he just didn't want to say it. Moreover, such a thing wasn't too easy to say either...

Princess Jin Rou didn't interrogate Chu Mu either. Instead, she glanced at Jin Kui, and had her tell Chu Mu something.

Jin Kui nodded her head before saying in a rather arrogant tone:

“The princess' travel this time is headed towards Tianxia City. On this journey, there are a total of six young people who we will convene with. These six young generation peak experts have all been raised by the princess or Senior Xia. They are all the princess' personal guards. En route to [Tianxia City](#), through each region, the Princess will pick a place to stop. As for you, you must defeat the peak young expert in a fight in the respective region. You can consider it as a test for you given by the princess. Finally, when we reach Tianxia City, the princess will choose the most outstanding person from the six of you to become the candidate for the Fight Under the Heavens.

(天下城 (Tianxia City) literally translates to City Under the Heavens)

After listening to Jin Kui's words, Chu Mu was rather surprised.

Chu Mu didn't understand that much about the Fight Under the Heavens. He had only heard that this was the most prestigious youth fight in the soul pet domain. As for Gangluo City's Recommendation, it was to choose experts through competition from each region to send to Luo Region City for continued

selection. It seemed that the final destination was for the Fight Under the Heavens.

Chu Mu's understanding of the Fight Under the Heavens was only thus much. After all, in the past, Chu Mu had been resided in the [parochial](#) Gangluo City, and had no way of understanding the outside world...

Parochial typically refers to a church, but in this case I can't seem to find a better word to describe Gangluo City as narrow-minded, limited and restricted.

Chu Mu stared at the veiled face of Princess Jin Rou. He could pretty much understand why this princess always toured other places. It presumably was to represent Nightmare Palace to negotiate with various other regions while simultaneously cultivating experts for the Fight Under the Heavens who could represent her and participate, ultimately obtaining ubiquitous glory.

“Do you have any questions?” insipidly asked Princess Jin Rou who caught Chu Mu's gaze.

“Will we pass through Wogu Region en route?” asked Chu Mu. Chu Mu couldn't have any objections towards the princess' arrangements. After all, he was currently part of the Nightmare Palace, and he had to listen to their arrangements. As for this princess choosing through competition like this, Chu Mu didn't really care much about it. The moment he had accurate news of his father and a suitable chance, Chu Mu would resolutely leave...

“What matter do you have?” asked Princess Jin Rou.

“Finding someone.” responded Chu Mu.

“If you have the confidence to defeat the experts from Wogu Region’s Great Chu Family, we could possibly stop over in Wogu Region.” said Princess Jin Rou.

Chu Mu nodded his head. The Chu Family in Gangluo City was a small branch of the Wogu Region’s Great Chu Family. While in the family, Chu Mu had often heard Chu Family members speaking of how powerful the Great Chu Family was. Of course, what Chu Mu cared the most about was that his own father had come from the Great Chu Family, yet had made that pledge to never to step even half a foot in Wogu Region again.

In order to understand the reasoning behind this, he could only go to the Great Chu Family.

Chapter 82: Jia Region Fight

“During tonight’s meal, the second son of the city lord, Jia Feng, will inevitably express a wish to fight you. You must prepare to receive the fight the day after tomorrow.” said Princess Jin Rou.

“Yes.” nodded Chu Mu.

Princess Jin Rou didn’t say anything further. She always had a rather melancholy pair of pupils, and she stared at the proud and aloof white colored autumn plums blossoming next to the pondside. She entered her pondering state again.

Chu Mu returned to his original position, where he was leaning on the table. Unless the princess left first, he could not leave. He could only accompany her here as she stared blankly ahead...

.....

An unknown period of time had passed when, not too far from the courtyard, came the ice cold voice of a guard.

“The city lord’s second son, Jia Feng, requests to see you.”

The princess’ train of thought was cut off. Carrying a bit of indolence, she nodded her head, but didn’t even glance at Jia Feng.

Chu Mu looked over and, in one glance, saw a combed elegant

hairstyle on the young man. He was wearing gaily-colored clothing as he stood there. His eyes surveyed the place, and he impatiently seemed to be want to see the princess.

The princess nodded her head, and the guards naturally let him pass. Jia Feng was clearly eager to see the princess, yet he still assumed a methodically arranged airs. He strolled onto the steps of the courtyard and knocked his two hands on an exquisite case that was holding things, as if he was going to gift it.

“I pay respects to the princess.” Jia Feng cupped the beautiful case in his hands as he knelt down.

“Stand up.” Princess Jin Rou still hadn’t turned around and indifferently replied.

Seeing that he still hadn’t attracted the princess’ interest, Jia Feng’s expression clearly drooped a bit. However, he still maintained a calm and composed smile. Using a refined voice, he said: “This is a honey pastry that i, Jia Feng. specially had the head chef prepare before coming to the princess’. I invite the princess to try it...”

“Put it down.” Jin Kui saw that the princess didn’t want to speak, and she spoke in a tone that wasn’t either cold or friendly.

Jia Feng’s expression stiffened once more. Evidently, he felt a bit embarrassed; after all, the princess hadn’t even looked at him...

“Princess, the matter Jia Feng previously mentioned. What does the princess think about it...” Jia Feng naturally could not leave in such a vapid manner, and he immediately glanced at the indifferent Chu Mu standing next to the princess as he spoke.

“Nightmare Prince Chu has already agreed. You guys can prepare.” responded Jin Kui.

“That’s good. However, my soul pets are a bit unruly and hard to tame. If my soul pets were to deal a bit of damage to the princess’ guard, I still hope that the princess can understand.” said Jia Feng. In this world, only those with strength could receive the attention of others. Jia Feng’s words were naturally to illustrate his own self-confidence, even if his opponent was the Prison Island King whose reputation had soared.

“That’s of no matter. As long as the wounds don’t take his life, it’s fine.” indifferently replied Princess Jin Rou.

Jia Feng opened his mouth, wanting to say something further. Nonetheless, when he saw the princess’ water-like tranquil expression, for a moment, he didn’t know what to say. He stood there for half a day and still wasn’t able to say anything. Finally, he could only sullenly ask to be excused. Of course, before he left, Jia Feng didn’t forget to give Chu Mu a glance. This glance contained an extremely provocative intent.

Chu Mu was perhaps also infected by Princess Jin Rou’s sullen temperament, and he thought of many things in the past. Therefore, he didn’t even take note of Jia Feng’s glance.

Not being payed attention to like this, to Jia Feng, was definitely interpreted as being ignored. Yet, Jia Feng felt that being ignored by the princess was only proper, but being ignored by his opponent would definitely ruin his mood. Therefore, he wore a bit of a sneer as he left.

That being said, even if Chu Mu had noticed Jia Feng's glance, he probably would have ignored it anyways. It wasn't much different from the matters in his past memories.

No long after Jia Feng left, Princess Jin Rou finally gradually recovered. She had Jin Kui open the box of food. Then she faintly chanted an incantation, and she summoned a dainty nimble furry soul pet. As if nothing had happened, she carefully fed it to the fox species soul pet that was somewhat similar to Chu Mu's Mo Xie.

.....

“The sixth rank full form offensive soul equipment was originally supposed to be conferred to you as a gift. Since you already bought it yourself, then next time when there's a chance, I'll confer you something else...” as the princess was going to bed, she insipidly spoke to Chu Mu.

“.....” Chu Mu could only remain silent.

Watching the graceful and moving figure slowly leave, Chu Mu's heart was somewhat stirred. On one hand, he felt that the good emotions he had towards this woman changed slightly. On the

other hand, he was moved by the lavishness of this princess.

A soul equipment nearly worth ten thousand gold coins was unexpectedly so calmly given away; moreover, it was very likely that when all the guards met up, they were each gifted a soul equipment of this value. This was equivalent to presenting goods worth 60 million gold coins. Clearly, this indicated that Chu Mu, who had a difficult time accumulating assets of 10 million, had a definite difference.

.....

Although he knew that there was still a large gap between truly reaching the realm which the princess' resided in, Chu Mu wouldn't harbor rueful feelings of being too far behind.

It had only been four years since Chu Mu truly started to tame soul pets. Furthermore, being in possession of soul pets with such ample potential, there would definitely be a day when he stood at her level or perhaps an even higher realm.

.....

The most prevalent thing amongst the younger generation were appointed battles and challenges. No matter what region it was, fights between soul pet trainers would ceaselessly go on. Soul pet trainers of different ranks and realms would pit themselves against each other as far as the eye could see...

Of course, the thing that received the most attention, aside from the high intensity fights between the reputable experts, were the fights between peak young experts.

Experts from the young generation required tempering; if they could not temper themselves in the wild, then they would have to frequently challenge other soul pet trainers. Using this ceaseless slew of fights, they could quickly increase the strength of their soul pets.

As the soul pet trainer's age and experience increased, many of them would travel everywhere and represent their various different hometowns. This would precipitate exceptional chaos, so they each represented a relatively strong personal viewpoint in their fights; at the same time, they wouldn't fight at random.

However, the younger generation was different. They were young, and they required tempering. Fights were the most frequent domain, and they would always represent one position or a region. Therefore, the fights between them would often become representative of a fight between different factions or regions.

In such a way, fights between the younger generation received even more people's attention. Moreover, fights between peak young experts frequently attracted a large craze.

When the Prison Island King Chu Mu appeared in Jia City, many people began to guess whether the young experts from the Great Jia Family would let sparks fly between them and Chu Mu.

As expected, without any surprise, the news of the fight spread around. The person who challenged Prison Island King Chu Mu happened to be the person in Jia Region with an extremely high reputation, Jia Feng!

Jia Feng's reputation wasn't any lower than the Luo Region Nightmare Prince, Yang Luosen. He was known in various different regions by many people. This included the Luo Region, which would frequently hear news of this fellow defeating some young expert.

Chu Mu had disappeared for four years. In the past, he would occasionally hear of some inspirational news of an expert. These people had pretty much all been forgotten by Chu Mu now. Being disconnected from the world for four years, countless young experts like Jia Feng had risen abruptly during this time. Chu Mu had never heard of him before, and his name had probably gradually proliferated over these four years.

At the very beginning, Chu Mu was rather envious of the young expert fights that could become preached by an entire region, or even a number of regions. Unknowingly, Chu Mu himself had stepped into that domain. Additionally, the effect he caused seemed to even be above those young experts in the past who he could only look up at. This also made Chu Mu feel somewhat grateful. Just imagine if Chu Tiancheng, in some place, were to hear from other people of the news about him; he wondered how excited he would be.

Of course, Chu Mu from a very early time knew that his father wasn't just some nameless person stuck in the snail's home of

Gangluo City. Perhaps Chu Tiancheng wasn't even his real name. Therefore, Chu Mu still had to continue walking his path. He had to walk until he reached the "Soul Alliance Prohibition" realm.

.....

Fights would always make the blood of others boil, especially when it was between the younger generation with limitless potential. The crowd would give exclamations in admiration. When the day of the fight between the Prison Island King Chu Mu and the Jia Family's Jia Feng arrived, outside of Jia City's most luxurious River Field Battlefield, there were already people making a racket...

As an eighth ranked city, the spectators area outside of Gangluo City's largest battlefield could only hold about 10,000 people. As a tenth rank city, Jia City's most luxurious battlefield was incomparably magnificent and impressive!

One of the most unique aspects of the Jia City was the sole river field lying within this vast field. The river field ran perfectly straight from an area of high terrain downwards, diagonally passing through the entire Jia City.

As for the River Field Battlefield, it happened to be constructed on the most rapid and surging location of the river!

This untrammelled river was one hundred meters wide. If one were to ride a boat with the current, under the rapids in the flow of the river, one would only require a few minutes before passing

through the River Field Battlefield.

This was merely only the width of the River Field Battlefield. On either side of the river field happened to be two sloppily constructed topographies. By doing so, this battlefield was built on the basis of grandeur. Even though it was inside Jia City, it was just as if it was in the countryside, where the horizon was vast and one could gallop along on his or her soul pet.

The weather of the field was originally extremely sunny. However, today was different. There was no longer an azure sky with not a cloud in sight. Instead, unwittingly, it was being covered by a black and imposing layer of clouds.

The black clouds were very high and, looking up, it wouldn't give others a feeling of constraint. Rather, in such a vast battlefield, it created a biting cold gale through the field that whistled against the rushing river of water!

“Nightmare Prince Chu, most recently, these few regions have heard the most news about you. In such a short period of time, those able to precipitate the knowledge of the name Nightmare Prince Chu in these few regions number very few within my Jia region. You truly are a genius who has covered the sky and come into being.” in the audience seats, the old aged Jia City city lord wore a smile as he praised Chu Mu.

Chu Mu obviously knew that if it wasn't for Princess Jin Rou being present, this grand city lord of a tenth rank city presumably wouldn't so easily speak such words. Therefore, he only nodded his head, not revealing any emotions.

“Since the princess is a visitor, then the princess shall choose the method of battle.” the Jia City city lord always wore a smile and his disposition seemed very amiable and friendly.

“The lord can pick.” indifferently said Princess Jin Rou.

During this trip, Princess Jin Rou represented the Nightmare Palace paying a visit on various regions and engaging in friendly negotiations. To speak frankly, she was bringing her own people to challenge others.

Challenging obviously adhered to the lord’s rules. This was the customary convention of various regions and Princess Jin Rou wasn’t someone who would use her status to wrest this authority away either.

“In that case, this old man will shamelessly decide the method of battle.” politely said the Jia City city lord.

“I’ve heard that because Nightmare Prince Chu lost a soul, if we are to do a three control fight, it would unavoidably put our family’s Jia Feng at an advantage. However, if we are to do a single control fight, it would lose a bit of the fervor of a fight and it also wouldn’t reflect the strength of you two younger generations. To take the middle road would be to have a dual control fight, but soul pets cannot be replaced... what does the princess think of this method of battle?” asked the Jia City city lord.

“Have Guard Chu decide.” insipidly said Princess Jin Rou as she

glanced at Chu Mu.

“I don’t like fights with restrictions. Not replacing soul pets is something I can accept.” said Chu Mu, not understanding the conventions.

In reality, on Prison Island, Chu Mu had often fought against three soul opponents. In that place, there was no need to select rules; yet presently, the battles always had some form of provisions.

“Hmph, I’ve seen many conceited people before that were all ultimately trampled under my feet one by one.” sneered Jia Feng.

“Then we’ll only restrict the substitution of soul pets. After all, Nightmare Prince Chu doesn’t have that many soul pets.” said the Jia City city lord. His tone carried a trace of false politeness towards Chu Mu.

The Fight Under the Heavens didn’t have any restrictions, so fights with restrictions were definitely not something Princess Jin Rou wanted. Weak strength was just weak. When it came to the actual selection, Chu Mu wouldn’t be looked down upon by Princess Jin Rou because he lacked a soul; therefore, Chu Mu felt that there simply was no need for restrictions.

“I don’t care about replacing or not; in any case, he won’t have that chance...” arrogantly said Jia Feng. He naturally wouldn’t lose his own family’s morale amongst his own people.

“Young people are proud and arrogant. I hope princess can forgive.” the Jia City city lord immediately laughed, and he explained Jia Feng’s wild display of manners.

Princess Jin Rou merely nodded her head, not saying anything.

“Then, can the two of you enter the stage.” said the Jia City city lord.

Chu Mu ignored the overbearing Jia Feng and slowly walked towards the incomparably expansive River Field Battlefield.

Jia Feng cast a glance at the walking Chu Mu and let out a sneer. He instantly cast a Riding Air Wind on himself. His body rose into the air and swept past the towering audience seats as he faced the oncoming gale of the River Field Battlefield, flying in another direction.

Chu Mu had a limited amount of soul power, and naturally wouldn’t show off during this temporary moment, exhausting his soul power. Therefore, he had several tens of thousands of people wait a long time before he finally walked to the other side of the River Field Battlefield.

“Princess, your guard is truly calm and collected.” watching the exasperatingly slow Chu Mu walk to the battlefield, Jia Qing put on a fake smile as he spoke.

The Princess had excellent patience as she watched Chu Mu walk

onto the battlefield. She faintly raised her lips, as she found that Chu Mu always had an indifferent appearance, but many of his actions would be guided by a random unruly natural instinct. No matter how he fought, he was always accustomed to his own method. He had never suffered from the influence of others and the outside world, even if there were several tens of thousands of people watching the fight.

“Princess, this guard is a bit not understanding of the rules. We should probably teach him a lesson someday.” whispered Jin Kui to Princess Jin Rou’s ear in a very tiny voice.

“Such temperament is very good.” objected Princess Jin Rou.

During The Fight Under the Heavens, it was hard to count the sheer number of spectators, or even further, the countless people with the most power and prestige sitting in important seats. If one didn’t have sufficient calmness, it was very easy to exhibit an aberration. Therefore, in Princess Jin Rou’s opinion, Chu Mu could be considered to have the “airs of an expert”.

“Summon your soul pets!” the Jia City city lord condensed his soul remembrance into a voice that rang out.

The River Field Battlefield was eminently expansive, and a voice was easily dispersed by the howling wind. Especially when there were a few tens of thousands of spectators, the fact that the Jia City city lord’s voice was heard by everyone in this expansive area was a testament to how strong his soul remembrance was!

A regular fight founded on customary conventions had it so that both soul pet trainers had to simultaneously summon their soul pets to prevent the latter summoner from summoning a direct counter.

Therefore, when the Jia City city lord's voice drifted down, Chu Mu and Jia Feng simultaneously chanted their incantations, summoning their respective first soul pets.

Chu Mu chanted his incantation, and a scarlet colored flame gradually ignited around his body. The Demon Fire Evil Flames that ascended into the air immediately tilted against the onslaught of the violent wind. Yet, this caused the flames to look even more coarse and wild.

Six pillars of flame slowly hovered around the the pattern created by Chu Mu's incantation. They slowly orbited downwards, ultimately orbiting under the pattern...

“Hu hu~~~~~”

Abrupt flames sprang up like a fire bursting forth!

Six magnificent tails opened up like flower petals and ,facing the biting cold caress of the howling wind, the noble, arrogant, and ostentatious Mo Xie awe-inspiringly appeared amidst the fire!

There was no need to intentionally discharge the demonic aura, as from the moment Mo Xie appeared, it proliferated outwards to

her surroundings. It struck the bitingly cold plain winds into a chaotic disheveledness of disarrayed streams of air that gradually dissipated.

“A perfect warrior rank soul pet, Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox!”

“Of course, it’s an Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox. Its innate talent is comparable to many commander rank soul pets!

Those who had only heard of Chu Mu’s name and didn’t know about his soul pets immediately displayed a bit of shock towards the first soul pet he summoned.

As for those who knew that Chu Mu had an Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox, their eyes were wide open, as they finally got to see the extremely rare Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox.

.....

At the same time that Chu Mu summoned Mo Xie, Jia Feng had finished his incantation. As the summoning pattern formed, others could clearly see pillars of purple lightning faintly flickering high above in the black sky.

The purple bolts of lightning chaotically flickered. Suddenly, a brilliant radiance detonated and, even if one was a few hundred meters away, he or she would still feel it to be a bit uncomfortable on the eyes!

“Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon!!!”

When the gaudy brilliance gradually dimmed, people astonishingly saw an enormous soul pet with muddled colored wings appear in the vast battlefield!

The sky was high in the air, and the land was a vast expanse. From far away, the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon should have seemed rather tiny. However, when one’s eyes rested upon it, he or she was able to feel the enormous aura given off by this commander rank soul pet!

Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon: Beast World – wing type – Feather Demon species – Chaotic Feather Demon subspecies – middle class commander Rank

The Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon’s wings were like a hawks, and they were covered by incomparably sharp muddled colored feathers. It gave one the feeling of glistening dark and light and, as it swept past, it could cut everything open.

The upper part of the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon was an enormous crane covered by glistening dark and light; its beak was like an eminently sharp sword and even there, one could see flickered bolts of lightning. Its lower body wasn’t too much different than a majority of bird-like soul pets, but its claws were terrifying black eagle claws that were as sharp as a pointed hook-it made one feel a cold shiver.

“Sixth phase seventh stage... I remember during the last fight it was only at the sixth phase fourth stage. The strength of Jia Feng’s Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon increases extremely quick. It’s probably already surpassed the strength of his sixth phase seventh stage Terror Wolf and has become Jia Feng’s second main soul pet.” discussions immediately rang out.

Jia Feng enjoyed a famous reputation in Jia City and was more or less understood by many people. As for the reason why young experts received so much attention was precisely because their increase in strength was relatively evident. Often, after a short period of time had passed, their strength would make many people feel shocked!

The River Field Battlefield’s river was 100 meters wide. There was at least 200 meters between Chu Mu and Jia Feng and, although Chu Mu wasn’t able to completely clearly see how mature the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon was, he could feel that it was a powerful soul pet from its aura. It definitely was not comparable to a normal commander rank soul pet.

The higher he walked, the more he would encounter experts and abnormally talented soul pets. Chu Mu could be sure that the various attributes of the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon in front of him probably surpassed many outstanding high class soul pets, and it was approaching the Monarch Rank, just like his Mo Xie.

“Wuwuwuwu!!!!”

No matter how strong the opponent was, she would always calmly face it. Furthermore, even if she were to encounter a soul

pet that was a higher rank, Mo Xie would still always have an arrogant bearing!!

“Chaotic Thunder’s effects are not inferior to Demon Fire Evil Flame’s. If other attributes are strengthened, comparing attributes, there should be no difference.”

“The Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon is Jia Feng’s second main soul pet. Yet, the Evil Flame Demon Fox is Chu Mu’s strongest soul pet. Their difference should be very clear.”

Very quickly, many people began to assess the soul pets on either side.

“Let the battle begin!!!”

The Jia City city lord’s voice once more rang through the air above the River Field Battlefield!!

“Yi!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

With a piercing and sharp shout that sounded like a clap of thunder, the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon had suddenly let out a cry. The moment Jia Feng jumped onto its back, it immediately flapped its wings and flew high up, directly soaring above the vast area.

When the soul pets of either side were summoned, many people had discerned that under this expansive environment, the Chaotic

Thunder Feather Demon, which was able to soar high in the air above the ground, definitely had an extremely large advantage. Presumably, Chu Mu would summon his second soul pet shortly, otherwise the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox which couldn't fly simply wouldn't be able to contend.

Chu Mu raised his head at the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon flying across the river field and also jumped onto Mo Xie's body. He had the extremely fast Mo Xie sprint across the expansive battlefield.

“Hong~~~~”

A shocking purple colored bolt of lightning suddenly cleaved the horizon, loudly descending from the black clouds high above. Shockingly, it was like a long purple colored dragon descending!!

This glistening lightning bolt could be considered to have pulled open the curtain to this Jia Region Fight!!

Chapter 83: Exquisite Dodging, Exceptional Speed

Lightning flashed, and chaotic thunder violently exploded on the floor, creating a deep crater on the field. Bits of earth flew everywhere.

Within the dark clouds, the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon spread its wings and soared. Its two eyes looked down upon the sprinting Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox carrying Chu Mu on the River Field Battlefield!

“Chaotic Thunderbolt!”

A smile rose on Jia Feng’s face. He continued to have the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon unceasingly attack Chu Mu and the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox from the sky!

“Hong hong hong~~~”

Purple colored bolts of lightning that carried a bit of turbidity terrifyingly struck down from the black colored clouds. Each bolt was both striking and shocking!

As for the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox running on the ground, she unceasingly dodged. Each time, she barely managed to dodge the thick bolts of lightning, causing the spectators to feel their hearts clench.

The chaotic lightning bolts unceasingly struck down. Each time, they terrifyingly struck to just the side of the Six Tailed Demon Fox, but even after a dozen consecutive bolts, none of them had actually struck Mo Xie.

“This Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox’s speed and evading abilities are very rare.” the consecutive strikes, especially the super speed techniques of lightning types, were still unable to accurately hit the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox. Very soon, there were others who could see that the narrow dodging wasn’t some sort of fluke. Instead, this Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox had a very exquisite dodging ability.

“Fifty meters in the air. Using lightning techniques at such a distance should probably make it very hard to accurately hit the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox with exquisite dodging abilities.”

Mo Xie’s most outstanding talent was her speed. Further adding on the fact that the fox species soul pets possessed extremely superior dodging abilities, in order to actually be hit, unless it was an extremely wide ranged (AOE) ability, it would be extremely hard.

Mo Xie’s speed and dodging abilities had already reached a definitive realm. It was very clear that the accuracy of the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon’s technique attacks hadn’t reached this level yet. No matter how it attacked from up in the sky, it only managed to exhaust Mo Xie’s physical running strength.

“You indeed still have a bit of ability, having raised that Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox to this exquisite dodging realm.” the

corners of Jia Feng's mouth rose up.

Exquisite Dodging, Dual Technique Release, Microcontrol, Technique Overlay, Follow Up Attack...

These were battle skills that were slowly comprehended through fights. These skills had nothing to do with species rank, phase, or stage. Only through unceasing innate fighting cultivation could a soul pet slowly comprehend these things.

Unable to strike Chu Mu and the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox, Jia Feng had no choice but to urge his Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon to fly down.

As the distance closed, the accuracy of the attacks would naturally increase. Jia Feng first descended to a height of forty meters and used the same series of lightning and wing type techniques to attack Mo Xie.

“Forty meters is already rather close. However, Jia Feng's Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon still seems incapable of capturing that Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox's figure.”

“This Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox's speed seems to be slowly increasing...”

The situation of the fight was extremely obvious. Jia Feng was riding on the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon in the air while launching attacks towards Chu Mu and Mo Xie. However, he was

unable to hit the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox, and he could only slowly fly lower. He tried to shrink the distance to increase the accuracy of the techniques.

Yet, as Jia Feng's Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon unceasingly descended, Chu Mu's Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox's speed unceasingly increased. This continued until around the 20 meter altitude, when the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon's attacks finally had clear effects.

“This should be enough. I don't believe that you won't summon your second soul pet!” a smile rose on Jia Feng's face. At an altitude of 20 meters, he controlled the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon as they chased after Chu Mu who was riding on the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox.

“Chaotic Feathers!”

Jia Feng gave an order to his soul pet. The Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon's flying speed slightly decreased, and its enormous wings quickly flapped. One was able to clearly feel the surging of a wave of air streams. Instantly, the ironblade-like feathers on its body began to leave its body and float around its body!

“Yi~~~~~”

The Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon let out a long cry. Suddenly, several hundred Chaotic Feathers slashed open a diagonal and chaotic line on the field as they flew towards Mo Xie in a concentrated group!!

Mo Xie's running speed was extremely quick. The violent wind was beating against Chu Mu face, blowing his hair into a disheveled mess. Through his soul remembrance, Chu Mu could feel the waves of energy and, even without turning around, Chu Mu could feel the onslaught of Jia Feng's Chaotic Thunder Feather Beast's technique!

“Mo Xie, Flame Dance!”

“Wu wu wu~~~~~”

Mo Xie tilted her head forwards, and her speed abruptly quickened. As her four paws ran along, one could discover that Mo Xie was unexpectedly continuously drawing out a magnificent flaming ripple and running into the air!!

The Flame Dance technique was possessed by many fire type soul pets. However, the effect of this technique was entirely based on a soul pet's speed. It was said that once the speed reached an even higher level, a few soul pets with the Flame Dance technique could even run into the air without falling!

Mo Xie hadn't reached the realm where she could run in the air without falling, but traversing a certain amount of length in the air wasn't a problem!

A magnificent flaming arc was tread upon and Mo Xie had already, with her flying steps, reached a higher height than the onslaught of the Chaotic Feathers. Under everyone's shocked

exclamations, she unexpectedly and oddly changed directions, charging towards the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon flying towards her!!

“Hu hu hu~~~~~”

The glorified flaming six tails danced about. An even more vigorous flame abruptly ignited on Mo Xie’s body!!

“Evil Stare!” coldly ordered Chu Mu.

The flames on her body were unceasingly released as a silver white colored demonic luster flickered in Mo Xie’s two pupils. This luster transformed into two eminently sharp mental swords that pierced into the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon’s mind!

A sixth phase seventh stage versus a sixth phase fourth stage. Despite there being a difference in phase and stage, Chu Mu, this eighth remembrance soul teacher’s soul remembrance was much stronger than the five remembrance Jia Feng!

“Yi!!!!!!!” The Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon instantly let out a pained and miserable cry. Its two sharp eyes no longer dared look directly at Mo Xie!

“Illusion Evil Flame Claws!!”

Chu Mu’s gaze imposingly stared at Jia Feng, who was in the process of chanting a defensive incantation!

Stepping into the air to pursue, Mo Xie's body astonishingly transformed into three figures that were abnormal and demonically charming!

Mo Xie's claws abruptly extended, and the Demon Fire Evil Flame's effect instantly ignited on her claws. Aside from this, an acute radiance of starlight gradually coagulated on Mo Xie's claw blades!!

Sixth level full form offensive soul equipment!

After purchasing this expensive soul equipment, Chu Mu immediately gave it to Mo Xie. Presently, it happened to be the time to test it out!

Mo Xie's claws had already reached the early seventh stage. Under the sixth level full form offensive soul equipment's effects, Mo Xie's claws directly increased to the late seventh stage. Furthermore, with the Illusion and Demon Fire Evil Flame techniques, the might of this attack was definitely near an eighth levels!!

Jia Feng's Crystal Armor effect had already covered himself and his Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon. However, even with this soul armor, he still only had the defense of a seventh level. How could this defend against the might of a nearly eighth level attack!

Chapter 84: Perfect Warrior Rank VS Perfect Commander Rank

Twenty meters into the air, the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon's feathers chaotically flew about. Fresh red blood from three wounds spilled out. It had completely lost its balance, and it fell from the air!!

“Beng!!!!” the Chaotic Thunder a Feather Demon heavily smashed into the earth, scraping open a long chasm. It slid nearly fifty meters before finally slowing down.

“Molten Fury!” Mo Xie landed on the ground and then instantly turned around. Her two eyes twinkled a demonic radiance!!

Where the radiances happened to intersect was the place where the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon fell. Immediately, a fiery lotus burst forth at the edge of that gulf. A brilliant, fiery light shot in all directions, and a wave of fire wantonly swept forth!

“Huhuhu~~~~~”

A violent wind whistled, causing the fire to unceasingly waver in the River Field Battlefield!

Looking from the spectator's seats, despite being nearly 500 meters away, they were still able to clearly see the scorching hot flames ceaseless dancing about!

Outside the battlefield, a shocked cry had already rung out. Chu Mu's Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox's retaliation method was extremely strange; no one had expected it. Furthermore, they hadn't thought that the powerful Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon unexpectedly had been knocked down and spilled blood everywhere. From its appearance, it had completely lost the strength to fight.

“Princess, your highness' Nightmare Prince Chu's strength is truly exceptional. He was unexpectedly able to, in such a short period of time, heavily wound Jia Feng's second main soul pet.” the Jia City city lord still wore a smile. His unfettered smile seemed to indicate that he wasn't worried for Jia Feng, who was enveloped by the Molten Fury.

Princess Jin Rou simply replied with a sentence, but her gaze was fixated on Chu Mu's Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox. She remembered that, a few months ago, during Chu Mu and Tian Ji's fight, the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox was at the sixth phase third stage. Yet, presently, the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox had only grown by one stage. Nonetheless, it's speed had considerably increased and its usage of techniques was even more adept. Unexpectedly, it was able to use Evil Flame Claw to its full potential while stepping in the air.

Nearly an eighth rank strength. Unless the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon possessed a seventh level soul armor on its own body, it wouldn't be able to defend against the nearly eighth rank attack.

Very clearly, the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon, inside the

flames, had already lost the strength to fight. However, Chu Mu knew that when Mo Xie used Illusion Evil Flame Claw, the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon used its wings to protect Jia Feng, so that Jia Feng himself definitely wouldn't suffer injuries.

“Huhuhu~~~~~”

The violent winds on the plains continued to blow against the gradually dimming Molten Fury. Inside these flames that ceaselessly wavered, one could see a figure gloomily walk out of the flames...

As if the starry brilliance had coagulated, the battle armor that was worn on his skin was condensed by this brilliance. This battle armor, in the burning fire, flickered a spirited luster, like water. It was able to repel all the fire on the outside.

The incantation had already begun to be chanted. A formed aura caused the surrounding gale to become disarrayed before being dissipated. Jia Feng's two eyes were already visibly cold. When he stared at Chu Mu, one could feel a killing intent being released!

Jia Feng had already recalled his Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon and summoned his second soul pet!

A surreptitious soul pact pattern gradually emerged next to Jia Feng. A strange, icy cold abruptly appeared around Jia Feng's surroundings as he chanted an incantation!!

The ice cold aura began to sweep through, and the flaming Molten Fury behind Jia Feng was quickly extinguished. Petal after petal of ice mysteriously burst forth in the air!!

“He’s finally going to summon it. It’s Jia Feng’s number one fighting pet!”

“Prisoner Island King-Chu Mu’s Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox is extremely formidable. In my opinion, it should be able to deal with it. The number one fighting pet against the number one fighting pet of two peak experts. I’m sure it will be even more marvelous.”

The Jia Region people seemed to be very familiar with Jia Feng. They knew what soul pet Jia Feng was going to summon, and what kind of soul pet he possessed.

Chu Mu jumped down from Mo Xie’s body. From the sweeping aura, Chu Mu could feel that the second soul pet that Jia Feng was going to summon was a soul pet which was primarily of the beast type. Despite this, the cold ice effect carried by this soul pet was considerably terrifying!

A contest between two beast types. Chu Mu had absolute confidence in Mo Xie, but when it came to the Demon Fire Evil Flame against frosted ice, Mo Xie definitely suffered a bit of restriction.

“Guard Chu must consider summoning his second soul pet to compliment for the attribute difference.” whispered Jin Kui.

“Yes, I remember he still has an Ice Air Fairy with peak ice type talent,” from start to finish, Princess Ji Rou’s gaze was on the battlefield. Her eyes leaked a trace of emotion that could be interpreted as an immense amount of interest towards the fight between soul pet trainers.

When an attribute was countered, the best option to fix it was to summon the next soul pet to complement the attribute. According to these conventions, Chu Mu should have summoned the Ice Air Fairy; however, Chu Mu didn’t do this.

There were many times where, despite an attribute counter, until the crucial moment occurred, Chu Mu wouldn’t rashly summon his other soul pet to compliment the attribute disadvantage. This was because, in his opinion, only through having his soul pets fight against other soul pets whose attributes countered his soul pets’ could they slowly be tempered through this disadvantage. By doing so, they would be able to slowly make up for their attribute disadvantage

“Wuwuwuwu~~~”

Sensing the opponent’s powerful aura, Mo Xie’s and Chu Mu’s opinions were unanimous. Even if the opponent countered her, in a one on one, Mo Xie wanted to fight by herself!

Finally, Jia Feng finished his soul pact summoning. All the icy frost began to violently coagulate in front of Jia Feng’s soul pact pattern. They seemed to be undergoing frosted ice recombination.

As the ice crystals began to condense, they slowly formed a mighty outline!

The shape had already been formed, and all the ice crystals astonishingly condensed into an enormous ice sculpture-like and fierce-looking creature. In such an expansive battlefield, this creature covered in ice crystal armor gave one a monumental feeling. Wave after wave of cold air bitingly dissipated in the plain's wind. Even if one was standing outside the field, one could feel the violent beast type aura and the terrifying killing intent!

“Hou hou hou!!!!!!!!!!:

Three consecutive roars abruptly rang out. Suddenly, it felt as if a strange soundwave blast had appeared on this River Field Battlefield!!

Tundra Ice Beast!!!

Covered from head to toe in a visibly sharp ice armor, its body was like an enormous snow leopard. It was slender, yet full of wild energy. Its four limbs were covered in ice colored armor and, at each of its respective ankles, there protruded ice knives that flickered cold light and looked incomparably sharp.

Tundra Ice Beast: Beast World – beast type – Horn Armor Beast species – Tundra Ice Beast Subspecies – high class commander rank

It was worth mentioning that the Tundra Ice Beast was different

than a majority of high class commander ranks. Amongst the warrior rank, the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox's fighting strength that surpassed its rank made it universally known as the warrior rank's strongest soul pet.

As for the extremely hard to find Tundra Ice Beast that resided in a few tundras, they were equivalently known as the perfect soul pet in the commander rank!

Although the Tundra Ice Beast's various attributes weren't ostentatious enough to be comparable to terrifying monarch ranks, when looking at it solely from fighting talent at the commander rank, it was already very rare to have an opponent. Even the Blue Nightmare with considerably terrifying fighting strength, leaving aside attributes, its rarity and fighting strength were probably under the Tundra Ice Beast!

Sixth phase fifth stage, Tundra Ice Beast!

Sixth phase fourth stage, Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox!

A perfect commander rank against a perfect warrior rank! Perhaps many people had already guessed such a situation would occur, but when one of these soul pet was ice and the other fire, and it was the perfect beast type confrontation, the eve of an outbreak of an intense fight between peak tiers was still able to make the blood of everyone boil!

Chu Mu stared at Jia Feng's Tundra Ice Beast. The sixth phase fifth stage Tundra Ice Beast had clearly gone through attribute

intensifying. The training between its beast and ice types was perfect. In such a way, this Tundra Ice Beast was truly extremely close to the fighting talent of a monarch rank soul pet!

As expected, the higher one stood, the stronger the soul pet he or she encountered. In Gangluo City, even if it was a normal high class commander rank, it would be contested over by all the clans. If its talent was even a little bit better, the fight for it would become even fiercer. However, when put in the entire region, after undergoing layer after layer of selection, the final expert that appeared would carry either a soul pet that was an absolute gem amongst millions of soul pets, or one that was extremely hard to find and uncommon. Otherwise, how could he or she proclaim him or herself as the hegemon of this region!

“Tundra Ice Claw!”

Jia Feng coldly issued a battle order to his Tundra Ice Beast!!

“Hou!!!!!!!!!!”

The Tundra Ice Beast abruptly stretched open its body and quickly exploded forth!

Death Assault!!!

Tundra Ice Claw!!

Speed allowed the Tundra Ice Beast’s strength to increase to the

most optimal amount. Immediately an extremely cold frost ice blade ripped towards Mo Xie!!

The frosty air coagulated, and substances that suffered from icy frost invasion would easily be ripped apart by sharp objects. The Tundra Ice Beast's Ice Claw technique energy was definitely much stronger than the Evil Flame Claw!

“Shua!!!!”

Speed, strength, and icy cold-three layered effects. Even if Mo Xie had reached the Exquisite Dodging level, she was still unable to dodge. A clear frozen claw wound was immediately torn open on her body!

The claw wound wasn't deep, but the frost poison that formed began to corrode Mo Xie's skin!

“Hu hu~~~” Mo Xie let out a whimper. A ball of flame abruptly ignited on the wound, forcibly burning the frost poison.

“Six Tail Lock!”

Mo Xie leaped to one side, and her speed suddenly increased. Her body swept past the Tundra Ice Beast's body, and her six long gorgeous tails immediately formed a lock, rolling towards the Tundra Ice Beast!!

“Hou Hou!!!!” the Tundra Ice Beast abruptly let out a roar. It

raised its front limbs and, as the Six Tail Lock locked its body, it suddenly smashed the stored energy in its front limbs onto the ground!!!

“Beng!!!!!!”

The earth suddenly sunk in. A terrifying energy swept forth, and the clearly smaller body of Mo Xie was knocked flying by the energy. Her Six Tail Lock attack wasn't effective!

Chapter 85: Dyed In Blood, Silver Colored Fox

The Tundra Ice Beast was very capable of grasping timing during a fight, and when Mo Xie was knocked flying, it immediately cast Death Assault. Its speed rapidly increased, and it created a cold light as it flashed across the field, abruptly charging into the off-balance Mo Xie!

Mo Xie, who was in midair, immediately flipped over. Her four paws, as if treading on water, ignited a few magnificent fire halos as her body suddenly jumped up as she was descending. While everyone was gasping, she dodged the extremely hard to dodge attack!

If stunned in midair, it would be very hard for many beast type soul pets to dodge their enemy's followup attack. Therefore, when Mo Xie lost her balance and used Flame Dance to thrillingly yet magnificently dodge, it was truly very marvelous. It couldn't help but make others lament about the difference between a peak expert and a normal expert. It wasn't merely defined by the superiority of a soul pet's rank and phase and stage. Instead, it was more determined by how well a soul pet used its techniques, and by how much of a grasp they had on fighting skills.

Demon Fire Evil Flame against Icy Frost Aura. Two groups of energy unceasingly clashed amidst the biting, cold gale of the River Field Battlefield.

The ground was covered by a thick layer of ice at times, while burning in a raging fire at others. The fight between a perfect

warrior rank and a perfect commander rank slowly caused others to be slightly dazzled. It didn't matter whether it was towards the magnificently shocking fire and ice type techniques, or the beast type abilities in the fight between the two great soul pets.

Gap Breakthrough, Followup Attack, Exquisite Dodging, Critical Strike, Technique Combination, Attribute Domination...

A super high class commander rank's absolute speed, soul equipment, techniques and attack talent created strength higher than that of a commander. It caused the fight between the two soul pets to become even more marvelous, and it unceasingly aroused the sighs and gasps of surprise from the audience!!

On the River Field Battlefield's rushing river water, a thick layer of ice crystals had already been frozen on top. The Tundra Ice Beast astonishingly stood on top of the river...

The weeds growing on the plains had already been set afire by the blaze. Amidst the torrential flames, the arrogant Mo Xie was burning from head to toe in fighting spirit. Her two demonic silver eyes stared at the violent Tundra Ice Beast. Although her body was covered in a plethora of wounds, her arrogant attitude still hadn't decreased in the slightest!

Seeing that Mo Xie was already visibly panting, Chu Mu's eyebrows were creased.

Mo Xie had accompanied him for many years, and Chu Mu knew that she possessed the abnormal talent of the consecutive

metamorphosis bloodline. The Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox itself was a soul pet that surpassed the warrior rank and those of the same age. Further adding on Mo Xie's own abnormal talent, even if she were facing many superior commander ranks, Mo Xie would still be able to easily hold her own.

Presently, against the perfect commander rank Tundra Ice Beast, while her speed was still at the advantage, her entire body quality was clearly inferior!

“Evil Flame Claw!!!!”

Mo Xie quickly and suddenly dodged the the Tundra Ice Beast's charge attack from the river. Her attack that attached flames and the soul claw to it instantly fell onto the Tundra Ice Beast's armor!!

The Evil Flame's effects clearly didn't have an immediate effect. Moreover, the ice armor completely countered it, so the attack amplified by the soul claw could only barely exhibit a suppressed Evil Flame effect. Such an attack merely left a light scar on the Tundra Ice Beast's body.

“Hou!!!” the Tundra Ice Beast turned around and abruptly launched itself at Mo Xie, who was dodging backward and astonishingly discovered consecutive attacks incoming!!

“Beng~~~~”

The first attack was dodged by Mo Xie, but blew up a hole in the

ground!

“Beng~~~~~”

The second attack was also dodged by Mo Xie, but the vibrational energy knocked Mo Xie flying!

“Beng~~~~~”

The third attack was immediately launched as Mo Xie was knocked flying into the air. Although Mo Xie had used Flame Dance, she could not completely dodge, and her abdomen was struck so that her body flew up even higher. She fell back onto the river field far away!!

“Bang!!!!!!!!”

The layer of ice on the river field wasn't extremely thick. When Mo Xie smashed to the ground from high above, the frozen river was instantly shattered. Several cracks quickly proliferated on top of the fifty meter river of ice....

“Gezhi Gezhi~~~~~”

Finally, as the cracks continued to grow larger, the entire river field, which was frozen in a layer of ice, was entirely shattered. It transformed into numerous chunks of thick ice that were washed downstream by the rushing river!

Seeing the Evil Flame Demon Fox submerged in the river, Jia Feng faintly raised the corner of his lips. A commander rank was a commander rank after all. Although Jia Feng couldn't help but admit that the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox had been raised extremely well by Chu Mu, in front of the Tundra Ice Beast, the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox whose attribute was also countered, simply wasn't the Tundra Ice Beast's opponent!

“Admit defeat, you aren't my opponent.” From the beginning until the end, Jia Feng stood on the other side of the river area. Presently, his gaze was on Chu Mu.

While the Tundra Ice Beast was fighting Mo Xie, Chu Mu hadn't used any soul techniques, not even using Violent Blood Pupil on Mo Xie. Simultaneously, Jia Feng hadn't used any soul technique. It had purely been a fight between these two perfect soul pets!

.....

“The warrior rank Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox was able to fight the Tundra Ice Beasts for so long and further able to cause large wounds to it; the Nightmare Prince Chu truly is a genius. If he was able to possess an even stronger soul pet, he would definitely have the advantage.” a smile appeared on the Jia City city lord's face. He wore an expression as if he had already predicted the outcome.

The Jia City city lord had continuously maintained a calm and composed manner was obviously because he understood Jia Feng's

soul pets. Jia Feng's main soul pet, the Tundra Ice Beast was personally seized from the Jia Region Tundra, where monarch rank soul pets resided. This soul pet's talent surpassed practically all the commander ranks, and its ice type talent could be compared to a few normal ice elemental world soul pets. Further adding on the soul cores, soul crystals, spiritual items, and attribute strengthening throughout its evolution and growth, its body also had a sixth level soul claw and soul armor.

Such a soul pet was hard to defeat, even for some terrifying monarch ranks. Moreover, it was only fighting against a warrior rank Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox!

“Mhm, the Tundra Ice Beast really is very strong.” Princess Jin Rou nodded her head, but didn't say anything further.

“Princess, if he loses, won't he be directly eliminated? Our journey doesn't permit losers.” asked Jin Kui in a soft voice.

Princess Jin Rou shook her head and said: “From the beginning he said he didn't like restricted battles. During the fight, he didn't use any soul technique or attribute complimenting. If I didn't guess incorrectly, he is training his Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox to fight against a stronger soul pet whose attribute is also a counter. Thus, he allows his soul pet to surpass...”

“Train? Could it be that his true goal this fight isn't to win?” Jin Kui revealed an astonished expression.

“Every Prison Island King has survived amidst a slaughter. Their

concept of winning is killing. There's an innate difference between contests and slaughter." analyzed Princess Jin Rou.

"Then the princess' meaning is that he's completely using Jia Feng's soul pet as a sparring partner?" inquired Jin Kui.

The princess didn't say anything else. She only kept her eyes on Chu Mu, who was calm from beginning to end.

Princess Jin Rou's explanation of her guess towards Chu Mu wasn't wrong. When the Tundra Ice Beast was summoned, the nature of the battle had changed.

Jia Feng's second main soul pet, the Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon, being heavily wounded in such a short period of time by Mo Xie absolutely was not due to luck. Instead, it was because Chu Mu, at the time, had only wanted to quickly end the fight and used his full strength.

When Jia Feng summoned his second soul pet, Chu Mu had already planned on summoning the Ice Air Fairy to engage in attribute complementation. The Ice Air Fairy and Mo Xie coordinated to make the strongest ice and fire combination. When the two worked together on Prison Island, they defeated numerous three soul opponents. Defeating Jia Feng simply wasn't a problem.

Only, the Tundra Ice Beast's appearance caused Chu Mu to get rid of that idea.

Ever since returning from Prison Island, aside from encountering the nameless old servant's three soul pets, Mo Xie hadn't encountered a truly challenging opponent. She lacked a certain method of tempering herself, and this Tundra Ice Beast happened to be extremely suitable for Mo Xie to fight against. Chu Mu naturally wouldn't waste this chance.

“Summon your second soul pet!” Jia Feng unhastily attacked Chu Mu. His expression was confident as he stared at Chu Mu, and he seemed to feel that there wasn't a need to use the extremely good opportunity to attack Chu Mu directly. Instead, he chivalrously gave Chu Mu the time to summon his second soul pet.

“There's no need.” Chu Mu's gaze didn't meet Jia Feng's. Instead, it was fixated on the untrammelled surging river water.

A soul pet that was able to continuously mutate didn't merely require a special bloodline and constitution. Instead, what it needed was a heart of fire that incessantly burned with the will to grow stronger!

“Hua~~~~~”

In the middle of the roaring river region, the river water suddenly erupted, and a splash flew high into the air!!

Inside the wave of water was a silver colored figure that jumped out from the depths of the river water. It vigorously fell onto the ground, its long sleek fur was completely wet, and ice cold droplets of water stuck to its body. Dripping wet....

“Wu wu wu!!!!!!!!!!!!” Mo Xie raised her head and let out a long howl!

Suddenly, a surge of fire jumped up from under her four paws. The scorching hot Demon Fire Evil Flames burned while the icy water on her body all evaporated. In an instant, the dry silvery white fur began to dance again. Its ostentatious silvery, white colored six gorgeous tails opened up and waved about as it faced the violent wind!

After releasing the demonic aura and evil flames, the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox that was originally in a wet and miserable state, regained its demonically charming and violently natural appearance. There wasn't even half a trace of suffering or defeat left!!

Seeing that the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox continued to burn with such exuberant fighting spirit, the eyes of the spectators outside the battlefield immediately lit up. Sitting in the important seats, the Jia City city lord had originally wanted to give pretend praise to Chu Mu's soul pets. He easily looked up at Jia Feng, and saw that the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox had returned to the battlefield. His words instantly stopped short, and his eyes revealed a rather shocked expression.

As Chu Mu watched Mo Xie, who was full of fighting intent, a faint smile rose on his face. That bloody scene from Prison Island flashed through his mind...

After three consecutive days and three consecutive nights of fighting, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier and the Ice Air Fairy were both heavily wounded. Over a hundred corpses of soul pets were spread out, composing a long bloody pathway. At the end of this path arrogantly stood the silvery white body of Mo Xie now fully dyed in blood!

Mo Xie was arrogant, indifferent, and had an extremely wild nature. Her fighting willpower was definitely not under Mo Ye's. How could such a negligible wound knock her down?!

Chapter 86: Tail Is A Fox's Honor!

“You’re pretty resilient. I guess I’ll waste a bit more time.” Jia Feng smiled calmly, not minding Mo Xie very much, who just had her fighting intent restored.

The Tundra Ice Beast’s size was nearly four meters in size. When it ran, its panther claws left blossoms of ice. Especially when it casted Death Assault, it was as if its entire body morphed into a raging windstorm of cold air!

“Mo Xie, Shadow Claw!”

Chu Mu gave a fighting command to Mo Xie.

Mo Xie stood silently in place, but she suddenly lifted up her paw. Immediately, the demon fire evil flame on her gathered at her claws, and the effects of the Shadow Claw was imbued!

Dash and toss, a fire infused claw shadow swiftly detached from Mo Xie’s claws and flew towards the Tundra Ice Beast that was approaching with Death Assault!!

The Tundra Ice Beast had also reached the state of Exquisite Dodging. Seeing the Shadow Claw approach head on, it bizarrely ran a lightning bolt pattern!!

The Shadow Claw flew past the side of the Tundra Ice Beast, leaving only a shallow mark on its armor of ice, yet not causing

any hindrance to its speed!

Polar Shattering Claw!!!

An indistinct ice wall appeared out of nowhere. The Tundra Ice Beast's claw violently passed through the completely transparent ice wall, as if shattering the wall. This shattering energy started spreading from the wall, and it quickly affected a huge region of space!!

The shattering of space caused the air flow to become jumbled, and cracks began to appear on the ground.

Seventh rank attack, plus the sixth rank effect of soul claw. Although it hadn't reached the eighth rank, if the power were shattered straight on the sixth rank defense Mo Xie, Mo Xie would definitely be heavily injured!

“Illusion!”

Within the shattering energy, Mo Xie's body immediately wavered into nothingness. Vaguely, two more almost identical figures of Mo Xie appeared!

“Peng~~~~~”

Two of the phantoms shattered almost simultaneously, yet Mo Xie's true body perfectly dodged the attack!

Her flexible and gorgeous six long tails suddenly became incomparably hard, transforming into six silver chains, piercing straight towards the shattered location and furling around the four meter long Ice Tundra Beast!!

Evil Flame Claw was Mo Xie's first weapon, and her Evil Flame Six Tails were her second. Six Tail Lock had many different forms. At this time, the aggressive Six Tailed Chain Bind form was used!!

The Evil Flame Six Tail's power was even greater than Mo Xie's claws. Even though the Tundra Ice Beast had a hefty tonnage, it was still picked up into the air by Mo Xie's Six Tailed Chain Bind!

“Evil Flame Bone Lock!!”

“Wuwuwu~~~~~”

Mo Xie let out a call, and she used her six tails to lift the Ice Tundra Beast even higher, as the demon fire evil flames instantly spread through Mo Xie's six silver tails!!

The six tails started to contract. The sixth rank full form offensive soul equipment's effects were evident at this point. Surprisingly, they formed a powerful shackle shape and adhered to Mo Xie's tails, causing Mo Xie's Bone Lock technique be even stronger!!

“Zizizi!!!!!!”

The Tundra Ice Beast's soul armor effects had shown now, yet the power of the Bone Lock was very strong. As the six tails contracted, there were obvious signs of the Ice Tundra Beast's armor cracking!!

The Ice Tundra Beast's greatest advantage was its defensive ice armor and soul armor, which was much stronger than Mo Xie's. However, it was no longer useful as signs of cracking became more and more distinct!!

A commotion immediately arose. Many people with blind spots in their soul pet knowledge didn't know that the Evil Flamed Six Tail Demon Fox's tails were this powerful!!

Jia Feng's face shifted obviously, as he had his brows tightly scrunched. He used his soul remembrance to send an emergency command to his soul pet!!

“Hou!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

The defensive Ice Armor had already been crushed to powder, and its bones were about to be twisted until they broke. At this time, the Tundra Ice Beast suddenly let out a roar!!

This roar wasn't the Tundra Ice Beast's painful scream, but was instead full of mental intimidation, falling from above and bringing Mo Xie immense mental pressure!

Mo Xie's willpower was far stronger than a normal soul pet's, so such mental pressure couldn't truly cause any harm to her!

“The Tundra Ice Beast's become angry, it's about to cast an advanced technique!!”

Hearing the roar, everyone quickly widened their eyes and focused their attention on the Ice Tundra Beast's.

“The Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox is about to suffer a calamity. If it doesn't retract quickly, it's demise won't be pretty.”

From everyone's reaction, the energy about to be released by the Tundra Ice Beast would be terrifying!

“Houhou!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

The Roar was still echoing as the Tundra Ice Beast's crystal covered body suddenly released a frightening coldness!

The frightening cold air crazily spread to the nearby area, almost instantly extinguishing all the demon fire evil flame. The power of the ice also started to freeze Mo Xie's tail!!

Ice reigned boundlessly, and the entire river battlefield gave off a bone-chilling feel!!

“This is.....”

Seeing the enormous release of icy air, Chu Mu let out an astonished expression.

Seventh rank ice type technique, Icy Space!

Seventh rank techniques were something only a monarch rank soul pet could cast!

If just the technique's power reached seventh rank, plus the soul pet's control of ice and strengthening of its ice type, then after this technique was casted, it would definitely be even stronger than seventh rank!

It was just like the Ice Sword Formation cast by Ice Air Fairy. It was a third rank technique, but under its powerful control of ice type, the Ice Sword could totally reach seventh rank!

“Mo Xie, retract your six tails and run into the distance!” Chu Mu realized that this Icy Space's power could very likely reach the semi-eighth rank, so he immediately told Mo Xie to give up on attacking.

“Heng, you've got no chance anymore, become an ice sculpture!” Jia Feng laughed coldly.

The power of the Icy Space immediately gathered frantically around Mo Xie's six tough tails. Mo Xie just wanted to release her tails, yet just as she did, the effects of the freeze covered her tail!!

The icy effect started to spread, quickly freezing the entirety of Mo Xie's tails in the air, making them into thinly curved icicles.

The terrifying power of the Icy Space didn't stop because of this. It shockingly started following the completely frozen tail down, and it spread towards Mo Xie's body!!

Seeing this, Chu Mu's face had an obvious change. Mo Xie was of the fire type, and the effects of the freeze completely subdued her flames. If the Icy Space completely covered her body, she would shatter into pieces with the slightest hit!!

“Mo Xie, give up your tails!”

Chu Mu bit down, and he gave Mo Xie a seemingly cruel command!!

Mo Xie also realized the lethal danger, and fire rose up suddenly from her paws as she directly casted Death Assault to run away forcefully!!!

Her long tail lock was locked onto the Tundra Ice Beast, and her six tails were frozen solid. With such forced running from Mo Xie, there could only be one result!

“Peng!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

A crack could be heard from the six tails, splitting from the middle of the frozen icicles, all the way to the tip of the tails in the air!!

Lustrous splinters flew from the cracks of the six tails, and countless pieces spread onto the ground. The back part of the tail, completely breaking apart from the front, fell with the Tundra Ice Beast to the ground, shattering into nothing but powder.

Watching the tail violently being broken off and shatter would give anyone watching a chill down their spine.

“Wuwuwu~~~~”

With the six tails fracturing, Mo Xie’s morale was reduced to nothing, and even her voice sounded somewhat miserable.

Right now, everyone was directing their gaze to that Evil Flamed Six-Tailed Demon Fox with a broken tail, completely aghast!!

“If I remember correctly, during their mating seasons, foxes win over the opposite gender with their beautiful tails. Also, foxes within packs even use their tails as secondary weapons...”

“One should never even touch a fox’s tail, otherwise...”

It was true. As many Soul Pet Trainers knew, the tail was one of the most important parts of a fox. Many foxes, once tail-broken, would fight to the death, sacrificing even their lives!!

Sitting on the high seats, Princess Jin Rou watched the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox who had her six tails broken, and her gaze visibly wavered. After a long time, she said with a somewhat cold tone, “The tail...is a fox’s honor!!”

The tail...is a fox’s honor!!

The whole atmosphere of the battlefield changed when the six tails, which the Evil Flamed Six-Tailed Demon Fox took pride in shattered into pieces!

At this moment, the silver and black pupils both revealed the same sentiments! One could not feel the uncontrollable emotions within these two demonic eyes; however, it felt like sinking into a frozen lake, getting deeper and deeper, colder and colder.

“Wuwuwu!!!!”

“Wuwuwuwuwu!!!!!!”

“Wuwu!!! Wuwuwuwu!!!!”

Mournful cries came from all around the battlefield. However, these cries definitely did not contain any sense of agony — The shattering of the tail, and the struggle to live were absolutely insignificant. However, within these howls, one could sense a strange power, strong enough to pierce someone’s body and shake their soul!!

“Wuwuwuwu!!!!!!”

“Wuwuwuwuwuwu!!!!”

Though the tails shattered, a bright flame still emerged and burned even brighter!

The flames, the blazing red Demon Fire Evil Flame, and the pure white Soul Flames!

The essences of the two flames merged, forging a heat that scorched the body, yet chilled the soul!!

Though usually, Chu Mu would not cast Double Molten Fury until it was at a crucial moment, crushing Mo Xie’s honor was the same as crushing Chu Mu’s honor! Right now, only Jia Feng’s and Tundra Ice Beast’s lives could calm their anger!!

“Wuwuwuwu!!!!!!!!!!!!”

Chu Mu was already chanting an incantation, giving off a bleak and chilling aura, ready to make Jia Feng and the Tundra Ice Beast receive the judgment of wrath. Suddenly, Mo Xie’s somewhat savage cry mixed into Chu Mu’s Soul Remembrance.

When the cry mixed in, Chu Mu’s soul shook a little, suddenly sensing his Soul Remembrance elevating.

This elevation of Soul Remembrance had only appeared once, and that was when they fought Yang Zhi De's Rare Blood Beast on Prison Island.

This sensation of souls resonating and elevating, although it had been three years, was still etched deeply into his memory!!

Chapter 87: Mutation, Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox

Raging flames burned furiously on Mo Xie. This flame seemed to, with the spiritual elevation of both Mo Xie and Chu Mu, evolve, causing its crimson red to vaguely have a color even more captivating than red!

The color was like the tint of a glistening and tender sunset, yet the outer layer still kept its demon fire evil flame red. This layering made the flames look dazzling, but it also gave off a breathtaking, mysterious, and wild feel!

The flames rolled about, causing waves of heat to sweep through the nearby area. The entire river region battlefield had dried up wild grass growing within it. Once this strange and mysterious fire started burning, it impressively created a terrifying prairie fire that swept through the vast river region battlefield, even reaching the other side of the river!!

Everyone watching from outside, especially those watching afar from the other side of the river, could clearly see a wave of fire engulf the entire river battlefield, spreading towards their position!!

The entire river region battlefield was nearly 1000 meters wide. If the release of the fire could, in such a short time, reach 1000 meters, how frightening would its power be?!

On the other end of the battlefield, everyone started panicking,

as they started to crazily retreat.....

There was a massive amount of people surrounding the battlefield, and it was also very crowded. Those near the protective fence of the battlefield all backed off, The people behind them had slower reactions, so a chaotic scene full of falling and stumbling ensued.

Over a thousand people were pale with terror. After all, the protective fence could hardly defend against the spread of fire. What was worth celebrating was that when the fire reached the edges, it finally died down, causing the soul pet trainers who tried to summon their soul pets to still have lingering fears.

From below, what was seen was a fire wave that covered an entire dimension of vision when it rolled over. From above, what was seen was a terrifying tide of fire spreading furiously throughout the entire battlefield with the Evil Flamed Six Tail Demon Fox as the center. Even though the rolling heat waves were absorbed by the energy crystals at the protective fence, one could still feel the burning temperature assaulting one's face!!

Strange, mysterious, terrifying, and strong!

This fire caused tens of thousands of people to be unsettled, each watching the tailless Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox. They couldn't believe that a sixth phase fourth stage Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox could let out such a tremendous and shocking flame!!

Just from the aura of the flame, only a high class monarch level fire type Elemental soul pet could create such a staggering effect. Mo Xie's flame aura wasn't at that level; what caused this flame aura to be this terrifying was the massive demonic aura of the Demon Fox species.

The power of fire was definitely not the most terrifying energy that Mo Xie was releasing right now. What was really terrifying was the demonic aura that caused the entire battlefield to roar with wind, and it formed a frightening cyclone centered around her!!

The dense demonic aura spread recklessly. Even the Tundra Ice Beast, a hegemon of the commander rank, revealed an expression of fear under this evil demonic aura.

Jia Feng's eyes shockingly watched Chu Mu's Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox and was completely dazed! When a soul pet grew, it was possible that it would excavate its potential.

Yet, even if the growth could cause a change in figure, it couldn't instantly release such a shocking amount of energy!

‘Species Mutation!!!’

That soul reverberating and elevating feel was precisely due to Mo Xie's mutating blood line that started burning. At this point, Chu Mu could feel the arrogance that was appearing within Mo Xie's heart. This arrogance completely rose above all commander ranks, including the boss of the commander ranks-the Tundra Ice

Beast. Before such arrogance, even it was still puny!!

“Wuwuwuwuwu!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

Fox calls again sounded throughout the entire river region battlefield!

This high call didn't have a shock of power or an ear piercing shrillness. It only had a quality that pierced bodies straight to the soul, causing waves of palpitation that couldn't be calmed!

The double royal fire burned on Mo Xie's silver body, and its body clearly underwent some changes!

Though still elegantly lined, the softness within her figure glowed with viciousness. Especially under the coverage of her pure silver hair, when it billowed, demonic power was released everywhere. This caused her manner to be distinctly intimidating and domineering!

The ice shards that came from the breaking of the six tails at this moment suddenly started burning with this double royal flame, instantly dissipating into nothingness.

Simultaneously, the root part of Mo Xie's tail region also started burning, disappearing with the shattered tails.

And just after all the tails disappeared, the double royal flame strangely morphed into nine, dragon-like flames, flying upwards

as if jumping into the skies!

The nine dragons burned with a massive and imposing manner. As Mo Xie's calls became progressively higher, it started madly rolling up, becoming nine tails that burned with double royal flames!

The nine tails were waved around, releasing an aura more than double the aura of the six tails from before. The tails were like nine brash and elongated organisms that adhered to Mo Xie's body!!

Nine tails meant nine royal flames!

When the nine tails formed, nine royal flames calmly burned near Mo Xie's flowing silver body. They were like fire organisms, floating full of spirit before slowly spiralling downwards and aggregating at Mo Xie's feet!

“Huhuhu~~~~~”

A magnificent fire suddenly blossomed beneath Mo Xie's four flaming paws. The royal flamed nine tails unfurled with all its wildness and aggressiveness, as if nine young dragons going into battle!

Her claws had already been burning with double royal flames. The flames didn't cause her bone claws to become red, but instead caused them to release an even sharper glint through the fire!!!

Silver white fur billowed around her wildly, becoming even more silver than Mo Xie's fur before. White didn't see any representation on her body; it was all the noblest silver. This silver emanated a hint of metallic hardness. Even powerful attacks probably couldn't leave any wound on this fur hide!!

“This.....What is this!!!!”

“Even if it morphed, it couldn't have such effect. How could it possibly go from six tails to the terrifying nine tails!!”

“Is this the supremely rare Nine Tailed Demon Fox?!! But it's slightly different from the Nine Tailed Demon Fox!!”

Over ten thousand people witnessed the species mutation of Mo Xie, yet not many people realized they were witnessing a scene as shocking as species mutation. This process was beautiful and stunning, giving people an indescribably shock!!

“Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox!!!

Jia City's city master, who was always collected and smiling lightly, suddenly stood up from his seat, his eyes watching surprisingly at the soul pet!

A tenth level city city master had a powerful position. If it could cause this old man, who would be calm even if Jia Feng were to be killed, to reveal such a shocked expression, it was imaginable just how crazy of a tide this species mutation had started!!

Even Princess Jin Rou, who was uncannily calm at all times, was revealing an obvious surprise within her eyes.

Species Mutation!!

A extremely rare scene within the soul pet world. Some people bred over hundreds of soul pets in their life, constantly using different soul items to strengthen their soul pets, but even then it was very hard to cause a soul pet to mutate into a stronger species.

Even in regions where fighting was extremely common, species mutations were very rarely seen. Even if there were examples, they often happened on low level soul pets, which didn't even cause powerful and important characters to bat an eye.

But in the true high level domain, species mutations had definitely happened before. However, every time it did, it would cause a sensation everywhere!!

Chu Mu's current domain was already somewhat high. Every top tier expert's soul pet was a high quality soul pet picked from tens or even hundreds of thousands of soul pets. Even if it was warrior rank, after training, it could compare to a commander rank.

The fighting power of his soul pets had already exceeded their own rank limitations. If it also underwent a species mutation, its price would increase by another large rank!!

Perfect warrior ranks were often priced in the millions. Perfect commander ranks were even in the ten millions or higher. A perfect warrior rank undergoing a species mutation would definitely make it a perfect commander rank. Just species rank wise, it would increase ten fold.

Yet, the biggest trait of a species mutation was that the soul pet would inherit the species abilities and some characteristic abilities. If one was lucky, the soul pet could learn an even stronger ability. Such abilities were usually a powerful type crystal-like demon fire evil flame, black crystal, demon wood, or chaotic thunder.

Royal flame!!

Fire type energy crystal! When Mo Xie mutated from the Evil Flamed Six Tail Demon Fox into the Royal Flamed Nine Tail Inferno Fox, she controlled an even higher level fire energy crystal, morphing her demon fire evil flame into royal flames!

Royal flames wasn't really a true fire type energy crystal, but instead they were a special state. Royal flames meant multiple flames.

Double royal flames meant two layers of flames. Mo Xie currently held two types of flames: one was the outer layer of demon fire evil flame she inherited from her previous species, and the other was the mysterious inner flame that was redder than blood!

A soul pet with royal flame could let one flame burn outside of its body to increase its fire type damage, or it could let both flames

merge together to also merge the damage amplification.

Though such an overlay of the double royal flames couldn't exactly double the damage, if they had different burning properties, like the devil soul flames' cold burn and another fire's heated burn, then the combination would be scary!

Chapter 88: Evil Pupil Scare, Mind Control!

Royal Flamed Nine Tail Inferno Fox!!!!

From the perfect warrior rank, losing to the Tundra Ice Beast only in defense, to the now perfect commander rank. This perfection had possibly surpassed the realm of the commander rank already, becoming a true monarch!!

Royal Flamed Nine Tail Inferno Fox: Beast World – Demon type(Beast type) – Demon Fox species – Nine Tailed Inferno Fox Subspecies – Royal Flamed Nine Tail Inferno Fox – high class commander rank

Top tier commander rank beast type talent!

Top tier commander rank demon type talent!

Top tier commander rank fire type talent!

With commander rank soul pets, as long as one of the talents reached the top tier of the commander rank, and the rest of its talents weren't horrendously low, it would then be an incomparably precious commander rank soul pet.

However, the Royal Flamed Nine Tail Inferno Fox had three such top tier talents. With the additional effects of the double royal flame on her high power talents, why wouldn't one dare to fight a monarch rank?!!

A soul pet comparable to a monarch rank was truly born!

Royal Flamed Nine Tail Inferno Fox, ignoring all the commander ranks, and challenging the monarch rank!

The tides in Chu Mu's heart still couldn't calm down, as his eyes watched Mo Xie at that moment. The exaggerated nine dragon-like tails, the pure silver and royal fur, the proud and imposing royal flame. Such a soul pet was like a legend. Thinking back to the first time he saw Mo Xie in her Moonlight Fox phase, and then comparing that to the Royal Flamed Nine Tail Inferno Fox now, the transformation made even Chu Mu feel warm tears of excitement welling up in his eyes!

Chu Mu took a deep breath, and the depression and anger from Mo Xie breaking her six tails disappeared. His chest was filled with the burning of the double flames, causing even his blood to start boiling!!

“Mo Xie, find your honor back from where you lost it!

Chu Mu pressed down the ecstasy in his heart, and spoke as calmly as possible to Mo Xie.

“Wuwuwuwu!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

The palpitating call again echoed throughout the battlefield, and the proud Royal Flamed Nine Tail Inferno Fox's time to shine had

arrived!!

Crouching down slightly, in the next moment, a wave of fire blasted out from behind and Mo Xie suddenly disappeared from her place!

Not even a flash of silver appeared, as the terrifyingly fast Royal Flamed Nine Tail Inferno Fox just disappeared from everyone's sight!

Yet, when everyone came back to their senses, all ten thousand people suddenly noticed that the Tundra Ice Beast had already been violently thrown into the air by nine intimidating Inferno Fox tails!!

The Tundra Ice Beast was four meters in length, yet it was thrown up like an infant. Only when it reached the height of ten meters did people suddenly notice that nine surprisingly long tails had rolled the beast up!!

Nine Tail Dragon Obliteration!

“Wuwuwuwu!!!!!!”

The utmost proud call sounded out again!

It was no longer a Bone Lock, but straight up Obliteration!!

The nine tails started waved around frantically in a very high frequency, actually creating a silver storm that engulfed upwards!

It stood up magnificently and shockingly, in everyone's sight, it finally transformed into a silver dragon full of blending power!!

“Shuashuashuashua!!! Shuashuashuashua”

Within the stomach of the silver dragon, the Tundra Ice Beast felt the terrifying obliterating power and it shattered into pieces of ice crystals!!!

The silver nine tailed obliterating dragon didn't appear for long. The entire process took only two seconds, yet the heavily armored Tundra Ice Beast with a soul armor was completely torn to shreds, even becoming ice powder in the end!!

The Ice Tundra Beast, with a seventh rank final stage defense, was reduced to powder that dissipated with the wind! Seeing this scene, the ten thousand people all sucked in a breath. Was this really a duel between youth experts?!

Shimmering powder slowly landed by Mo Xie's silver body. The proud Mo Xie rose her head and looked strikingly at the extremely pale Jia Feng. Her evil and demonic quality was displayed completely, causing Jia Feng to not even dare to summon another soul pet. From over a hundred meters away, he was shocked to the ground by the gaze of those demon eyes!

“Wuwuwuwu!!!!!!!!!!”

Mo Xie again let out a call. At this moment, Mo Xie’s arrogance was let out without restraint. She actually commanded Jia Feng to summon his third soul pet!!

Jia Feng was dazed. His eyes stared into Mo Xie’s silver evil pupils, and his terror was slowly magnified until it became despair!

Jia Feng’s expression changed constantly. Suddenly, a strange glint shined in Mo Xie’s silver pupils. The same glint also flickered in Jia Feng’s pupil!

The next moment, Jia Feng’s eyes completely changed. From the original terror to despair, it changed into a completely placid dullness. As if his soul was instantly sucked out of him, he was expressionless!

Suddenly, while maintaining this soulless state, Jia Feng started slowly chanting, as if completely listening to Mo Xie’s command, and he summoned his other soul pets!!

Evil Pupil Scare!!!

Chu Mu stared blankly, looking astonished at the still emotionless Jia Feng who was chanting!

Evil Pupil Scare, a demon type technique that was even stronger than Evil Stare. Through destroying the enemy’s mental will and

forcefully planting a command as a mental wave, it could force the enemy to carry out the commands without even knowing!

What Mo Xie was currently casting was indeed Evil Pupil Scare, this powerful yet wicked demon type ability!!

Jia Feng was already chanting, and a three meter long deep blue furred Terror Wolf appeared gradually from within the soul pet summoning symbol.

Sixth phase eighth stage – high class commander rank. The terror Wolf, within the realm of the commander rank, was definitely a mainstream soul pet. The majority of soul pet trainers trained this evil and purely beast type soul pet.

However, Jia Feng's Terror Wolf, from its sharp claws, appeared to be a top tier attack talent soul pet.

As a pure beast type soul pet, the Terror Wolf's beast type aura was tremendous. Every time it appeared from its summoning symbol, one could obviously feel the dense coldness and a beast's thirst for blood.

Yet, when this sixth phase eighth stage Terror Wolf appeared on the river region battlefield, its aura wasn't released even slightly!

The terrible aura of the monarch worthy Royal Flamed Nine Tail Inferno Fox was still in existence, so how could the lowly Terror Wolf act brashly. From the moment it was summoned, this Terror Wolf's green eyes were full of fear and it hung its head low, not even daring to stare into Mo Xie's evil pupils!!

“Sou!!!!”

Still disappearing in place, what was different from before was that everyone distinctly felt the weeds on the plain getting tossed upwards!!

The scary speed was so fast that not many could see her figure clearly!

Mo Xie suddenly appeared in front of the Terror Wolf, extending her royal flame claws and firmly scratching the Terror Wolf's body!!!

Seeing only a cold glint without flames, the Terror Wolf's powerful body was split into two under everyone's eyes!!

From the skull, through the sharp teeth, all the way to the waist, the sharp claws cut a very clean incision. When the wolf fell, one could still see the flowing blood, white tendons, and slimy organs.....

“Puchi~~~~~”

Blood immediately sprayed out from the massive cut. The crimson and disgusting liquid sprayed right onto Jia Feng's face and body, viscously dripping onto the ground from his body.

“Huhuhu~~~~~”

Yet, when the two parts of the corpse fell down, the strange double royal flame suddenly appeared with a one second delay, quickly burning the Terror Wolf into ashes!!

A shock instantly spread throughout the entire stadium, infecting everyone. At this point, no one dared to discuss anymore, as they all watched the arrogantly standing Royal Flamed Nine Tail Inferno Fox fearfully.

The bizarre atmosphere seemed to calm the entire world down, and Jia Feng, who was painted with blood, only now recovered some of his consciousness.

The sticky blood continued to roll down his cheeks, but the recovered Jia Feng didn't have any inclination to wipe off the blood on his face. His heart, at this moment, was pierced by a pair of sharp eyes. His pupils were dilated to the max, as he watched the extremely near Royal Flamed Nine Tail Inferno Fox in shock. In the corner of his eyes was two halves of a corpse that had become ashes. The start of the burning of these corpses was the moment the soul pact between him and his Terror Wolf was severed!

Breathing at this moment stopped. Jia Feng didn't even have the power to close his eyes anymore. Those icy cold eyes, elegant yet striking body, terrifyingly waving nine tails, and burning double royal flame. They were all so close to him, able to make him disappear completely from this world at any time!!

“Enough!!!!!!”

Finally, a firm voice broke the silence in the battlefield. The person to make this sound was the Jia City city master!

Chu Mu and Mo Xie almost simultaneously turned around to look at the menacing Jia City city master.

A cold smile appeared on Chu Mu’s face, and he said lightly to Mo Xie, “Come back.”

Mo Xie’s cold and evil eyes slowly shifted. When she turned around, one of her long tails, not knowing if it was intentional or not, swished straight into Jia Feng’s chest, completely ignoring Jia Feng’s sixth rank soul armor and viciously causing Jia Feng’s rib cage to cave in!!

Jia Feng immediately spat out blood and flew backwards, flying a very far distance before finally stopping!

Seeing this scene, Jia City city master’s expression clearly twitched, but he didn’t dare to say anything. He was only able to sit black faced back into his seat, very forcefully wearing an ugly smile and he said to Princess Jin Rou, “Truly an eye opener that I can witness a perfect warrior rank Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox mutate into a Royal Flamed Nine Tail Inferno Fox. Princess sure has received another powerful person. If you can train him well, he would definitely become yet another expert within Nightmare Palace that could support Princess.....”

Chapter 89: Aiming For The Strongest Of The Young Generation

Princess Jin Rou didn't take any notice of the Jia City city master's meaningless flattery. Her eyes still stared at Chu Mu and the mutated Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox Mo Xie. Even though she had a veil on her face, one could still see the shock she was undoubtedly experiencing.

“This demon fox.....” Princess Jin Rou slowly recovered from her shock, yet her expression continued to shift.

This was because she remembered that, three years ago, the soul pet on Chu Mu's shoulders was a special Moonlight Fox. At the time, she even hugged the little fox while watching the horizon.....

Three years later, Chu Mu brought an Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox and powerfully rose in power within Nightmare Palace, becoming the most dazzling star of recent times in one go.

Yet now, this Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox had, under her own eyes, mutated into an even higher species rank, the Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox Mo Xie!

Three phases, all of which were of the demon fox species, and she had just personally witnessed the mutation from Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox to Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox.

“Is it a coincidence??” Princess Jin Rou murmured to herself.

If Chu Mu abandoned his original Moonlight Fox and chose this Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox as his new main soul pet, and then this new Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox mutated into a Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox, then the process was within understanding. After all, Chu Mu's Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox had indeed displayed very outstanding talents, so the chances of a mutation was larger.

Yet, if it was the other situation, where Chu Mu never abandoned that Moonlight Fox, and that Moonlight Fox had mutated into an Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox, before mutating into a Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox, then it would mean that Chu Mu had a soul pet that could mutate continuously!!

A continuously mutating soul pet! One species mutation could almost raise a soul pet trainer to a new level. As for continuous mutation, this soul pet would shake the entire soul pet realm, especially now that it had become a Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox comparable to a monarch rank!

.....

“Wuwuwu~~~~~”

The royal flames on her suddenly started burning, and Mo Xie's body gradually went back to her Pitiful Appearance form. Mo Xie, who had become a Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox, also underwent changes when in Pitiful Appearance. Her fluffy, silver fur was even more noble and nine little tails waved around as she

walked. They no longer had the intimidating, crazed dragon-like manner, and when they waved in the wind, they were unbearably cute, causing people to want to cuddle and play with them.

“Wuwuwu~~~~~”

What was proud, cold, and full of monarch-like aggressiveness, when back in Pitiful Appearance, Mo Xie became like a wronged child who had won her honor back, as she jumped into Chu Mu’s arms.

Chu Mu smiled and, not paying attention to the others’ gazes, slowly carried little Mo Xie off the battlefield.

Through the entire fighting process, Chu Mu almost didn’t use any soul power. However, he still walked out of the battlefield the way he walked into it.

Yet, it was completely different from before. As everyone looked at this Prison Island King, their gazes had uncontrollable shock, revere and envy!

Jia Feng was already a pinnacle top tier expert within Jia Region, and he lost. However, no one seemed to care about this fact. It wasn’t that no one cared about Jia Feng’s defeat. Even if he won, his achievement couldn’t cover up the leap from perfect warrior rank to perfect commander rank that this Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox had made-especially when this perfect commander rank had the powerful ability to be compared to a monarch rank!!

So when Chu Mu slowly walked back to his seat again, who dared to let out a single sound of complaint?

.....

When the battle ended, Chu Mu naturally had to report to Princess Jin Rou.

In Chu Mu's eyes, Princess Jin Rou was forever calm and indifferent. Other than wearing a light melancholic look when watching bodies of water, her beautiful eyes were always masked with calmness and wisdom, as if nothing could cause the princess to have emotions.

This time, when walking towards Princess Jin Rou, Chu Mu could clearly feel the gaze of those beautiful eyes. These eyes were very enchanting. With one sight, one would be dragged into her world, unable to free oneself.

Princess Jin Rou's gaze no longer had the usual calmness. It had some doubt, questioning, as well as an emotion that Chu Mu couldn't understand.

Chu Mu had never been able to understand Princess Jin Rou's eyes. He was only able to tell that she hid a lot in her heart.....

“Princess.”

Chu Mu made a simple salute and glanced at Jin Kui, who was watching on with a strange look.

“En, Chu guard must be tired after the big battle, bring your soul pet and go rest for now.....” Princess Jin Rou kept a calm tone as she said to Chu Mu, not mentioning Chu Mu’s soul pet mutation a single time.

Chu Mu knew that Princess Jin Rou definitely had something to tell him, but now was not the right place, so he nodded and followed one of Princess Jin Rou’s personal servants back to rest.

“Since the battle is over, let us bid farewell to each other then.” The Jia City city master saw that Princess Jin Rou had no intention to stay anymore and stood up slowly.

After saying this, the Jia City city master saluted to Princess Jin Rou and watched as she left.

“Heng, this woman, so young yet so calm, not asking anything under such circumstances.” Seeing the princess leave, the Jia City city master’s smile disappeared and he let out a cold “heng”.

After saying this, the Jia City city master stormed off, completely disregarding Jia Feng, whose rib cage was still broken from Mo Xie’s tail sweep.

.....

Not long ago, he had just beaten the Luo Region Nightmare Prince, causing him to become known by everyone within the nearby regions.

Yet, this fight, though very short and only had Chu Mu's main soul pet fighting, had effects far stronger than before!!

After all, tens of thousands of people witnessed Chu Mu's Evil Flamed Six Tail Demon Fox mutate into a Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox!

Mo Xie was already at the sixth phase fourth stage. This mutation meant that Chu Mu's main soul pet was a sixth phase monarch rank!

How terrifying was a sixth phase monarch rank's power? With this soul pet in existence, which top tier young expert still dared to challenge Chu Mu?!!

An even larger craze swept through the nearby regions, spreading to even further places!!

This battle caused Chu Mu to truly become the brightest new star within the regions, beating the many top tier young experts that people knew about, instantly becoming one of the strongest young experts in the area.

In reality, just region wise, in places like Luo Region and Jia Region, it was nigh impossible to find an expert in the young

generation to compete against Chu Mu.

The only possibilities were the two large powers, the Nightmare Palace and the Luo Region Sect.

The Nightmare Palace and the Luo Region Sect had numerous young experts, and it was possible that they were even hiding a few spirit master level top tier young experts. At the very least, Chu Mu had already seen one, which was Nightmare Prince Adjudicator Lu Shanli, who was a spirit master level expert.

Normally, Chu Mu's fame couldn't compare to characters like Lu Shanli, but the mutation of his Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox into the Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox showed that Chu Mu's power was quickly nearing that of the super youth experts from large powers.

In the entire soul pet realm, the major powers had carefully trained countless experts. Relying on their background and influence, there'd always be some otherworldly prodigee that surpassed their age and fought everywhere, especially within the heavy hitters, like the Nightmare Palace, the Soul Pet Palace, and the Luo Region Sect, who had bases almost across the entire world.

The young generation soul pet trainers were in the tens of thousands, and to reach the top, how hard was it without corresponding strength?

What was different about Chu Mu, compared to those already famous top tier experts, was that Chu Mu had no background,

completely relying on himself to reach his current state. The shock that such an expert brought wasn't laced with emotions of "It should've been like this", only pure, raw, shock. After all, for a youth to completely rely on one's own power to reach this height was nigh impossible.

Therefore, many rumors about Chu Mu slowly spread throughout the cities. Some felt that Chu Mu was some super powerful expert's low profile apprentice, while most people felt that Chu Mu completely relied on himself to reach the realm that he was in. Another small portion of people thought Chu Mu was only lucky that his Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox had mutated into the Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox, or else to reach this realm would require at least a few more years.

No matter how the rumors were spread, the Prison Island King was now different from the Prison Island King that defeated Tian Ji. Becoming a true top tier young expert, when he walked into other regions, other than the true experts at the tip of the pyramid, it was probable that fellows who thought that they were the best in the region would no longer challenge Chu Mu out of nowhere!

.....

.....

While this regional shaking message spread out from Jia City, Chu Mu had returned to his resting room and had already started to think of how to shake the control of Nightmare Palace.

Chu Mu, in reality, didn't know Princess Jin Rou's personality that well, and his favorable impression for her was only because of her kindhearted act in the beginning.

Chu Mu believed that all individuals with lots of authority were shrewd, including Princess Jin Rou, who always gave off a calm and melancholic feel. Chu Mu could be sure that the doubt in her eyes when she gazed at him meant that Princess Jin Rou, who had seen Mo Xie in her Moonlight Fox phase, had already thought of the possibility of a continuously mutating soul pet!

Chapter 90: Princess's Late Night Visit

A soul pet that mutated once will forever retain the value of its species post mutation. If Princess Jin Rou could calmly give a set of soul equipment that was worth tens of millions to her guards, it meant that she probably didn't even take monarch rank soul pets seriously.

However, continuously mutating soul pets were a completely different matter. From what Chu Mu saw, even the outstanding being Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon couldn't compare to Mo Xie in terms of cost.

Such a soul pet could definitely make even a superpower like Nightmare Palace stoop to any means necessary!

It wasn't that Chu Mu didn't believe in Princess Jin Rou's innate character, but Chu Mu couldn't use Mo Xie to bet on it, so Chu Mu had to think of a way to leave Nightmare Palace quickly.

.....

When Chu Mu was escorted by the princess's servants back, he was followed by two of the princess's guards. These two guards were definitely of the spirit master level, so Chu Mu naturally didn't dare to act blindly without thinking. Thus, he didn't do anything out of the ordinary, acting as if he were happy that Nightmare Palace would care more about him after his soul pet mutated.

Back in his room, Chu Mu kept on thinking about this problem. All the way until late night, when the White Nightmare needed food, Chu Mu realized that such a situation could only be answered by waiting to see the outcome. After all, as long as the princess's guards were there, he couldn't escape.

Not thinking about it any longer, Chu Mu closed his eyes and started to feed his hungry White Nightmare.

What was worth Chu Mu's excitement was, after Mo Xie's elevation of the spirit from Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox to Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Demon Fox, Chu Mu's remembrance also increased by a whole level, even almost entering the spirit master level!

After spirit master, raising one's remembrance was very tough. Chu Mu reached the eighth remembrance not long ago. Originally, he needed a long time before he reached the ninth remembrance, but after Mo Xie's power increased significantly, Chu Mu himself reaped huge benefits, causing the soul power within him to become even fuller than before.

“Wuwuwuwu!!!!!!!”

Just as Chu Mu was feeding the White Nightmare some soul power, suddenly, Mo Xie's calls resonated through Chu Mu's mental world.

“Nie!!! Nie!!!!!!!!!!!”

In the next second, the monarch ranked white nightmare let out some slightly furious calls, clearly angered by Mo Xie!

Chu Mu blanked, before realizing that Mo Xie was actually warning the White Nightmare to not be too insolent!

Before, whenever Chu Mu fed the White Nightmare, Mo Xie was always outraged by the injustice towards Chu Mu. Why did he have to feed this much soul power to a parasite that never battled? Yet, Mo Xie's strength at the time couldn't possibly compare with the White Nightmare, so she didn't dare to really trouble the parasitic devil.

But now, Mo Xie had already mutated into a Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox worthy of the monarch rank. Even when faced against a White Nightmare, Mo Xie didn't have to be as careful as before, so she was completely able to recklessly give the Nightmare some warning!

Mo Xie now had the ability to challenge the White Nightmare, so she, with no trace of politeness, started a mental assault against the White Nightmare.

The White Nightmare realized its status was in danger, and it similarly started fighting back against Mo Xie. Very quickly, these two made a mess of Chu Mu's mental world, and it caused Chu Mu to get dizzy and nauseous.

“Stop it you two!!”

These two soul pets of Chu Mu normally never communicated, yet the moment they communicated they would start fighting, and they fought in Chu Mu's mental world. These two fellows were both had the power of a monarch rank. Once they started fighting, how could Chu Mu's mental world take it?

Chu Mu's words still had their might. Mo Xie let out a begrudged "wuwu" sound, while the White Nightmare smirked evilly.

"White Nightmare, know your own place better. At your current stage, you definitely don't need this much soul power. From today on, eat 20% less of my soul power." Chu Mu immediately used his soul remembrance to communicate to White Nightmare.

"Nie!!!! Nie!!!!!!" The White Nightmare, of course, didn't agree, and it immediately let out a shrill sound of protest!

Chu Mu was already a ninth remembrance spirit teacher, and he had a very strong soul. Not only was he used to the White Nightmare's soul burning, but he could also, to a degree, control his White Nightmare now. Adding on the fact that Mo Xie wasn't afraid of the White Nightmare, how would they be unable to suppress the greedy White Nightmare?

Mo Xie and Chu Mu, plus the Night Thunder Dream Beast, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, the Ice Air Fairy, and the Mo Ye, with the five soul pets and one person gathering to protest against him, the always arrogant and overbearing White Nightmare finally had to compromise!

Chu Mu had reached the ninth remembrance spirit master, so his soul power increased considerably. The White Nightmare usually needed about 70% of his soul power. If he took 20% away, it would only eat fifty percent of his soul power every two days. This way, not only could Chu Mu cast double Molten Fury, he could also cast Violent Blood Pupil, causing his fighting strength to increase even higher.

Now that the White Nightmare only ate fifty percent of his soul power, Chu Mu felt the restrictions on him loosen a lot, and he didn't feel as pressured as before.

Before, Chu Mu was always worried that his power would increase too slow. Especially when reaching a bottleneck, if he didn't cross it before the White Nightmare's power increased, he wouldn't have enough soul power to feed it and would be eaten alive.

Yet now, Chu Mu and the soul pets that Chu Mu had brought up had enough power to restrain the White Nightmare, and Chu Mu could finally let out a breath of relief.

After signing a fairer treaty with the White Nightmare[TL note: This seems to be figurative, so no real change in their soul pact or anything], Chu Mu, as usual, started his normal meditative training to recover his soul power, in addition to cultivating his soul remembrance.

Though the threat of the White Nightmare had weakened, Chu Mu didn't give himself any slack because of it. A soul pet trainer must pay lots of attention to his cultivation, or else he wouldn't be

able to handle stronger soul pets!

“Dada~~~~~”

Suddenly, light footsteps sounded out from the window location.

The vigilant Chu Mu opened his eyes immediately and started chanting, ready to summon Mo Xie at any time.

The window was lightly propped open and, in the darkness, Chu Mu saw an elegant body nimbly leap into Chu Mu’s room through the window.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast gave Chu Mu night vision, so Chu Mu could easily see the appearance of the intruder. However, Chu Mu would never have thought that the black clothed intruder would be her!

She constantly wore a face veil. Even in all black, she still didn’t let anyone see her face. Yet, Chu Mu was sure that it was Princess Jin Rou because of her unique manner, as well as her unforgettable eyes.

“Princess Jin Rou?” Chu Mu stood up. He didn’t salute, only looking somewhat surprised at the noble girl that sneaked into his room dressed in black.

The black clothes tightly gripped Princess Jin Rou’s curvaceous figure. The normal royal feel of the dress was now replaced, and it

caused her elegant curves to become even more alluring. The black attire and tied up hair gave off a different feel, causing even the usually calm Chu Mu to temporarily wobble mentally. If he could unveil her face to see the unique beauty behind, then it would be even more perfect.

“It’s me.” Princess Jin Rou slightly straightened up, causing her already curvaceous body to become even more perfect. Though the black clothes covered her firmly, it still didn’t block off people’s wild imagination of her body under the smooth clothes.

“What’s the matter?” Chu Mu knew that Princess Jin Rou appearing in front of him like this definitely had a purpose, especially since he already had his guard up towards her.

“Guard Chu, there’s one thing I thought that was strange. Your soul pet mutating at such a time is a very exciting event. Why would you still remain calm?” Princess Jin Rou walked a few steps towards Chu Mu, eyes staring at him as she asked.

Princess Jin Rou walked until she was about a meter from Chu Mu before stopping. At this distance, Chu Mu could clearly see her eyes. They were indeed as fascinating as jewels. Other than that, a faint aroma that came with the wind when it passed Princess Jin Rou’s body danced at Chu Mu’s nose.

“Excited. Of course, the rare species mutation of my Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox was exciting, but Princess, do you think that I’m the type to smile widely and shout ‘my soul pet mutated’?” Chu Mu calmly replied to Princess Jin Rou.

Calmness was of course to display Chu Mu's disposition. In reality, Princess Jin Rou's late night visit coupled with standing this close to him caused Chu Mu, who was a healthy male, to feel attacked by a powerful sense of attraction. After all, this Princess Jin Rou had a body that could make any male go crazy.

The body and smell were already fatal attractions to a young and vigorous male. Additionally, the covering of the face mask to create mystery and ambiguity, it caused one to feel an itch at heart, wanting to flick the face veil to the side to reveal the princess's unique appearance.

"You indeed aren't such person." Princess Jin Rou's mouth slightly opened up, bringing out a light smile.

"Then what is the purpose of Princess's late night visit? Is it simply because of Chu Mu's strange calmness that caused you to be unable to sleep, or is it....." Chu Mu spoke first because he didn't want to be interrogated deeply, or else it would be even harder to muddle through.

Hearing Chu Mu's strange sentence, Princess Jin Rou's smile faded. Noticing that Chu Mu's gaze fell onto her body, she immediately interpreted the meaning of Chu Mu's last sentence "unable to sleep, or is it.....". She slightly furrowed her brows and said lightly, "Your tone is slightly flippant."

Chu Mu felt confused. He admitted his eyes unintentionally wandered onto the Princess's body, but how were his words

flippant? So he asked questioningly, “Why do you say I was flippant? I just wanted to ask if Princess had anything you wanted to say to Chu Mu that others shouldn’t hear.”

Princess Jin Rou blanked slightly, and looked at the sincere Chu Mu, realizing that she may have interpreted incorrectly. Her expression changed slightly but quickly recovered. She moved off the topic she had over thought and said, “Indeed I have things to say.”

Chu Mu nodded, awaiting Princess Jin Rou’s further questioning.

Chapter 91: Seizing The Princess

“Three years ago, I went to the Eternal Ocean. I remembered that, at the time, there was half a month where a young man rode on a boat with me. That person should have been you, right?” Princess Jin Rou asked the question while already knowing the answer.

Chu Mu nodded his head and continued to wait for Princess Jin Rou’s interrogation.

“I remembered that, back then, you carried a Moonlight Fox that resembles your Evil Flame Nine Tailed Demon Fox in its Pitiful Appearance state very much. I want to know where your Moonlight Fox is right now. Is it still in your soul pet space?” Princess Jin Rou cut straight to the main question.

“Prison Island is a nasty environment. It’s extremely hard for a servant rank soul pet to survive there. Not long after I entered the spirit teacher rank, it met with misfortune.” calmly said Chu Mu.

“If you say your soul pet suffered a misfortune, and of the two souls you had was damaged, then how did you survive on the savage Prison Island?” Princess Jin Rou seemed to have evidently picked up on this bit.

“There are numerous different spirit items on Prison Island, and the heavens didn’t forsake me. When my Moonlight Fox passed away, I happened to obtain a soul item that allowed me to heal my soul. This gave me the ability to survive. Why is the princess

suddenly asking this?” Chu Mu responded with a question.

“I only thought of a certain possibility, and I wanted to confirm if it’s true.” as she spoke, Princess Jin Rou’s eyes stared into Chu Mu’s, as if she wanted to make out any indications of untruthfulness.

Only, it was a pity that Princess Jin Rou wasn’t able to discern anything from Chu Mu’s apathetic black pupils. The only thing that was there was a sliver of lust directed towards her that was hard to fully restrain.

Princess Jin Rou had seen this sort of gaze many times and, looking at the cases aggregately, Chu Mu was still a relatively unperturbed one. If he was someone else, under these circumstances, his eyes probably would have already given off a green light.

“I’m very sorry, amongst my eight guards, a number of them have been sent from some people in Nightmare Palace to specifically monitor me. There are some things that I need to hide from their eyes.” whispered Princess Jin Rou after she glanced outside the door.

Chu Mu nodded his head. He didn’t feel that this was strange as, after all, people like Princess Jin Rou would definitely be involved in some elaborate fighting and scheming. Perhaps this was the reason why she was always melancholic when she was by herself.

“Princess, entering and exiting like this should be fairly

dangerous. It's better if you return earlier to rest." Chu Mu didn't want Princess Jin Rou to further interrogate him, and he naturally assumed the attitude of a personal guard worrying about the princess' safety.

"No rush." Princess Jin Rou nodded her head. Her beautiful pupils once more focused on Chu Mu as she said to him: "Can you let me see your Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox?"

Chu Mu was stunned. He didn't expect the princess to suggest this and, after hesitating awhile, he ultimately didn't refuse. He chanted an incantation and summoned Mo Xie.

Mo Xie, who maintained her Pitiful Appearance state, always appeared petite and adorable. Upon a single glance, her fluffy and nimble body in addition to her waving nine small tails made one have the urge to hug her in one's arms.

Princess Jin Rou seemed to be slightly unable to resist Mo Xie's charm, and her gaze became unprecedentedly soft. She bent down and scooped up the small Mo Xie.

"Wu wu~~~" The Pitiful Appearance state of the Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox was more adorable than that of the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox. Her fur felt even more comfortable, and a faint smile rose on Princess Jin Rou's face. Using her slender white hand to stroke Mo Xie's hand, her finger slowly went from Mo Xie's head down to her back.

Chu Mu stared at Princess Jin Rou, and he discovered that as she

held Mo Xie, she revealed a gentle and graceful temperament. Her pupils let out a faint smiling expression that was even more beautiful, and it caused one's mind to waver.

“What's its name?” Princess Jin Rou lightly lifted her face and stared at Chu Mu, asking a question.

“Mo Xie.” subconsciously replied Chu Mu.

After hearing the name, Princess Jin Rou's gaze instantly fluctuated. This was because if her memory was correct, she remembered that the small fellow she had carried in her arms looking at the ocean was also named Mo Xie.

Perhaps Princess Jin Rou didn't remember Chu Mu's name, but her impression of Mo Xie was profound. Chu Mu currently using the same name naturally made Princess Jin Rou realize that her guess could be correct.

“Does the princess want to ask why her name is the same as my Moonlight Fox? My explanation is that in order to remember my first soul pet, I gave her the same name...” Chu Mu strode forward and stood not even half a meter away from Princess Jin Rou. Wearing a demonically enchanting smile, he spoke to Princess Jin Rou.

“Eh?” Princess Jin Rou raised her graceful eyebrows. She seemed to feel that the atmosphere was a bit fishy. When she looked at Chu Mu, she instantly saw Chu Mu's handsome face that seemed to carry a bit of demonic distinguishment.

“However, this isn’t important. I’d like to trouble Princess Jin Rou to escort me on a trip.” Chu Mu slowly said his following words.

Princess Jin Rou was stunned, and she didn’t understand the meaning behind Chu Mu’s words. However, she felt that the adorable and docile Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox had already extended its claws. When the claws brought an ice cold feeling against her skin, Princess Jin Rou abruptly realized something.

“Princess Jin Rou, I know you are very strong. Perhaps you have already reached the spirit master level. However, my Mo Xie really is what you guessed. She possesses a mutated blood lineage, and her innate talent surpasses that of normal monarch ranks. Especially on the aspect of speed, no matter what soul equipment or soul technique you use, or soul pet you summon, as long as you hesitate even the slightest bit, her claws will rip open your throat. Therefore, I hope you will cooperate.” said Chu Mu to Princess Jin Rou.

Princess Jin Rou truly didn’t think that Chu Mu was so courageous and daring, unexpectedly striking first. Princess Jin Rou definitely had some kind of protection against Chu Mu, having come here alone. Only, she never had anything for Chu Mu’s Mo Xie, especially when she took the initiative to pick up Mo Xie into her arms.

Chu Mu himself didn’t expect Princess Jin Rou to relax her guard towards Mo Xie. The so-called ‘no time to lose’ once lost, wouldn’t

come again. Chu Mu absolutely could not wait for the news to reach Xia Guanghan, otherwise Xia Guanghan, who understood Mo Xie even more, definitely would not let him go. As for Princess Jin Rou's late night visit this time, it happened to give Chu Mu an opportunity to escape!

The moment Mo Xie's news reached Xia Gaunghan, Chu Mu knew that his own life would be hard to preserve. If he were to defect from Nightmare Palace, Xia Guanghan would want him dead as well. Either way meant death, so further adding on the crime of kidnapping a princess wouldn't do any more harm.

“Chu Mu, your actions today have really made me surprised, but do you feel that this is of any use? Of my eight guards, four of them are other people's. If you can seize me and take me away from this place, when you help me break free from their surveillance, I will actually thank you instead.” Princess Jin Rou displayed rather calmness and her fingers continued to lightly stroke Mo Xie's fur...

“I don't care; in any case, they don't dare to harm you. Of course, if you don't want to presently create a large mess, we can deal with this in private.” Chu Mu approached a bit closer towards Princess Jin Rou . Currently, there wasn't any difference in status; there was merely a captor and a captured. Chu Mu didn't need to consider any offenses or non-offenses.

Of course, Chu Mu was unlikely to go so far as to outrageously take advantage of the princess in this situation, despite him liking this woman. In the future, when his strength was enough, he still wanted to manage the relationship. Presently shattering their relationship completely definitely would not do.

“Let’s settle this in private.” Princess Jin Rou decisively picked this answer. She didn’t want to accompany Chu Mu’s famous name as the scandal spread that she, a princess, had been captured. At that time, various false rumours would put her in an even more difficult situation.

“Then that’s good. We’ll use the night to leave this place first. It’ll be fine as long as you carry Mo Xie. When we reach a safe place, I’ll naturally let you go.” said Chu Mu.

Although Princess Jin Rou could still be considered calm, this was the first time in her life that she had been kidnapped, and a rather shameful anger flashed through her eyes.

In truth, Princess Jin Rou still had numerous special soul equipments on her body and definitely could instantly knock Mo Xie and Chu Mu flying.

However, when she thought of the outstanding speed talent that surpassed commander ranks displayed by Mo Xie while she was only at her Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox form, the speed was definitely even more terrifying now that she had advanced to this rank!

To Chu Mu, as a Prison Island King, he had killed people like farmer’s scythe hemp. If it was someone else, Princess Jin Rou would feel that this person may not actually dare do it, but with the character of Chu Mu, it was hard to say. Princess Jin Rou naturally didn’t want to use her own life as a gambling stake.

Speaking of this, it was rather interesting. Not long ago, Chu Mu wasn't able to accurately grasp Princess Jin Rou's natural disposition, and he didn't use his and Mo Xie's lives as gambling stakes. Yet presently, Princess Jin Rou was unable to to be sure of Chu Mu's disposition and use her own life as a stake.

Chu Mu had Princess Jin Rou jump out of the window. Since Princess Jin Rou had come by herself from there, there definitely wouldn't be any guards there.

After jumping out the window, Chu Mu instantly summoned his Night Thunder Dream Beast and had Princess Jin Rou sit on top of it.

Princess Jin Rou didn't commit any extreme actions, and she jumped onto the Night Thunder Dream Beast as per what Chu Mu said.

After Princess Jin Rou was stably seated, Chu Mu immediately jumped on and sat next to Princess Jin Rou...

A white back and a beautiful butt that delineated an eminently alluring curve. The back of the Night Thunder Dream Beast wasn't very wide and sitting in front of one another like this definitely meant that their bodies would touch. Chu Mu let out a silent sigh; not only did the body of Princess Jin Rou look good, but when he came into contact with it, it caused one to want to fondle it admiringly. Even Chu Mu, this "man of honor" couldn't help but perhaps intentionally shift forward a bit.

Princess Jin Rou had been born in the noble class. From a young age, she had received various etiquette trainings, and she had received all kinds of important people. Therefore, in front of many people and many things she was able to display the calm and coolness that a princess should have. However, coming in such intimate contact with a man where, from time to time, some of the sensitive parts were touched, how could she still remain calm in this situation? The absolutely beautiful face under the veil was already flushed slightly red, and her beautiful pupils were full of a bashful anger!

Chu Mu had originally planned on gently seizing Princess Jin Rou and parting ways once he reached a safe area. He didn't plan on committing any undue actions; however, while riding like this, his control and moral integrity of his feelings towards the other sex hadn't reached an excessive realm. He ultimately ended up offending the bottom line of this princess' shame. Presumably, in the future, if he wanted to have a good relationship, it would be rather difficult.

Of course, Chu Mu was aware of this. Only, since he had already done it, it didn't really matter. In the future, if he could ease the tension in their relationship, then he would do that. If he couldn't, then they would just walk their separate paths.

The Demon Spirit's Tear effect allowed the Night Thunder Dream Beats to continue growing after reaching the sixth phase. Presently, it had already reached the sixth phase third stage and its Night Dance ability was very hard to detect by others.

The Princess herself didn't want those guards who were keeping her under surveillance to know she had been captured. Moreover, even if she let them know, it wasn't guaranteed that she could escape from this fellow's clutches. Thus, Princess Jin Rou very coldly pointed a path to Chu Mu that could be used to evade the guards.

After Night Dance, Chu Mu held the Princess and rode on the Night Thunder Dream Beast as they quietly drifted towards the exterior of the Jia City city lord's residence.

“Who is it. Why are you hiding like this!”

Suddenly, a robust figure appeared and, in the next instant, Chu Mu promptly felt a powerful soul remembrance suppressing him.

Chu Mu creased his eyebrows and recognized who the owner of the voice was. He decisively wrapped his hands around and had Princess Jin Rou lie back in his embrace. Using a soft voice he said: “If you don't want the large scandal of being captured to spread, then don't say anything or resist.”

Princess Jin Rou's large and fine chest was already faintly undulating; however, presently being shamelessly pulled into Chu Mu's bosom, her entire head was rested against his chest, and their bodies were even more intimately close. Such an infringement made Princess Jin Rou have her eyes full of anger.

“Oh, it's vice city lord Senior Jia Qing.” Chu Mu immediately had Night remove the Night Dance state, and he then used a soul

remembrance voice to transmit a message to the person who spoke.

“So it’s Nightmare Prince Chu. Why are you wandering towards the outside of the residence and further bringing a woman...” once Jia Qing knew it was Chu Mu, he slightly lowered his vigilance.

“Senior Jia Qing, why must you ask this much. I, Chu Mu, am a man. Next to the princess, there are many inconveniences, so I can only take the girls I like away before I can enjoy myself as much as I like...” Chu Mu displayed the appearance of an inamorato expert.

“Hahaha, then I won’t disturb Nightmare Princes Chu’s refined and elegant attitude of mind.” Jia Qing immediately looked at Chu Mu knowingly, and he removed the soul remembrance lock on Chu Mu.

Chu Mu didn’t say anything else, and he brought Princess Jin Rou, whom Jia Qing mistook for peasant girl. He had the Nightmare Thunder Dream Beast slightly increase its speed and ran outside the residence.

As he was leaving the city lord residence, Chu Mu ran into numerous experts. However, he used different excuses to dodge them.

Princess Jin Rou’s eyes were already spewing indignant and bashful anger. She no longer wanted to be embraced in Chu Mu’s bosom, and she was itching to use her soul equipment force and knock Chu Mu, this scoundrel, flying. Afterward, she would

summon her White Nightmare and burn Chu Mu thoroughly!

“Here is okay. Where are you thinking of taking me?!” after leaving the city lord’s residence, Princess Jin Rou’s gaze turned evidently cold.

“We’ve already come so far, why is there a need to care about this?” Chu Mu didn’t have the Night Thunder Dream Beast stop and instead had it run towards the southern gate of Jia City.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast’s running speed was very fast. In a short while, the expansive plains outside the southern city gate were already visible.

Chu Mu didn’t hastily put down Princess Jin Rou. He continued to run far away from the city and stopped at a small pond in the plains where numerous reeds swayed.

“Okay, you can get off.” Chu Mu jumped off of the Night Thunder Dream Beast. He waited for Princess Jin Rou to get off before chanting an incantation and recalling the Night Thunder Dream Beast back to its soul pet space.

Although the Nightmare Thunder Dream Beast’s invisibility during the night was very strong and it was very easy to escape, Princess Jin Rou probably had some soul pet that could see through concealing abilities. Having Mo Xie take him away was still more safe.

A night breeze blew from the depths of the plains. It washed over Princess Jin Rou and pushed aside her hair that was disheveled from lying against Chu Mu. Her head of beautiful black and fine hair fluttered about...

Chu Mu and Princess Jin Rou stood facing each other. A sweet fragrance hit Chu Mu's nose, and he couldn't help but look at this princess, who radiated an alluring aura.

“Until here. If you feel ashamed and angry because of today, then look at the water here. Perhaps you'll be able to calm down quickly.” insipidly spoke Chu Mu as he pointed towards the gulf of water deep inside the disheveled underbrush that reflected the starry sky.

Princess Jin Rou looked on and indeed discovered this beautiful gulf of water. Decorated in starlight, it reflected a fascinating lustre that was hard to forget. In this instant, Princess Jin Rou's heart felt a wave of strange fluctuation...

“I'm leaving. I'm sure we'll meet again.” after glancing at Princess Jin Rou who was slightly absent minded, a mere smile rose on his face. He slowly turned around and left a proud and aloof figure for Princess Jin Rou...

Princess Jin Rou instantly came back to her senses, and she stared at Chu Mu who was slowly disappearing in the depths of the underbrush.

“Wait...” Princess Jin Rou didn't know why she had called Chu

Mu to stop.

Chu Mu stopped in his tracks. He turned around, and his gaze passed through the grass swaying in the night wind. He fixed his eyes on this beautiful woman, who would always make him feel amorous.

The fluttering hairs of Princess Jin Rou had a sort of implicit charm against the wind. He wanted to walk over and embrace that soft and supple body into his arms...

“What?” asked Chu Mu.

“I don’t suggest you bring Mo Xie. Doing so will only cause the misfortune of your own life. You currently don’t possess the ability to protect it.” Princess Jin Rou’s voice softly rang out.

Chu Mu merely indifferently said: “I’ve already grown accustomed to hovering around the border of life and death these past few years. Why would I care about life in the future?”

“Leave her with me. I can guarantee that once you have enough strength, enough strength to resist the pressure from the outside world, I will return her to you.” said Princess Jin Rou.

“I appreciate your kindness, however, even if you were a queen who governed all the land under the heavens and could provide Mo Xie the best method of training, Mo Xie would still only walk alongside me, this nobody who lost a soul.” Chu Mu didn’t say

anything further to Princess Jin Rou, and he turned around. His black silhouette slowly disappeared in the fluttering grassy plain.

A moment later, a furry and small nine tailed fox scuttled into the underbrush and followed beside Chu Mu's proud and aloof body. Together, they continued to walk forward into the depths of the plains...

Chapter 92: Forbidden Territory, Breaking Free From Nightmare Palace

In the depths of Nightmare City's Nightmare Palace.

Xia Guanghan sat solitarily on the high seat. He glanced at an ornament giving off a lustre as he lowered his head and pondered.

The information regarding Chu Mu's matters had already come back to him. His acute thinking was like Princess Jin Rou, and he was instantly able to consider the possibility of a continuous mutation.

When Xia Guanghan was on Cyan Nightmare Main Island, he had witnessed the abnormal talent of Chu Mu's Moonlight Fox.

Normally speaking, soul pets with abnormal talents were much larger than normal soul pets. Therefore, at that time, Xia Guanghan had felt that Chu Mu's abnormally talented Moonlight Fox would undergo a mutation.

Three years later, Chu Mu had brought the formidable Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox back with him and he had risen abruptly in Nightmare Palace. Very naturally, Xia Guanghan had believed that Chu Mu's Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox had come from a species mutation of his abnormally talented Moonlight Fox. After all, there were many different rare treasures and strange plants on Prison Island that could increase the probability of a species mutation by a lot for abnormally talented soul pets once they ate special spirit items.

Originally, Xia Guanghan hadn't cared about this matter. After all, while mutations were rare, their occurrence weren't impossible.

However, when the news of the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox mutating species into a Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox in front of tens of thousands of people in Jia City reached his ears, Xia Guanghan was completely stunned!

At that time, Xia Guanghan's first reaction wasn't to assume that Chu Mu had abandoned his original Moonlight Fox and that he had captured an Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox. Instead, he directly considered the possibility of continuous mutations!

Continuous mutations. Xia Guanghan was almost 100% sure that Chu Mu's soul pet was a continuous mutation soul pet!

“The soul pet egg that the Soul Alliance painstakingly attempted to retrieve was unexpectedly obtained by this brat who lost a soul. Truly not just average luck. If I didn't guess incorrectly, the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's split off Hidden Dragon Egg on Prison Island should also be in his hands.” a cold smile rose on Xia Guanghan's face, and his expression let out a bit of a chill.

When the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon had escaped to the Eternal Ocean as a transformed weak soul pet, Xia Guanghan, who had obtained this information intentionally went there.

Coincidentally, that White Nightmare with abnormal talent needed food feed to it. Xia Guanghan had casually thrown Chu Mu

onto a Cyan Nightmare Island in the Eternal Ocean to have him provide food for the White Nightmare while he himself went to look for the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon.

Xia Guanghan had an even deeper understanding of the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon. He even knew that the Soul Alliance wasn't only looking for it to find the split off Hidden Dragon Egg, but also an even more important soul pet egg.

Therefore, in this period of time, Xia Guanghan had spent all his time in the vicinity of the Eternal Ocean roaming about. He had even deceived others to borrow a bit of Princess Jin Rou's powers to begin searching for it.

Only, what Xia Guanghan completely did not expect was that the soul pet he had searched for for so many years had unexpectedly ended up on a Cyan Nightmare Island where the nameless nobody he had used to feed the White Nightmare obtained it.

The things that Xia Guanghan had schemed had finally shown a bit of logic. How could he let it go? Therefore, once he obtained news of Chu Mu's soul pet mutating, he immediately had to have someone go and capture Chu Mu.

However, he had clearly underestimated Chu Mu. By the time Xia Guanghan's people got there, Chu Mu had already escaped without a trace. What made Xia Guanghan feel even more shame was that Gangluo City's Chu Family had already migrated away, and the place was deserted!

.....

“Senior Xia, the person you want to find is currently is probably at the Xiling Region. The northern boundary across Xiling Region.” suddenly, a voice rang out in the completely empty cold hall.

“Secret Killer Attendants. Come with me to Xiling Region; we must find Chu Mu at all costs!” Xia Guanghan stood up, and he flung back his robe. He proceeded to promptly exit the cold hall.

As Xia Guanghan exited the hall, ten black figures gradually appeared in the cold hall and indistinctly followed behind him.

.....

It had been a long time since Xia Guanghan had personally taken on a task himself...

.....

In the far off east, on a boundless and expansive piece of land, stood a towering and Heavenly Monument. It was stuck in the ground like an enormous sword, majestically, imposingly, and proudly on this expansive area between the heaven and earth.

This magnificent Heavenly Monument happened to be a clear landmark indicator of the western district, and it was called the Heaven Monument by others.

There were various sorts of legends regarding the Heaven Monument. There were people who said that this was an ultra soul pet's backbone from the legends. After silently dying here, its enormous skeleton had been buried in this vast and obscure earth. Yet, its unbending lofty and unyielding character had supported it upright and, as time withered away, it had gradually transformed into a perfectly straight skeleton that rose into the sky. After being sculpted on a lot by the ancient people, it had finally become the currently enormous Heaven Monument.

The scorching sun shone down from high above. The Heaven Monument's shadow stretched a long way over the earth and, with this tall Heaven Monument's image in the heaven and earth, it illustrated a magnificent and stunning scene that was capable of making others gasp in amazement.

.....

Underneath the Heaven Monument quietly stood a woman and a man.

The two people were separated by about two meters. Their two eyes were fixed on each other, yet neither took a step forward towards the other.

The woman was wearing a light purple grandly threaded shaw. Standing silently like this underneath the Heaven Monument, there wasn't any feeling of minute insignificance. Instead, she gave others a respectfully arrogant and sumptuous temperament.

The man wore random clothing and was slightly slovenly dressed. He stood on this large piece of earth covered in weeds, and he was exactly like a wanderer who had roamed the world unconstrained and had experienced many things. His presentation and temperament of himself could be said to be rather inharmonious with the woman.

“I didn’t come today to explain things with you.” the man’s tone was flat, and his gaze was fixed on the woman’s face.

“I also didn’t come to hear your explanation. I only want to know who did it and why you didn’t mention it to me four years ago.” the woman was already wearing an angry expression.

Hearing the woman’s words, the man let out a hollow laugh. After a while he finally said in a cold voice: “You also knew it was four years. In these four years, where have you been? Right now, I don’t want to talk nonsense with you. I want to retrieve the item that belongs to me!”

Sensing the man’s bearing, the woman’s gaze turned colder as if she was deliberately shifting the mood. A while later she eventually said: “If you go crazy, I absolutely will not say even a word more. Right now, I want to know where Mu Er is!”

“I already told you on the letter. He was killed four years ago by Nightmare Palace’s Xia Guanghan!” said the man.

In this moment, the woman’s expression had fully sunken. A

terrifying cold air, like a storm, violently proliferated from the center of the Heaven Monument!

The man seemed to have felt the woman's enormous soul remembrance, and his eyes identically transformed. An imposing energy that wasn't inferior to the woman's identically discharged from the man's body.

“You still want to fight? Then come!” the man didn't back down at all.

The two sides of energy violently clashed together. Sands and rocks flew everywhere, yellow dirt filled the whole sky and the Heaven Monument shockingly let out a fierce buzz!

“Enough! I don't want to fight with you right now. Who is Xia Guanghan?” suddenly, the woman renounced the fight with him and completely put away her aura.

“A new person in Nightmare palace. I will eventually take his life.” the man identically put away his aura.

“Hmph, right now, aside from possessing a powerful soul remembrance, how much of a difference do you actually have from the lowest level soul pet trainer? I advise you to continue living your incognito good-for-nothing life before you obtain any powerful soul pets.” coldly said the woman.

After speaking, she didn't say anything further to the man. She

gazed at the world in the distant west. Breaking into a stride, she swept past the Heaven Monument's shadow, and she walked towards the west of the Heaven Monument.

“What are you going to do now?” asked the man.

“To kill Xia Guanghan!”

A sandstorm danced about. On the expansive yellow colored earth, the woman's light purple figure gradually disappeared in the western side of the Heaven Monument...

The man watched the woman leave and his face let out a rather pained expression. After a while, he finally turned his gaze towards the vast eastern side. His experienced pupils were exceptionally steady, and he determinedly strode into a measured step, heading in the opposite direction of that woman.

.....

Xiling Region

In the vast mountain ridge, Chu Mu was riding the Night Thunder Dream Beast across the complicated mountain ridge.

Half a month ago, Chu Mu had captured Princess Jin Rou and freed himself from Nightmare palace's control. However, Chu Mu had evidently underestimated the range of Xia Guanghan's influence. Practically by the second day, when Chu Mu hadn't

appeared next to the princess, one of the princess' guards had chased after Chu Mu.

Princess Jin Rou had eight guards in total, and each one was a terrifying spirit master. What made Chu Mu feel an exceptional headache was that the White Nightmare inside his body seemed to have been implanted with a soul remembrance trail by Xia Guanghan. Even though Chu Mu had already fled out of Jia Region and reached Xiling Region, that spirit master was still able to follow close behind. In this entire half a month of time, he could not be shaken off.

Chu Mu was able to guess that the news had already reached Xia Guanghan. If he didn't think of a way to break away from this spirit master and let Xia Guanghan maintain this certain distance, that fellow would be able to use the White Nightmare to find him.

However, this spirit master's strength was definitely not comparable to those young generation experts. Chu Mu presently didn't have absolute assurance that he could defeat a spirit master. Therefore, he continuously fled towards the southern part of Xiling Region, and he tried his best to be further away from the regions Nightmare Palace was in control of.

Xiling Region could be regarded as relatively near, in a diagonal, the southwest border area. After continued down Xiling Region, there was a forbidden region that humans didn't dare rashly set foot in.

Forbidden regions were normally where myriad soul pets resided, but one could often see groups of multiple powerful soul

pet trainers enter the southwest forbidden region.

However, in these past few hundreds of years, there practically wasn't a single person who could actually understand the entire forbidden region.

If Chu Mu was to traverse those regions blindly by himself, he would definitely be always detected by Xia Guanghan's spies that covered everywhere under the heavens. Then, he would be chased perpetually due to the soul remembrance imprint on the White Nightmare.

As long as he could enter the depths of the dangerous and unknown forbidden region, he could traverse by himself unobstructedly, and he would be able to fully break free from Xia Guanghan's pursuit.

Furthermore, once he fled the definite range, even though the White Nightmare had an imprint on it, Xia Guanghan definitely did not have such great ability locate Chu Mu over ten million kilometers away. In this way, Chu Mu would be able to truly break free from that fellow's control. He would be able to carefreely begin raising his strength at a quick speed. Once his strength was enough, he would be able to directly contend against Xia Guanghan.

Chapter 83: Heavenly Flame Rite, Killing A Spirit Master

When Chu Mu entered the Xiling Region, he didn't stop at all, nor did he enter any city. He continued to follow the wilderness route, which he was best at traversing, and rushed towards the forbidden region.

Although Mo Xie had mutated into a Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox, her endurance was definitely inferior to the Night Thunder Dream Beast's. For Chu Mu's entire course throughout the Xiling Region, the majority of it had been on the Night Thunder Dream Beast.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast's demon attribute hadn't received a full strengthening. Aside from the Mo Ye, it was probably Chu Mu's weakest soul pet in a fight.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast's demon type restriction techniques were dependent on Chu Mu's powerful soul remembrance, as well as its intelligence, in order to use them to the greatest effect.

Therefore, Chu Mu had to think of a method to raise the Night Thunder Dream Beast's demon type and dark type, as well as its phase and stage. Only by doing so could it display a relatively large use.

.....

Although the Night Thunder Dream Beast's endurance was strong, it was still stuck at the sixth stage, and it ultimately could not compare with that spirit master's high class commander rank seventh phase eighth stage Star Wilderness Devil Colt.

Chu Mu continued to rush towards the southern border of Xiling Region. Just as he was about to enter the forbidden region which had extremely complicated and strange topography, he was ultimately caught by the spirit master guard riding a seventh phase eighth stage Star Wilderness Devil Colt.

The stingingly cold and violent wind hit Chu Mu's face. In front of Chu Mu, horizontally, was shockingly a mountain ridge river valley!

The river valley was extremely deep and, after looking downwards, one could only see those thick clouds and mist.

The roaring sound of river water resounded in his ears. Chu Mu rode the Night Thunder Dream Beast and turned around to look at the chasing whirlwind.

“Jump down!” Chu Mu patted the Night Thunder Dream Beast's dream horns and stabled his seated body. He had the Night Thunder Dream Beast immediately jump into the deeply terrifying river valley where the bottom couldn't even be seen.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast could only use Night Dance in a shadowy area. When its body leapt into the black clouds lingering

above the river valley, the sunlight happened to be obstructed. The Night Thunder Dream Beast then stepped into the shadow area and, after the downward velocity was slightly buffered, it jumped up into the clouds like those misty clouds soaring into the air!

The Star Wilderness Devil Colt chased to the edge of the cliff. That spirit master whose face was covered in a black veil flashed a sneer in his eyes. However, he didn't hesitate at all, and immediately ordered the Star Wilderness Devil Colt to also jump into the misty river valley!

The Star Wilderness Devil Colt didn't have the ability to walk on air. Instead, the spirit master guard chanted an incantation while the Star Wilderness Devil Colt was descending, creating a special stream of air that allowed it to slowly descend.

The raging stream of water smashed into the river valley's rocks, unceasingly creating sprays of water.

On top of the glossy eroded rocks in the river, Chu Mu sat on the Night Thunder Dream Beast's back, and he slowly chanted an incantation.

Not far away from Chu Mu was Mo Xie, who had already transformed into the Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox. The fire on Mo Xie's body wasn't burning. Instead, she merely haughtily stood on the rocks in the river; as the spray of water splashed beside her body, it caused her to seem even more demonically charming and elegant!

“Mo Xie, Heavenly Flame Rite!!”

Seeing the spirit master’s Star Wilderness Devil Colt descend, Chu Mu raised the corners of his lips and issued an order to Mo Xie!

After mutating to the Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox, Mo Xie’s techniques had completely transformed. This Heavenly Flame Rite happened to be amongst them—a powerful seventh rank fire type technique!

The Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox’s fire type talent was comparable to a peak fire type elemental world’s talent. Even if it possessed the most average fire, the seventh rank fire type technique that it performed would still be extremely terrifying. Moreover, Mo Xie further possessed the two types of fire, the Demon Fire Evil Flame and the Blood Flame, which combined to form her two royal flames!

The Demon Fire Evil Flame’s effects already doubled the damage of fire type techniques, while the Blood Flame was a terrifying flame that could pass through defenses and burn blood. When overlaying these two effects, their might was extremely close to an eighth rank!

“Chong Mei-Heavenly Flame Rite!”

Chu Mu chanted the incantation, and his two eyes were rapidly ignited with exceptionally pale-white fires. From head to toe, a terrifying white colored soul devil fire emanated from his body!

A ninth remembrance spirit teacher. After rising two remembrances, Chu Mu's soul remembrance had become even stronger. Even if he was using Chong Mei to duplicate Mo Xie's seventh rank fire type technique, it wouldn't pose any problems whatsoever. In fact, he could even raise its might to nearly the eighth rank. If he further added on the White Nightmare's flame effects, its might would be even more terrifying!

Molten Fury was originally Mo Xie's strongest fire type attack. At that time, the sixth rank double Molten Furies overlaid together created an effect that nearly reached double that of an early eighth stage.

Yet, presently, two even stronger seventh rank fire type techniques of Heavenly Flame Rite being overlaid together meant that its might was even more terrifying!

“Weng~~~~~”

When the technique was used, the entire river valley let out an acute buzzing sound!

Scarlet colored Demon Fire Evil Flames; the fire type technique's formidability doubled!

A captivating red Blood Flame; a terrifying flame that could directly pass through the skin and burn the blood!

A pale white colored soul devil fire; a serene and cold devil fire that burnt the soul!

Three different flames being overlaid. When used on this seventh rank technique, Heavenly Flame Rank, it completely exploded to reach nearly a ninth rank's might!!

A triple royal flame beam silenced the entire river valley. It gorgeously descended from the sky and suddenly, a pulverizing force at the center of this light beam abruptly struck downwards, pressuring down on the entire river valley!

“Hu hu!!!!”

In the next moment, a long flaming dragon coiled around the entire beam that descended from the sky into the depths of the river valley as it incomparably and magnificently soared into the air!

“Hui~~~~~”

The Star Wilderness Devil Colt was still situated in midair, but this terrifying energy nearing the ninth rank powerfully swept it up. Completely unable to resist the flames, the Star Wilderness Devil Colt and this spirit master were fully swallowed!!

In the expansive mountain ridge, an imposing yet majestic long gorgeous flaming dragon soared into the air, charging towards the clouds!

Three different colored fires sparkled, illuminating these mountains in a fiery color. It was as if the mountains had been thoroughly ignited!

This eminently violent energy of fire didn't last too long. After the energy was released, it practically instantaneously faded away. However, it was like a terrifying aura that struck the vast mountain ridge and once it swept through, after a brief delay, the mountain range suddenly flared up!!

The clamorous noise of numerous cries of fear rang out. From within the green sea of forest frightenedly flew out hundreds and thousands of wing type soul pets. Wild beasts confoundedly ran about. The scene was chaos!!

.....

Three days later, a mighty Ice Winged Tiger slowly folded its wings. It descended beside this completely changed river valley. Riding on this seventh phase commander rank soul pet's back happened to be the cold faced Xia Guanghan.

Behind Xia Guanghan respectively were ten Secret Killer Attendants, who were wearing cold cyan clothing. These Secret Killer Attendants were all riding high class commander rank Ice Winged Tigers. Although the bodies of these Ice Winged Tigers were not as godly as Xia Guanghan's, it was clear that these were extremely staunch creatures.

“Go down and look.” Xia Guanghan pointed at the river valley below, where water no longer flowed, as he coldly spoke.

Two Secret Killer Attendants immediately gave their soul pets an order, and they rode on their Ice Winged Tigers into the deep river valley.

Not long later, the two Secret Killer Attendants returned to the side of the river valley. One of them was carrying a charred, black corpse.

“Already dead.” the Secret Killer Attendant said to Xia Guanghan.

Xia Guanghan creased his eyebrows, and he stared at the completely scorched corpse. He then intentionally looked at the river valley destroyed beyond recognition.

That guard of the princess’ was Xia Guanghan’s underling. Xia Guanghan had somewhat of an understanding of his strength and, although he only had a normal seventh phase monarch rank soul pet, as a spirit master, it shouldn’t have been a problem to get rid of the two soul Chu Mu.

What Xia Guanghan completely had not expected was that a glorious spirit master was actually killed by the two soul Chu Mu.

“I still really underestimated that brat’s ability!” Xia Guanghan’s gaze turned rather gloomy!

Chu Mu had truly received Xia Guanghan's attention because, when he had come back from Prison Island, Xia Guanghan thought he was a person with potential. If Xia Guanghan control him well, he would have an extra sharp weapon.

However, from these indicators, Xia Guanghan's actions had already become the characteristics of nurturing a tiger to invite calamity. If it wasn't for the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox mutating into an Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox, Xia Guanghan fundamentally would not have detected that Chu Mu possessed this ability. After all, even if Chu Mu's Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox had powerful fighting strength, he absolutely could not solely rely on this Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox to defeat a Nightmare Palace spirit master! "There's marks of a fight and the corpses of a few soul pets. Presumably, Chu Mu took advantage of his unpreparedness and used a powerful soul pet. After heavily wounding him, he then killed him." said the Secret Killer Attendant carrying the corpse.

Xia Guanghan nodded his head, and he looked at the boundless and ash gray unending forest to the south.

"Hmph, do you believe that by escaping into the southern land's forbidden territory you'll be able to free yourself from my pursuit?!" coldly said Xia Guanghan!

Chu Mu had survived an entire three years on Prison Island. This complete disconnect from the rest of the world made it easier for Chu Mu to assimilate into the wilderness, as compared to other hunters. He also understood how to survive in the tangled and

complicated, the strange and multivariable, and the dangerous and primitive mountain forests better.

However, ten years ago, Xia Guanghan had also left Prison Island as the Prison Island King. His experience surviving in the wilderness was definitely not less than Chu Mu's. In Xia Guanghan's opinion, Chu Mu hiding like this in the southern land's forbidden region was merely engaging in a few small tricks!

“The forbidden region. The soul remembrance imprint will be concealed by a few unique and natural phenomena. You guys split up into teams of two and enter the southern land's forbidden region. You must bring him in front of me within a month!” Xia Guanghan waved his hands, and he spoke to the ten Secret Attendant Killers behind him.

“Yes!!”

After the ten Secret Attendant Killers responded, they immediately rode on their Ice Winged Tigers and flew in straight lines as they went down different paths, flying towards the southern land's forbidden region. Clearly, they were conducting an omni-directional search and encircling chase in the forbidden region for Chu Mu!

Chapter 94: The Ninth Rank Misleading World, Mysterious Forest World

An amethyst mountain and creek water. A multi colored lightly slowly washed over the sparkling meandering water, reflecting an enchanting lustre that was incomparably shooting gorgeously in all directions.

Chu Mu sat next to the fresh creek water and used his hands to cup the clear water flow. He was about to drink a mouthful when Mo Xie swept closer and, with her beautiful long mouth, quickly finished the water.

Chu Mu bitterly laughed and pinched the small fellow. He cupped another handful of water and drank it himself.

“I’ve unexpectedly made my way back to the wilderness.” looking at the surrounding boundless green mountain forest, Chu Mu felt a bit helpless.

Xia Guanghan could use the soul remembrance imprint to sense the White Nightmare’s location. Identically, Chu Mu could feel that Xia Guanghan wasn’t far from him through the soul remembrance imprint on the White Nightmare. Presently, Chu Mu had to think of a method of breaking away from Xia Guanghan in order to return to his normal life.

“Wu wu wu~~~~~” Mo Xie lifted her face with confidence as she spoke to Chu Mu.

“We can’t be impetuous and rash. Their strength is very powerful. Even if you’ve currently mutated into a Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Firefox, I’m afraid that we still aren’t that fellow’s opponent. Moreover, he has definitely brought many subordinates. Meeting him with force absolutely won’t do.” Chu Mu said to Mo Xie.

“Wu wu wu~~~~” Mo Xie grudgingly let out a noise, and she then began to grumble about the White Nightmare, which did nothing but make this situation worse.

“Nie~~~~ Nie~~~~” the White Nightmare instantly let out a protest, and it firmly expressed that it didn’t have the slightest relation with this.

“You can’t blame the White Nightmare either. Xia Guanghan’s soul remembrance imprint should have been imprinted using an extremely powerful soul brand tool. Prior to my strength reaching the spirit master level, it will be extremely hard to destroy the imprint. The White Nightmare cannot remove the imprint by itself either.” said Chu Mu

Of course, Chu Mu had naturally thought of removing the soul pact as a method. Only, even if Chu Mu would actually heartlessly renounce the monarch rank White Nightmare, which he had spent an extremely large cost to raise for four years, the White Nightmare had to agree with Chu Mu to remove the soul pact.

The White Nightmare had presently already grown accustomed

to absorbing Chu Mu's soul power aura. It wouldn't work for the benefit of both of them to remove the soul pact with Chu Mu. Moreover, Chu Mu's own soul remembrance wasn't powerful enough to forcibly remove the soul pact with the White Nightmare.

Chu Mu didn't have any other options at the moment. He could only continue walking deeper into this southern land's forbidden region. Using the complex terrain and those few dangerous soul pets, he could create a series of obstructions from Xia Guanghan's pursuit.

In the various large regions of humans, there were always maps. A few relatively dangerous areas were also marked out and, at outposts of dangerous regions where people often entered, there would be rough sketches of maps sold.

As for those forbidden regions where practically no person set foot in, there simply wouldn't be any map that could be purchased. Thus, Chu Mu had no path to look for, and he had to completely rely on his own senses to enter the depths of the forbidden region.

The reason why the forbidden regions caused people to tremble in fear was not only because there were countless soul pets there, but also because, in between the mountains and the areas connecting the forests, there would be a few strange phenomena. There were misleading halos that seemed to display a few strange gaily-colored colors.

The misleading halo indicated a forest. It had, through unique plants or the growth of certain powerful plant type soul pets

against the natural climate, slowly created a specially protected world.

The misleading halo not only allowed the different types of soul pets in this forest to hide, but it also caused intruders to have absolutely no way of finding their direction. Moreover, in the most terrifying of the misleading halos, it could cause a creature to be trapped in an area of fifty meters where there were simply no obstructions.

These fifty meters areas were rather narrow, but the moment one entered in it, those without an understanding of these unique phenomena would be trapped in this fifty meter forest area for three or four days and be unable to escape.

After Chu Mu entered the southern land's forbidden region, he essentially finally understood why these areas were called forbidden regions. Because Chu Mu hadn't entered that far in, what appeared in front of him happened to be the extremely terrifying misleading halo!

In the human world, there were many people who had done a bit of deep research towards the various regions of marshes, rivers, mountains, forests, plains, tundras... these different places all had their own unique, bizarre phenomena.

As for the misleading halo, it was definitely the most brilliant appearance in a forest mountain range. Those who conducted deep research into this split the misleading fogs into different ranks. The misleading fogs that were fifty meters in area and could trap a newbie there for three days and three nights like this one were

ninth rank misleading worlds!

In each region, the appearance of such a ninth rank misleading world would rank the region as a demonic land. However, this was merely the outer perimeter of the forbidden region, and there was a ninth rank misleading halo that made numerous hunters and adventurers faces change. How could this not make Chu Mu shocked?!

The Misleading Halo in the Broken Forest's Mo Ye Forest could only be considered to be a seventh rank misleading world. Chu Mu only had to walk one circle around it to find the exit. If it was an eighth rank misleading world, Chu Mu would have to spend a dozen days before being able to leave. As for a ninth rank misleading world, it was exactly like the deep forest in the depths of Prison Island and, back then, Chu Mu had circled it for an entire year before finally leaving.

“I hope that I won't be trapped for too long.” Chu Mu glanced at the adjacent Mo Xie, and then at the Night Thunder Dream Beast which expressed that it like this environment a lot.

The Nightmare Thunder Dream Beast had been obtained by Chu Mu in the ninth ranked misleading world. When it saw the misleading halo, the Night Thunder Dream Beast had a feeling like it had returned home, and it naturally didn't constrain its feelings.

“Night, lead the way.” Chu Mu patted the Night Thunder Dream Beast and it jumped onto its body. He had the Night Thunder Dream Beast lead him forward.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast strode forward, and its black body gradually disappeared into the misleading halo...

.....

Three hours later.

“We probably haven’t even walked 200 meters right...” Chu Mu tilted his head and looked at little Mo Xie on his shoulders.

Little Mo Xie vigorously nodded her head, and she strangely looked at the slightly annoyed Night Thunder Dream Beast.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast had arrogantly walked into the misleading halo; however, very depressingly, it had only walked two hundred meters before it, for some reason, returned to the original spot. This continued for an entire three hours, and they had only walked in circles within the the two hundred meter range of the misleading halo. Thus, it had dealt a heavy blow to the Night Thunder Dream Beast.

“There’s a bit of a difference between the distribution of forests on continents and forests on islands. Don’t fret, take your time look for a pattern.” Chu Mu patted the Night Thunder Dream Beast, not wanting it to be anxious.

Chu Mu released his soul remembrance, and he began to look for a method of deciphering the misleading fog with the Night

Thunder Dream Beast.

In the next five hours, Chu Mu and the Night Thunder Dream beast finally escaped that two hundred meter plight and entered into the depths of the mountain forest.

“This should be a paradise for demon type and wood type soul pets.” when he felt the unique aspect of this ninth rank misleading world forest, Chu Mu couldn’t help but let out a sigh.

Different soul pets preferred to reside in different environments. Forests like this, filled with mysterious halos, were the most optimal habitats for demon and wood type soul pets. When the Night Thunder Dream Beast entered, he could see many rare soul pets moving around the forest.

If it wasn’t for the pursuit of the executioner Xia Guanghan behind, Chu Mu really would have spent a bit of time to look around and see if he could find a satisfactory soul pet to become his third spirit teacher soul pet.

“Hui~~~~~”

As they were proceeding, the Night Thunder Dream Beast suddenly stopped in its tracks. Its black pupils stared at the deep part of the forest gradually disappearing into the misleading fog, as if it was afraid of something.

“What’s the matter?” asked Chu Mu.

“Hui~~~~ Hui~~~~~” the Night Thunder Dream Beast immediately let out a noise, and it began to engage in spiritual communication with Chu Mu.

“You’re saying that there might be a powerful demon ahead. The surrounding area has already been sprayed with its domain aura?” asked Chu Mu.

“Hui~~Hui~~~~~” the Night Thunder Dream Beast instantly gave Chu Mu a certain response.

The unique environment of a ninth ranked misleading world was similar to a fortified human defensive castle. The larger the scale, the stronger the commander would be. It was very very common to see the appearance of an eminently powerful demon that surpassed his own land world in such a misleading halo forest.

“Wu wu wu~~~” Mo Xie let out a shout, and she wore an unafraid expression, urging the Night Thunder Dream Beast to continue going forward.

“Let’s go, what we’re looking for happens to be in the territory of some powerful soul pets. In this way, we’ll be able to create obstructions towards those fellows.” said Chu Mu.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast merely warned Chu Mu, but wasn’t actually afraid to enter. After obtaining Chu Mu’s consent, it promptly stepped into a stride, walking towards the habitat of some powerful demon type soul pet.

Able to sit at the head of a ninth rank misleading world, even if it wasn't a monarch rank soul pet, it was definitely a ninth phase and above commander rank. Since Chu Mu was going to enter its territory, he naturally didn't dare act too ostentatiously. Thus, after entering, Chu Mu intentionally had Mo Xie curb her powerful aura that rivalled a monarch.

.....

As they penetrated deeply, Chu Mu gradually discovered that the misleading halo's effect was becoming more sparse. On the approximately tenth day they entered this forest, Chu Mu abruptly discovered that after the layers of the misleading halo were brushed aside, and he was astonishingly standing in an even more expansive green ocean!

The plants in this green sea were even more plentiful than the surrounding trees. As they proceeded forth into this forest that rose steeply from the ground, they felt as if they were abnormally small!

“That's...”

Chu Mu had the Night Thunder Dream Beast jump onto the top of a tree to look for directions. However, when he stood on the top of a hundred meter tall tree and looked around, he shockingly discovered three enormous towering plants in the middle of the green colored forest ocean!!

The three plants formed a triangle shape in the vast forest ocean and they were respectively separated by a large distance. From the distance Chu Mu was at, he could clearly feel that the branches of the three loftily towering enormous plants were separately extending towards the surrounding enormous triangle forest!

The interweaving of the enormous tree branches, as well as the deep blue colored leaves growing on top as compared to the forest ocean, made it so that the tops of the trees in this forest ocean were nurturing an independent deep blue colored world, like a distinct and mysterious island on an expansive ocean!

After seeing the gorgeous scene, Chu Mu's heart was set off with waves of emotion. He completely did not expect the inner world of this misleading halo would contain such an illusory and colorful world!

Chapter 95: Dream Underworld, Reverse Killing While Escaping

The mountains outside the mountains rose into the sky. The ocean of the forest oceans. This was the capital of demons.

In this moment, Chu Mu finally understood about the “great outer world” that Chu Tiancheng had told him about before!

This world was fantastically vast. Only by being there oneself and seeing it with one’s own eyes could one truly experience the elegant magnificence of it!

“Hui~~~~~”

The Night Thunder Dream Beast let out a resounding whinny. Clearly, it had also been attracted by this exotic demon world, and it was a bit hard for it to suppress its excitement.

“Let’s go. Since we’ve already come here, you can go run around freely.” said Chu Mu as he patted the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s dream horn.

In this small, fantastical forest world, there definitely would be various strange soul pets. After entering, he could first obtain a new soul pet and then use the unique region to restrict Xia Guanghan. After all, there definitely resided a few territorial hegemon out here, and the moment Xia Guanghan summoned a soul pet that was too powerful, it would certainly disturb the

territory hegemon.

Passing through the lush ocean of forest, Chu Mu could distinctly feel a slightly unique and demonic aura lingering in the forest. Demon and plant world soul pets were closely related, and Chu Mu could naturally guess that, in this world, there absolutely existed all kinds of peculiar plant type soul pets.

“Xiu Xiu~~~~~”

Suddenly, the minute sound of leaf shaking flitted next to Chu Mu’s ear.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast didn’t make any noise when it ran, so the acute hearing of Chu Mu was able to hear the noise extremely clearly.

“Night, Thunder Tailwhip!” Chu Mu immediately used his soul remembrance to tell the Night Thunder Dream Beast.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast had also become aware of danger appearing, and its long, white-colored tail abruptly swept up, transforming into a curved, purple-colored thunder whip that fiercely smacked the adjacent tall tree!

Thunder Tailwhip’s might was extremely formidable. Practically after touching the tree, the tree was sliced apart, and a crisp creak was emitted. Countless treetops were spread apart as it fell onto the ground.

“Hu hu hu~~~~”

After the large tree fell down, two figures immediately appeared amidst the treetops. Long wings and a imposing tiger body swooped down from above, causing a powerful stream of air that caused a clamor among the surrounding trees...

“Ice Winged Tiger...” seeing the two Ice Winged Tigers appear, Chu Mu immediately creased his eyebrows.

Chu Mu already understood that all of those who rode on an Ice Winged Tiger to fight happened to be the Nightmare Palace’s Secret Killer Attendants who caused many people to feel terror-stricken.

The Secret Killer Attendants were currently under Xia Guanghan’s control, and they strayed a bit differently than Nightmare Palace’s assassins. These Secret Killer Attendants were an even more elite set of troops, and they were only in charge of assassinating a few powerful Nightmare Palace criminals or traitors.

The Secret Killer Attendants were most adept at pursuing and besieging. If one didn’t have absolute strength, then it was futile to think of escaping from the pursuit of Nightmare Palace’s Secret Killer Attendants.

“Mo Xie!”

Chu Mu currently relied on Mo Xie, who was comparable to a sixth phased monarch rank. These two Ice Winged Tigers were approximately at the sixth phase eighth stage, but they clearly were not of average quality. Their fighting strength was perhaps even stronger than the Luo Region Nightmare Prince's Radiance Lion!

“Wu wu~~~~”

Mo Xie instantly jumped down from Chu Mu's shoulder. After her body lithely landed on the ground, the Demon Fire Evil Flames and Blood Flames that created the double crowned flame split into nine parts. They circled around Mo Xie's body and as they spanned downwards, a fire lotus abruptly blossomed!!

The imposing and majestic nine tails expanded and Mo Xie, who had transformed into the Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox, suddenly released a powerful demonic aura that intimidated the two Ice Winged Tigers following closely!

“Nine Dance!”

Nine Dance was also one of Mo Xie's tail techniques. After Mo Xie transformed into the Imperial Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox, her tail part was no longer a secondary weapon. In fact, in battle, its usage may be even more frequent than her two royal flame claws!

The nine long tails imposingly danced about, wanton and ostentatious. They wildly smashed towards the two sixth phase

eighth stage Ice Winged Tiger!!

“Pai!!! Pai!!!!!!”

The two Ice Winged Tigers could dodge one or two dancing tail attacks, but with the simultaneous onslaught of nine dancing tails, unless the two Ice Winged Tigers reached an even higher dodging realm, they would not be able to bear it...

The two Ice Winged Tigers had just swooped down when the nine tails fiercely smacked the two powerful bodies like houseflies, causing them to firmly smash into the trunk of the large tree.

The two Secret Killer Attendants realized that the Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox's strength was extremely strong, and they immediately chanted an incantation, respectively summoning two other soul pets!

“Mo Xie, leave.” Chu Mu didn't want to zealously continue fighting and, after knocking them back, he immediately had Mo Xie escort him as he continued to run towards that peculiar world.

In terms of speed, there wasn't any soul pet that could compare to Mo Xie. Her turning around and leaving meant that the two Secret Killer Attendants could only change to speed type soul pets and ride on the Ice Winged Tigers that had been knocked slightly muddleheaded as they chased after Chu Mu.

“Night, Extreme Speed!”

Chu Mu immediately had the Night Thunder Dream Beast use its speed type technique.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast's body faintly leaned forward, and its speed suddenly increased by threefold. Under the effects of the purple lightning on its body, it quickly disappeared into the lush forest.

“Night, Dream Underworld!”

“Hui~~~~~”

The Night Thunder Dream Beast's eyes underwent an evident change. As it was running, its body unexpectedly transformed into an empty shadow that weirdly stepped into a space that had warped.

The existence of the misleading halo and the peculiar forest allowed the Night Thunder Dream Beast's demon type techniques to be used even more effectively. Even though Dream Underworld was actually incapable of causing the two Secret Killer Attendants to completely enter the dream, it was still able to create a certain confusing effect.

As expected, after the two Secret Killer Attendants chased towards the Dream Underworld's location, they immediately let out a blank expression. For a while, they simply didn't know which way they should continue looking for Chu Mu's figure.

.....

Chu Mu turned around and glanced at the two Secret Killer Attendants confused by the Dream Underworld. The corners of his mouth faintly rose. The Night Thunder Dream Beast was currently at the sixth phase third stage. If its phase and stage could increase, the effects of such an illusion would be even more powerful. Under this circumstance, the Night Thunder Dream Beast would certainly be able to display the greatest use.

The true reason why Chu Mu had the Night Thunder Dream Beast use Dream Underworld wasn't to stop the pursuit of the two Secret Killer Attendants; instead, it was to have them split into different directions to chase after Chu Mu in the dream.

The two Secret Killer Attendants clearly didn't have the strength of a monarch rank. Furthermore, in this ninth rank misleading world, the Night Thunder Dream Beast's demonic techniques were amplified by at least 50 percent. The two Secret Killer Attendants had fallen into the trap that Chu Mu had laid long ago, and the separate directions in which they chased after had the shadow of the Night Thunder Dream Beast.

Absconding fights in the forest could be regarded as Chu Mu's most adept form of fighting. For at least half a year on Prison Island, Chu Mu had always been in this sort of state.

The very experienced Chu Mu understood that, in the face of multiple enemies chasing, if he didn't create a trap that heavily

wounded them, the most optimal method was to split them up and break through them while running away!

“Mo Xie, Illusion Royal Flamed Claw!!”

After locking down that Secret Killer Attendant riding the Ice Winged Tiger, Chu Mu immediately issued an order to Mo Xie.

Mo Xie’s nine tails swept through the trees, and it was almost impossible to see her moving body. She incomparably strangely appeared in front of the soul pets of the Secret Killer Attendant that had summoned three soul pets.

Four strange figures astonishingly appeared; Mo Xie’s Illusion had clearly reached an even higher level!

The imposing Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox flew past, and the effects of the full form offensive soul claw that covered the top of Mo Xie’s sharp claws that had already reached the final seventh stage caused her attack to approach the eighth rank!

“Shua Shua Shua Shua!!!!!”

Four nearly eighth rank Royal Flamed Claws strangely swept across the Secret Killer Attendant’s own body, as well as his three soul pets!!

The Secret Killer Attendant had evidently sensed the Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox’s terrifying strength, and he had

immediately had his three soul pets gather together, forming a combined defense!

There was a very large gap between the monarch and commander ranks. Frequently, a sixth phase monarch rank was capable of contending against five sixth phase commander ranks. Amongst the Secret Killer Attendant's three soul pets, only one of them was a seventh phase fifth phase commander. Such fighting strength simply wasn't enough to resist Chu Mu and Mo Xie.

However, the Nightmare Palace's Secret Killer Attendants were not some normal people. Although these three soul pets could not be the opponent of this perfect commander rank Mo Xie, he was able to correspond the three soul pet's attribute techniques together and make it so that for a short period of time, Mo Xie's imposing attack could not break it apart!

The Secret Killer Attendants were not from the young generation. Their fighting experience was definitely much more ample than those so-called peak young experts. Chu Mu had to add a Night Thunder Dream Beast's dark type technique before just barely being able to kill one of the Secret Killer Attendant's soul pets.

With one less soul pet, the correspondence of the techniques between the Secret Killer Attendant's soul pets had a large gap. Thus, this Secret Killer Attendant decided to retreat very decisively.

How could Chu Mu let him flee? Under the strength of an incomparably powerful monarch rank, this Secret Killer Attendant

was ultimately killed by Chu Mu in the forest.

When the other Secret Killer Attendant arrived, the first Secret Killer Attendant's corpse had already been burnt into ashes. Chu Mu originally wanted to use the opportunity to kill the other Secret Killer Attendant, but these fellows who often trained were not those eminently reckless prisoners on Prison Island. After realizing that he was by himself, this Secret Killer Attendant, under the protection of his three soul pets, decisively decided to retreat.

Chu Mu knew that the appearance of Secret Killer Attendants here meant that it was very likely that Xia Guanghan wasn't far away from him. He naturally didn't dare to pursue, and promptly changed directions, continuing to run towards the peculiar world.

.....

Not long after Chu Mu left this place, Xia Guanghan, alone, appeared in front of the charred corpse of that Secret Killer Attendant. His expression was apathetic as he picked up the medallion on the Secret Killer Attendant's waist.

“You want to play a game? Then I'll accompany you and play, eh?” a while later, the corners of Xia Guanghan's mouth rose.

Squeezing his palm, Xia Guanghan crushed the slightly charred waist medallion from the burnt Secret Killer Attendant into pieces. He rode on his eighth phase demon type commander rank and chased in the direction that Chu Mu had fled!

Chapter 96: Trap, Demon Feast

Chu Mu couldn't use the same move twice. In reality, Chu Mu couldn't use the same move because, aside from the two previous Secret Killer Attendants being spirit teachers, the other Secret Killer Attendants seemed to all be spirit masters.

Although the fighting strength of those spirit master's soul pets weren't very strong, they understood extremely well how to use their four soul pet advantage to deal with Chu Mu's two soul pet disadvantage. Chu Mu used a strategy to split up one group of Secret Killer Attendants when they attempted to kill him. However, unless Chu Mu and Mo Xie used a dual Heavenly Flame Rite, they would not be able to defeat four soul pets.

Chu Mu's soul power only allowed him to use the Heavenly Flame Rite once. Saving it was crucial, so Chu Mu definitely would not use it. Therefore, once he had no way of killing that spirit master Secret Killer Attendant, Chu Mu decisively chose to flee.

.....

Halfway enroute towards the mysterious inner forest world, Chu Mu obtained another perfect opportunity; it happened to be that lone spirit teacher.

The Night Thunder Dream beast had already been continuously running and fighting, so its physical strength was clearly weakened. Chu Mu recalled the Night Thunder Dream Beast and chose the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, which was even more suited to

forest fights.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier was a plant world soul pet. Within the incomparably concentrated woods, its battle strength increasing by four stages was definitely not a problem.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier was presently at the sixth phase third stage. Adding on the advantage of the woods, it was enough to reach the effect of the sixth phase seventh stage.

As long as it didn't encounter a fire type or a dark type soul pet, a wood type soul pet would be able to completely counter the opponent. Chu Mu didn't have Mo Xie immediately attack. Instead, he had the Devil Tree Battle Soldier noiselessly bury its demon wood roots underground.

“Pu pu pu!!!!”

Suddenly, over sixty demon wood roots shot out of the dead, leaf strewn ground like massive incomparably sharp spurs!

The sharp roots didn't receive any obstruction, and they were going to penetrate underneath the Ice Winged Tiger's abdomen!!

The range of demon wood roots had reached nearly ten meters. Under such circumstances, it would be hard for the Ice Winged Tiger to dodge. However, just as the Ice Winged Tiger's body was about to be penetrated, an eminently shocking curved light blade abruptly appeared in between the thicket!

“Shua!!!!!!”

A crisp sound rang out in the forest, and the sixty plus demon wood roots that had suddenly appeared were instantaneously sliced right in half just as they were about to penetrate!

“Gezhi Gezhi~~~~~”

Not only that, the terrifying curved light blade swept through in a flat line after, and the trees with a radius of twenty meters were all cut down. In the next moment, these nearly hundred meter tall trees slowly toppled down from high above!

“Kill!”

Xia Guanghan’s ice cold voice rang out!

In the next instant, several tens of soul pets abruptly jumped out of their hiding spot amidst the treetops. Practically simultaneously, they locked down the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s location!!

“Sou sou sou~~~~~”

The thirty plus soul pets were all speed type and, as they ran, there wasn’t a frightening grandeur that powerfully swept through the entire forest. Rather, in this forest with a plethora of obstacles,

they didn't suffer any obstructions. Moreover, as they rushed through this narrow forest, they didn't touch anything!

Amongst the thirty or more strange black figures, Xia Guanghan's monarch rank demon – the Earth Fiend Dream Demon – was the most terrifying. Unexpectedly, it was faster than the soul pets of those Secret Killer Attendants behind it by more than double!!

Earth Fiend Dream Demon: Beast World – Demon type – Dream Demon species – middle class monarch rank.

Dream Demons had similarities with Dream Beasts, as well as differences. Dream Beasts still possessed a definite beast attribute, so when they used soul techniques, it wasn't a pure demon technique. Aside from the dream realm, the techniques practically all carried a bit of the other attributes.

As for Dream Demons, they were the most pure high species ranking demon type soul pets. Apparently, the lowest rank Dream Demon was a high class commander. Tracing back to the the even earlier type division of soul pets, Dream Beasts could be considered to be the half-breed of a few unusual beast type soul pets and Dream Demons. When it came to solely comparing speed and intelligence, even if they were the same species ranking, the Dream Demons were definitely stronger than the Dream Beasts by an entire class.

Xia Guanghan's Earth Fiend Dream Demon had very evidently gone through the most pure form of demon attribute strengthening. Although its speed wasn't first-rate, its intelligence

was extremely high. Once Chu Mu's soul pet was mentally locked down, it would be futile to flee!

Xia Guanghan had already completely locked down the location of Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier. The monarch demon Earth Fiend Dream Demon astonishingly used a mental sword, piercing through the several tens of enormous plant roots before thrusting towards Chu Mu's soul pet.

The powerful mental sword already possessed extremely powerful mental damage. Although plant world soul pets had a certain immunity towards mental and soul type techniques, the Earth Fiend Dream Demon's mental sword still pierced the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's weak mind, causing it to let out a pained howl!

Seeing the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's mind being damaged, Chu Mu resolutely chanted an incantation, and he recalled the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, which had already finished its job, back into the soul pet space.

Amongst the towering trees, the black garment Chu Mu motionlessly stood there. After recalling the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, Chu Mu didn't immediately flee. Instead, his gaze passed through the dense tree trunks, and he stared at the extremely fast moving Xia Guanghan!

An eighth phase second stage Earth Fiend Dream Demon. Feeling the imposing demonic aura's onslaught, Chu Mu creased his eyebrows.

An eighth phase monarch rank soul pet. Even if he were to use the Violent Blood Pupil and Moon Essence on Mo Xie, she would only barely reach the seventh phase monarch rank's strength. Yet, this demon of Xia Guanghan's was a terrifying eighth phase. One on one, merely this demon alone could easily dispatch of all of Chu Mu's soul pets.

Chu Mu passed through the trees and looked at Xia Guanghan. Xia Guanghan could also see Chu Mu standing between the trees. His eyes let out a terrifying cold intent, making it seem like his two eyes were swords!

Xia Guanghan naturally understood separation tactics. Chu Mu was in the dark, while they were in the light. Xia Guanghan moreover directly laid a trap, having that spirit teacher go alone to wait for Chu Mu to appear.

As expected, in order to reduce the number of opponents, hidden extremely deeply in the forest, Chu Mu had ultimately still appeared. However, when Chu Mu appeared, he had fallen into the trap that Xia Guanghan had laid.

“You have two options. Undo the soul pact with the Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox and then die a quick and painless death, or just like four years ago, I'll have you, this pitiful thing, feel the feeling of having your soul pierced!” Xia Guanghan condensed his soul remembrance into a voice that passed into Chu Mu's mental world.

Four years ago, Chu Mu had, with great difficulty, increased his strength to the spirit soldier level. He was able to sign soul pacts with soul pets and also summon them. However, Xia Guanghan, who kidnapped Chu Mu, made Chu Mu sign a soul pact with a monarch rank White Nightmare.

Signing a soul pact was an autonomous signing. If the person didn't chant the incantation, outsiders could not forcibly have him or her sign a soul pact. Only through ceaseless torture towards a person and having his or her willpower surrender could one make the other person sign the soul pact of his or her own accord.

At the beginning, when Chu Mu was unwilling to sign a soul pact with the White Nightmare, Xia Guanghan had extremely cruelly stabbed into Chu Mu's soul. Even now, this feeling of wanting to die still remained.

Furthermore, four years ago, Chu Mu had maliciously sworn that there would finally be a day that Xia Guanghan would taste the feeling of having his soul pierced!

“I have a third option, while you only have one outcome! In five years, I will personally kill you!” Chu Mu coldly changed his soul remembrance into a voice that transmitted into Xia Guanghan's ears.

After listening to that sentence, a smile of ridicule rose up on Xia Guanghan's face. While speaking, the gap had closed to one hundred meters and, to Xia Guanghan's eighth phase Earth Fiend Dream Demon, one hundred meters only required a few rushing steps!

Seeing Xia Guanghan approach, Chu Mu apathetically turned around, and he stared at the terrifying surging dust approaching from the depths of the forest.

Chu Mu turned around and jumped, quickly jumping onto a tree. He continuously jumped a few times, nimbly landing on top of a tall tree's branch...

In the depths of the forest appeared a rumbling ruckus. The source of this ruckus happened to be pursuing in Xia Guanghan's direction.

Xia Guanghan was the leader, and he ordered the thirty plus Secret Killer Attendants' soul pets to chase in the forest. Facing them was the violent and imposing Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Flamed Fox's extremely fast charge. Astonishingly, behind it, was a large following of a group of demons!

The number of these demon type species was much larger than the soul pets of the Secret Killer Attendants Xia Guanghan lead. Even though each of their strong and healthy bodies unobstructedly traversed through the trees, as they grew closer, they could clearly feel the vibration of the demon group's charge!

“Flame Dance!”

“Wu wu wu~~~~”

Mo Xie, who was wildly charging in the forest, let out a howl filled with intimidation force. Her gorgeous nine tails crazily danced about. Despite facing Xia Guanghan's eighth phase Earth Fiend Dream Demon, it didn't have the least bit of fear!

However, Mo Xie didn't intend on directly fighting Xia Guanghan's soul pet. When Mo Xie was forty meters away from Xia Guanghan, Mo Xie abruptly used the technique Flame Dance and beautifully dodged Xia Guanghan's Earth Fiend Dream Demon's mental attack. In this forest filled with myriad towering forest, it ran in an exquisite arc, running in a lateral direction!

Seeing this Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox's enormous aura, Xia Guanghan's face instantly let out an amazed expression. However, when he discovered that behind the Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox was unexpectedly the pursuit of an entire demon group, his expression immediately changed!

"Properly enjoy this demon feast!" Chu Mu swept his gaze over Xia Guanghan, who was quickly swallowed by this enormous group of demons and the corners of his lips raised, forming a smile. He jumped down from above and, Mo Xie, who shook off the demon group promptly, appeared under him and brought him towards the depths of the forest!

The other three soul pets seemed to all wake up in a short period of time. Seeing both his and the Secret Killer Attendants soul pets immediately be encircled by the demon group, Xia Guanghan's expression turned extremely gloomy. His gaze carried ashamed anger and malice as he stared at the direction Chu Mu had fled in!

This time, Xia Guanghan had truly miscalculated. As for this miscalculation, it fanned the flames of rage to an even stronger level in Xia Guanghan's heart. It had already been a long time since anyone had truly angered this grim executioner of Nightmare Palace!

Chapter 97: Ancient Firmament Wood, Magnificence Of A Crown

“Properly enjoy this demon feast!” Chu Mu swept his gaze over Xia Guanghan, who was quickly swallowed by this enormous group of demons and the corners of his lips raised, forming a smile. He jumped down from above and Mo Xie, who shook off the demon group promptly, appeared under him and brought him towards the depths of the forest!

The other three soul pets seemed to all wake up in a short period of time. Seeing his soul pet and Secret Killer Attendant soul pets immediately be encircled by the demon group, Xia Guanghan’s expression turned extremely gloomy. His gaze carried ashamed anger and malice as he stared towards the direction that Chu Mu had fled in!

This time, Xia Guanghan had truly miscalculated. As for this miscalculation, it fanned the flames of rage to an even stronger level in Xia Guanghan’s heart. It had already been a long time since anyone had truly angered this grim executioner of Nightmare Palace!

Xia Guanghan was willing to lay a trap, so why couldn’t Chu Mu do the same? He intentionally entered the eminently dangerous forest to employ the help of those wild soul pets to deal with the powerful Xia Guanghan.

Xia Guanghan evidently hadn’t thought that Chu Mu would draw on the help of the formidable Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox enraging the entire demon group. With incomparable guts, he

lured the entire group to the place where Xia Guanghan laid down his trap.

Of course, Chu Mu also knew that the strength of Xia Guanghan and his subordinates made it so that the group of demons that numbered around 100 only had a slight chance of swallowing up a few Secret Killer Attendants. However, it definitely could not kill Xia Guanghan. Therefore, Chu Mu didn't stay at all, and he had Mo Xie increase her speed as they entered the blue colored inner forest, where there were soul pets that were actually threatening to Xia Guanghan.

At the beginning, when Chu Mu had seen the blue demonic world, he sensed that he would be able to reach it after passing through the large forest. In reality, this was a long journey and, with Mo Xie's running speed, it was nearly a day before they gradually reached the strange holy land.

During the one day, he gave the Night Thunder Dream Beast the specially bought sixth rank recovery medicine, and the Night Thunder Dream Beast's physical strength recovered a lot.

Mo Xie's aura was overly powerful, and it was very possible that she would anger a few seventh phase and above commander ranks, or anger the sixth phase and above monarch ranks. Therefore, Chu Mu still had the Night Thunder Dream Beast with relatively strong endurance to bring him forth. He had Mo Xie maintain her Pitiful Appearance and lie on his shoulder.

While he was standing in the distance looking at the mysterious blue world, it gave Chu Mu a nice surprise. When Chu Mu actually

got near it and faced one of the three enormous plants, his inner heart had a shock that was hard to calm!

From a distance, Chu Mu only knew that these were three extremely strange Enormous Firmament Woods, and he was unable to estimate exactly how enormous they were. Yet, presently, he could clearly feel that this plant was earth-shattering!!

In reality, Chu Mu currently had yet to actually arrive underneath the enormous plant. He had only ridden on the Night Thunder Dream Beast into the shadows of the heavenly wood trees. What made Chu Mu truly shocked was that with the Night Thunder Dream Beast's speed, even with a full minute of running, he had only managed to go from the shadow of the tree top to the twisted roots underneath the tree trunk!

A minute of running with the Nightmare Thunder Dream beast was enough to cover over a thousand meters. The radius of this Enormous Firmament Wood reached a thousand meters and thus, how could Chu Mu's inner heart remain calm in the face of the magnificence of this natural world.

“Without actually entering here, who would know that within this misleading halo there was such an astonishing isolated world hidden away.” Chu Mu took in a deep breath of air. He felt a brush of an ancient, everlasting remnant of wind. If he had enough time, Chu Mu really did want to stay here for a while and search through the mysteriousness of this peculiar world.

When Chu Mu was young, he often heard his father talk about

the various bizarre regions within the world, which numbered in the thousands, and he had gradually developed a sort of yearning. Right now, before such a region, he cognitively associated this mysterious place to harbor creatures that were extremely rare in the human world. He could have them become his soul pet and, unconsciously, some kind of fervent passion set afire in his heart...

“Hui~~~~ Hui~~~~~”

The Night Thunder Dream Beast let out a noise towards Chu Mu, ostensibly informing Chu Mu of something.

“You’re saying that the plants propping up the essence of this world are known as protector Gods to you guys?” asked Chu Mu.

“Hui~~~~ Hui~~~~~” the Night Thunder Dream Beast promptly nodded its head before sending another bout of information into Chu Mu’s mental world.

After the Night Thunder Dream Beast finished its line of demonic language, Chu Mu was stunned. He abruptly thought of an unusual ancient ceremony pertaining to demons that Chu Tiancheng had once told him before.

Demons were the most spiritual life forms in the world. Their existence was closely bound with the natural world, and they enjoyed residing in lush forests, the treetops of ancient godly trees, and the valleys isolated from the world...

It could be said that a majority of demons enjoyed quietly living in certain a certain heaven and world of their own, where they didn't receive interference or restrictions. They universally didn't enjoy fighting. It was also because of this reason that among all the types of soul pets, demons could be regarded as those with the weakest fighting strength.

However, even if a demon's fighting strength were somewhat underwhelming, a demon type soul pet was a necessity for every soul pet trainer. Moreover, the main soul pet of many powerful soul pet trainers was a pure demon type soul pet. This was because demon type soul pets possessed speed and dodging ability that was unrivaled by any other type of soul pet.

The most unique thing about demons were their strange demon type techniques. A few demon type techniques were targeted towards the mind. The demon type mental techniques that Chu Mu had come across were Charm, Conceal, Confuse, Demonic Scare, Dream, etc. These were clearly just the tip of the iceberg of demon type mental techniques. The truly strange abilities would ultimately always appear on those powerful demon soul pets, and it would allow them to practically become the most headache-inducing type of soul pets.

Pure demon type soul pets were extremely hard to obtain, because they lived in seclusion and rarely went out. Their whereabouts were fleeting, and they often received the protection of a few plant world soul pets.

However, among demon type soul pets were an extremely small amount of nomadic demon species. These nomadic demon species

would hardly settle in some quiet and isolated world. They would always wander everywhere, searching for a demonic habitat to stay at for a period of time.

The reason why these particular demon species soul pets unceasingly wandered was because a special energy circulated within their body that could absorb demonic spiritual aura. After easily absorbing this special spiritual aura and spending a long period to nurture it, the demonic strength of these demon species would become even stronger.

The wandering demonic species amongst demons were a special case. They were good at fighting, and didn't like staying in one place for too long. Therefore, they unceasingly traveled around the world of thousands of societies to find new demonic homes and, under the influence of this special demonic aura, obtain increases in strength.

When their strength was incapable of increasing anymore, they would leave and look for a new demonic home.

This fantastical demon trait was very rarely seen in books, and Chu Mu had only come to know it through Chu Tiancheng. What made Chu Mu feel extremely surprised was that the Night Thunder Dream Beast belonged to one of the wandering species of demon type soul pets!

The Dream Beast species wasn't a wandering demon species, but the circumstance of nomadic demons often occurred in individual cases. As such, when the Night Thunder Dream Beast expressed that it could absorb the dense demon aura to increase its demonic

strength, Chu Mu felt exceptionally astonished.

“Hui~~~~ Hui~~~~” the Night Thunder Dream Beast appeared to be rather impatient.

The Night Thunder Dream beast’s fighting strength had a limit, and because its demon techniques rarely had an effect due to its low phase and stage, when Chu Mu had to fight, it would always end up sitting on the sidelines.

Good demon fighters were not many. Since the Night Thunder Dream Beast could become a special wandering species among Dream Beasts, it meant that this fellow had a noble and arrogant heart. In the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s heart, how was it a good feeling to always be sitting on the sidelines and becoming a steed only when going somewhere? After all, its longing desire was to fight enemies like Mo Xie.

As such, as a demon that found such a dense demonic aura, the Night Thunder Dream Beats was incessantly excited. It wanted to immediately jump onto the peak of the enormous firmament wood and absorb the purest demonic aura!

“Let’s go then.” Chu Mu was spiritually linked with the Night Thunder Dream Beast and naturally could understand its emotions. He didn’t further consider whether there were any powerful dangerous soul pets on top of the enormous ancient wood, and had the Night Thunder Dream Beast fill its heart’s content by sprinting in a zig zag from tree trunk to tree branch towards the higher area!

The Night Thunder Dream Beast's jumps were extremely lithe, and it also could use the rather shadowy areas to tread on air.

“Si si~~~ Si si~~~~~”

A strange noise suddenly appeared beside Chu Mu's ear, and Chu Mu immediately used soul remembrance to lock down the location of the origin of this sound...

“Double Headed Scarlet Wood Python.”

Chu Mu promptly discerned the soul pet which let out the noise, and his gaze fixated on the glossy large tree branch that wasn't much of a different color than the tree trunk.

The Double Headed Scarlet Wood Python was a warrior rank soul pet, and its rank couldn't be regarded as very good. Yet, the Double Headed Scarlet Wood Python Chu Mu had sensed was a powerful soul pet that had already reached the seventh phase fifth stage.

“Night, Death Ray!”

Chu Mu realized that this seventh phase Double Headed Scarlet Wood Python had an intention of ambushing them. Thus, he wanted to strike first to gain the advantage, and he immediately had the Night Thunder Dream Beast launch an attack!

The Night Thunder Dream Beast raised its head and, between its curved dream horns, appeared a circulating black lightning ray. After the lightning ray disappeared, a dark colored energy promptly began brewing in the depths of its throat.

“Hui~~~~~” the Night Thunder Dream Beast focused down the Double Headed Scarlet Wood Python, which thought it was hidden very well, and the death ray instantly spat towards that fellow’s body!

The Death Ray quickly flashed through the light beam spraying down from above. It very accurately struck the area where the Double Headed Scarlet Wood Python’s two heads interweaved. It directly knocked this restless fellow flying, who fell from high above!

The Double Headed Scarlet Wood Python was still considered agile and, while falling, one of its heads abruptly bit onto the tree trunk. Its long, ten meter body flipped back up like a whip, and it once more returned to the crisscrossing tree trunk area.

“Ignore it, continue going up. The demonic aura here is very dense. Perhaps it can make your demon attribute increase to the peak level of the commander rank.” Chu Mu swept his gaze over the Double Headed Scarlet Python which had fallen over fifty meters. He didn’t pay it any further attention. After all, with the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s speed, it was enough to leave that fellow behind.

Chapter 97-2: Ancient Firmament Wood, Magnificence Of A Crown

The Night Thunder Dream Beast had three innate talents in total: demon, darkness, lightning. Of these three innate talents, the demon talent barely neared the peak of the commander demon rank, the dark type was considered excellent and the lightning normal. Presently, Chu Mu placed emphasis most on the Night Thunder Dream Beast's demon type, then dark and finally lightning last. If the Night Thunder Dream Beast succeeded in absorbing the demon aura, its demon innate talent would reach the peak commander rank and the effect of its demon techniques would at least increase by 30 percent. The usefulness was still significant.

As they ran past the protector God enormous firmament wood treetop, they encountered numerous soul pets. Chu Mu would have the Night Thunder Dream Beast intentionally evade the stronger soul pets, while passing right by the weak ones. Otherwise, Mo Xie would scare them away.

Approximately when the sun was setting and dusk had arrived, the Night Thunder Dream Beast finally reached the very peak of the treetop.

Chu Mu had only stood on top of a tall mountain overlooking the expansive earth. Standing now on the treetop of this firmament wood with the feeling of an incomparably vast forest as far as he could see was something that he had never experienced before.

The green colored treetop that constituted an ocean of forest

swayed in the wind that rippled like an ocean wave towards the depths of the horizon.

On the green colored land, the beautiful and alluring sunset had already dipped halfway into the sea of forest. The gorgeous, radiating red horizon caused the forest world to become an even clearer world...

Chu Mu was completely bewitched by this magnificent scenery, and his eyes followed the sunset that sank into the green sea before slowly, the passion in his heart was suppressed.

The stern executioner, Xia Guanghan, was still chasing, and it wouldn't be long before that fellow's soul pets which had recovered their fighting strength would appear. Chu Mu presently was not only increasing the Night Thunder Dream Beast's strength, but he also had to do so quietly while entering the blue colored demon home that was composed of the interweaving of the three protector God enormous ancient wood tree branches and tree vines. Using the assistance of the special forbidden grounds, he would free himself from Xia Guanghan's pursuit.

“Hui~~~~~ Hui~~~~~”

The final ray of sunlight retreated from the fantastic forest world, and darkness began to gradually shroud over.

With the advent of twilight, the Night Thunder Dream Beast seemed to be weightless, as it stood in the center of the treetop. It raised its head, waiting for the darkness to fully cover its body.

Nighttime was the Night Thunder Dream Beast's paradise. During the night, the Night Thunder Dream beast was able to borrow the strength of darkness to absorb demonic aura.

Chu Mu didn't disturb the Night Thunder Dream Beast's demonic ceremony inheritance, while Mo Xie stood fifty meters away from the Night Thunder Dream Beast on the treetop.

Being higher up should have meant a stinging cold gale would make breathing rather hard for people. Only, the surrounding night and demon aura had already gradually been controlled by the Night Thunder Dream Beast. There wasn't any fluctuation of air within the radius of one hundred meters and, instead, it was filled with only dense demon aura.

Spiritual aura was an intangible thing. Chu Mu fundamentally did not know how much demon energy the Night Thunder Dream Beast had absorbed, but he could clearly sense that, as the Night Thunder Dream Beast continued its ceremony inheritance, his soul remembrance was also slowly increasing.

The moment a soul pet's strength displayed a relatively large increase, the soul pet trainer's soul would also increase. The Night Thunder Dream Beast's strength increase couldn't be compared with Mo Xie's species mutation, but Chu Mu could distinctly feel his soul remembrance increase a bit!

Due to Mo Xie's mutation, Chu Mu had directly stepped into the ninth remembrance spirit teacher level and moreover, faintly

touched the spirit master realm. If Chu Mu could reach the spirit master level in a short period of time, he would be able to summon the sixth phase ninth stage monarch rank White Nightmare.

Presently, Chu Mu was near that powerful demon domain and, if an eighth phase monarch rank soul pet were to appear here, the master of this mysterious world would definitely appear. Therefore, even if Xia Guanghan appeared, he definitely could not summon something higher than an eighth rank commander rank or above a seventh rank monarch rank.

Once Xia Guanghan's powerful main soul pet was restricted, by relying on Mo Xie's formidable fighting strength and the White Nightmare, Chu Mu felt that he could definitely contend against Xia Guanghan. As such, if he could break through to a spirit master in a short period of time, this crisis would be resolved.

.....

“Ge! Ge Ge!!!!”

Suddenly, as Chu Mu's soul remembrance was increasing, a sound similar to a dead tree snapping rang out.

“Mo Xie!”

Chu Mu had already expected the top of this tree to have a powerful soul pet. After he sensed something was off, he immediately had Mo Xie prepare to fight!

A beautiful, double royal flame immediately ignited on Mo Xie's body. The two layers of flame gave off a radiance that instantaneously illuminated the dark night, lighting a one hundred meter perimeter in a fiery red.

Without needing Chu Mu's deliberate orders, Mo Xie promptly moved her body, and she quickly charged with a killing intent towards the plant world soul pet hidden within the treetop!

“Eighth phase commander rank Coronary Blood Vine!” very quickly, Chu Mu discovered a soul pet on the treetop, whose form was slowly becoming visible. His face became a bit serious.

An eighth phase second stage commander rank plant world soul pet. As long as this kind of soul pet didn't suffer from the counter of a fire type soul pet, it was an unbridled and terrifying existence on the battlefield. Regardless of defense, offense, or control, an eighth phase commander rank vine type soul pet had the most formidable fighting ability. It could be said that in a group fight, the one thing that someone could not lack the most was a plant world soul pet that could simultaneously release techniques.

Chu Mu realized that this eighth phase second stage commander could very well be the guard of this guardian ancient firmament wood. Its strength was extremely powerful, and without being stingy towards his soul power, he immediately began to chant an incantation.

Chu Mu's black pupils began to slowly transform. Slowly, a blood

colored lustre began to circulate and, against the pitch black night, it appeared to be extremely striking!

Violent Blood Pupil!!!!!!

The scarlet colored pupil immediately dyed Mo Xie's silver eyes. Her silver fluttering fur was gradually enveloped by a layer of strange bloody light, like a bloody battle armor being draped on top.

Mo Xie, this Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox, had a violent aura. Further adding on the Violent Blood Pupils' effects, she became even more imposing. It was completely like an incomparably ruthless nine tailed monarch!

Mo Xie was currently at the sixth phase fifth stage. With the Violent Blood Pupils' effects, despite raising her five stages, Mo Xie could only be considered at the peak sixth phase, and there was a definite difference from the evolved seventh phase.

If she were to fight against an eighth phase commander rank at this phase and stage, even though Mo Xie possessed a powerful fighting strength comparable to a monarch, she was at a clear disadvantage. Fortunately, Mo Xie, who had a double royal flame attribute harbored an extremely large advantage...

“Nine Tail Flame!!”

“Wu wu wu~~~~~”

Mo Xie's nine incomparably ostentatious tails suddenly extended. On top of them quickly ignited the demon fire evil flame and the blood flame. The scorching heat of the double royal flames burned as Mo Xie abruptly waved the nine gorgeous tails!

The nine long tails fanned across and suddenly, a terrifying wave of fire surged forth like magma. As it swept through, it strangely transformed into a terrifying flame vortex that engulfed the Coronary Blood Vine!

The protector God ancient firmament wood was extremely special, and Mo Xie's flames didn't actually spread across the treetop. The commander rank Coronary Blood Vine was clearly afraid of Mo Xie's powerful flames, and it flusteredly controlled pieces of blood colored vines, quickly weaving them together...

A vine attribute's defense had a very good effect towards many beast type soul pet attacks. However, it was practically nothing against fire type techniques. Very soon, the Nine Tailed Flames burned down the Coronary Blood Vine's defense and began burning its body.

The two royal flames inherently were extremely terrifying fire type crystallizations. Especially since, in these two royal flames was the Blood Flames, which directly passed through skin and burned the blood.

The Coronary Blood Vine circulated its blood inside. This blood allowed it to become even nimbler, and its attacks to be even more

imposing. However, it happened to be completely countered by Mo Xie's Blood Flame!

“Wu wu wu wu~~~~”

Mo Xie's proud howl resounded on the treetop's peak.

Even deeper into the night, a bent moon hung in the clean night sky. A silver radiance, without any obstructions, illuminated the top of the tree.

Although the eighth phase second stage Coronary Blood Vine was eminently strong in teamfights, Mo Xie completely countered it. When the moonlight spilled onto Mo Xie's body, it caused her strength to undergo a large increase once more. The eighth phase second stage Coronary Blood Vine was ultimately unable to free itself from Mo Xie's Illusion Royal Flame Claw!

Four claw traces struck across, and the Coronary Blood Vine's body was instantly ripped apart by Mo Xie!

“Don't use fire.” just as Mo Xie was about to burn the defeated enemy's corpse cleanly into ashes as per her habit, Chu Mu suddenly warned her.

Mo Xie's reactions were very quick, and she promptly controlled her double royal flames and extinguished them just as they were about to spread onto the Coronary Blood Vine's body.

“Wu wu wu~~~”

Mo Xie stepped on the Coronary Blood Vine’s corpse and stared at Chu Mu. She was somewhat confused as she looked at Chu Mu.

The Coronary Blood Vine’s soul core was vine attributed. Such a soul core naturally could not be given to the Devil Tree Battle Soldier to eat. Normally, against such an opponent, Chu Mu would habitually burn it immediately, in case they were faking death.

Chu Mu glanced at the Night Thunder Dream Beast still absorbing demonic aura. Very rapidly, he jumped next to the corpse of the eighth phase second stage Coronary Blood Vine, and he extremely patiently pried open its tree vine-like corpse.

“The eighth phase Coronary Blood Vine has already solidified its Coronary Blood Fat. This Coronary Blood Fat is an extremely precious spiritual item, and if I can find the Bloodsucking Wood and combine the two, I can give to the Devil Tree Battle Soldier to use. The Devil Tree Battle Soldier will then possess the ability of Coronary Blood Leech.” Chu Mu searched for the Coronary Blood Fat he spoke of while explaining.

“Wu wu wu wu~~~~~” Mo Xie half-understood and nodded her head. In short, any item that helped the Devil Tree Battle Soldier increase its strength made it right.

Chapter 98: Marvel, Half Man Half Soul Pet

Coronary Blood Leech was a very special ability within the Plant World, especially among wood and vine type soul pets.

Whenever its vines or whiskers pierced the enemy body, they would immediately grow even finer feelers.

These feelers would have a very terrifying leeching ability. Once it was in an enemy's body, it would, in a short time, suck all of the enemy's blood into its vines and whiskers and bring it into its own body in order to recover its life force.

To Plant World soul pets, their life force was already their strongest characteristic. Other than fire type damage, it was very hard for any other soul pet to truly deal a heavy blow to them.

While fighting, wounded Plant Type soul pets was already tough. If this soul pet now had Coronary Blood Leech and could swiftly recover its fighting strength, then it would be an even greater headache to deal with.

Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier now had demon wood and could compare to commander rank soul pets. Yet, as power levels rose, if the Devil Tree Battle Soldier didn't have any more threatening abilities, it was very hard for it to compete against stronger and stronger foes, so a soul item that could increase the power of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier was a necessity.

“Wuwu~~~”

Mo Xie used her claws to help Chu Mu dissect the body of this Coronary Blood Vine, very quickly finding half a drop of a congealed blood-like substance.

Chu Mu pulled out the medicine flask that he had specially prepared, and he carefully stored this drop of Coronary Blood Fat away and put it in his spatial ring.

A thing like Coronary Blood Fat, in Chu Mu's understanding, was something only a Coronary Blood Vine had, and it needed to be a Coronary Blood Vine that was higher than the eighth phase before it could create such thing.

Coronary Blood Vines usually lived in relatively deep forests, so finding them wasn't easy. Because of their rarity, the Coronary Blood Fat naturally became a valuable item.

According to Chu Mu's estimates, such an item's cost was at least in the millions. Yet, the other Bloodsucking Wood was even more expensive. Combining the two to create a Coronary Blood Leech crystal was not cheaper than a sixth level soul equipment.

“Wuwuwu~~~~~”

Mo Xie's gaze soon looked towards the Night Thunder Dream Beast, telling Chu Mu that the Night Thunder Dream Beast seemed to have finished absorbing the demon type aura.

Chu Mu also looked over, and he was surprised to notice that the Night Thunder Dream Beast's figure seemed even more devilishly attractive. Standing on the treetops, when the Night Thunder Dream Beast retracted its presence, it could noiselessly merge into the night. Even when moonlight fell upon it from above, the light wouldn't be hindered. It was not even able to create a shadow for the Night Thunder Dream Beast.

“Hui~~~~~Hui~~~~~”

The Night Thunder Dream Beast let out a high pitched neigh. Earning new demon type powers, the Night Thunder Dream Beast had become abnormally excited.

“It actually raised to sixth phase fifth stage, very good!” Chu Mu immediately smiled.

The most important thing for demon type soul pets was phase and stage. Only when it had grown to a higher phase and stage could its mental capabilities become stronger, causing the casting of mental abilities to also become more powerful.

Chu Mu had always worried before about how he could increase the power of the Night Thunder Dream Beast who lacked in fighting ability. After all, sky demon type soul items weren't everywhere, and they couldn't just be used at any stage or phase. He didn't expect that absorbing this demon aura not only caused his Night Thunder Dream Beast's type to be strengthened, but it could even speed up the Night Thunder Dream Beast's growth.

This way, when they entered any region in the future, they had to bring the Night Thunder Dream Beast into Demon Homes with dense demonic aura to continuously improve the Night Thunder Dream Beast's strength.

“Hui~~~~Hui~~~~” The Night Thunder Dream Beast floated before Chu Mu, yet its eyes stared at the blue forest in the sky created by a weaving of the branches of the three guardian Firmament Ancient Trees. It sent a mental message to Chu Mu.

“You're saying the demonic aura there is even stronger, and it could raise your power by another large margin?” Chu Mu asked.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast immediately nodded.

It was obvious that the centermost region of the Ninth Level Misleading World was this deep blue forest in the sky.

Yet normally, soul pets that could live in such a special environment either had special abilities or immense power. If they entered, once they invaded some soul pet's territory, battling would no longer be avoidable. So, though this nomadic demon characteristic could let a demon quickly increase in strength, if it couldn't overcome this problem, nomadic demons still couldn't have such increases in strength.

.....

The blue forest in the sky grew all sorts of strange flora. Standing

on the treetops and looking over, one didn't just see a jumble of interlaced tree branches, but instead one could see a vast blue grass field in the sky, where all sorts of different plants grew.

After Chu Mu rode his Night Thunder Dream Beast into this special region, he could smell a wave of special aroma. This aroma cleared one's mind, and the taut nerves Chu Mu had from Xia Guanghan's relentless chasing slowly relaxed.

“Wuwu~~~~” Laying on Chu Mu's shoulder, little Mo Xie let out a tired yawn, and she lowered her eyelids slightly, wanting to sleep.

As the aromatic wind blew, waves of tiredness also assaulted them. Feeling comfortable all over, even Chu Mu felt his eyelids grow heavy, wanting to just take a good sleep under this soft and scented atmosphere.

“Hui~~~~~”

Suddenly, the Night Thunder Dream Beast sent a mental sound into Chu Mu's mind!

Chu Mu was suddenly jolted awake by the Night Thunder Dream Beast's sound. Looking around, he immediately found that there were quite a few Sleeping Grasses growing on the blue carpet of flora!

Sleeping Grass was a plant that had powerful sleep aiding powers

at night. Normally, it was very gentle, able to help with sleep at night. Many rich family princesses had one growing in their rooms.

Yet, once Sleeping Grass grew in clumps and all the sleeping pollen blew over together at night, it had an overwhelming hypnotising ability. Even monarch rank soul pets had a hard time defending against it sometimes.

Once the Sleeping Grass caused a person to faint in a short time through its sleeping effect, it would become one of nature's strangest traps!

Sleeping Grass needed a very large amount of nutrients. These nutrients were usually provided when soul pets died in the dirt and were decomposed.

When Sleeping Grass came in clumps, it would cause an infinite slumber. If a soul pet accidentally fell within it, it would never wake up again, finally dying in its sleep and slowly decomposing.....

Just now, Chu Mu had already felt a clear sleepiness. If not for the Night Thunder Dream Beast's timely warning, Chu Mu would've fallen asleep unknowingly within the aroma. Once he fell asleep, he would die peacefully within this Sleeping Grass inhabited area.

"This place is indeed terrifying." The awake Chu Mu immediately gave himself a layer of soul remembrance protection

and said with lingering fears.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast slowly started releasing its dark aura, creating an invisible dark force field surrounding Chu Mu, Mo Xie, and itself to block out the sleep inducing substances spread by the Sleeping Grass.

“Night, you can control the sleep inducing substances of the Sleeping Grass, right?” Chu Mu asked.

Night Thunder Dream Beast immediately nodded, guaranteeing to Chu Mu that he wouldn't be hypnotized by it anymore.

Chu Mu immediately smiled and jumped off of Night Thunder Dream Beast's back. Telling it to block the effects of the sleep-inducing substance, he himself took out a medicinal bottle.

“Night, forcefully compress the sleep inducing aura into this bottle.” Chu Mu said to Night Thunder Dream Beast.

Though the Night Thunder Dream Beast was still doubtful, it still did as Chu Mu asked, and it controlled its night aura to fill the bottle with the sleeping pollen.

“Let's continue walking, Mo Xie, you also stay more vigilant.” Chu Mu said.

“Wu~~~~” Mo Xie murmured, embarrassed. She adorably opened her little mouth and put one of her tails in her mouth, looking as if

she was saying “if I want to sleep I’ll bite my tail to wake myself up”

Chu Mu already felt that his own remembrance was on its way to break through to spirit master. If the Night Thunder Dream Beast absorbed the demonic aura at the centermost of the Ninth Level Misleading World, its power would definitely increase greatly again. This way, the chances that Chu Mu could break through to spirit master was even higher. So despite it being dangerous, Chu Mu felt the need to voyage further.

.....

Xiling Region South Side

A shrill whistle flew past in the sky. It was as if a dazzling comet appeared, lighting up the entire night sky.

It was a soul pet that let off a dazzling starlight on every part of its body. It didn’t have any massive aura, but it was like the skies and stars-too high to reach!

On this starlit soul pet proudly stood a beautiful woman.

The woman’s clothes billowed along with her hair and emanated a noble air. Riding this unknown soul pet above this wilderness, she was like a goddess high up that descended into the mortal world.....

“This direction?” The woman looked forward and asked coldly.

“It should be this direction. Her Highness, please let me free, I’ve already retired for many years and have kept to myself. I’ve definitely done no more atrocities, and I have nothing to do with Xia Guanghan.” A sound came from under the starlit soul pet.

If one looked closely, one would see that within the claws of the starlit soul pet was a strange organism with the head of a raccoon and the body of a human child!

Humanoid bodies were not uncommon in the soul pet realm, but one with a raccoon head and child-like limbs that wore clown like clothes was truly comical and strange.

Of course, the most special part was that this soul pet could speak the human language!

The communication between humans and soul pets were almost always through mental communication. Of over tens of millions of soul pets, no matter how long it had been with humans, they would never be able to speak human language. Yet, this half human half soul pet organism spoke fluently in a human language, even giving off the feeling of a small old man. It was definitely a marvel of the soul pet world!

Chapter 99: Perfect Girl, Deserted Soul Pet

“Now where?” The woman called by Female Venerable asked coldly.

“According to my sense of smell, he should be in the territory of the Blue Galactic Demon Emperor. He seems to be chasing someone. Female Venerable, I really haven’t involved myself with the mundane world anymore. Normally I just hide in the forest, gather some fruits and take a few naps. I haven’t really been watching People like the Nightmare Palace Xia Guanghan. Just let me go. Think about it, my legs are so short, how long will it take for me to crawl back to my home?”

“You sure he’s in the territory of the Blue Galactic Demon Emperor?” Female Venerable asked again.

“I’m sure, how would I dare lie to you?” The raccoon man immediately lifted up its furry paw and said.

“En, you can get lost yourself now.” Female Venerable said.

Just as she finished, the Starlight soul pet suddenly opened its claws, and the raccoon man immediately let out a shrill scream, and he fell right from the hundred meter high skies!

Normally, when soul pet trainers entered any wild region, they would specially retract their flying soul pet and walk on land. After all, the greatest taboo when entering a soul pet’s territory was flying.

However, this woman didn't mean to stop at all, riding her starlight soul pet straight into the terror-striking Southlands Forbidden Region.

.....

Within the blue sky forest, Chu Mu was still slowly moving forward on his Night Thunder Dream Beast.

The closer he was to the center, the more in-depth the blue on the ground. Under the shine of moonlight and starlight, it caused the hue to become even more bright and enchanting.

As they went deeper, Chu Mu could already gradually feel a dense demonic and wood type aura fill the air, giving one a strange feeling in the heart. It left one somewhat suppressed, yet also feeling like one stepped into a pure and untouched wonderland.

“Hui~~~Hui~~~~~”

Suddenly, the Night Thunder Dream Beast stopped, and it stood silently on the flower tarp constructed of blue flower petals. Under the moonlight, its bright eyes looked forward.

Chu Mu could also clearly see the objects in front in the night. What confused Chu Mu was, about two hundred meters in front of them, there were a group of weird, black trees.

These black trees weren't tall. Their bodies weren't covered by any leaves. They were like a group of dead trees with down hanging arms. They stood neatly in a row within this blue sky forest, making Chu Mu feel that they were more like a group of guardians protecting something.

The soul pets Chu Mu understood had its limits. These soul pets that were lined up like guardians were something Chu Mu had never seen before. Only from their reserved aura could he barely tell that they were probably warrior rank soul pets.

Of course, if warrior rank soul pets always lived in a special environment, their abilities would often be much stronger than the normally grown wood type warrior ranks.

The Black Wood Demon Warriors had obviously been influenced by this special environment, and they shouldn't be any weaker than the strengthened commander rank soul pets of the outside world.

What surprised Chu Mu the most was these Black Wood Demon Warriors' phases. Using his remembrance, Chu Mu could approximately determine that these Black Wood Demon Warriors were almost all seventh phase and above. The largest Wood Demon Warrior was probably even at the eighth phase.

“Wuwuwu~~~~~” Mo Xie called out to Chu Mu in a small whisper.

“En, the inside may very well be the area of the strong demonic

aura.” Chu Mu nodded and specially looked behind him.

Currently, Chu Mu couldn't walk forward as easily anymore. Once he walked into the territory guarded by those Black Wood Demon Warriors, he would definitely face the surrounding attack of dozens of seventh phase and above Black Wood Demon Warriors.

However, behind him, through the mark on the White Nightmare, Chu Mu could feel Xia Guanghan's aura nearing, so he had to think of a way to get through the obstacle of the Black Wood Demon Warriors and sneakily enter the mysterious and powerful demon's territory in order to let Night Thunder Dream Beast stealthily absorb the pure and thick demonic aura.

“Mo Xie, see if you can use your Evil Pupil Scare to control that stump of black wood on the very edge. Ye, you remain in Night Dance status. If Mo Xie awakens them, decisively help Mo Xie hide.” Chu Mu said to his two soul pets.

Mo Xie immediately nodded. Staying in her Pitiful Appearance, she slowly jumped down from Chu Mu's body and immediately took gentle steps, waving her beautiful nine tails around as she walked adorably and seemingly harmlessly towards the Demon Wood Warrior nearest the edges.

Mo Xie was also daring because of her confidence. Completely acting like she was a harmless little organism, with a jump and skip she climbed up the edge of the Black Wood Demon Warrior's body.

When Plant World soul pets stayed completely still, oftentimes there were little organisms that climbed onto their shoulders to play around. If they weren't specially trying to hunt, these plant world soul pets normally wouldn't mind these little organisms.

Mo Xie's pitiful appearance had its absolute use at this time. The seventh phase Black Wood Demon Warrior completely viewed Mo Xie as a harmless little fellow. When Mo Xie climbed onto its shoulder, it didn't mind at all.

The closer she was, the more powerful the Evil Pupil Scare was. Mo Xie didn't even need to leave her Pitiful Appearance state. Her silver eyes immediately morphed into the Evil Pupil Scare's effects, taking control of the Black Wood Demon Warrior before anyone even realized.

"Ao? Ao?" The Black Wood Demon Warrior let out a string of strange noises, and it looked around blankly at its fellow Black Wood Demon Warriors that were still napping.

Finally, this Black Wood Demon Warrior slowly stepped a few steps to the side with its dry bark feet.

"Very well, move them aside one by one." Chu Mu immediately smiled.

In the same way, Mo Xie, who was ignored by these Black Wood Demon Warriors, moved them to the side one by one, making these Black Wood Demon Warriors create a path that they

wouldn't even notice.

After all the Black Wood Demon Warriors moved aside, the Night Thunder Dream Beast started to walk extremely slowly past the rows of snoring Black Wood Demon Warriors.

“Ao?? Ao??”

A foolish looking Black Wood Demon Warrior suddenly lifted its head up, as if it felt the Night Thunder Dream Beast walk by it.....

“Night, Dream!” Chu Mu's reactions were very fast, immediately telling his Night Thunder Dream Beast to cast its Dream technique on the awoken Black Wood Demon Warrior.

Just as the Black Wood Demon Warrior woke up and was about to discover Chu Mu and his Night Thunder Dream Beast, it was quickly hit with a demon ability from the Night Thunder Dream Beast, and it bewilderingly went back to sleep.

Passing through the outer perimeter of guards, Chu Mu let out a breath, and he continued to let Night Thunder Dream Beast remain in Night Dance status as they walked step by step into the deeper regions.

After entering the inner region of what the Black Wood Demon Warriors protected, all sorts of different blue night flowers popped up under Chu Mu's feet. These night flowers were more like radiant stars, densely dotting this forest in the sky. Voluminous,

they gave one an enjoyment for its beauty.

The blue night flowers became more and more plentiful as they went deeper. Chu Mu slowly felt as if he was stepping into a blue sea of flowers, and what he was stepping on was actually one big blue and soft flower petal.....

Not knowing why, but Chu Mu remembered that, when he looked from afar through the protection of the Black Wood Demon Warrior, he should be able to see the special nature's oddball at the center of the Ninth Misleading World if he walked forward for a bit. Yet, as the Night Thunder Dream Beast went deeper, this deep blue flower petal world was like it never ended.

“Wuwuwu~~~~” Mo Xie let out a delicate call to Chu Mu.

Chu Mu looked at Mo Xie and said, “You too feel that it is strange, right?”

The blue flower sea wasn't blue the way Chu Mu liked, a blue that could evoke happy memories. This deep blue gave off an irrepressible depression, causing one to remember past things from the depression.

“Wuwu~~~~” Mo Xie again let out a sound as if she noticed something. Suddenly, she jumped down from Chu Mu's shoulder and ran towards a massive flower bud.

Chu Mu saw that Mo Xie suddenly left him, and he immediately

told his Night Thunder Dream Beast to follow.

“What’s wrong Mo Xie?” Chu Mu looked questioningly at the high blue flower waiting to blossom, and he suddenly felt the scene was all too familiar.

In front of Chu Mu was a massive blue flower still in its budding form. This flower was the same height as Chu Mu, and it had sparkling night dew on it. The dew shined with a captivating glint under the moonlight.

The bud of the dazzling blue flower stood silently in front of Chu Mu, and it felt like a closed off blue heart of depression. It caused a sort of longing and curiosity within one’s heart, making them want to know how pretty this bud would be when it bloomed into a flower, or whether it actually hid some special soul item.....

“Wuwuwu~~~~~Wuwuwu~~~~~” Mo Xie let out a string of calls, her voice clearly somewhat angry.

Chu Mu jumped down from the Night Thunder Dream Beast and stared at the blue and dreamy bouquet.

Seeing this blue budding flower, Chu Mu’s expression changed completely. Shock, surprise, disbelief, and many even more complicated emotions flashed over his face.

“Can it be.....” Chu Mu blanked, but in the next moment he displayed an excitement he had never displayed before.

Chu Mu already couldn't suppress the turmoil in his heart, and started to extend his own soul remembrance into the blue budding flower to explore the inner life.

Yet, just like long ago, just as Chu Mu extended his soul remembrance into it, the deep blue flower shook slightly, and it slowly opened up amidst the glistening dew and moonlight.

Waves of aroma wafted over, causing Chu Mu's mind to waver. This smell was enchanting and infatuating, easily causing one's mind to wander away.

But, this time, Chu Mu wasn't completely deceived by this aroma. His two eyes tightly watched the slowly opening deep blue flower.

The petals slowly opened. When moonlight fell upon this beautiful flower stamen, little beautiful and butterfly-like moonlight organisms immediately flew out of the blue flower, setting off the holiness and purity of the gorgeous and touching young girl within the flower!

Chu Mu, who could always keep his cool, could no longer control his emotions at this point. The young girl who was born from the flowers in front of him was the deepest scene within Chu Mu's heart, yet this scene once again appeared in front of him!!

.....

Eight Years Ago.

Chu Mu was only ten, but his soul remembrance was stronger than the majority of people his age, already reaching the level of fourth remembrance spirit soldier.

However, Chu Tiancheng told Chu Mu that, even though he was already a fourth remembrance spirit soldier and could already sign soul pacts with soul pets, he shouldn't easily sign any soul pets, because the young Chu Mu couldn't possibly judge with experience a soul pets' quality.

Chu Mu also remembered Chu Tiancheng's words well, so even though his own mother brought him to strange and exotic places to travel and meet many soul pets, Chu Mu never easily signed a soul pact with them.

Speaking of which, the deepest impression Chu Mu had of his mother was the time that they went on a tour when he was ten. Chu Mu and his mother's relationship wasn't that good. Or in other words, they communicated very little. Before the age of ten, in Chu Mu's memory was only her cold and arrogant look. Even if she smiled for him, the smile didn't have much warmth.....

Maybe it was because of this reason that she specially brought Chu Mu around to a few places. In reality, Chu Mu knew she was looking for a first soul pet for him.

Chu Mu couldn't remember where his mother brought him to.

Anyways, after Chu Mu woke up from his sleep, he was no longer in the little Gangluo City, and he wasn't even in the little Luo Region.

He seemed to walk a very far distance into a strange world. In it, the floor was filled with vibrant and gaily flowers, as if he entered a sea of flowers.....

.....

“Help me, please, I don't want to become a slave.” The organism in the flower said.

“All soul pets have life and have souls. They aren't the slaves of humans. No matter how strong or weak they are, their dignity and choice should be respected.”

“Then are you willing to help me?”

.....

“First soul pact, open.”

.....

“You need to open two soul pacts before you can contain me.”

“Why?”

“It’s because I’m special, different from normal soul pets.”

“This is the first time I’ve heard of a soul pet that needs two soul pacts open to sign on.”

“First soul pact, open! Second soul pact, open!”

.....

.....

Chu Mu shook his head abruptly, and he recovered from his deepest memories. His eyes stared at the beautifully naked girl within the blue petals.

The girl wasn’t clothed in anything. Under the moonlight, she had the most perfect body. Her skin was sparkling and pure, as if it would break with a flick. Her body let off an alluring scent, causing one to be infatuated. Her waist was like a swaying flower stem that could be grasped with one hand. Her jade-like legs were smooth, long, and elegant.....

This girl that could only be described as the most intricate art piece was so perfect that she could only appear in dreams.

An angel-like appearance, clothless body, emitting the most holy

aura from all over, it was something a ten year old little boy couldn't resist at all.....

Yet, when such an angel-like girl appeared again in front of Chu Mu, the emotions that welled up within Chu Mu's heart was definitely not shock and admiration for the beauty, but instead was an uncontrollable turbulence.....

The deserted soul pet!!

What was displayed in front of him was ever so familiar, yet Chu Mu would never have thought that he would meet his deserted soul pet here!!

Chapter 100: Earth Fiend Dream Demon, Terrifying Dream Trap

The loss of his first soul caused Chu Mu to endure much ridicule within Gangluo City. Maybe normally, Chu Mu could act more mature than children his age, but to any child with a great longing to be a soul pet trainer, with the most sincere soul pact becoming a lie, a betrayal, and ultimately ruining his life, it would be absolutely devastating!

Stepping back into the soul pet trainer realm, Chu Mu had already slowly forgotten this event. After four years of training, he also stepped into the top tier of young soul pet trainers. However, just when Chu Mu had gotten used to missing a soul and was able to compete against experts with three souls using only two souls, the abandoned soul pet actually appeared again before him.

Finally finding the lost soul was an excitement that couldn't be kept down!!

“I beg of you, let me go.....” The deserted angel let out its pitiful pleas, her two pure and beautiful pupils shining with the most unrefusable begging.

She had a perfect face. She was unclothed yet pure, and had an un-taintable body, in addition to a superior manner unlike anything mortal. Such an angel's pitiful pleas could pierce straight through the body and into the deepest part of one's soul, causing one to do as she said without any guard against her.

If not for knowing her previously, Chu Mu would have definitely been tricked by her appearance. Yet, Chu Mu had already fallen for it once. Though he didn't know why the girl wanted to lie to him like this, lying was lying, and betraying was betraying. No matter how devastatingly beautiful she was, able to allure all living things, no matter how pure or holy her unblemished heart seemed, Chu Mu couldn't trust her ever again!

“Don't use such a laughable pretense to try and trick me and my youthfulness. I want to remove my contract with you.” Chu Mu didn't leave any room for negotiation with her.

“I beg of you, don't do this. I don't want to remove my pact with you. I can swear I will never leave again, and that I will stay by you to protect you.....” Her gorgeous pupils started welling up and sparkling tears fell down her perfect face.

Seeing this young girl's tears, Chu Mu's inner heart felt an unknown stir, especially when he thought of undoing his contract with her.

Maybe she really realized the shame of lying and betrayal, or maybe every man would be moved by a goddess-like woman such as her. Every time when Chu Mu wanted to chant the incantation that would hurt his soul, Chu Mu felt a heaviness on his heart, stopping him from doing it.

Yet, Chu Mu still had to undo the contract. She was the most unique girl soul pet of the soul pet world. She transcended the strict boundary between humans and soul pets. Such soul pet only appeared in the most ancient and tragically beautiful legends.

Yet, once she appeared, human-like soul pets would cause the entire world to go crazy, especially a perfect angel that was born in a sea of the purest flowers.

Not a single soul pet trainer would summon her onto the battlefield. Also, no one would make her stay in a soul pet space, so the best way was to remove their contract. This was paying only a year of soul damage to earn back the first soul he had lost for many years.

“First soul pact, second soul pact.....” Chu Mu finally started to chant his spell. The first soul pact had to come back. Once it came back, Chu Mu could use his first soul to summon more soul pets to help him fight. Only then could he deal with Xia Guanghan.....

Xia Guanghan.....

For some reason, when he remembered Xia Guanghan, Chu Mu’s mind was attacked by a dizzying feeling, and the soul pact rescinding spell was suddenly broken.....

.....

.....

“Wuwuwu~~~~~”

The Royal Flamed Nine Tail Inferno Fox Mo Xie's eyes became sorrowful. Mo Xie and Chu Mu were connected mentally, so she could feel what Chu Mu was thinking. Yet, Mo Xie couldn't stop Chu Mu from thinking it.

“Quiet, quiet, don't disturb your owner's beautiful dream.....” A sound that reeked with disingenuity and coldness floated over.

“Wuwuwuwu~~~~~” Mo Xie called without rest, wanting to awaken Chu Mu, because if Chu Mu didn't wake up any sooner.....”

“Fourth soul pact, rescind!”

Violently, a powerful and cold mental wave came into Mo Xie's mind. It was a command from the owner of the soul pact. If this mental command were too strong, the soul pet couldn't reject it, and was only able to accept it.

“Wuwuwuwu~~~~~” Mo Xie bit her teeth and relied on her tenacious mental strength to forcefully reject Chu Mu's soul pact rescinding.

Mo Xie's body started burning with the double royal flames of anger. The raging flames continuously burned within the deep blue sky forest. Yet, this flame couldn't spread or even burn off the sky vines tightly bound on her.

The person controlling the sky vines to bind Mo Xie was Xia

Guanghan. At this moment, Xia Guanghan stood right before Chu Mu. His soul remembrance had forcefully pierced into Chu Mu's mental world, causing Chu Mu to be unable to awake from his dream.

Beside Xia Guanghan, there was a terrifying Earth Fiend Dream Demon. The Earth Fiend Dream Demon's eyes constantly shifted in color. If the Dream Demon's eyes changed color, it meant that it was currently creating dreams within a target's conscious that would serve to reach its goal!

“Dream Trap!!”

In reality, all the way back to when Chu Mu felt the stimulation of the sleeping pollen and wanted to sleep, Chu Mu had already stepped into Xia Guanghan's eighth phase Dream Demon's terrifying Dream Trap.

The Black Wood Demon Warriors didn't exist; it was only a soul pet that Chu Mu imagined could protect this demon world.

The magnificent, many styled, and astoundingly blue flower sea was also not real. What Chu Mu saw was only a distant memory hidden in his inner mind that was dug up by the Earth Fiend Dream Demon.....

This girl that could only be described with perfection from head to toe was also just a shadow from Chu Mu's memories!

These memories had long been buried in the deepest parts of Chu Mu's heart, and he never easily opened it up. Yet, after unknowingly stumbling into the Earth Fiend Dream Demon's Dream Trap, Chu Mu slowly walked back into this unbearable memory of his.....

The perfect girl, as if the highest angel, having the most perfect face, most perfect body, most perfect quality-this was Chu Mu's first soul pet. She was almost no different to a human, yet she could sign a soul pet contract with a human. The young Chu Mu didn't know why she chose to sign a soul pact with him, but afterward, she deceived Chu Mu and occupied Chu Mu's first soul by choosing to abandon him.

The scariest thing was that it wasn't completely false, but Chu Mu was instead completely confused by the Earth Fiend Dream Demon. He thought Mo Xie, who was binded by Xia Guanghan, was his first soul pet, so when he cast his incantation, he thought he said "First soul pact, rescind!", but in reality he said "Fourth soul pact, rescind!"

Chu Mu's first and second soul pacts were taken by the perfect girl. For his third soul pact, Xia Guanghan forced him to sign with a White Nightmare. His fourth soul pact was the soul pact between him and Mo Xie!

Xia Guanghan definitely wasn't an easy opponent. He had already guessed that Chu Mu's reason for entering the deep blue sky forest was to suppress his soul pets with a stronger aura.

Indeed, this move restricted Xia Guanghan greatly. Xia Guanghan

couldn't summon his eighth phase monarch rank soul pet or ninth phase commander rank soul pet, yet Chu Mu still underestimated the scariness of Xia Guanghan's Earth Fiend Dream Demon

The Earth Fiend Dream Demon had a very strong ability to hide its own aura, and it was able to approach enemies without being detected. Also, as long as it kept its distance, it wouldn't easily be detected by more powerful soul pets.

The Earth Fiend Dream Demon was an eighth phase monarch rank, and was very easily able to startle the owner of this blue sky forest. The Earth Fiend Dream Demon could therefore only stay in its hidden state and lay down a hard to detect Dream Trap, causing Chu Mu, who had already stepped into the territory of the Blue Galactic Demon Emperor, to fall prey to it.

Xia Guanghan wouldn't kill Chu Mu that easily. Also, if he killed Chu Mu, Chu Mu's soul mark would still be within the soul pet. For at least a year, Mo Xie wouldn't be able to sign a soul pact with any human.

However, if Chu Mu rescinded the soul pact, with the help of soul items that could remove the original owner's aura within the soul pet's soul, he could successfully sign a soul pact without having to wait a long year.....

And the moment Chu Mu rescinded his soul pact with the Nine Tailed Inferno Fox, Xia Guanghan would kill Chu Mu without any mercy.

This time Xia Guanghan was fully prepared. His soul pacts were already full, so if he wanted another soul pet space, he would need two more remembrances. With Xia Guanghan's current level, raising two remembrances was very hard.

So this time, he was putting down a fortune, bringing the Soul Healing Stamen he had spent a fortune on over. Once he found Chu Mu's Royal Flame Nine Tail Inferno Fox, he would decisively rescind his soul pact with his Ice Winged Tiger and use the incredibly rare Soul Healing Stamen to immediately recover his soul pact. Then, he would forcefully sign a soul pact with the Royal Flame Nine Tailed Inferno Fox.

A continuously mutating soul pet. As long as he brought it up successfully, even beyond Nightmare Palace and looking at the entire world, there wouldn't be many opponents for Xia Guanghan.

At this time, the world's rarest soul pet was about to fall into his hands and Xia Guanghan's face unleashed an unsuppressable smile.

.....

"Fourth soul pact, rescind!" Chu Mu cast his incantation again. This voice was ice cold, yet it was a command that was hard to resist.

"Wu~~~~~" Mo Xie's body had already been completely confined, so she was only able to bite her teeth against Chu Mu's mental

command.....

“If you resist any more, I’ll kill him!” Xia Guanghai coldly glanced at the tenaciously resisting Mo Xie and said in a frigid tone towards Mo Xie.